OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

Language of Chaucer's Troilus
Observations
on the
Language of Chaucer's Troilus.

By
GEORGE LYMAN KITTREDGE,
ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

Published for the Chaucer Society
By KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO.,
PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING-CROSS ROAD.
1891.
TO

Professor Francis James Child

IN

GRATITUDE AND AFFECTION
PREFACE.

The following Observations are intended to furnish some materials for the large induction necessary to reasonable certainty in the matter of Chaucer's language, particularly his use of final -e. Other matters than final -e are of course dealt with from time to time; but to this in particular the Observations are directed. In other words, the study here presented to members of the Chaucer Society is a study in forms, not in phonology. This study was begun in August 1887, and has been frequently interrupted. The printing has of necessity extended over an unconscionable length of time. It is hoped that these facts may serve as the excuse for some trifling inconsistencies of typography, and perhaps even for some slight vacillations in plan and method. For actual blunders no excuse is offered; but it is hoped that the work may contain enough that is useful to make scholars indulgent for such errors as they may observe. Corrections will be gratefully received.

A paper by Professor John M. Manly, of Brown University, extending the method of inquiry here followed to The Legend of Good Women, will be found in vol. ii. of the Harvard Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature (Boston, 1893), pp. 1 ff. The relations of Professor Manly's paper to the present study are explained in his Introductory Note. Both papers, it will be observed, are under special obligations to Professor Child's Observations on the Language of Chaucer.

My acknowledgments are due to Professor E. S. Sheldon and Professor J. M. Manly for a number of valuable suggestions. Dr. Furnivall, with his usual kindness, has furnished me with indispensable copies and collations. To Professor Child, who suggested the investigation, and has furthered it by his counsel and encouragement throughout, my obligations of every kind are innumerable.

G. L. K.

Cambridge, March 17th, 1894.
TABLE OF CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTORY NOTE ........................................... xv
COMPARATIVE TABLES OF LINE-NUMBERS ..................... xix
ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS ................................... xxiv

I. GRAMMATICAL CHAPTER.

NOUNS.

§§ 1—5. Nouns of the n-declension ................................ 1—9
  § 2. Masculines .................................................. 1—5
  § 3. Feminines .................................................... 5—8
  § 4. Neuters ....................................................... 8
  § 5. Lady, play, fo, feldefare ................................... 9

§§ 6, 7. Masculine and neuter nouns with A.S. nominative
  in -e or -u ...................................................... 9—12
  § 6. Ending in -e in the Troilus ................................ 9—11
  § 7. Exceptions to § 6 ........................................... 11—12

§ 8. Feminine nouns with A.S. nominative in -u .................. 12—15

§§ 9—11. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-
  syllable in A.S. ................................................ 15—34
  § 9. Ending in -e in the Troilus ............................... 15—27
  § 10. Nouns in -ynge, -yng ..................................... 27—31
  § 11. Ending in a consonant in the Troilus .................... 31—34

§ 12. Apocope of A.S. -n in nouns ................................ 34—35

§ 13. Hond, honde .................................................. 35—36

§ 14. Masculine and neuter nouns ending in a consonant
  in A.S. but in -e in the Troilus (including
  so-called dative -e's) ........................................... 36—47

§ 15. Germanic nouns, not A.S., ending in -e in the Troilus ... 47—51

§ 16. Gle, se, stre, tre ............................................. 51

§ 17. Body, day, iuy, very ......................................... 51—52

§ 18. Masculine and neuter A.S. nouns ending in a consonant
  in the Troilus .................................................. 52—63

§ 19. Other Germanic nouns ending in a consonant ............... 63—64
Table of Contents.

| §20—31. Romance nouns in -e mute                      | ... | 64—87 |
| §21. Miscellaneous nouns : -e retained                | ... | 64—74 |
| §22. Exceptions to §21                               | ... | 74—75 |
| §23. Nouns in -ounce                                 | ... | 75—77 |
| §24. Nouns in -ence                                  | ... | 77—78 |
| §25. 1. Abstract nouns in -esse                      | ... | 78—79 |
|    ii. Feminine nomina agentis in -esse               | ... | ...  |
| §26. Nouns in -yce, -yse                             | ... | 79—80 |
| §27. Nouns in -ure                                   | ... | 80—81 |
| §28. Nouns in -ere                                   | ... | 81—83 |
| §29. Nouns in consonant + re                         | ... | 83—84 |
| §30. Nouns in -ye, -é                                | ... | 84—86 |
| §31. Nouns in -ye (unaccented)                       | ... | 86—87 |
| §32. Romance nouns that end in a consonant in French | ... | 87—88 |
| but take -e in the Troilus                           | ... | ...  |
| §33. Nouns ending in Old French in -é, -éé           | ... | 88—89 |
| §34. Romance (and Latin) nouns without final -e      | ... | 89—97 |
| i. Nouns in -er                                      | ... | 90    |
| ii. Nouns in -our                                   | ... | 90—91 |
| iii. Nouns in -ent, -ment                           | ... | 91—92 |
| iv. Nouns in -uent                                   | ... | 92    |
| v. Nouns in -s                                      | ... | 92—93 |
| vi. Nouns ending in a vowel (not -e)                 | ... | 93—94 |
| vii. Miscellaneous                                   | ... | 94—97 |
| §§35—37. Genitive singular of nouns                  | ... | 97—100|
| §35. Genitive singular in -es                        | ... | 97—98 |
| §36. Genitive identical in form with nominative      | ... | 98—99 |
| (lady, brother, etc.)                                | ... | ...  |
| §37. Proper names in -s                              | ... | 99—100|
| §§38—45. Plural of nouns                             | ... | 100—110|
| §38. Plurals in -és, -is, -ys (after consonants), -s (after -e) | ... | 100—103|
| §39. Exceptions to §38 : words in -aunt, -ent, -ioun, -en, -on, -an, -r ; monosyllables in -e | ... | 104—106|
| §40. Plurals in -en                                   | ... | 106—107|
| §41. Plurals in -en by imitation                      | ... | 107    |
| §42. Plurals with umlant                             | ... | 107    |
| §43. Plural identical with singular                  | ... | 108—109|
| §44. Genitive plural                                 | ... | 109—110|
| §45. Dative plural                                   | ... | 110     |

ADJECTIVES.

| §§46—52. Singular adjectives in the indefinite use  | ... | 110—122|
| §46. A.S. adjectives in -e, -a                      | ... | 110—113|
| §47. Allone, lame                                   | ... | 113—114|
| §48. Lyte, muche                                    | ... | 114—115|
Table of Contents.

§ 49. A.S. adjectives ending in a consonant that take -e in the *Troilus* ... ... ... 115—118

§ 50. Germanic (not A.S.) adjectives that show -e in the *Troilus* ... ... ... 119—120

§ 51. Romance adjectives in -e ... ... ... 120—121

§ 52. Romance adjectives with -e in the *Troilus* but none in French ... ... ... 121—122

§§ 53—54. Monosyllabic singular adjectives in the definite use
§ 53. Taking -e ... ... ... 122—126
i. Ordinals ... ... ... 123
ii. Superlatives ... ... ... 123—124
iii. Miscellaneous ... ... ... 124—125
iv. Words sometimes showing -e in the indefinite use (cf. § 49) ... ... ... 125—126
v. owene, owen, owne ... ... ... 126
§ 54. -e dropped ... ... ... 126—127
§ 55. Vocative singular of monosyllabic adjectives ... 127—128

§§ 56—62. Adjectives singular of more than one syllable in definite and vocative constructions ... 128—134
§ 56. Rules ... ... ... 128—129
§ 57. i. Dissyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable) ... ... ... 129—132
§ 58. ii. Dissyllabic oxytones (following word accented on second syllable) ... ... ... 132
§ 59. iii. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word not accented on second syllable) ... ... ... 132—133
§ 60. iv. Trisyllabic proparoxytones (following word accented on second syllable) ... ... ... 133
§ 61. v. Trisyllabic paroxytones (following word accented on first syllable) ... ... ... 133
§ 62. Vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable 133—134
§ 63. French inflection of adjectives ... ... ... 134—135
§ 64. Comparative degree ... ... ... 135—137
(a) -er (-ere) ... ... ... 135
(b) lenger ... ... ... 135
(c) bettre, bet; lasse, lesse; more, mo, moo; worse, wers ... ... ... 135—137
§ 65. Comparative and superlative with more and most 137—138
§ 66. Superlative (-est) ... ... ... 138

§§ 67—71. Plural of adjectives ... ... ... 138—149
§ 67. Monosyllabic adjectives: plural in -e ... ... ... 138—149
(a) Miscellaneous ... ... ... 138—142
(b) fele, feve ... ... ... 142
(c) Monosyllabic superlatives ... ... ... 142
(d) Cardinal numerals ... ... ... 142—144
§ 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate ... ... ... 144—145
Table of Contents.

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate: e sometimes omitted ... ... 145—146

Other exceptions to § 67 ... ... 146

§ 70. Adjectives of more than one syllable (in the interior of the verse) ... ... 146—148

§ 71. Adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse ... ... 148—149

§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. -lic (-lic), O.N. -ligr ... ... 149—150

PRONOUNS.

§ 73. Personal pronouns ... ... ... 150—154

§ 74. Possessive pronouns ... ... ... 154—157

§ 75. Reflexive and intensive pronouns ... ... 157—160

§ 76. Demonstrative pronouns ... ... 160—161

§ 77. Interrogative pronouns ... ... 161

§ 78. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) which ... ... 161—164

§ 79. Other pronominal words (same, som, somewhat, other, ech, eowey, eowerynom, any, eyther, bothe, men, oon (o), noon (no), ought, nought ... ... 164—169

§§ 80, 81. The adjective al ... ... 169—175

§ 80. i. Adjective use, singular; al ... ... 169

ii. Substantive uses, singular; al ... ... 169—170

iii. Singular allē ... ... 170—171

iv. Plural of al ... ... 171—175

§ 81. The genitive plural of al ... ... 175

ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Adverbs in A.S. -e which preserve their termination ... ... ... 175—180

§ 83. Exceptions to § 82 ... ... ... 180

§ 84. Adverbs in -liche, -lich, -ly ... ... 180—187

§ 85. Adverbs without vowel-ending ... ... 187—190

§§ 86, 87. Comparison of adverbs ... ... 190—193

§ 86. Comparative degree ... ... 190—192

§ 87. Superlative degree ... ... 193

§ 88. Miscellaneous particles which sometimes or always have -e in the Troilus ... ... 193—201

§ 89. Atwixen, -e, bytwyxe, -e, aweye, eke, often, -e, sau; here, there, where ... ... 201—206

§ 90. Ever and never ... ... ... 206—208

§ 91. Particles in -es ... ... ... 208—211
Table of Contents.

VERBS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Paragraph</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>§§ 92—98</td>
<td>Present indicative</td>
<td>212—231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 92</td>
<td>First person singular</td>
<td>212—215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 93</td>
<td>Second person singular</td>
<td>216</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 94</td>
<td>Third person singular in -eth, -eth, -th</td>
<td>217—220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 95</td>
<td>Third person singular in -t (abit, halt, stant, etc.)</td>
<td>220—222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 96</td>
<td>Plural in -en, -e</td>
<td>222—229</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 97</td>
<td>Plural in -eth, -th</td>
<td>229—230</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 98</td>
<td>Plural in -es</td>
<td>230—231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§§ 99—105</td>
<td>Preterite indicative (first and third persons) of weak verbs</td>
<td>231—252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 99</td>
<td>First conjugation (Anglo-Saxon)</td>
<td>231—240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 100</td>
<td>First conjugation (Old Norse, etc.)</td>
<td>240—242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 101</td>
<td>Second conjugation (Anglo-Saxon and other Germanic languages)</td>
<td>242—246</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 102</td>
<td>Third conjugation (Anglo-Saxon)</td>
<td>246—248</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 103</td>
<td>Verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon</td>
<td>248—250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 104</td>
<td>Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (aspyde, caughte, etc.)</td>
<td>250—251</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 105</td>
<td>Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites</td>
<td>251—252</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 106</td>
<td>Preterite indicative, second person singular, of weak formations</td>
<td>252—253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 107</td>
<td>Preterite indicative, second person singular, of strong verbs</td>
<td>253—254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 108</td>
<td>Preterite indicative (first and third persons) singular of strong verbs</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 109</td>
<td>Preterite indicative plural of strong and of weak verbs</td>
<td>255—260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§§ 110, 111</td>
<td>Present subjunctive singular of strong and of weak verbs</td>
<td>260—266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 110</td>
<td>Ending in -e</td>
<td>260—265</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 111</td>
<td>Exceptions to § 110</td>
<td>265—266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 112</td>
<td>Present subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs</td>
<td>266—268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 113</td>
<td>Preterite subjunctive singular</td>
<td>268—272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i.</td>
<td>Strong verbs</td>
<td>268—270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii.</td>
<td>Weak verbs</td>
<td>270—272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 114</td>
<td>Preterite subjunctive plural of strong and of weak verbs</td>
<td>272—273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§§ 115—117</td>
<td>Imperative second person singular</td>
<td>273—280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 115</td>
<td>Weak verbs (Germanic)</td>
<td>273—276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 116</td>
<td>Latin and Romance verbs</td>
<td>276—277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 117</td>
<td>Strong verbs</td>
<td>277—280</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Table of Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>§118. Imperative second person plural of strong and of weak verbs</th>
<th>280—286</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§119. Infinitive</td>
<td>286—301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§120. Present participle</td>
<td>301—303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§121. Perfect participle of weak verbs</td>
<td>303—311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§122. Perfect participle of strong verbs</td>
<td>311—317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§123. Präterito-present verbs</td>
<td>317—331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>i. wont</td>
<td>317—319</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ii. not</td>
<td>319—320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iii. oughte</td>
<td>320—321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iv. can</td>
<td>321—323</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>v. dar</td>
<td>323—324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>vi. thar</td>
<td>324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>vii. shal</td>
<td>324—326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>viii. may</td>
<td>326—329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ix. mot</td>
<td>329—331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§124. Other irregular verbs</td>
<td>331—345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>i. to be</td>
<td>331—334</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ii. will</td>
<td>335—338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iii. yl</td>
<td>339—340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>iv. do</td>
<td>340—341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>v. go</td>
<td>341—343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>vi. have</td>
<td>343—345</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>II. METRICAL CHAPTER.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§125. Elision of weak -e</td>
<td>345—347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§126. Hiatus (exceptions to §125)</td>
<td>347—352</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§127. Elision before strong h</td>
<td>352—353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§128. Elision of weak -e in monosyllables (thë, në)</td>
<td>353—355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§129. Elision of close -e (me, ve, etc.)</td>
<td>355—359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§130. Elision (or slurring) of -o and -a</td>
<td>359—361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§131. Slurring of -y (-ye)</td>
<td>362—363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§132. Weak e in two successive syllables (syncope or apocope)</td>
<td>364—365</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§133. Apocope or syncope of weak e after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent</td>
<td>365—366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§134. Apocope of weak -e after a syllable bearing a secondary accent</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§135. Apocope of weak -e immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent</td>
<td>366—372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>§136. Syncope or slurring of e in final syllables when the noun-accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding</td>
<td>372—377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(a) -es</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>(b) -est</td>
<td>372—373</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Table of Contents.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(c) -eth</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(d) -de, -te, -ede, -ed</td>
<td>373-374</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(e) -en</td>
<td>374-375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(f) -er, -ere, -re</td>
<td>375-377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(g) -el, -le</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(h) -em (-me)</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 137. Interior weak -e-</td>
<td>377-378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 138. Other instances of syncope</td>
<td>378-381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-5. Vowels (not weak e)</td>
<td>378-380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. whether, wher; other, or</td>
<td>380-381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. euere, neuere</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. benedicite</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. comprehend</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. desesperir, despeir, etc.</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 139. Apocope of consonants</td>
<td>381-384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1. -n in verb-forms</td>
<td>381-382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. -eth in imperative</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. -s in proper names</td>
<td>382-384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 140. Synaeresis</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 141. Diaeresis</td>
<td>384</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 142. Synizesis</td>
<td>384-387</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions</td>
<td>387-389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§§ 144-145. The &quot;extra syllable&quot; before the cæsura</td>
<td>389-405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 144. i. Cases of -e</td>
<td>389-398</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. Cases of unaccented terminations ending in a consonant</td>
<td>398-400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 145. Certain final syllables before the cæsura</td>
<td>401-405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i. Consonant +-te, -me, -ne, -re</td>
<td>402</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ii. -ene, -ere</td>
<td>403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iii. -el, -en, -er</td>
<td>403-404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iv. -ve, etc.</td>
<td>404</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>v. -y, -ye</td>
<td>404-405</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>§ 146. &quot;Nine-syllable&quot; verses</td>
<td>405-421</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Additions and Corrections** ... 422-426
INTRODUCTORY NOTE.

The following Observations on the Language of Chaucer's *Troilus* are based on four MSS. A (Campsall), B (Harl. 2280), C (Camb. Gg. 4. 27), and D (Harl. 3943), as edited by Dr. Furnivall for the Chaucer Society. When there is no indication to the contrary, the forms quoted rest on a consensus of these four MSS. in the verse referred to. Indications to the contrary are of several kinds: (a) an express note, either at the foot of the page or in parentheses immediately after the verse-number; (b) a general note as to disregard of variants; (c) the abbreviation "cf.,” which signifies that in the references that follow variants are mostly or altogether neglected; (d) a list of variant spellings (marked “Var.”). In case some word not immediately under discussion has to be emended in order that the line referred to may afford the form registered, the necessary emendation is indicated in a foot-note or elsewhere. In case a line falls within a gap or omission of a stanza or more in B, C, or D, the fact is not noted. The following is a list of gaps in B, C, D.

In B one leaf containing (vv. 7708—91) is missing; 5370—6 not in A.

In C the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wanting 1—70 (cut out), 1037—1169 (cut out), 2843—98 (cut out), 4649—4774 (cut out), 5468—95 (omitted), 5615—5740 (omitted), 6329—98 (cut out), 7076—82 (omitted; two stanzas run together), 8065—end (cut out).

The following single lines are omitted in C; 86 (no gap in MS.), 1701, 2231 (no gap), 2707 (blank line in MS.), 3799 (blank line), 5752 (blank line), 6550 (no gap), 6557 (blank line), 7244 (no gap), 7285 (blank line after 7286).

After 890 D has a stanza not in ABC.

1 A, B, and C in *A Parallel-Text Print of Chaucer’s Troilus and Criseyde* (1881-82); D in Chaucer’s *Troilus and Criseyde* (from the Harl. MS. 3943) compared with Boccaccio’s *Filostrato* translated by Wm. Michael Rossetti (1873–83).

2 See, for example, *wreche* (p. 5, l. 3), note at the end of article *sonne* (p. 7), *tonge* (p. 7, l. ult.), *lady* (p. 9), *wyte* (p. 11).

3 Thus foot-note 1, p. 33, indicates that in 3074 C has *woyt* was *woyd*, but that, after the last word has been changed to *woyd*, the line affords evidence for the form *woyght*. It will be seen that this is in effect but a means of registering corruptions that are easily emended.
Introductory Note.

In D the following passages of a stanza or more in length are wanting: 484—490, 4131—4270 (two leaves gone), 4586—4613 (omitted), 8170—90 (omitted). The following single lines are omitted in D: 148, 1594 (blank line). Vv. 1—70, 498—567, 4859—end, are in a late hand.

Other MSS. than ABCD have been used for purposes of comparison. Those used most were Cp. (Corpus 61) and John's, a collation of both of which by Mr. Thomas Austin was furnished me by the kindness of Dr. Furnivall, and G (Additional MS. 12044), of which Dr. Furnivall lent me a copy. Harleian 1239 (E), 2392, 4912, of which I have had specimens and partial collations, and Durham II. 13, Digby 281, Selden B, 24, Phillipps 8252, of which I have had specimens, have been compared occasionally. For all these collations and specimens I am indebted to Dr. Furnivall.

Rhyme-words are given in the form in which they occur in A, without variants. Exceptions to this practice are signified when they occur.

In citing words from Anglo-Saxon and Middle English in illustration of words or forms from the Troilus, no attempt has been made at anything more than a brief and handy reference, and no implication is intended as to the particular dialect of Anglo-Saxon or Middle English of which Chaucer's word is the descendant or representative. In these references L. means the A-text of Lazenmon, and does not necessarily imply that the B-text has the same form.

In marking elision, apocope, and syncope in the Grammatical Chapter, it has been assumed that ten syllables (or eleven, when the rhyme is feminine) are the normal number, and elision, syncope, etc., have been taken for granted when the preservation of a final or an interior e would make a trisyllabic foot or an "extra syllable before a pause." This is merely for conciseness. There is no intention of maintaining that Chaucer never used a trisyllabic foot or that different slurs do not differ in the degree in which a sound is suppressed or modified. Special sections (§§ 144—5) in the Metrical Chapter deals with the so-called "extra syllable before the caesura." This renders the marking of the caesura in the grammatical part unnecessary; yet the sign \| has often been added to a form when occasion seemed to require.

In registering forms, the following signs, etc., are made use of to indicate the presence or absence of the final e in writing or in sound.

-e (Roman, without a diacritic sign) indicates a final -e pronounced before a consonant (not h) or -e in rhyme.1 In the latter case an j is

---

1 This statement applies, of course, to -e in the word immediately under discussion in any instance. If a fragment of context is quoted, I have not always taken the superfluous trouble to mark what happens to all the -e's.
attached to the verse number. In a considerable number of cases a faulty 
final \( e \) in rhyme is registered without remark if the rhyme-word makes it 
clear that the \(-e\) is not pronounced.

\(-\tilde{e}\) indicates a final \( e \) pronounced either (1) before a vowel or \( h \) (in 
which case the fact that a vowel or \( h \) follows is always made clear), or (2) 
before a consonant (in which case \(-\tilde{e}\) is used merely for emphasis or out 
of caution). In the interior of a word the diaeresis indicates that the 
vowel over which it is placed is pronounced.

\(-e\) (Italic) indicates a final \( e \) written but elided before a vowel or \( h \) (the 
former unless the contrary is indicated). Hiatus is always carefully and 
unmistakably marked.

\(-\epsilon\) indicates a final \( e \) written but not sounded before a consonant (not 
\( h \)). When not final, \( \epsilon \) indicates syncopated \( e \) (and so of other vowels).

\(-\{e\}\) indicates an erroneous final \( e \) written but not pronounced. When 
necessary this is distinguished as \(-\{e\}\),—\(i.e.\) before a word beginning with 
a vowel or \( h \),—and \(-\{\epsilon\}\),—before a word beginning with a consonant 
(not \( h \)); but this distinction is usually superfluous.

\(-[c]\) indicates that the metre requires an \( -e \) (pronounced) at the end of 
a word which is written without \( -e \) in the MS.

\(-[\epsilon]\) indicates that a grammatically justifiable \(-e\) is elided before a 
vowel or \( h \), and is actually not written. This sign is seldom used.

\(-[\tilde{\epsilon}]\) indicates that a grammatically justifiable \(-e\) is not pronounced 
before a consonant (not \( h \)) and is actually not written. This sign is 
seldom used.

When the fact that a word ends in a consonant or any vowel but \(-e\) 
renders it impossible to indicate by any of the signs just explained 
whether the word that follows begins with a vowel or a consonant, the 
necessary information is given either in plain terms or by means of the 
signs (i.) and (ii.). (i.) indicates that the forms that follow occur before 
a consonant (not \( h \)); (ii.) indicates that they occur before a vowel or \( h \) 
(the former, unless the contrary is mentioned). When neither of these 
signs is used, the forms that follow occur before consonants (not \( h \)) or 
in rhyme (indicated by \( f \)) in the places cited. (i.) (ii.) indicates that no 
distinction as to following vowel or consonant is made in registering the 
forms. These conventions are used especially in the case of nouns and 
adjectives that properly or regularly end in a consonant (see §§ 11, 
18, 19, 34, 49), and of adverbs without \(-e\) (see §§ 85, 86, 88, 91): see 
also § 14. In the case of forms as to which there is no possible interest 
in knowing whether a vowel or a consonant follows, no such signs are 
used (see §§ 35—42, 44, 93, 94, etc.).
Introductory Note.

The relations of the Troilus MSS. are complicated. In general the MSS. seem to fall into two groups, the first represented by ABCpG, the second by CEJ. D₁ (the old hand of D)¹ is closely related to C, D₂ (the late hand of D) has much in common with group i., but shows also some relation to C. Phillipps is closely related to D₁. H has close relations with both D₁, Ph. and D₂. There is excellent evidence for contamination in the case of H, and, in general, it must be said that no genealogy for the MSS. of group ii. can be made out that is free from difficulties. I have made many notes on the relations of the MSS., and have even constructed a scheme which seems to satisfy most of the phenomena; but the material in my possession, though considerable, is not sufficient to warrant definite conclusions. I hope to return to the subject later, when opportunity for a complete collation of the MSS. concerned shall offer.

Of the MSS. of group i., Corpus is the best, though it makes some serious omissions. B is often better than A, but the grammatical forms of A usually deserve the preference. Of group ii., J seems to be the best. C is copied from a bad MS., and is full of errors and of corrections. D₁ and Phillipps have an extraordinary number of corruptions, and were evidently written by scribes who had no feeling for Chaucer's verse. Harl. 2392 is a poor MS. and E is apparently but indifferent. Selden, Durham, and Digby are all poor, and Harl. 4912 is far from good.

¹ There are three hands in D: a late hand (1—70, 498—567, 4859—end), and two earlier hands (one writing 3921—4180, the other writing the rest).
COMPARATIVE TABLE OF LINE-NUMBERS IN THE TROILUS.

References are made by verses, and for this purpose the lines have been numbered throughout the poem from 1 to 8232 without regard to the division into books. The following table exhibits, in parallel columns, the numbering here used and the corresponding book, stanza, and verse numbers in Furnivall (Campsall MS.) and Morris (Aldine ed.).

1—1085 = book i. The numbering used in the Observations follows Furnivall's numbering (Campsall MS.) exactly. Morris inserts a stanza (not found in A) after st. 127 (i.e. after v. 889). Hence, beginning with v. 890, one must add 7 to Furnivall's verse-numbers (beginning with st. 128, 1 to his stanza-numbers) to reduce them to Morris's numbering.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>FURNIVALL</th>
<th>MORRIS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Book</strong></td>
<td><strong>Stanza</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1086</td>
<td>II, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1100</td>
<td>3, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1150</td>
<td>10, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1200</td>
<td>17, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1250</td>
<td>24, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1300</td>
<td>31, 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1350</td>
<td>38, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1400</td>
<td>45, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1450</td>
<td>53, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1500</td>
<td>60, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1550</td>
<td>67, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1600</td>
<td>74, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1650</td>
<td>81, 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1700</td>
<td>88, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1750</td>
<td>95, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1800</td>
<td>103, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1850</td>
<td>110, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1900</td>
<td>117, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1950</td>
<td>124, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2000</td>
<td>131, 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2050</td>
<td>138, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2100</td>
<td>145, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2150</td>
<td>153, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2200</td>
<td>160, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2250</td>
<td>167, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2300</td>
<td>174, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2350</td>
<td>181, 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2400</td>
<td>188, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2450</td>
<td>195, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2500</td>
<td>203, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2550</td>
<td>210, 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2600</td>
<td>217, 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2650</td>
<td>224, 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2700</td>
<td>231, 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2750</td>
<td>238, 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2800</td>
<td>245, 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2842</td>
<td>251, 7</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Bk. iv, st. 102 [= iv. 98, vv. 680—686 in Morris], though not in AB, is included by Furnivall in his numbering, and accordingly in the numbering adopted for these Observations (vv. 5370—76).
### Comparative Table of Line-Numbers.

#### Furnivall.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Stanza</th>
<th>Verse of Stanza</th>
<th>Verse</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2843</td>
<td>III, 1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>III, 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2801</td>
<td>7, 7</td>
<td>49</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2892</td>
<td>8, 1</td>
<td>50</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2900</td>
<td>9, 2</td>
<td>58</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2950</td>
<td>16, 3</td>
<td>108</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3000</td>
<td>23, 4</td>
<td>158</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3050</td>
<td>30, 5</td>
<td>208</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3100</td>
<td>37, 6</td>
<td>258</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3150</td>
<td>44, 7</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3200</td>
<td>51, 1</td>
<td>358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3250</td>
<td>59, 2</td>
<td>408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3300</td>
<td>66, 3</td>
<td>458</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3350</td>
<td>73, 4</td>
<td>508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3400</td>
<td>80, 5</td>
<td>558</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3450</td>
<td>87, 6</td>
<td>608</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3500</td>
<td>94, 7</td>
<td>658</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3550</td>
<td>102, 1</td>
<td>708</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3600</td>
<td>109, 2</td>
<td>758</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3650</td>
<td>116, 3</td>
<td>808</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3700</td>
<td>123, 4</td>
<td>858</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3750</td>
<td>130, 5</td>
<td>908</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3800</td>
<td>137, 6</td>
<td>958</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3850</td>
<td>144, 7</td>
<td>1008</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3900</td>
<td>152, 1</td>
<td>1058</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3950</td>
<td>159, 2</td>
<td>1108</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4000</td>
<td>166, 3</td>
<td>1158</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4050</td>
<td>173, 4</td>
<td>1208</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4100</td>
<td>180, 5</td>
<td>1258</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4150</td>
<td>187, 6</td>
<td>1308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4200</td>
<td>194, 7</td>
<td>1358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4250</td>
<td>202, 1</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4300</td>
<td>209, 2</td>
<td>1458</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4350</td>
<td>216, 3</td>
<td>1508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4400</td>
<td>223, 4</td>
<td>1558</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4450</td>
<td>230, 5</td>
<td>1608</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4500</td>
<td>237, 6</td>
<td>1658</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4550</td>
<td>244, 7</td>
<td>1708</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4600</td>
<td>252, 1</td>
<td>1758</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4650</td>
<td>259, 2</td>
<td>1808</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4702</td>
<td>260, 7</td>
<td>1820</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Morris.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Stanza</th>
<th>Verse of Stanza</th>
<th>Verse</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2843</td>
<td>III, 1</td>
<td>1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2801</td>
<td>7, 7</td>
<td>49</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2892</td>
<td>8, 1</td>
<td>50</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2900</td>
<td>9, 2</td>
<td>58</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2950</td>
<td>16, 3</td>
<td>108</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3000</td>
<td>23, 4</td>
<td>158</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3050</td>
<td>30, 5</td>
<td>208</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3100</td>
<td>37, 6</td>
<td>258</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3150</td>
<td>44, 7</td>
<td>308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3200</td>
<td>51, 1</td>
<td>358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3250</td>
<td>59, 2</td>
<td>408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3300</td>
<td>66, 3</td>
<td>458</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3350</td>
<td>73, 4</td>
<td>508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3400</td>
<td>80, 5</td>
<td>558</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3450</td>
<td>87, 6</td>
<td>608</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3500</td>
<td>94, 7</td>
<td>658</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3550</td>
<td>102, 1</td>
<td>708</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3600</td>
<td>109, 2</td>
<td>758</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3650</td>
<td>116, 3</td>
<td>808</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3700</td>
<td>123, 4</td>
<td>858</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3750</td>
<td>130, 5</td>
<td>908</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3800</td>
<td>137, 6</td>
<td>958</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3850</td>
<td>144, 7</td>
<td>1008</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3900</td>
<td>152, 1</td>
<td>1058</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3950</td>
<td>159, 2</td>
<td>1108</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4000</td>
<td>166, 3</td>
<td>1158</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4050</td>
<td>173, 4</td>
<td>1208</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4100</td>
<td>180, 5</td>
<td>1258</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4150</td>
<td>187, 6</td>
<td>1308</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4200</td>
<td>194, 7</td>
<td>1358</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4250</td>
<td>202, 1</td>
<td>1408</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4300</td>
<td>209, 2</td>
<td>1458</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4350</td>
<td>216, 3</td>
<td>1508</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4400</td>
<td>223, 4</td>
<td>1558</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4450</td>
<td>230, 5</td>
<td>1608</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4500</td>
<td>237, 6</td>
<td>1658</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4550</td>
<td>244, 7</td>
<td>1708</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4600</td>
<td>252, 1</td>
<td>1758</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4650</td>
<td>259, 2</td>
<td>1808</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4702</td>
<td>260, 7</td>
<td>1820</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

1. Marked 1460 in Morris, but the error is not continued. Morris's 1470 is right again.
### Comparative Table of Line-Numbers.

#### FURNIVALL.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Stanza</th>
<th>Verse of Stanza</th>
<th>Verse</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5250</td>
<td>IV, 84,7</td>
<td>IV, 588</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5300</td>
<td>92, 1</td>
<td>638</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5350</td>
<td>99, 2</td>
<td>688</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5400</td>
<td>106, 3</td>
<td>738</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5450</td>
<td>113, 4</td>
<td>788</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5500</td>
<td>120, 5</td>
<td>838</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5550</td>
<td>127, 6</td>
<td>888</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5600</td>
<td>134, 7</td>
<td>938</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5650</td>
<td>142, 1</td>
<td>988</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5700</td>
<td>149, 2</td>
<td>1038</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5750</td>
<td>156, 3</td>
<td>1088</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5800</td>
<td>163, 4</td>
<td>1138</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5850</td>
<td>170, 5</td>
<td>1188</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5900</td>
<td>177, 6</td>
<td>1238</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5950</td>
<td>184, 7</td>
<td>1288</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6000</td>
<td>192, 1</td>
<td>1338</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6050</td>
<td>199, 2</td>
<td>1388</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6100</td>
<td>206, 3</td>
<td>1438</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6150</td>
<td>213, 4</td>
<td>1488</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6200</td>
<td>220, 5</td>
<td>1538</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6250</td>
<td>227, 6</td>
<td>1588</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6300</td>
<td>234, 7</td>
<td>1638</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6350</td>
<td>242, 1</td>
<td>1688</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6363</td>
<td>243, 7</td>
<td>1701</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6364</td>
<td>V, 1</td>
<td>V, 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6400</td>
<td>6, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6450</td>
<td>13, 3</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6500</td>
<td>20, 4</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6550</td>
<td>27, 5</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6600</td>
<td>34, 6</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6650</td>
<td>41, 7</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6700</td>
<td>49, 1</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6750</td>
<td>56, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6800</td>
<td>63, 3</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6850</td>
<td>70, 4</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6900</td>
<td>77, 5</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6950</td>
<td>84, 6</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7000</td>
<td>91, 7</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7050</td>
<td>99, 1</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7100</td>
<td>106, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7150</td>
<td>113, 3</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7200</td>
<td>120, 4</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7250</td>
<td>127, 5</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7300</td>
<td>134, 6</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7350</td>
<td>141, 7</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7400</td>
<td>149, 1</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7450</td>
<td>156, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7500</td>
<td>163, 3</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7550</td>
<td>170, 4</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7600</td>
<td>177, 5</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7650</td>
<td>184, 6</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7700</td>
<td>191, 7</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7750</td>
<td>199, 1</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7800</td>
<td>206, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7850</td>
<td>213, 3</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7861</td>
<td>214, 7</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### MORRIS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book</th>
<th>Stanza</th>
<th>Verse of Stanza</th>
<th>Verse</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5250</td>
<td>IV, 80, 7</td>
<td>IV, 580</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5300</td>
<td>88, 1</td>
<td>610</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5350</td>
<td>95, 2</td>
<td>660</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5400</td>
<td>102, 3</td>
<td>710</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5450</td>
<td>109, 4</td>
<td>760</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5500</td>
<td>116, 5</td>
<td>810</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5550</td>
<td>123, 6</td>
<td>860</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5600</td>
<td>130, 7</td>
<td>910</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5650</td>
<td>138, 1</td>
<td>960</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5700</td>
<td>145, 2</td>
<td>1010</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5750</td>
<td>152, 3</td>
<td>1060</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5800</td>
<td>159, 4</td>
<td>1110</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5850</td>
<td>166, 5</td>
<td>1160</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5900</td>
<td>173, 6</td>
<td>1210</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5950</td>
<td>180, 7</td>
<td>1260</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6000</td>
<td>188, 1</td>
<td>1310</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6050</td>
<td>195, 2</td>
<td>1360</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6100</td>
<td>202, 3</td>
<td>1410</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6150</td>
<td>209, 4</td>
<td>1460</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6200</td>
<td>216, 5</td>
<td>1510</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6250</td>
<td>223, 6</td>
<td>1560</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6300</td>
<td>230, 7</td>
<td>1610</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6350</td>
<td>238, 1</td>
<td>1660</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6363</td>
<td>239, 7</td>
<td>1673</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6364</td>
<td>V, 1</td>
<td>V, 1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6400</td>
<td>6, 2</td>
<td>37</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6450</td>
<td>13, 3</td>
<td>87</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6500</td>
<td>20, 4</td>
<td>137</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6550</td>
<td>27, 5</td>
<td>187</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6600</td>
<td>34, 6</td>
<td>237</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6650</td>
<td>41, 7</td>
<td>287</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6700</td>
<td>49, 1</td>
<td>337</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6750</td>
<td>56, 2</td>
<td>387</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6800</td>
<td>63, 3</td>
<td>437</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6850</td>
<td>70, 4</td>
<td>487</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6900</td>
<td>77, 5</td>
<td>537</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6950</td>
<td>84, 6</td>
<td>587</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7000</td>
<td>91, 7</td>
<td>637</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7050</td>
<td>99, 1</td>
<td>687</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7100</td>
<td>106, 2</td>
<td>737</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7150</td>
<td>113, 3</td>
<td>787</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7200</td>
<td>120, 4</td>
<td>837</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7250</td>
<td>127, 5</td>
<td>887</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7300</td>
<td>134, 6</td>
<td>937</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7350</td>
<td>141, 7</td>
<td>987</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7400</td>
<td>149, 1</td>
<td>1037</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7450</td>
<td>156, 2</td>
<td>1087</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7500</td>
<td>163, 3</td>
<td>1137</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7550</td>
<td>170, 4</td>
<td>1187</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7600</td>
<td>177, 5</td>
<td>1237</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7650</td>
<td>184, 6</td>
<td>1287</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7700</td>
<td>191, 7</td>
<td>1337</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7750</td>
<td>199, 1</td>
<td>1387</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7800</td>
<td>206, 2</td>
<td>1437</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7850</td>
<td>213, 3</td>
<td>1488</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7861</td>
<td>214, 7</td>
<td>1499</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Morris counts the signature Le vostre T. as v. 1422; hence the verse-numbers increase by one as indicated.
### Comparative Table of Line-Numbers.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Latin Thebaid argument following v. 7361 is not counted.</th>
<th>not counted.</th>
<th>Here Morris inserts the Latin Thebaid argument as at st. 215, vv. 1500—1511.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7862 ... V, 215, 1 V, 1499</td>
<td>V, 216, 1 V, 1512</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7900 ... 220, 4 1537</td>
<td>221, 4 1550</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7950 ... 227, 5 1587</td>
<td>228, 5 1600</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>8000</strong> ... 234, 6 1637</td>
<td>235, 6 1651</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8050 ... 241, 7 1687</td>
<td>242, 7 1701</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8100 ... 249, 1 1737</td>
<td>250, 1 1751</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8150 ... 256, 2 1787</td>
<td>257, 2 1801</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8200 ... 263, 3 1837</td>
<td>264, 3 1851</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8232 ... 267, 7 1869</td>
<td>268, 7 1883</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1 Morris counts the signature *La vostre C.* after v. 7994 (his v. 1644) as v. 1645; hence his verse-numbers after 1644 increase by one.

[Professor Skeat's edition of the *Troylus* did not appear until this table had been sent to the printers. His numbering corresponds with Dr. Morris's for Book I., and with Dr. Furnivall's for the other books.]
ABBREVIATIONS AND SIGNS.

The Manuscripts.

A : Campsall MS.
B : Harleian MS. 2280.
C : Cambridge University Library MS. Gg. 4. 27.
D : Harleian MS. 3943.
Digby : Digby MS. 281, Bodleian Library.
E : Harleian MS. 1239.
Digby : Digby MS. 281, Bodleian Library.
E : Harleian MS. 1239.
G : Additional MS. 12,044, British Museum.
Hl. (Harl.) 2392 : Harleian MS. 2392.
Hl. (Harl.) 4912 : Harleian MS. 4912.
John's : St. John's MS., Cambridge.
Phillipps : Phillipps MS. 8252.
Selden : Selden MS. B. 24, Bodleian Library.

Miscellaneous.

c (after the abbreviation for a MS. : as, C6, De) : by the corrector.
def. adj. : adjective in the definite construction.
-,-e,-(e), etc. : see explanation, pp. xvi, xvii, above.
f (as in 1643 f) : in rhyme.
n. : neuter in the etymological notes; elsewhere usually nominative.
O. : Ormulum.
P. Pl. : Piers Plowman.
rh. : rhymes with (but a colon is usually employed).
Var. : variant spellings.
9-syl. : a nine-syllable verse (i.e. a verse lacking the unaccented part of the first foot).
(i.), (ii.), (iii.) : see explanation, p. xvii, above.
* indicates the iictus.
|| indicates censura.
† indicates rhymes with.
‡ indicates a word or a verse certainly wrong, either in sense or metre.
§ indicates a word or a verse that may be scanned and makes sense but that is shown by comparison of MSS. to be wrong.
A dot under a vowel indicates that it is suppressed in pronunciation by syncope or apocope.
[ ]] indicates that something which is omitted in the MS. should be supplied.
( ) indicates that something which is written in the MS. should be omitted.
A slur or ellipsis different from the ordinary ellipsis of final weak e is often indicated by italicizing the final vowel of the first word and the initial vowel of the second. Thus,—lady vuto (p. 9), pite on (p. 89), storce it (p. 87).
OBSERVATIONS ON THE LANGUAGE OF

Chaucer’s Troilus.

A = Campsall MS.  B = Harl. 2280.  C = Camb. Gg. 4.27.
Cp. = Corpus 61.

§ 1. Masculine, feminine, and neuter nouns of the n-declension in Anglo-Saxon end in the Troilus in -e.

§ 2. I. Masculine nouns of the n-declension (Child, § 3).

ape (A.S. apa), 2127 f (iape n.).
asse (A.S. assa, O. asse), 731 (-e D).
bane (A.S. bona, bana, L. bone, Lb. bane), 1405 (-ë in C), 4995, 5436, 5569, 6965 f (ban C) (the blood Thebàne, -bàn C).
bere, beere (A.S. bera), 6115 f (stere inf. : leedere); -e, 4622 (-ë or D).
byeleeue (A.S. ge-léafa, L. i-læfe, O. læfe), 6956 f (beleue BCD) (greue inf. : leuee adj. pl.).
bowe (A.S. boga, L. boße, bowe), 208 (-[e] B, bow ò D), 1946 f (bow D) (knowe ind. 3 pl.), 2620.
crede (A.S. créda), 6452 f (Diomede : hede n. heed).
drope (A.S. dropa, L. drope), 934 f (hope ind. 1 sg.); -e, 23.
drynke (A.S. drinca; but also drinc, m., i-stem; L. *b drench, *drinc, *drinke, O. drinne, drinneh, drinuke), 1736 f (synke inf.); -[e], 5437 (-e D); drynk and, 4057 (-e BD). [Cf. drynk[e]ees, § 49, n. 5.]
fere, feere (A.S. ge-féra, L. i-verc, O. fere), 13 f, 4133 f ò B, 4338 f, 5453 f (fer D).

Rhyme words.—cheere (13), dere adj. (4133 B, 4338), spere sphæra (4338), y-fere (5453).
galle (A.S. gealla, galla, O. galle), 5799 f (gall ò D) (falle inf.); -e ys, 7095 f (galles = gall is D) (halles : wallys).
grame (A.S. grama, L. grame), 372 f (gaine ò C, game ò D) (shame), 3870 f (name), 5191 f (game ò D) (blame inf. : shame).
Observations on the Language

hawe (A.S. haga), 3696 f (hane C) (: i-drawe p.p.).
hele (A.S. hélā), 5390 f (heele B) (: fele inf.).

hope (A.S. hopa, L.O. hope), -e, 391 (-e he), 1895, 2392, 2408, 2414, 2418 (hoop D), 2425, 3257, 3268, 5240, 6092 (hepe B, hoope D), 6993, 7048, 7276, 7558, 7561, 7570, 7761 (lone C), 7763, 7801 (hoop D).—hope || the, 1092; -e halt, 6711. [hope B, 2357 D.]


knotte (A.S. cnotta), -e, 4574 B (knot ACD).
lappe (A.S. lieppa, Lp. lappe (= Lr. berm), P. Pl. lappe), 1533 (lap D), 2901 f (lappe C) (: quappe inf.), 3584 f (: trappe n.).
mone, moone (A.S. móna, L.O. mone), 524 f, 1017 f, 1159 f, 2005, 2397 f, 3391 f, 3466, 6638 f, 6740 f, 7011, 7012; -e hath, 4598;
-e o, 7552.

Rhyme words.—to done (1017, 1159, 3391, 6638, 6740), soone (524, 1159, 2397, 6638), bone (1017).

name (A.S. noma, nama, L. nome, name, O. name), 251 f, 542 (Cris-seide D), 870, 876, 880 CD, 895 f, 1069 D, 1847 f, 3108 f, 3109 CD, 3160 f, 3871 f, 5226 f, 6129 f, 6228 f, 6243; -e, 99, 878, 880 AB, 3109 AB, 5819, 7418 (I mene C), 7458, 8049.

Rhyme words.—shame (251, 895, 1847, 6129, 6228), blame n. (3108), to blame (3160), grame (3871), game (5226, 6129, 6228), defame inf. (5226).

nekke (A.S. luceca, L. necke), 2071 (nek D), 5737; -e, 4417 (nek D).
ox(e) (A.S. oxa, O. oxe), -e, 7832 (ox B).

shawe (A.S. scaga), 3562 f (schawe C, sawe D) (: slave p.p.).

skathe (O.N. skaði, cf. A.S. sceadga, scaða, L. scāde, O. skape-leess), 4869 f (schathe C) (: rathe adv. : bathe inf.), 7301 f (: rathe adv.).

stede, steede (A.S. stéda, stéda, L. stede), 1066, 1709 f (: blede inf.), 6669 f (sted D) (: to glede n. : hede n. heed), 7401 f (: nede n. : Diomede). [stedié B, ire, 4545 C.]

stere (A.S. stéora gubernator, stéor gubernaculum), 4133 f (fera B) (: dere); -e, 7004 (-ee B, sterd(id) C, ster D). [Cf. ster[e]les, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—In 4133 stere = pilot; in 7004 in stere = astern.

sterre (A.S. storra, L. storrre, sterre, O. sterme), 175 f (: derre comp.);
-e, 7001.—lodë-sterre, 6595 f (lodis s. C, lode-sterr D) (: werre n.), 7755 f (loode sterr D) (: werre n.)
§ 2.] of Chaucer's Troilus.

tene, teene (A.S. téona, L. teone, O. tene), 814 f, 1146 f, 4068 f, 5458 f (teen B), 6267 f, 6603 f, 8077 f.

Rhyme words.—grene (814, 1146, 6603), queene (814), kene adj. pl. (1146), to sene (4068), I wene indu. (5458), sustene inf. (5458, 6603), i-sene, sene adj. (6267, 8077), shene def. adj. (6267).

tyme (A.S. tína, L.O. time), 155 f (: pryme), 351 f (: lyne inf.), 2074 f (: by me : pryme), 2178 f (: pryme), 2640 f (: pryme), 6833 f (: pryme).—tymé (before consonants), 703, 1057, 1075, 1877 f CD, 2278 AC, 2682, 2806 BC (tyme y-se A, ã se BC; D †), 3950 † A (?), 3350, 3360, 3450, 3738 C (-e ylost ABD, ã lost C; cf. 5945), 4321, 4423, 4437, 4510, 4556, 4917, 4996 (-e † D), 5013, 5786, 5922, 6178, 6274, 6470 CD, 6584, 6713, 6757, 6758, 6767, 7109 BCD (tyme ypassed A, ã passil C (presente † B) D).—
tymé, 1228 (t. that AB, tydě C, tymé † that D), 2296 (t. my AB, tydě by C, tydě my D), 2834 D (t. † be), 3146 † D, 3357 † C, 5986 AB (t. ther), 7111 † C.—tymé (with hiatus), 1305 † AB, 2386 † D, 3472 † D, 7110 † CD; tymé (before h), 1877 † A, 3671 † A, 4501 † D.—tyme (before vowels), 474 ABC, 564, 1305 CD, 1807, 2068, 2278 BD, 2386 ABC, 2537, 2582, 2606, 2806 A, 2828, 2834, 3050 BCD, 3472 ABC, 3697, 3738 ABD, 3914, 4244, 4621 ABC, 4720, 4761, 4996 † D, 5576, 5593, 5945, 6274, 6349 (B †), 6712, 6987, 7109 A, 7110 AB, 7111 ABD, 7199, 7688, 8062, 8167.—tyme he, 2841, 3671 BCD, 4501, 6625, 7043, 7581; t. hem, 6713; by tymé his, 5767 (be t. CD).

somtyme1, 747 AB (-e C † D †),2 1367 (B †), 2586, 3293 (-e [and] A), 4037, 5315, 6273; -e he, 314; -e han, 5967 (-e (to) haue CD); -e, 508 † D, 2972 AB (-e CD).3

tyme in the phrase ofte tyme, 1877 CD, 6833 f C, 7172 (tymes D); -e, 913, 7946 (-es D), 8121 A (oft[e] t. B, ofte tymes D); -e (before he, his, hym, here = her, hath), 1850, 1877 B, 3971, 5823 (-es D), 7939 (-es D); tymé that, 5986 AB (reading doubtful); tymé † hath, 1877 A.

a thousand tyme, 531 f (: lyne inf.); a thousand tyme he, 457 BD (-es A, sythis seyde C); a th. t. here (eam), 4094 (sithiis C, tymes D); sixty tyme a day, 441; a hundred tyme, 4437 C (-es D, sithe A, sithe he B); tweenty tyme he, 6554 (-es D).—an hundred tymès gan, 4202 (-ys C); a thousand tymès selle, 4443 (-ö CD); a

1 In this compound som is variously spelt, but always monosyllabic.
2 Apparently we should read: Ek som tyme it is (i.e. it's) a craft to semë fle.
3 Or, Ye woldë som tymë, etc.
Observations on the Language

§ 2.

th. tymës more, 5488 A (-ē B, -e3 D); a th. tymës mercy, 6162 (-ē B, -ys C); a th. tymës (before vowels), 2174 (-ys C), 3231 (-ys C), so twenty th. t., 3315 (-ys C, -e3 D).—Compare, tymës twye twlue, 6460 (-ē D, B (?) , C (?) ). [Cf. sithe, § 14.]

welcome (A.S. wilcuma, L. wilcune, wulcume, L. b wil-, wel-, wol-come, P. Pl. welcome, welcome), he was wel-come, 6436 f (: i-come p.p.); wel come (as interj.), 6555 f (: nome p.p.); wher shal I sey to yow wel come or no, 5493 A (wel com B, or wheider shal I sey welcomē † or no D).—wel-come my knyght, 4151 (w. my pes † C). [Var. welcome, C 6436 and 6555.]

welle (A.S. wela; but also wiell, m., i-stem; L. welle, L. b wel, O. welle), 873 f, 1263 f, 1593 f, 5807 f, 6215 f, 7693 f (weH D), 7860 f (weH D), 7928 f (weH D); -e, 1926 (wel B), 4315.

Rhyme words.—telle inf. (873, 1263, 1593, 7928), dwelle inf. (1593, 5807, 7693, 7928), veswelle inf. (5807), helye (873, 6215).

wille, wylle, wyle (A.S. willa, L. wille, iwille, O. wille), 125 f, 1316 f, 2687 (wille D), 2773 (wille D), 4769 (willes B, wil[le] D), 6950 f (wille D), 8168 f (wille D). [His wille hath, 7905 C, is an error.]

Rhyme words.—stille adj. (125), stille inf. (1316), spille inf. (6950) Achille (8186).

The form wil (A.S. ge-will, n., quasi jo-stem, common instead of gewile, n. (prob.), i-stem, see Siev. § 262. 2 and n. 3, Cosijn, Aws. Gr. II, 12; L. i-wil, O. will, P. Pl. wil) is common. Sometimes it is impossible to decide between wil and wille).—wil, wyl, (i.) 228 (wille B, will CD), 861 (wille B, wil [sche] C), 1355 (wyH A), 1564 (wille D), 3465 (wille D), 4362 (wille BD), 7720 (wille C, wil [it] A), 8000. (ii.) 1939, 2294, 5175 (wille D).

wone (A.S. ge-wuna, L. wune, i-wune, L. b wone), 1403 f (: some filius); wone to, 7010 (he was † wont(e) D).

wrecche (A.S. wrecche(e)a, L. wreche, L. b wrecche, wreich, O. wrecche), 798 f, 889 f, 1425 f, 1518 f, 1975, 4215 f, 5238, 5291 f, 6106 f, 6251 f, 6684 f; -e, 708, 777 (wreach D, -ē † be A), 805, 4933 (wreich B), 5406 (wreach D), 5500 (-ē se CD), 7068 (wreach D).

1 Confused, as is well known, with wel, adv., and come, p.p.: cf. Icel. velkominn.

2 ABG seem to have yourē willē be; CD read "jif (if) it jōurg (your) willē (wil[le]) be (were)."
§ 3. II. Feminine nouns of the -né declension (Child, § 4).

arwe (A.S. arwe, arewe (mid arewan Chron. 1083; arwan catapullus Aldh. Gl.; see Sweet, p. 281), earlier ærig, earh. L. arwe, Lb. arewe), an arwe, 1726 (a narwe B), 6210.

asce (A.S. asce), 1624 (asshen B, assein C, asshyn D).


blase (A.S. blése, L. Pl. blase), -e, 4846.


dokke (A.S. docce), -e, 5123.

erthe (A.S. erðe, L.O. erðe, Lb. O. erpe), -e, 2850 (erhtè B), 2863 (erthe and [whom] B), 4586 (erth B, erthe þ hath E), 4603 (erth B).—erthe that, 8178 A (erth B). [Cf. ertheles, § 49, n. 5.]

harpe (A.S. hearpe, L. harpe), 731 f (: sharpe adv.), 2116 f (hare þ B) (: harpe inf. : sharpe adv.)

herte (A.S. heorte, L. hoerte, O. heorrte, herrte), 307 f, 792 f, 1987 f, 2016 f, 2064 f, 2181 f, 2372 f, 2717 f, 2940 f, 2989 f, 3578 f, 3746 f, 3789 f, 3843 f (C t), 3913 f, 3940 f, 4025 f, 4213 f, 4340 f (-t C), 4757 f, 4902 f, 4908 f, 5089 f, 5802 f, 5846 f, 6071 f (C t), 6111 f, 6161 f, 6282 f, 6426 f (-t C), 6496 f (-t C), 6564 f (-t C), 6618 f, 7085 f, 7413 f, 7588 f (-t C), 7687 f, 7707 f, 7783 f (-t C), 7857 f, 7897 f. (In many of the above cases D has hert.)—herté (before consonants), 367 ([e] BD), 1693 ([e] BD), 2389 ([e] D), 3881 ([e] BD), 4052, 5338, 6149 ([e] B), 7371, 7563 ([e] B), 7570 ([e] B), 7682; cf. also 228, 502, 599, 606, 749, 1006, 1063, 1664, 1783, 1845, 1894, 1985, 2007, 2016, 2035, 2067, 2193, 2326, 2406, 2411, 2442, 2677, 2885, 2899, 2952, 2969, 3198, 3453 B, 3616, 3642, 3645, 3685, 3730, 3750, 3752, 3830, 3845, 3885, 3911, 3928, 4023, 4120, 4123, 4146, 4191, 4263, 4330, 4391, 4407, 4433, 4486, 4536, 4674, 4981, 5242, 5269, 5361 A, 5871, 5936, 5973, 6079, 6190, 6214, 6192, 6591, 6808, 6816, 7275, 7490, 7552, 7676, 7684, 7694, 7746, 7931, 7934, 8022, 8060. (In some of these cases hert[e] is found in B or D or both. Even A occasionally has hert[e], as in 229, 453, 1652.) [Cf. herteles, § 49, n. 5.]

herté is occasionally found, but in nearly every case a comparison
of MSS disposes of this apocopated form (so in 1759 C, 1941 C, 3189 C, 8022 C). The same is true of herte before a consonant (see, e.g., D in vv. 599, 2193, 2442, 3750, 4391, 5269; cf. also 278 A). The following lines seem to admit of two scansiones:

As muché ioie as herte (hert D) may (myght D) comprehende (herté . . . complende A), 4529 (è may comprende Cp.).

A kynges herté (hert D) semeth bi hires a wreche, 889 (or, herté semeth). (Cf. 4674, especially CD.)

There are no cases of hiatus except such as a comparison of MSS easily corrects. Thus,—herté † is, 1957 A ; herté † alle, 1956 B.

herte, 2456 (-t BI), 2911 (-t D), 2956 (-t D), 3849 (-t BI); cf. 250, 461, 1561, 2186, 2310, 2951, 2987, 3018, 3235, 3475, 3729, 3835, 3838, 4330 B, 4367 A, 5873, 6672, 6711, 6749, 8209. The spelling hert before a vowel is found in all MSS to some extent: see the above list and cf. the following lines, in which A has hert,—

535, 928, 1954, 2014 (C herte).—herte he, 2013 AB¹; 3645 † C, 5572 AB, 7141, 7937; -e hym, 3857 A; -e hath, 6501 (-t D), 7880.—herté happc, 7159 (D ?).

Rhyme words.—conuerte inf. (307, 1987, 6071), peynes, sorwes smerte (792, 3789, 4908, 5089, 5802, 6161, 6541, 7085, 7687, 7793), smerte adv. (4902), smerte pres. and pret. subj. 3 sg. (2181, 2989, 3746, 3843, 5846, 6426, 6496, 7588), pret. ind. 3 sg. (2016) inf. (2372, 4025, 6111, 6282), asterle pres. subj. 3 sg. (7707), sterte, asterle pret. ind. 1, 3 sg. (2181, 2940, 3913, 4757, 6071, 6564, 7557, 7897), sterte inf. (2717, 3789, 4340, 4902, 6018), to-sterte inf. (2064), sterte n. (3578, 3940, 4213, 4757).

howue (A.S. hufe, P. Pl. howue, howue, houe), -e, 3617 (houe C, howe D), 6832.²

larke (A.S. laurwe, P. Pl. larke), 4033 (- [e] B).

[lilie (A.S. lilie), the lilie † (disysyl.) wexith, 942 D (rose ABC).]

lyne (A.S. lyne, P. Pl. lyne), 2262 f (: dyne inf.), 2546 f (: dyne inf.: fyne inf.), 3070 (blyve † D), 7140 f (: fyne inf.); -e, 1061, 3346 (lyne C).

Note.—In 2262 and 3346 a line of writing is meant; in the other instances, a cord or the like. In 7844, where línage is intended, A and B have lînge, D has lîne (lyne † C).

masse (A.S. mæsse, O. messe, P. Pl. masse), 2930 f (: neuere the lasse : passe inf.) [mes : les : passe D].

more, moore (A.S. more ; also moru, f., see Sievers, § 278, n. 1 ; P. Pl. more), 6388 f (moor D) (: forlore p.p. : everemásore).

myte (A.S. mitæ, P. Pl. myte), 3674 f (: lyte), 3742 f (: lyte : white

¹ herte route C is doubtless for herte he r. In D, read hert[e] r. (?) But cf. 5572, where herté seems to have given rise to herte he in AB.

² A alone preserves the right reading. B has houcen, C omny entendit, D ougne, G honte. See Skeat's n. on P. Pl. xxiii, 172, ed. 1886, II, 280.
§ 3. of Chaucer's Troilus.

adj. pl.), 5346 f (: visite inf.: delite inf.). [For nyte, 4445 D, read mot (A.S. mot) with A (moote B, mote C).]

netle (A.S. netele, netle), 941 (nettyl C, nettle D); netle in dokke out, 5123 (nettle B, nettl C, nettl D).


owle (A.S. úle), -e, 6682.

pride (A.S. prýte; also prýt, f.; L. prude, prute), -e, 230, 4643, 4647 (?)

rose (A.S. róse), 942 (lilie dissyl. D), 2341 f (: suppose ind. 1 sg.); -e, 5123, 7207 C.

shet (A.S. scet (M.), scyte (L.W.S.), P. Pl. schethe), -e, 3898 (-e hit = it D), 4412 (9-syl). [Var. B shett; CD schetc.]

side, syde (A.S. side, L.O. side, P. Pl. syde-borde, sydhenche, sydtable), 185 f, 321 f, 3818 (-e BCD), 4308 f (biside D), 4577 f, 4826 f, 5354 f, 5486 f, 5740 f, 6012 f, 6053 f, 6128 f (s(e)yde B), 6947 f, 7062 f, 7115 f; -e, 4896, 7050; -e hym, 3078, 4431; -e here (eam), 3524 (-e [her] D).

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives: gyde (185), hide (321, 5486), chyde (4308), betide (4577, 6128), byde (4826), abyde (5486, 6012). II. Subjunctives: gyde 3 sg. (5354), bytyde 3 sg. (6053, 7115), aspide (aspie + A, aspied B, espied D) prot. 3 pl. sg. † C) (6053). III. Nouns: tyde (5740, 7062), Cupide (6947). [The rhyme with scyde (dixit) in 321 C counts for nothing; scyde is wrong.] (For aside, beside, see § 88.)

sonne (A.S. sunne, L. sunne, P. sonne, O. sunne), 1259 f, 1849, 1866 f, 1947, 1990 f, 2054, 2322 f, 2671 f, 3220 f, 3610, 4306 (sonne Tytan A, but omit to and read sonné Tytan), 4446, 5029 ABD, 7024, 7648; -e, 1852, 3950, 5901, 6094, 6105 ABD, 6911 (forme † C), 7249; -e hym, 4549 (-e † hastith D). [sonné, 5029 † C, 6105 † C.]


Note.—Sonne is the spelling of AB, sunne the usual form in C. D has both forms and also sun (2671 f, 3220 f).

swalwe (A.S. swealwe, swalwe), 1149 (ow † D).

throte (A.S. prote; also protu, f., see Sievers, § 278, n. 1), 1410 (-e † A); -e here (poss. sg.), 4092.

tonge, tunge (A.S. tunge, L.O. tunge), 1315 (-e † D), 1889 f (-e D, tunge(n) A), 3136 f, 5183, 5463 f, 5543, 6358, 6808, 7167 (C †), 7424 f, 7684 (-e † D †), 8157 f, 8159 f; tonge, 1099 AB, 2766 (tung D), 3114 (tong B, tung D), 7926 BD (-e may C, -e † A).

[tung[6]] it †, 1099 D.]

Rhyme words.—tunge p.p. (1889 [tunge(n) A], 7424), songe, y-songe p.p. (5463, 7424, 8157, 8159), to vs yonge (3186), tonge (8157). [AB have usually the spelling tongue; C has usually tunge, D usually tunge or tung.]
trappe (A.S. trappe, O. trapp), 3583 f (lappe n.); trappe dore, 3601 (trap[pe] D).

wodë-bynde (A.S. wudebinde), 4073 f AC (wonbynde † B, woodbynde D) (wynde inf.).

wyke, wowke, see § 8, p. 15.

wyse (A.S. wise, L.O. wise, L. wis, guyse), 81 f, 159 CD (pl. AB), 162 f, 275 f, 336 f, 363 f, 697 f, 952 f, 957 f, 985 f, 1114 f, 1359 f, 1471 f, 1764 f, 1806 f, 2001 f (gyse C), 2149 f, 2548 f, 2631 f, 2752 f, 2785 f, 2897 f, 2912 f, 2974 f, 3079 f, 3298 f, 3618 † f C, 3693 f, 3785 f, 3811 f, 3889, 4129 f, 4310 f, 4390 f, 4436 f, 4516 f, 4639 f, 4660 f (wys A), 4710 f, 4899 f, 5056 f, 5174 f, 5472 f, 5495 f, 5551 f, 6000 f, 6189 f, 7460 f, 7683 f, 7831 f; wyse, 61, 285, 410 ABC, 2006, 2154, 3336 † D, 6127 (guise D); -e his, 3797; -e he, 8197.—

wyse || soth, 3197 AB (-e CD).

Rhyme words.—this wyse sapiens (81), wyse adj. pl. (697, 957, 985, 2001, 3693, 3755, 4390), service, -ise, -yse (81, 162, 336, 952, 957, 985, 1764, 2974, 4129, 4639, 4660, 5056, 5174, 5472, 5495, 7683), sacrifice n. (7831), denyse inf. (275, 1114, 1471, 2149, 2631, 2897, 3079, 3298, 4346, 4516, 4639, 4660, 4710, 4899, 5056, 5174, 5472, 5495, 7460, 7683), denyse ind. 2 pl. (6189), ryse inf. (275, 697, 2912, 3811, 4310), arye inf. (2752, 3785), arye p.p. (2548), arye inf. (363, 2785, 4436), arye ind. 3 pl. (1595), des-, dispise inf. (1806, 4310, 7831), dispise subj. 3 pl. (6000), suffise inf. (3693, 5056, 7460). [wyse ‡ n. (81 D).]

wydowe (A.S. wiodu (old and rare), wido, weduwe, wuduwe, Ps. widwe, N. widua, Sievers, §§ 71 and n. 1, 156.4, L. widewe, O. widewe, widdwe), wydowe (dissyl.) was, 97 AD (wydew B, wedewe C).

Note.—For lowe, see § 8; for rynde, rysshe, sleue, § 9; for bore, sherte, § 15.

§ 4. III. Neuters of the n- declension (Child, § 2).

er, eere (A.S. éare, O. are), 106 f, 725 f, 767 f, 1280 f, 1536 f, 2722 f, 3301 f, 3408 f, 3596 f, 3951 f, 4725 f, 5306 f; ere, 5096.

Rhyme words.—tere timor (106, 725, 767, 1536, 3301, 3596), were pret. subj. 3 sg. (725, 767, 3301, 3408, 3951), there (1280, 3306, 5306), bare feretrum (2722), enery where (4725).

eye, yé (A.S. ége, L. éye, O. eȝe), 272, 453 f, 1386 f, 1488 f, 1989 f, 4188 ‡ E, 4972 ‡ f C, 5060 f, 6318 f, 6811 f, 6917 f, 7264 f; eye, 6442 (eyyn C).

Note.—Eye is the prevailing spelling; ye, which is shown by the rhyme to be Chaucer’s form, is found in 7264 (ABD), 6917 B, 6811 D, 4972 C. Other forms are: in B, eyyhe, 272; eigh, 1386; eigh, 1488; heye, 1989; in C, eyre, 453, 1386; in D, ey, 1488, 5060; ȝhe, 6818, 6442; ȝye, 6917. Height, 1989 A, is an error. Eve occurs in 272 D.

Rhyme words.—compayne ye (453, 6811), folye (453), lye (1386, 5060, 6318, 7264), heighte (l. lyne) (1488), pryce (1488), wrye inf. (1989), y-wrye p.p. (6818), aspye inf. (6917), sl(e)ye adj. pl. (7264). [In 4972 C the rhyme is false,—twye: yé: aweye.]
§ 5. In *lady* (A.S. hlæfdigē, f.) and *pley* (A.S. plega, m.), the final vowel disappears, and in *pley* the *y* unites with the preceding vowel to form a diphthong (Child, § 5; ten Brink, § 211). In *fo, foo* (A.S. ge-fā, m.) an old (A.S.) contraction is preserved (ten Brink, § 211; Sievers, § 277, n. 2).

lady (A.S. hlæfdigē, L. laefdi, O. laffdi), lady (*before vowels and consonants*), 106, 166 ABC, 346, 434, 493, 524 (bodie † D), 1025, 1093, 1164 BD, 1510, 2150, 2177, 2501, 2799, 3797, 3910, 4131, 4327, 5265, 5863, 6112, 6507, 6525, 6581, 6592, 6815, 6820, 6939, 7032, 7235, 7678, 8029, etc.; lady (*before vowels and consonants*), 166 † D, 269, 7879; lady (*before vowels*), 1164 A. [ladi is common in C.]

pley (A.S. plega, m., L. plæye), 6291 f (pleye B, play C) (: weye acc. (way BD, alway † C) : away); pley and, 1790 (e B, play C †); pleye the, 5528 (pley CD).

fo, foo (A.S. ge-fā, sbst. (fāh, fā, adj.), L. ifa, L. fo, ifo), 837 f (wo † B), 1573 f, 1769 f, 2567 f, 2701 (for † C), 4828 f, 5751 f, 6522 f, 6591 f (soo † D); *before vowels*, 485, 1990.

feldēfare, 3703 f BC (feld[e]-fare BC, feldyfare D) (: fare 3 pl.) (cf. Parl. F., 364) is referred to *felofor, m.*, though Bosworth-Toller questioningly recognizes a weak feminine *feldēfare* on the strength of the eleventh-century gloss *clodhamer* and *feldeware*, Wright-Wülck., p. 287, 17. The M.-Eng. form has perhaps been influenced by popular etymology (quasi *feld-gefara*).

Note.—*For wyndowe, see § 15.*

§ 6. Anglo-Saxon masculine and neuter vowel-stems that have a final vowel (-e or -u) in the nominative singular, preserve this vowel as -e in the *Troilus*.

For convenience the following nouns are thrown together in a single alphabetical list: (i.) masculine jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—ende, leche; (ii.) neuter jo- (ja-) stems with long stem-syllable,—ende, wyte (for ernde, see § 7); (iii.) neuter wo-stem,—bale; (iv.) masculine i-stems with short stem-syllable,—ache, hate, hegge, lye, mete, piwe; (v.) neuter i-stem with short stem-syll ble,—spere; (vi.) masculine u-stems with short stem-syllable,—suwa, wudu. Masculine nomina agentis in -ere (which properly belong under i.) and abstract nouns in -spe (which
Observations on the Language

properly belong under iv.) seldom (nouns in -scipe perhaps never) retain -e: see § 7. For wil, wilde, see § 2. For awe, see § 15.

ache (A.S. ece, m.), -e, 5390 (ach B, eche C).

bale (A.S. bealu, m., L. balu, bale), 5401 f ( : fyngres . . . smale: pale pred. adj. sg.).

ende (A.S. ende, m., L.O. ende), 966 f, 1303 f, 1876 f, 2320, 2333 f, 2580 f, 2960 f, 3047 f, 3234 f, 3304 f, 3457 f, 3544 f, 3611 f, 3773 f, 4601, 4655 f, 5777 f, 6062 f, 6242 f, 6838 f, 7257 f, 7421 f, 7636 f, 7917 f, 8032 f; ende, 1345, 5498, 7756; end[e], 6862 f AB (-e CD). [Cf. endeles, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—I. Infinitives: bende (2333), wende (2333, 2580, 3457, 3544, 3611, 4655, 5777, 6242, 6838, 6862, 7917), blende, blynde, cæcoæ (2580, 3047, 6062), sende (3304, 5777, 8032), shende (6242, 7257, 7421); H. shende ind. 1 sg. (7656), subj. 3 sg. (966), wende com (1303), com (2333), comus (3047, 7257), aedis (2960 ABC), to-rende subj. 3 pl. (1876), sende mittas (3544), mittat (3773, 6862).

-ere: see § 7.

ernde. The best MSS. have erand. See § 7.

hate (A.S. hete, m. (cf. hatian), L. hate, hete, O. hete), 1798; -e, 3870; -e he, 477.

hegge (A.S. hege, m., cf. hecg, f. (!), hecc), He loketh forth by hegge by tre by greue, 7507 (hegg B, hegis C, hegges D, hege G).

leche (A.S. leéce, leéce, m., L. leche, leche, O. leche), 857 f ( : I beschehe), 1656 f (; preche inf. : speche), 2151 f (lece A) (; seche petunt : speche), 2667 f (; teche inf.), 7900 f ( ; speche : seche inf.); -e, 2664.

—lechecraft, 5098.

lye (A.S. lyge, m., N. lyg); And for a soth they telle that lyie is, 6069 C ( : amphibologyis), but read twenty lyes with ABD.

mete (A.S. mete, m., N. met(t), L.O. mete), -e, 907 (mone C, brede D), 5437 ABD ( -e C ); -e his, 485.

pilwe (A.S. pyle, pilwe, m.), Saue a pilwe (pilwo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) I (om. C) fynde nought (G inserts elles) tenbrace (to embrace CG, to embrace D), 6587.


sone (A.S. suuu, m., L. sune, sone, O. sune), 226, 1401 f ( : wone custom), 7027 ABC; sone, 2, 261, 1187, 1793, 3012 (some B, soné D, thoghe D), 4650 (son D t), 6375, 6451, 7953, 8109.—Tydeus sone that doun descended is, 7877 ABDG. (sone t, 7027 D.)

Note.—Verses 226, 7027 disprove ten Brink's remark (Chaucer's Sprach und Verskunst, §§ 260, 261) that sone never occurs as a dissyllable in the interior of a verse in Chaucer. Further examples of dissyllabic sone will be given from the Legend of Good Women in an article by Professor J. M. Manly, which is soon to appear. (Cf. also Child, § 12.)

1 Later in the line read drynk[e] ABC (dryntke D).
spere (A.S. spere, n., L. spero, sper, P. Pl. spere, sper), 3216 f (spere B) (: swere juro); spere, 2512 (spore A), 4702; spere † for, 1286 C. wede (A.S. (ge)wede, n., L. a wede, b wede, O. wade), 177 f, 4273 f (-ee-D, wode † B), 4561 f.

Rhyme words.—dredge n. (all), brede n. (177), rede end. 3 pl. (4273, 4561).
wil, wilt, see § 2.

wode (A.S. wudu, m., L. wude, wode, O. wude), 32f, 4273 f (-ee-D, wodef B), 4561f. Rhyme words. drede n. (all), bredc n. (177), rede i'.

wil, wille, see 2.

AY ode (A.S. wudu, m., L.O. wude, wode), hasehvode thoughte, 6868 f (hastow B); from hasehvode || there, 7537; hasehvode shaken, 3732 AB (-e is CD); -e, 2417. [Var. B -wodde; D -woode.]
vyte (A.S. wite, n., L.O. wite), 2733 f (: lite adj.), 3581 f (: byte inf. :

a lyte). [Var. C wite, wyzte.]

§ 7. Exceptions to § 6.
A.S. órende and stèle, neuter jo-stems, lose their -e in the Troilus.

The final -e of the termination -shipe (A.S. -scipe, masc. i-stem) is not sounded and sometimes not written. The final -e of the termination -ere (A.S. -ere, jo-stem) is not sounded except in rhyme.

erude. Instead of erude (A.S. órende, n., jo-stem, L. ærne, erne, O. errnde), the best MSS. have (h)erand in the only place where this word occurs,—erand was, 1157 (herand B, errné D).

stel (A.S. stèle, style, n., L. stel, dat. stele) shows no -e,—of stel, 1678 f (-e BD) (: every del : wel(e) adv.), 4987 f (stiel B, stèle D) (: vpon the whiel)1; of stel and, 3322 (stiel B, stèle D); trewe as stel in, 7194 (stele B, stele D).

-ere (A.S. -ere, L.W.S. also -re, m., forming nomina agentis):
èndere, 5163 (-er C, yeundir D).
fynedere, 1929 (-er BD, fingir † C). [ére (!)]. hárpour (A.S. hearpere), before vowel, 2115 (ha[r]ppour B).
hòldere, 1729 (-er D, -yn † C).
ledère (A.S. lédere ?), 6116 f (-dér D) (: yfere : bere ursus).
louére, 510 (-er D), 512 (-er AB), 2431 (-er BD), 4634 (-er BD), 4640 (-er BD), 5862 (-er BD); louère, 20 (-er D †), 1115 (-er BD), 4228 (-er E), 4570, 5233 (-er D, -ers B); -ére hastow, 4301 (-er B, oone † D); lòuére I, 1097 (-er BD); -ere he, 2130 (-ére seyde C, -er he D).
lyere (A.S. léogere), 3151 (-er BD); lyere, 3157 (accent uncertain A; -er BD, [e][e]re C).
mákere, 741 (-er BD; in A read [y]beten), 4279 (-er BD)2; -ére yet, 8150 (-er BD).

1 C † om. of. 2 Thow rakel nyght there God makere of kynde.
mòrter (A.S. mortere, m., from Lat. mortarium, cf. Pogatscher, §§ 259, 287), m. that, 5907 (percher C).

rèdere (A.S. rëdere), 6633 (-er D).

Note.—The following verses, though they prove little or nothing, are curiously illustrative of the ending -ere in the fourteenth century:—

Jak Chep, Tronche, Jon Wran, Thom Myllere, Tyler, Jak Strawe,
Erle of the Plo, Rak to, Deer, et Hob Carter, Rakstrawe;
Isti ductores in plebe fnere priores.—Versus de tempore Johannis Straw.

Wright, Political Poems, I, 230.

-shipe, -ship (A.S. -scipe), termination forming abstract nouns:

felawship. And wher that (om. BCD) hym lyst (liste B, lest C) best felawship (felaweschip B, felauschepe C) kan, 1291.—felawshipe, 3245 (-shyp B, -ship D †, felauschepe C).

frendship (A.S. fréondscipe, L. freonscipe), (i.) 2872 (-schipe B, -shippe D). (ii.) frenship, 1456 (-schipe B, -schepe C, frendship D); frendship, 6498 (frendschip B, frenschepe C, frendernship D), 7985 (-e D, -schip B, frenschepe C); frendship hane, 1325 (-e D, frenschepe C), 2047 (frenship B, frenschepe C, frendship D); frendship here (dat.), 6548 (frenchep B, frenschepe C, frendernship to D).

lordship (A.S. hlafordscipe), lordship yow, 2505 (-chip B, -schepe (I) 3ow C); -ship hym, 2921 (-schepe C, -ship was † D); -ship ouer, 4598 (lorschip B, lorschepe C, lord(e)schipe E).

worship (A.S. woorşcipe, L. wuorşcipe, wöršcipe, O. wurršhipe),

w. and, 46 (-ship B, -shipp D), 82 (-schipp B, -schepe C).

§ 8. Anglo-Saxon feminine nouns that have -u in the nominative, end in the Troilus in -e throughout the singular (except in the genitive).

The following list includes (i.) -ā- (ā-) stems with short stem-syllable: answare, care, fre, lawe, love, save, shame, talē, wyke (originally n-stem); (ii.) abstract nouns in -u, -o, corresponding to Gothic abstracts in -ē and usually indeclinable in the singular: brāde, elde, helē, hēte; (iii.) feminine u-stem with short stem-syllable: dōre. For more, throte, see § 3. [For gere, see § 43, n. 3.]

answere (A.S. andswaru, Durh. ondsuere acc., L. an(đ)-swere, answare, O. anndsware, -swere); ànswere, 69 (-er B, aanswer D), 72 (-er B), 2245 (-er B), 7786 A (C 1); -er D)1; ànswerp yow, 2210 (answerp † 3ow CD); ànswerp hym, 5556 (answer to † B, answerp

1 Of wich in effect hire answere was this C.
him C, answer him D); answers, 2139 (ans(e)were B, answer(d) D), 5820 (-er D).\footnote{\textit{Answers} and is possible in AB, \textit{answer} and in D.}

brede (A.S. bredu, L\textsuperscript{a}. brede, L\textsuperscript{b}. brede), 179 f (wede n. : drede n.), 530 f (lede inf. : drede n.), 8020 f (Diomede : hede n. heed).

care (A.S. caru, L.O. care), 505 f, 550 f, 587 f, 612 f, 660 f, 1016 f, 1192 f, 2085 f, 4407 f, 4891 f, 5124 f AB (\textit{vb. CD}), 5194 f f (fare AB), 5241 f, 6230 f, 6383 f, 6417 f, 6600 f, 6698 f f B, 6699 f AC\textsuperscript{D} (fare B), 7112 f, 7321 f, 7511 f, 7731 f (car D); care, 1862 f D; care hym, 3908.

Rhyme words.—in the snare (505, 7112), Pandare (550, 587, 612, 5124 (?)) AB, 5241, 7511), fare n. (550, 1016, 2085, 4407, 6230, 6417, 6698 B, 6699 AC\textsuperscript{D}, 7731), wel-fare (4891), ye fare ind. 2 pl. (1192, 6600, 7321), inf. (4407, 5194 CD, 5241, 6383, 7321), bare adj. (660, 1192, 4891), spare inf. (4417).

dore (A.S. duru ; cf. dor, n. ; L.O. dore, dure), -e, 180 (-e † vudir C), 3540, 3590, 5014 (C †); -e he, 4894; -e hym, 2033.—dore (before a pause), 3526, 3587 (dore † C)\footnote{In A read \textit{layen}.}, 3601 (trap[pe] dore D).

elde (A.S. ieldu ; also ield ; L. ælde, æld, O. P. Pl. elde), 1478 ([e], C), 1484 ([e] D, olde C); -e, 6031 (age D).

fare (A.S. faru, L. fare, fare, uore, P. Pl. fare), 551 f, 1018 f, 2086 f, 2229 f, 3447 f, 3595 † f B, 3948 f, 4408 f, 5194 f AB, 6229 f, 6416 f, 6698 ACD, 6699 † f B, 6870 f, 7729 f (far D); welfare, 4890 f; a faré carte, 7525 f (a soory † c. D); welfare, 7722 AD (wêl-fare † and C); fare he, 5582.

Rhyme words.—stare inf. (2229), Pandare (3447, 3948, 6870), fare inf. (5194 AB). For the other cases, see care, above.

hele (A.S. hélu ; also hiel, -e, f ; L. hele; O. hele), 1792 f, 2835 f, 3163 f, 7959 f (all four : dele inf.) ; -e, 461, 2848, 7722 (osé † C), 7766.—hele honour, 6104 ABD. [Cf. heleles, § 49, n. 5.]

With 

With 

With 

With 

With 

With helé swych that but ye yeuen me

The samé hele I shal noon helé haue, 7778-9.

hete (A.S. hétu ; also héte, -an, f ; L. hate, O. hate), 971 f, 2027 f (herte † C), 5173 (heete B, herte † C), 6245 f, 7470 f, 7602 f, 8124 f.—For hete (hote B) of cold for cold of hele I deye, 420 (for cold of hete for hele, etc. C).


lawe (A.S. lagu ; also lah, n. (?) and laga, -an ; L\textsuperscript{a}. laze,\textsuperscript{b} lawe, O. laȝhe), 223 f (dawre inf.), 996 f (dawre inf. : awe), 5280 f (awe : guawe inf.) ; -e, 238, 4590 (law B ; E †); -e han, 2878 (e have D).
loue (A.S. lufu; also lufe (nom. not W.S.), -an, weak fem., see Sievers, § 278, n. 1, Cosijn, Altw. Gr., II, § 33, Platt, Anglia, VI, 176; L. lufe, loue, O. lufe), 231 f (above), 925 f (loue amo), 1933 f (loue amo), 3718 f (above), 3866 f (shoue p.p. above), 8191 f (above), 8205 f (above).

Of loue (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse there are but four certain examples:

Han felt that louë dorste(e) yow displesse, 27 (dorste B; D ?).

It semeth not that louë doth yow\(^1\) longe, 1631 (semyth me not C).

Louë that with an holsom alliaunce, 4588.

Louë that knetteth lawe of companye, 4590 (D (!); louë that endythyth C).

To which is probably to be added
And to the God of loue thus seyde he, 421 (seyd he D).

In 8132 we have apparently a verse of nine syllables, though a very disagreeable one:

Of his loue I haue seyd (seyd(e) B) as (that D) I kan. (Of course it is possible to read 4588 and 4590 as 9-syl. lines; cf. 1585.)

In

Louë ayens the (om. C) which (-e C) who-so defendeth, 603, and

Louë hym made al prest to don hire byde, 4824,

we have to choose between nine syllables and hiatus.

Note.—The other cases of louë (dissyllabic) in the interior of the verse are without doubt scribal errors. Thus,—196 + AD (-e of), 200 + D (-e and), 234 C, 242 + C (-e hath), 249 (?) + D (-e have), 400 + AD (-e is), 436 + C, 500 + D, 663 + D (-e hym), 677 + CD, 921 + D (e of), 1144 + D, 1182 + A, 1542 + D (e in), 1588 + C (e I), 1607 + D (-e he), 1978 + CD, 2007 + CD, 2182 + C (D !), 2589 + D (-e is), 3014 + D, 3859 + D, 4170 + E, 4604 + E (-e ought), 4987 + C, 5147 + CD, 6294 + D, 6296 + C, 6314 + C, 6844 + D, 7596 + AD.

loue (before vowels), 196 BC, 200 ABC, 237, 400 BC, 401, 571, 584, 612, 698, 899 ABD, 902, 972, 991 ABC, 1005, 1020, 1104, 1111, 1112, 1124, 1182 BC, 1208, 1331, 1394, 1456, 1464, 1477, 1542 ABC, 1635, 1662, 1764, 1827, 2160, 3564, 4608 ABC, 4987, 5077, 5147, 5243 + CD, 5340, 8232, etc.—louë he, 353 + C, 388 (B ?), 1607 AB; -e his, 484 ABC; -e hem, 31 B (him A = hem), 1875; -e hath, 879 AB, 960 ABC (D !); -e hadde, 304, 663; -e how, 1752; -e halt, 4606; -e hire (l), 1986 A.

louë, 206, 255, 308, 353 ABD, 384, 402, 436 AB, 443 + C, 518, 523 ABC, 622, 646, 711, 744, 810, 864, 1118, 1129, 1147, 1181, 1182 + D, 1477, 1588 AB, 1759, 1789 (e D), 1823 AB, 1866,

\(^1\) Cp. inserts not here. 9-syl. verse in ABC(D !).
1912, 1950, 2007 ABC, 2251 ABC, 2285, 2309, 3014 AB, 4103, 4433, 4586, 4587, 4590 C, 5243 AB, 6234 ABC, 6296 AB, 6314 ABD, 6844 ABC, 7418 AB, 8039, 8052. The old-face figures indicate lines in which louë may be read if one chooses to admit the extra syllable before a pause (usually the principal caesura). Thus,—Blyssyd be loue / that kan thus folk conuert, 308; In loue / for which in wo to bedde he wones, 1147.

luf occurs once;—Of vertu rote of luf fyndere and hed, 1929 A (lust BC, fynder of lyst D). [Cf. lufsom, 6828 AB (louë- D), 7274 (louë- CD)].

sawe (A.S. ság, L. sagæ, sææ, P. Pl. sawe), 6401 f (gnawe inf.). [sawæ †, 3562 f D, see shawe.]

shame (A.S. scamu, sceomu, secamu, O. shame), 252 f, 374 f, 868 f, 896 f, 1440, 1730 f, 1848 f, 2922, 2931, 3479 f, 3969 f, 5192 f, 5258 (e B, iapæ † in C), 6130 f, 6227 f; -e, 642 (e by † D), 2370, 2376 (speche CD), 2585, 2867, 3091, 3619, 4412 (schamë red D); -e his, 107 (e falsenesse C).

Rhyme words.—name n. (252, 296, 1848, 3479, 6130, 6227), game (868, 1730, 3969, 5192 D, 6130, 6227), grame (374, 5192 ABC), blame inf. (5192).

tale (A.S. talu, L.O. tale), 2631, 1393 C (pl. ABD), 2278 f (smale adj. pl.), 2651 C, 2707 (line om., C), 4036, 4077 f (nyghtyngale), 4245 (take † C), 7395 CD (tales A; B †); -e, 14, 1303 (talk † was C, tale † was D), 1344 BCD (tales † is A), 1390 ABC, 2690, 3456 (e₂ † A), 3611 A (e brought BC, e₂ † is D), 4507 (e was D), 4789, 5324 AB (e newe C, thes † tidinge D), 5328. [tale † to, 1390 D.]

wyke, wowke (A.S. nom. wiuu, wuuu, orig. a fem. n-stem; oblique cases in -an occur, see Siev., § 278, n. 1, Cosijn, Altws. Gr., II, § 33; L. wike, O. wuke, P. Pl. wok, weke, wyke), wyke, 1515 f (syke inf.), 2358 f (weke BD, wyeke C) (: pyke inf.); wowke, 5940 (wouke C, wooke D), 6855 (wouke C, wooke D). [Cf. ten Brink, § 35. A.]

§ 9. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable take in the Troilus a final -e (perhaps derived from the oblique cases) throughout the singular, except in the genitive (cf. Child, § 16; ten Brink, § 207).

The following list includes: (i.) pure æ- (ö-) stems,—(a) bene, bere, bote, broue, chyste, gloue, halle, halue, helpe, lene, lode, mede

1 Supply [for] in C.
Observations on the Language

(A.S. mód), myle, reste, rinde, rode, sole, sole, snare, sorwe, sole, stowene, stownde, strete, throwe, while, wounde, yndhe (originally i-stem); (b) filthe, highte, lengthe, murtle, [routhe,] sleyghte (O.N. sleygd), slouthe, strengthe, trouthe, wrathe; (ii.) jā- (jē-) stems,—blysse, egge, helle, hire, keye, lysse, -nesse, skethe, speche,¹ synne, wrecche¹ yerde; (iii.) wā- (wō-) stems,—mede (A.S. mǣd), rowe, trewe; (iv.) i-stems,—bone (O.N. bón), [byrthe,] dede, glede, hyue, mynde, nede, quene, sighte, tyde, vence. "Sleue (A.S. slēf, slīf) belongs either to the jā- or to the i-declension; the history of rysshe (A.S. risc, etc.) is not satisfactorily determined.

Note.—For convenience soule and steuene are included in this list. Some of the nouns under i, b show in Anglo-Saxon a by-form in -n (cf. also scote). For pryde, see §3. For hegg, see §6.

bene (A.S. béan, P. Pl. c bene), 4009 f (: mene ind. 1 sg. : clene adj.), 6720 f (: mene 3 pl.). [Var. B beene.]
bere (A.S. béér, bér, L.O. bere), 2723 f (: era), 5525, 5845 f (ber D) (: manere), 5870 f (C †, ber D †) (: yfere adv. : dere adj.). [Var. B beere.]
blysse, blisse (A.S. blīs, bliss, L.O. blisse), 623 f, 3023 f, 3184 f, 3546 ([se] D), 2 4063, 4114 ([se] D), 4164 ([se] C, blyssyd † A), 4465 f, 4499 ([se] D), 4870 (D †), 3 5985 (iøy C), 6759, 6911 f (blys C), 6913 f (blys C, hisse † D), 7021; blysse, blisse, 1934 (blys, biys [se] which † D), 1970 (D †), 1974, 1976, 2152 (blis C), 4026, 4248, 4558 (blis C), 5497 (iøy C), 5498 (blys C), 5912 (iøy C †), 6969 (blys C). [Var. D blis or blys in the lines marked by old-style figures.]

Rhyme words.—wysse inf. (623), kysse inf. (3023, 6911, 6913), lysse n. (3184), mynse inf. (1465), blyssy n. (6911, 6913).
bone (O.N. bón, bén, f., A.S. bén, O. bene, L. bone), 1020 f, 4730 f, 6957 f.

Rhyme words.—mone moon (1020), to done (1020, 4730), soone (4730, 6957). [Var. B boone.]
bote (A.S. bot, L.O. bote), 763, 1430 f (boot D), 2464 f (bete † C, boot D), 7035 f, 7609 f, 7690 (but † C); -e, 832, 2903, 4050 (boot B), 5276, 5401 (? e † on C), 5921; -e hym, 352. [Cf. boteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—vnderfote (1430), rote (1430, 2464, 7609), soote adj. (7035). [Var. BD boote.]
browe (A.S. brú, gen. brúwe), 204 f (: to loken Rowe).
byrthe, birthe, birthe (cf. A.S. ge-byrd, f., n., ge-byrd, f., Siev.,

¹ See Kluge, Nominate Stammbildungstheorie, §113.
² Supply [For] in A, [im] in D.
³ Supply [in] in D.
§ 9. of Chaucer's Troilus.

§ 267, n. 4, O. birde, P. Pl. "burth, burthe), byrthe, 3559 f (th B, burthe C, birthe D); birthe, 5501 A (birth D, [my] burthe B); burthe hym, 6572 (byrthe B, bur[th] C, birthe D).

cyste (A.S. cest, W.S. ciest, cyst, P. Pl. e cheste), -e, 7731 (cheste CD).
dede (A.S. déd, déd, L. dede, O. dede, dæd-bote), 93 f, 1187 f, 1427 f, 3133 f, 4143 f, 5286 f (nede A), 5641 f, 5893 f (dred e † C), 6003 f, 6234 f, 6413 f, 6837 f; -e, 3271, 3895 (dred e † C), 5643. [dede, 4615 f C, is an error; read dy3t.]

Rhyme words.—rede ind. 1 pl. (1187), 3 pl. (3133, 5641), inf. (93, 1187, 6837), arede inf. (6234), nede n. (1427), dede pred. adj. pl. (3133, 5286, 5893), dred e n. (93, 6003, 6234, 6413), lede 1 sg. (6003), womanhede (4143, 6573).

egge (A.S. eeg, L. mid egge), 5589 f (: abregge inf.).

filthe (A.S. fyld), -e, 3223 (-e † and D, felthe C), 6240 (fölye it † C, filth D).

glede (A.S. glôd, P. Pl. glede), 4999 f (: fede inf.), 6666 f ABC (: hede n. heed : stede steed).

gloue (A.S. glôf, but also foxes glôfa, weak), -e he, 7376.

halle (A.S. heall, hall, L. halle), 2255 f (haH D) (: calle infe.), 3698 f haH D) (: alle pl. : falle p.p.), 5394 f (: alle pl. : falle inf.).

halue (A.S. healf), in byhalue and on. . . halue: (a) byhalue (A.S. be healfe), on myn (my BD) byhalue, 2543 (bi-B, be-C); on his byhalue which, 2819 (on his half † with C, on his halue that C, on his half which D). 1 (b) on . . . halue (A.S. on healfe, O. o . . . halfe, cf. L. an his halue), on myn h., 5607 f (vn my behalue D) (: salue n.).

Note.—The adjective half may be seen in 3186, 3345, 3481, 4921, 5927, 5970 (hal † C, halfe D), in phrases with a, the, and this. The plural appears in halue goddes (= demigods), 6207 (half[e] C, halfe D).

helle (A.S. hell, L. obl. O. helle), 786 f, 872 f, 1190 f (heH D), 1981 f (-H D), 3434 f, 4300 f, 4442 f, 5374 f C (-H D), 6202 f, 6216 f, 6360 f, 6575 f (-H D), 7759 f, 7859 f; -e, 859 (-H D), 1521 (-H D), 2850 (-H D), 7739.

Rhyme words.—welle n. (872, 6216), inf. (5374, 6575), telle inf. (872, 1190, 1981, 3434, 4442, 6360), ind. 3 pl. (786, 7895), dwelle inf. (4300, 5374, 6202, 6360, 7759), ind. 3 pl. (3434), subj. 2 sg. (786), selle inf. (1400, 4442), vsnswelle inf. (6575). [Var. holle, 786 B.]

helpe (A.S. help, L. help, dat. -e, O. hellpe), helpe to, 695 AC (help D, -e? B); -e the, 5954 (help B); help to, 2531 (-e C, he[1]pe B, help † of D); help yet, 672 (-e † sumwhat C); help do, 795 (-e †

1 Line 2819 is unmetrical in D and a poor 9-syl. verse in C. B is nonsense. C and Cp. read: On his half whiche (which Cp.) that soule vs alle sende.
D, helpe C); helpe, 2709 A (-p B); help (bef. vowels), 18 (-e BD), 1003 (-e C), 4455 (-e CD), 4765 AD (-e B)\(^1\), 6221 (-e CD), 7390 (-e CD). [helpè † more, 2540 C (-es ABG, help to D).]

Note.—The interjectional help! (see 1047) was no doubt originally an imperative, though such passages as "Gentleman. Help, help, O, help! Edgar. What of help?" (King Lear, v. 3, 222) show that our modern feeling that this help is a substantive is of long standing.

highe (A.S. héahsūn, héhśu, hiehsūn), 7190 f (heighte B, hyȝte C, hight D) (: myghte, myght, might pret. 3 sg.).

hire (A.S. hyr, L. hure, P. Pl.\(^ab\) huire,\(^c\) hure, hueyre), 4787 f (here C), 5168 f (here AC, hir D); -e, 334 (C †).

Rhyme words.—on fire, a fire (on ferre C) (4787, 5168), desire ind. 1 sg. (5168).

hyue (A.S. hyf), 6018 f (heu C) (: dryue inf : blyue adv.).

keye (A.S. caȝ; also (rarely) caȝe, -an, Pet. Chron. keie, P. Pl.\(^b\) keye), 6823 f (kay C, key D) (: aweye : pleye inf.).

kynde (A.S. cynd, n., but usually ge-cynd,f. (later n.); late A.S. ge-cynde, n., ge-cyndu, -o, f., see Sievers, § 267. b and n. 4; L. icunde, dat. cunde, O. kinde), nom., 2459 ([e] D), 4572 f; of, 238 f, 972 f, 1455 f, 1947 ([e] D), 2528 f, 3150 ([e] D, kyng † A), 4279 f, 4563 f, 4607 f, 5080 (be kyndé C), 7825 f; out of, 5798 f; in, 254 f (adj. † C), 3176 f, 3745 f, 5527 f; by, 5113 f, 6739 f.—kynde, nom., 4468, 7192.—kyndé the, nom., 5758 AB (é † wrought C, nature † D).

Rhyme words.—bynde inf. (238, 254, 4279, 4607), ind. 3 pl. (5527), vnbynde inf. (4572), wynde inf. (254), subj. 2 sg. (4279), fynde inf. (972, 2528, 3176, 3745, 4563, 5113, 5227, 6739), ind. 1 sg. (5798), ind. 3 pl. (7825), mynde n. (1455 [mende C], 3176, 6739), rynde (5798). [Var. C kende, 1455; D kynd, in the lines marked by old-style figures.]

lengthe (A.S. on lengé; also, lengu, -o, f.), 1347 f BD (lenghthe A, lenthe C), 7854 f (lenthe C, length D); -e, 4917 (lenghe B, lenthe C), 5807 (lenthe A, lenthe B, leue † C, length D), 6343 (lenght B, length D), 8020 (lenthe B, lenthe C, [of] the lengh D). (Rhymes only with strengthe.)

leue, leeue (A.S. leaf, L. leue, leaf, O. lefe), 1819 f AB, 2387 f, 2621 (-e BCD), 2743 f, 2806 f, 3067 (-e D), 3401 f, 3436 f, 3464 f, 6020 f, 6441, 6843 f, 6845, 6856 f, 6863, 6974 f, 7378 f, 7448 f; -e, 1294, 1681, 2545, 2719 (leue † B), 2774, 3051, 3458, 3525, 5392; leue home, 126 A (-e and BCG Cp.). [leue † went, 126 D.]

Rhyme words.—byelee, bleue manere (1819 AB, 3461, 6020, 6843, 6856), rene inf. (2743), rene (by-reme) subj. 1 pl. (2806), to-creue inf. (6974), leue relinquo (7448), eue, eue (2387, 3401, 3436, 6843, 6974, 7378).

---

1 Read among[es] AD, among[s] B.
lode (A.S. lād, L. lod-eniiht, O. lade), lodē-sterre, 6595 f (lodis C),
7755 f (loode D).
lore (A.S. lār, L.ᵃ lære, lare, leore,ᵇ lore, O. lare) 645 f, 754 f, 1083 f,
1650 f, 2426 f, 3085 f, 6385 f, 6690 f, 7099 f; -e, 1482.
Rhyme words.—more adv. (1083), the more advd. (645), no more adv.
(754). I kan nomore (6690), routh more (1650), more n. acc. (2426),
pred. adj. sg. (3085), euerymore adv. (6385), sore adv. (754, 1083, 1650,
3085, 7099), sorwes sore (2426), yore adv. (6690). [Var. B loore.]
lysse (A.S. liśs, liss, L. (obl.) P. Pl.ᵃ lisse), 3185 f (lesse B, lisse C)
(: yn blysse).
mede (A.S. méd, L. O. P. Pl. mede), 3257 f (: nede n. : drede n.);
-e, 1508.
mede (A.S. méd, méd, gen. méde, médwe, L. (dat.) medewe), 156 f
(: rede adj. pl. : rede lego), 1138 f (: rede adj. pl. : sprede inf.).
murthe (A.S. myrgS, myrS, L. murS), 3557 f (: byrth A, byrth B,
burth C, birth D); myrthe †, 7740 C. [Var. B myrthe; D
mirthe.]
myle (A.S. mǐl, L. O. mile), 6766 f (: while : bygile inf.).
mynde (A.S. ge-mynd, f., n., O. minde), of, 365 f; yn, 1456 f (-d D),
3173 f, 4348 f, 4385 f, 4680 f, 6736 f; to, 1606 f (-d D), 1687 f
(-d D); out of, 5579 f, 5963 f, 6999 f, 7805 f, 8058 f; acc., 5335 f,
3772 ABC; -e, acc., 3963; yn mynde he, 733 (-d D), 3914
(-d D).
Rhyme words.—fynde inf. (365, 3173, 4348, 4680, 5963, 6999, 8058),
subj. sg. (5579), ind. 3 pl. (6736), wynye inf. (1687, 4385), vnbynye
inf. (5335), kynye n. (1456, 3173, 6736), vnkynde (4650, 6999, 7805),
by-hynde (1606). [Var. C mede.] 
nede (A.S. nēd, méd, nŷd, nēd, nēol, L. nēd, nede, O. ned, acc. dat.
nede), 772 f, 863 f, 1428 f, 3259 f, 3296 f, 3308 f, 3331 f, 3388 f,
3548 f, 3570 f, 4067 f, 4736 f, 4808 f, 5286 f, 5768 f, 6194 f,
6220 f, 7389 f, 7403 f; nede (before conëmant), 128 AC (-ed † B),
2617 (A † B †), 2638 (-e C), 3266 † C (-es AB, -is D), 3984; -e,
4480, 5696, 5697 (A †), 6699 ABD, 6949 ABD, 8221.—nede to,
886, 4853 A (-e CD; B †); -e || there, 1799 (-e wher D); -e ||
sestow, 2888; -e was, 4630; -e ful, 4797 † C (-e he (!) † D †;
-e were, 6170 † A (!).)—nede were it (=wer't), or nede were it,
4773 AB (cf. 6170 A). [2891] [Cf. nedeles, § 85; nede, -es,
§ 91.]
Rhyme words.—spede inf. (772, 863, 4736), blede inf. (863), proceæd inf.
(3259), ind. 3 pl. (inf. † D) (4808), for-bede inf. (3308), subj. sg.
(3548, 6220), bede inf. (5768), bredë inf. (7899), drede n. (772, 3259,
3311, 3548, 3570, 4736, 6194), dede n. (1428), dede pred. adj. pl. (5286),
mede nede (3259), hede n. hē d (3308, 4607, 6220), Diomede (7389, 7103),
stede stede (7400).
Observations on the Language

-nesse, termination (A.S. -nes, -nis, -nys, late -nisse, L. O. P.Pl. -nesse).

besynesse, bysynesence, 795 f
besynesse, 1035 f, 2295 (-nes[se] D) 2, 2401 f,
-nesenne, 3007 f, 3086 f, 3205 f, 4241 f E, 4255 f (besines C), 4452 f
(besynes C), 6150 f (buxsonnes C).
bitternesse, 639 f (bet- B, bittyr- C), 3657 f, 5506 f; -e, 4062.
brotelnesse, 8195 f (bri^tilnes D).
corsednesse, 639 f (bet- B, bittyr- C), 3657 f, 5506 f; -e, 4062.
derknesse, 18 f (derke- BD)
-nesesse, 3 o6 f (distresse F), 4962 f (derkesesse B, derknes C).
drerynesse, 701 f, 964 f, 5563 f.
dronkenesse, 1801 f (dronkenes C, drunkenesse D).
falsnesse, 107 f (falsenesse BC).
fieblenesse, 1948 B (feblnisse C, feblenes D, feblesse A).
gentilnesse, 7980 f D (gentilesse ABC).
-gentilesse, 25.)
gladnesse, 19 f 22 f (gladde- B), 615 f, 1790 f, 2848 f (gladde- B),
-nesesse, 2889 f, 3008 f (gladde- B), 3622 f, 4038 f, 4057 f, 4086 f (-nes C),
-nesesse, 4242 f (-nes C), 4289 f, 4357 f (-nes C), 4568 f, 7956 f; gladnesse,
640 C; -nesse, 4155 (-e C, -e yif D).
goodnesse, 991 f, 2849 f (goode- B);
-nesse, 116 f (gode- B).
hardnesse, 2339 f.
heuynesse, 566 f, 1719 f; -e, 4618.
heuynesse, 24 f, 655 f, 963 f, 3849 f, 4039 f, 4241 f (-nes C, besinesse E),
-nesesse, 4288 f, 4767 f (wrecchidnes D), 5025 f, 5464 f, 5563 f
(dreynesse C), 5745 f, 5929 f, 6503 f, 6984 f, 7154 f (-nes C),
7577 f.
holyynesse, 560 f.
holtwhynesse, 8172 ([the] hòlugh- B).
kyndenesse, 5382 f.
lustynesse, 3019 f.
rudenesse, 6151 f (reudenes C, rud[és]nesse D); -e, 6339.
secrenesse, 1928 (sekyrnes C, sikernesse D, sekirnesse G).
selynesse, 3655 f, 3667 f, 3673 (-es] D).
shrewedynesse, 1943 f (sh(e)rewded- B, shrewed(e)nes C, shrewdéné,
esse D).
sikè, sykènèse, 2661 f (sik- CD), 5507 f (sekè- B, sek- C); syknessè
lest, 489 (sikè- B, sek- C); syknèse, 4055 f (sek- C, sijk- D).
siker-, sykernesse, 3824 f (sikèr- C), 4085 f (sekinres C), 4157 f,

1 Old-style figures indicate that D has -nes.
2 But of hire bysynesse (-es Cp.) this was on.
3 Scansion uncertain.
§ 9.

of Chaucer's Troilus.

4355 f; -nesse, 1858 (sekenes C), 6174 (sekenes C). [Cf. secrenesse.]
sothfastnesse, 5742 f (soth(e)- D).
swetânesse, 1036 f (swett(e)nesse B), 2886 f (swenienesse † B), 3021 f (swett(e)- B); -nësse, 4061 (perh. nëssé in Δ); swëtânesse haue, 638 (swët(e)nesse han B, swëtânesse a C).
vñliklynesse, 16 f.
wikked-, wykkednesse, 992 f (-yd- BD, weked- C), 5656 f A (corsed- B, cursed- D).
wildernesse, 6207 f.
wilfulnesse, 793 f.
witt(e)nesse, 6212 (wittënesse BCD); wytnesse, 3102 f (witt(e)- B).
woodenesse, 3636 f (vwood(e)- B), woodenesse, 4224 f (woo(n)d(e)nesse B, wood(e)nesse J E); -nesse, 4900 f.
worthi-, worthynesse, 567 f, 642 f, 961 f (-nes C), 1246 f, 1263 ([se] D), 1789 f, 1926 f (-nes C), 4158 f, 4451 f (-nes C), 4631 f (-nes C), 6148 f (-nes C), 6330 f, 7080 f, 7928 ([se] D, Ñ the C), 8192 f; -nesse his, 4392 f; vnworthynesse he, 2166 (on- C).
wrecchednesse, 1371 f (-nes C), 4629 f (-nes C), 6402 f (wreched(e)- B, wreched(e)nesse C); -nesse, 3223 f (wreched(e)- C); wrechedidnesse, 4767 f D (heuynesse AB).

But:

buxsomnesse †, 6150 f C; gladnesse † ho, 2891 D; goðnnesse † herye, 4514 D; noblennesse †, 8194 f D (noblësesse AB); witnes of, 5403 A (-nesse BCD).

See also the variants in the preceding list.

A.S. biternes, biternys; dreorinys; druncennes; gladnes; godnes; hâlignes; heardnes; hefignes; sócenes; swëtënes; ge-witnes; wódëns inf. (7154), blesse subj. sg. (7577).

Rhyme words.—Nouns in -nesse rhyme principally with each other; but the following rhymes also occur,—distresse (615, 639, 641, 1801, 1943, 2330, 2886, 3086, 3102, 3205, 3824, 4055, 4057, 4288, 4289, 4629, 4631, 4767, 4962, 5025, 5382, 5464, 5506, 5563, 5742, 5745, 6330, 7080, 7956), accessse (2491, 2661), gentlesse (1246, 1789, 1790, 3007, 3008, 4255, 7956), largesse (4568), provessse (1719), richesse (6330), noblesse (8192), godresse (6207), herdesse (655), presse n. (560), lesse, lasse adj. sg. (701, 793, 5464, 6984), plus. (6207), I gesse ind. (655, 691, 992, 1371, 1801, 1943, 4568, 5565), gesse, gyssse inf. (3824, 4085, 4086, 5565), dresse inf. (1719, 6402), redresse inf. (3849, 5929, 6402, 6503), expressi ind. 3. pl. (7154), blesse subj. sg. (7577).

queene, quene (A.S. cwén, cwúн, L. quen, quene, O. even), 699 f,

1 In C read wortly[n]esse.
2 In Δ supply [here].
759, 817 f, 2772 f (the quene † elyne C?), 2788 f, 5900 f, 6256 f, 6375 f, 7258 f; -e, 2641 (quen C), 2799, 6009 (quen C).

Rhyme words.—y-seene adj. (699), sene adj. (7258), tene (817), grene (817, 2788, 6375), susteyne (-tene) inf. (2772), shene adv. † (5900), shene adj. def. (6256), wene n. (6256), † elyne⁠¹ adv. (6375). [Var. D quene.]

reste (A.S. rest, rest, L. dat. reste, O. reste), 183 f,² *600 f, 1845 f, *1996 f, *2029 f, *3066 f, 3767 f, *3808 f, 3887 f, *3973 f, 4277 f, *4360 f, *4441 f, *4522 f, *5243 f (rest B); 5781 f (rest† C), *5949 f, 6107 (-[e] D), *6264 f, 6299 f, 6881 f, 7370 f, 7384 C [-[e] D, bedde AB), 7468 f, 8098 f ([vn]to r. A), 8112 f; -e, 4274 (-t B, nest† D); -e hym, 8036 (-t B). [rest †, 330 f C⁶ (lyst AD, lest B).]—vstripe, 5541 f, *7930 f, *7967 f. [Cf. resteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—the beste (3767, 3887, 5541, 5781, 5949, 6264, 7967, 8112), the alderbeste (4441), my beste (600), breste subj. 3 sg. (600), breste inf. (4277, 5243, 6299, 7370, 7930), moleste inf. (5541), keste (kyste) pret. ind. 3 sg. (3973, 4360), lest (lyste) pret. ind. 3 sg. (188², 1996³, 3066³, 3073, 4522, 6881, 7468, 8098), lyste pres. subj. 3 sg. (1845¹, 2029, 3808, 3887), the worthieste (1845). [best adv. (330 C⁶).]

rode (A.S. ród, L.O. rode), 8223 f (roode BD) (: Strode nom. pr.: good[e] phr., garde † A.).

rote, roote (A.S. rót, O. rote), 1433 f, 2463 f (a root? D), 7608 f; -e, 1929 (root(a) B, rote † fynder D). [Cf. roteles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—bote A.S. boé (1433, 2463, 7608), vnderfote (1433).

routhe, ruthe (2441), reuth(e) (4924) (not in A.S.; fromed from the vb. reouwen, rewen, A.S. hréowan, on the analogy of other abstract nouns in -th; cf. O.N. hrygg₃ and hryggva; L. rouxe; P. Pl.⁵ routhe, reuth,⁶ reuth(e), 582 f, 769 f, 1434 f, 1574 f, 1649⁶, 1749 f (rowrthe † B), 2092 f, 2224 f, 2365 f, 2441 AB, 2587 f, 2964 f, 3737 f, 4353 f, 4924 (ruth † D), 6138 f, 7152 f, 6271 f, 6335 f, 7363 f, 7462 f, 7748 f, 7950 f, 8050 f; -e, 1608 BD, 2355, 2460 (-th B), 6244, 6989. [⁶ e † on, 1608 A, l. -e vpon (mercy † C).] [Cf. routheles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—slothé (2092, 2224, 2587, 3737, 7950), vntrouthe (7462), trouthe (all the rest). [Var. B rowthe; BC rewthe; C reuth(e).]

rowe (A.S. rāw, réw, P. Pl.⁷ rowe, by rewe), by r., 2055 f (row D) (: lowe adv.: throwe inf.).

¹ clere ABG Cp. Durham MS., clene Phillipps MS. 8252, clene John's MS., shene D Selden MS. B. 24. (C cut out.)
² The asterisk indicates that C has no -e; old-style figures indicate that D has none.
³ Perh. subjunctive.
⁴ lyst A (: the worthieste).
⁵ "In rest," the reading of C, is clearly wrong.
⁶ Supply [ne] in D.
⁷ Old-style figures indicate that D has trouthe.
rynde (A.S. rînde, but a pl. rîndan occurs), 1727 f (rynd D) (: byhydro : 
fynde inf.), 5801 f (: kynde n. : fynde ind. 1 sg.).
rysshe (A.S. rîsc, f. weak forms also occur; P. Pl. rûscâ, rûyshe),
4003 f (ryshe B, rîscâ D, rîcâ † C) (: fyyshe inf.).
salue (A.S. sealf, O. salðfe), 5606 f (: on myn haloie).
scole (A.S. scœl, see Sievers, Beitr., I, 488, but scœlu, Chron. 816 ;
L. in scœle, P. Pl. scœle), -e is, 634 (: tolys : folys).
shethe (A.S. sceð, L. dat. sceð scour, see scour, O. dat. shepe), out of ... 
shethe he, 5847 (sheth D, schede anom C).
sighte, syght[e] (A.S. gesihθ, L. siht, dat. selhte, i-sihθ, etc., O.
sihθe), nom., [e] trewely, 1713 AD (e BC); acc., [e] fle, 1795
ACD (e B); acc., sighte, 294 f (syȝth C, sight D) (: lyghte inf.).
acc., [e], 4974 f AD (e B) (: eyen bryght[e] (e D) : lyght[e]
inf. (e BD)); for, [e] ye 1, 1754 ABC (D †); from ... sighte,
6998 f (-t CD) (: myghte pret. ind. 3 sg. : lyghte inf.); with sighte,
2380 f (-t CD) (: myghte pret. subj. 3 sg.).
sight, (i.) acc., 5375 f CD 2 (: knyȝt C, sighte pret. ind. 3 sg. D).
(ii.) by, 1787 (acc. D, seyth C); vpon, 7735; in, 5603; nom.,
forsight, 5623. [of that sight † that, D 3338.] [Var. C syȝt,
sicȝte; D sȝt.]
sleue (A.S. slêf, L.W.S. slýf, but slýfan pl. occurs as a variant in
Benedict.-r., ed. Schröer, p. 89), 6065 f (: preue inf.), 7406 f
(: releue inf.).
seleughte, sleughte (O.N. skéegð, L.pl. slehþe, P. Pl.pl. sleigðe, e
sleithe), 2597 (-[e] BC, -[e for] D), 6158 (seȝt[e] C, sleughtes D); -e, 6121
(-t D, flyȝt † C), 6123 AB (sleyȝt C), 7136 (sleight D). [Var. B
sleughâte; C sleȝeȝte.]
slothe (A.S. slèwð, L. slauȝe), 2044 f, 2093 f, 2221 f, 2585 f, 3738 f,
7947 f (-th D); -e, 1371, 3777 (-th D).
Rhyme words.—routhe (2093, 2221, 2585, 3738, 7947), trouthe (2044, 2221,
2585, 7947).
soné (A.S. sneår̩, but also sneare, Sweet, 4), 507 f (sware † B) (: care
n.), 663 f (: care n. : bare pref. adj. sg.), 7111 f (: care n.).
sonde (A.S. sund, sond, L. sonde), 7735 f (: in honde); -e, 3334
(-d BD, [or] soun C). [in goddes sonde, 4207 D, is error for
hond.]
serwe 3 (A.S. sorg, sorh, L. sorhþe, serwe, O. sërþhe), 390 (E †),

1 "Right for the firste syght[e] ye parde."
2 This stanza is not in AB.
3 Old-style figures indicate that D has sorow (before vowels, sorwe); an asterisk
indicates that B has sorwe.
Observations on the Language

485 f ABC, 527 (-ow B), 563 C, 665 (pl. BD), 706 (sorowe B), 860 f, 945 f, *1491 f, 1930, 1951, 2049 f, 2184 f, 2594, 2608 f (sorwyn C), 2694, 2955, 3147 (-es AB), 3189 † A, 3715 (-[e] B), 3730 f, 3900 f, 3928 (sorwe dissyll. D), 3935 (-e D), 4312 f, 4369 (-[e] B), 4760 f, 4816 C (pl. ABD), 5033 (-[e] B), 5091, 5094 (-[e] B), 5133 (-[e] B), 5199 C, 5422 (-[e] B), 5446 (-[e] B, -yn C), 5465 (-e † to C), 5568 ABD, 5587 (-[e] B), 5590 BC (pl. AD), 51 6107 f, 6278 f, 6376 f, 6499 C (pl. ABD), 6667 D (pl. ABC), 6628 † C, 6629 C (pl. ABD), 6652 f, 6769 f, 6813, 6923 ACD (-es B), 7017 f, 7049 f, 7070, 7086 f (destresse † B), 7238 f, 7308 f, 7649 (C †), 7695, 7888 f, 8026 f.—sorwe, I (sorowe B), *108 AC, 530 (-owe BD), *579, 582 † A, 641 (-ow ne D, -we or † in C), *712, 3640, 3742 (so[r]w B, sorw(is) C, sorow at D), *3810 (-e hire C), 3932 (sorwe D), 4527, 4759, 5021 AB (-owe D). *5171, 5436 (-e † of C), 5438 † C, *5458, 5482, *5498, 5503 (sorw D), *5541 (wo C), 5561, 5586 (-e † for D), 5743, 6226 (-e 3e B, -e that C), 6380, 6480, (-e pese? C, D dub.), 6540, 6561, 6712, 6821 (-yn † C, -e † vpon D), 6895 (-e doun C), 6921, 6976, 7559 (-es † and B), *7605, 7927 (yn † of C), 7930 A(l)BC (-e † for D), 8102, 8107, 8144; sorwe he, 7012 (-e † on-to C), 8089; -e hym, *7405 AD (C †).—sorwe[ë] doubleth, 5565 AB (-e CD). [sorwe † to, 5092 AC, 5465 C (-e AB); sorwe gan, 546 C (-owe D), read wo; sorow, 705 † D (pl. AC, -es? B), 3747 † D (pl. ABC); sorwë † of, 5791 C; sorwyn † brynge, 3768 C.] [Cf. sorwful, -w[ë]ful, § 49, n. 3.]

Rhyme words.—morne (everywhere), to borwe n. (2049, 2698, 8026), borwe inf. (485, 7086).

soule, soewe (A.S. sawol, gen. sawle, sáule, L. saule, O. sawle), 47 (B †), 1853 (hert[e] † D), 2944 (D †), 3768 AB (-[e] D), 4343 (D †), 4967, 4979, 5134, 5361, (-e ful C, herté A), 5836, 6026, 6061, 6155, 6216 (-e synke CD), 6685, 6942 (-e † me? D), 7913.—So that his soewe herc sow[ë] (soule BC, soewe D) folwen myghte, 5849.—soule, 2723 (soul D, -ë broug C), 3187 (soul D; C †), 3433 (soul D), 4161 (-ë brought E; C †), 4441 (-ë † to D), 5438 (sorwe † C), 6058 (soul B, -ë † schal CD), 6362, 7035, 7386 (-ë † vp C). [soule † she, 7079 D.] [2819 (f), see p. 17, foot-note.]
speche (A.S. spréce, sprée, L.W.S. spée, L. spæche, speche, O. speche), 702 f, 884 f, 1142 f, 1333 f, 1582 f, 1657 f, 2154 f, 2506 f, 3237 f,

1 All four MSS. defective (sor C).
2 AC corrupt.
3 In B supply [i].
4 AB too short; C †; D apparently right.
5 soule I-brought AB, soul y-brought D (cf. 4161).
6 soewe-is A, soul-is B.
steuene (A.S. stefn, stemn, L. stef(o)ne, steuene, O. stefne), 4565 f
(neuene B) — (heuene).

stounde (A.S. stund, L. stunde, O. stund), 1060 f (-d D), 1079 f
(-d D), 4537 f (-d D), 4738 f (-d D), 5287 f, 7818 f, 7865 f (7866 f C);
stoundēmele (A.S. stundmēlum), adv. -e, 7037 ABD (stornyal † C).
[stound, 5256 † D.]

Rhyme words.—seuche inf. (702, 884, 7161, 7494, 7898, 8079), ind. 3 pl.
(2154), subj. 2 pl. (8217), eche inf. (702, 884, 4352, 6470), preche inf.
(1142, 1582, 1657, 6136), beche inl. 1 sg. (1333, 2506, 3237, 3593,
4179, 4352, 5117, 5813, 6751, 7494, 7973), inf. (3426, 4628, 6470, 7218),
inv. sg. (8162), teche inf. (6136), leche (1657, 2154, 7898). [Var. BC
spechee.]

streth (A.S. strengðu, strengð, L. stren(þ)e, strene, O. strennþe),
1345 f (strenghtē B, strenthē C); strengðhe, 7853 f (streventhē C,
strength D). (Both rhyme with lengðhe, lengðhe.)

strete (A.S. strêt, strēt, L. stræte, stre, stræt, O. stræte), 2271 f,
2312 f, 4723 f, 5591 f; -e, 5288; -e he, 1701 (line om. C).—stretē
sc, 1697 (-e † tho D); -e lokyngē, 2100.

Rhyme words.—ete pret. ind. 3 pl. (inf. D) (2271), y-bete p.p. (2312),
grete def. adj. (2312), grete adj. pl. (4723), trete inf. (4723), swete voc.
(5591), beke inv. pl. (5591).

synne (A.S. synn, L. dat. acc. sunne, O. sinne), 824 f (-n D), 1937 f
(-n C), 3755 f (-n CD), 5423 f, 6244 f (-n C); -e, 556.

Rhyme words.—inne in (824, 1937, 3755, 5423), wynne inf. (824, 6244), I
ynne ind. (1937), twynne subj. 1 sg. (5423).

throwe (A.S. þrag, L. prowe, O. þrayhe), 1772 f (throw D), 2740 f,
5046 f, 7824 f (trowe B).

Rhyme words.—iowe adv. (1772), knowe inf. (2740, 7824), overthrowe inf.

trouthe, trouthe (A.S. tréowð, tréowðu, L. tróuðe, O. trówþpe),
450 † D, 584 f, 770 f, 1409 (-e] B), 1435 f, 1575 f, 1750 f,
1927, 2043 f, 2223 f, 2366 f, 2588 f (-th B), 2962 f, 3624 f, 3805
(-e † y D), 4354 f, 6139 f, 6153 f, 6272 f, 6334 f, 7364 f, 7749 f,
7949 f, 8042 (-e] D), 8049 f; -e, 676, 691 (-e † wolde C), 899

1 trouthe plyght A, -e I plighe (i.e. i-pleight) B, -e y-pleight D, trouthe plyt C.
Observations on the Language [§ 9.]

(-th B), 1 988, 1047, 1054 (D †), 1245, 2 1364, 1591, 2168 (-th B), 2282, 2447, 2975 (-th B), 3005, 3478 (-th B), 3834, 3953, 4071, 4139, 4228, 6311 ABC, 2 7418 ACD, 7521, 7777 (hertes † pete C), 7798, 7980, 8034 (-th B), 8070, 8141; -e here (poss. sg.), 2771 (-th B); -e here (dat.), 5107 ABD; -e he, 8039; trouthe † hold, 2168 D; trouthe the, 1255 (heed D); -e but, 831 (-e C) (cf. 2771 † B, 6311 † D, 7418 † C). — vntrouthe, 7461 f (ontrueth e C, vntrouthe D); -e, 3826 (-th BD, ontrueth e C); -trophe, 7811 (-trophe BD, ontrueth e C). (Old-style figures indicate that D omits -e.)

Rhyme words.—routhe (all but 2043), slouthe (2043, 2223, 2588, 7949). [Var. BC treunthe; B trouthe, throuth; D trueth.]

trouwe, trewe (A.S. trôw, cf. also trûwa), trouwe, 5974 f (trewe CD) (: in muwe (mewe CD)); trouwe, 5976 (trewe C, treus † be D); trewe, 4621 ABC, 4720 (trew B, trews D).

tyde (A.S. tíd, L. dat. tide, O. tid), 947 f ( [t]yde C) (: abyde inf.: hide inv. sg.), 5739 f (: syde), 7063 f (: side).—meltid || that, 2641 (uncel(i)-ted B, melë † that C, om. † D); tid but, 2824 AC (tyd B, -ë † lost D); tyd that, 1228 C (tymê A, tymë BD).

wene (A.S. wén, f.; also wêna, -an, m., Gn.; L. wene, buten (whuten) wene, O. wên, wiputen wên), withouten ony wene, 6255 f (: shene adj. def.: queene).

while, whyle (A.S. hwîl, L. while, O. whil, while), 328 f, 718 f, 1353 f, 1592 f, 2768 f, 2892, 3618 f (wyse † C), [3919 † f CD], 3920 f, 4663 f, 4922 f, 5366, 6764 f, 7245 f, 7638 f; -e, 2684, 2941 (whil(y) and A), 3292 (whiche † B), 3336 (wise † D), 5781, 7291; -e he, 3380 (Ther while he AB, The while he CD) [, 7289 D (l. wight)]; while || which(e), 3277 AB (-ë which C, -[ë] that D).

Rhyme words.—snyle inf. (328, 1592), bygylle inf. (718, 1553, 4663, 4922, 6764, 7245), ind. 3 pl. (7638), wyle (718, 1553, 3920), gyle (3618), affyle inf. (2768), myle (6764). [Var. B. quhyle, 5781, quyle, 6764.]

Note.—As adverb,—whil (without sounded -e) (O. whil) : cf. 468, 536, 3016, 5167, 5339, 5745, 5925, 6048, 6326; for while, cf. 315 AB (whilies † C), 536 D, 5167 D, 5339 D, 6326 D; while he, 5745 BD.—536 C, 6048 D, 6326 A, should be emended so as to keep whil.

wounde (A.S. wund, L. O. (obl.) wunde), 858 f (-d D), 1081 f (-d BD), 1241 f (-d D), 4539 f (-d D), 5257 f, 5289 f, 7866 f (D †; 7865 † f C).

Rhyme words.—gounde n. (858, 7866), stounde (1081, 4539, 5257 † D, 5289, 7866), bounde p.p. (858), y-founde, founde p.p. (5257 ABC, 5289), the secunde (-on-) (1241), abounde inf. (1241). [Var. C. wonde.]

wrathe, wratthe, wraththe (A.S. (N.) wrað(ð)o, L. wráð[e, wraððe, O. wrāppe), 6054 (wreth[e] B, wrethe C), 6510 (wreth[e] BD, 2 In C insert [ψ]. 3 Read ad[le] (athlon) in 1245 CD, 6311 ABC.
wrethe C)¹; -e, 7323 (wraht B, wrethe C, wret D), 7619 (wrethe C, wraht D), 8163 (wraht BD); -e hast, 933 (wrothe D, wrethe of Chaucer's Troilus.

wreche (A.S. wréc ultio, miseria, L. wrecche, O. wreche), -e, 1869 (-ë † is D), 7253 (wrecch D; C †), 7259.

Note.—In 1869 wreche = misery; in the other two cases it = vengeance.

yerde (A.S. gerd, W.S. gierd, gyrd, L. 3erd, O. 3errde), 740f (yerd D), 1239f (-d D), 2512f (yrde D), 3909f (jerd D); -e, 257 (wand † that D), 2979 (-e † eke D).

Rhyme words.—answer(e)de ind. 3 sg. (740), ferde subj. 3 sg. (740, 1239), herde ind. 3 sg. (3909), subj. 3 pl. (2512). [Var. BCD 3erde.]

youthe (A.S. geoguS, Ps. inguS, L. 3u3eS0), 975f (juutlio BCD) (: kouthe subj. 3 sg. : nowthe).


I. The following list includes such nouns (including "gerunds") in -ynge as rhyme with an infinitive in the Troilus. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case. D almost always lacks -e in this ending, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of -e. Minute varieties of spelling are also disregarded.

calkulynge (kalkelyng C, calkelyng D), 71 (: brynge).
compleynynge, 4903 (: sprynge).
comynge, 3801 (: brynge), 6866 (-g C) (: synge).
helpynge, 853 (hel[l]pynge A) (: synge).
konynge, 2943 (: brynge).
sobbynge, 5796 (wepynge C) (: brynge).
tarynge, 7137 (: brynge : arguynge ptc.).
tellyng (-e B), 743 (in his counseyl tellyng) (: srynge).
tydynge, 2036 (: synge).
wytynge, 1321 (wet- C) (: ryngge : lynynge ptc.).

II. Here follow all the other cases of nouns in -ynge in rhyme. Where no note is added, the rhyme-words are other nouns in -ynge; an asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a present participle (or participial adjective) in -ynge; an asterisk and an old-style verse-number indicate that one rhyme-word is a noun in -ynge, the other a present participle.
byfallyng (-e B), 5680 f.
ccheryshynge (cheryshynge B, -isyng C, -isshing D), 6196 f.
cheterynge (chit- B), 1153 f.
compleynynge, *1645 f.

¹ That half so loth yowre wrath the (wret B, wrethe C) wolde (wold B) deserve.
comynge, 3038 f.
deyinge, 572 f (de[y]inge B).
doyng (-e B), 1119 f (: thyng D).
dwellynge, *304 f.
festenynge, *6818 f (feestynge B, festyng C, noon † thing D).\(^1\)
forseýnge, 5651 f.
guerdonynge, 1477 f (-g CD).
gynnynge, *377 f ((by)gynuyiig D).
langwysshynge, 569 f (-guissyng C).
 louynge, 1476 f (-g CD).
lyuynge, 197 f.
preynge, 571 f (-g C).
semynge, *284 f.
shewynge, 5678 f (sh[e]w- B).
sloberyng, 1152 f (-berryng B, slombyng ? D).
taryinge, *7938 f (-g CD).
warnynge, 3037 f.
weddeynge, 6198 f (-g CD).
wenynge, 5654 f.
weymentyng, 1150 f.
wityng, 5653 f (wet- B, weting D).
wonderyng, 1120 f (-[e]ryng B, wondur † thyng D).
wynnyngc, 199 f.

goyynge, 5596 f (: whan I hym brynge).
heriynge, 2890 f (-y[i]nge B) (: brynge subj. 3 sg.).
in-eomynge, 2393 f (: brynge ind. 1 sg.).
rekenynge, 2725 f (-g CD) (: brynge subj. 2 pl.).
taryinge, 2727 f (-g CD) (: brynge subj. 2 pl.).

Note the exceptional rhyme in,—
byfallyng, 5738 f (-e B) (: thing : comynge ptc.).

III. Nouns in -ynge, -ynj, before consonants. (D has almost always -yng.)

[abettyng, 1442 D (l. abet).]
bygýnynge, 1876 (begiynnyng † oftyn C).
comynge, 4803 (c [the] C).
dòrryng, 7200 (duryng B, dorynge (to) C, doynge † D).

\(^1\) BC one syllable short : l. festenynge.
fallyng, 5683 (e BD).
fałlyng, 921 (e B, D †).
gôynge, 5959; golngê, 6006 † C (gông † D, wêndyng A, wêndyngê B).
hauâkyngê, 4621.
kêpyng, 200 (e BC, D †).
kônnyngê, 662 (cûnynge D, cûnynge is † C); comynyng, 1089 G
(con(i)ynge B, C cut out, comynyng † A, comynyng † D).
langurynge, 6405 † C.
lesyng, 3672 (e B, lesyng(is) C).
liklynge, 4315 † C.
lökyng, 173, 293 (e BC), 8183 (e B).
lôuynge, 1144 B (A † om., of louë so † D).
mâkyng, 8152 (e B).
mênyngê, 7510 (g [now] C).
préysyng, 2674 (e B).
raueshyng, 62 (räysyngê B, räyyshyng D).
sittynge, 5700 (e B), 5704 (e BD).
tûrnyng 856 (e C, tornyngê B).
wêndyng, 6006 (e B, golngê † C, gông † D).
wêpynge, 5199 (sorwe † C), 5548 (e B, -e hym † C).

The cause of his comynyng (-yng D) thus answerede, 2187 (causë †).

IV. Before vowels and -h (vowel, unless otherwise noted).

akynge, 1081.
auysyng here, 2999 (e B, avisid † D, and send † C).
burynge (dissyl.), 7862 (brenyngê C, burying (dissyl.) D).
callkulynge, 6060 (kakelyng † C, calkelyng D).
chaungenyng, 3391 (e B, schaungenyng C); -e, 4893 (eschaungû of † D);
schaungenyng, 5060 C † (lôkyng AD, lôkyngê B).
cômyng, 3763; -e is, 5169; -ûng, 3754 (e B); cômyng hom, 7743
(-e à-zen † C); cômyng into, 4294 (e BC).
dâwyng, 4308 (dawnyngê BD).
dissimulynge, 7976 (dishomblyngê † C).
dôyng, 1125 (e B, delyng D).
drêechyng, 3695 (e B).
ésyng, 2372 (e BC).
fallyng, 5723.
fechynge, 7253 (e B, fechyng hom † C, fêting of D).
fêlyng, 3932 (e BD, fêlyng † C); fêlyng han, 4175 (e B, -g haue E).

1 comynyng Digby III. 4912, konnyng E, comynyng Cp. Durh., comynyng John’s, comynyng Phillipps MS.
Observations on the Language

flēmyng, 3775 (-e B).
gōynge how, 5764.
gydyng, 7006 (-e BC, guiding D).
gyūnnyng hath, 1756 (bygyunnyng † D).
hārmyng, 2225 (-e BC).
ḥēlpynge, 857 (hēlynge B, hēlyng D).
konnyiig, 2164 (-e B, cunnī Ange C, cunning D); kōnnynge, 3841 (knōwyng C, kunnyng D); konnyng hem, 83 (knōwyng him B, knōwyng hem C, kunnyng[ə] hem † D); kōnnynge hadde, 7229 (knōwyng C, konnyng † and † D).
kēssyng, 4245 (-e BC).
lēngwysshyng, 529 (-e B, -guissyng C, -guysshyng D).
lōkyng, 182 (-e B, -yling and † D), 1619 (-e B), 5020 (-e B), 5060 (-e B, schaungyng C); -e, 4790 (tellynge † C, lōkyng † D).
lōnyng, 55 (-e B), 1003 (-e BC); -e, 8196; -e how, 3.
mākyng, 3131 (g [of] avaunt[es] D).
mēd[ej]lyng, 4829 † A (mēdlyng B, mēdelyng C, mēdlyng D).
mētyng, 4554.
pārtyng here (eam), 4370 (-e BC).
pursuing, 2829 † C.
rau̇sshyng, 7258 (to rau̇sshen any B, to rauych ony C, to rauissh any D); rauysshyng, 5210 (rauaschyng C).
[rehêtyng †, 3191 D.]
retonynge, 5708.
scornyng, 105 (-e C, scornē † of D).
sēyling, 5085.
shrikyng, 6745 (schrychynge B, strichinge C, shrikyng D).
sīlyng he, 724 (sighyng D).
sl̄omber̄yng, 6609 † C (pl. ABD).
sl̄ynging of †, 2026 C.
sātttyng, 5696 (-e B).
tāryinge (dissyl.) of, 7800 AC (tārryng B, tāryng (dissyl.) D).
tēllyng, 4790 † C.
tīteryng, 2829 (-e B, tīteryng C) [perh. tītēryng in AD, -ērynge in C].
tōkennyng, 5532 (-g CD, tôknyng B); -e herte, 5441.
twynnyng, 5965 (-g CD).
vīsītyng, 1126.

1 Read hen[ne]s forth in AD.
wålyng, 2830.
wèlyng, 408 (waîlyng B, wele † and C, wëlyng D).
wëndyng, 6098 (-e B, wëndyng C), 6292 (-e B).
wëpyng, 701 (-e BC), 5603 (-e BCD); -e, 6439 (-ing ? D), 7872 (C †).
whyspyränge, 2838 (whisperingis † C, whispering † D).
wrîtyng, 7732 (at (the) writyng C); wrîtyng, 8157 (-e B).

Observe,—

comîngë and, 4517 AB (-e & ek C, -g and eke D). And compare,—
comîngë ] thus, 2187 ABC ([e] D); or, the cause of his comîngë (I).

§ 11. The following feminine nouns with long stem-
syllables do not take -e in the Troilus (cf. Child, § 17):

(i.) a-stem,—forward; (ii.) i-stems,—bench, might, plit, sped, thrist,

 Birth, von, world; (iii.) consonant stems,—bok, myght, ok. In the
case of bench, the example is not decisive.

Note.—Candele (A.S. candel, cordel, f.) is always dissyllabic,—candele to,
3983 (-del D, cardel † C); -del in, 3701 (-delD). For sholder (A.S.
for 1888-90, p. 241), cf. 2756. For cedre, see § 29; for hond, see § 13;
for helpe, see § 9. Mylk, 2011 f C, is an error for ben.

bench (A.S. bene), on bench hym, 1176.
bok, book (A.S. bœc), 4679 f (-e D) (: forsook pret. ind. 3 sg.), 6654 f
(-e BD) (: wook : took both pret. ind. 3 sg.). Before consonants,—
1095, 1180, 1189 (metre ?), 1196, 4660 (-e D), 4688, 6948 (bouë †
D); 8149 (-e D), 8152 (-e D); before vowels,—1171 (AB too long),
3345 (-e B, -e D †). O moral Gower this boke I directe, 8219 ABD.

forward (A.S. foreward), 6860.

might, myght, (A.S. mi(e)ht, meht, L. mihte, O. miht, acc. dat.
mihhte), (i.) nom., 2038 [4599 † C (pl. ACE)], 7782 AD, 7801 f,
8117 f (-e B); acc., 33 (-e D), 227 f, 1264 f, 1718 f, 2425 f (-e B),
3354 f, 3496 f, 4247, 5148 f (-e B), 5281 f, 5602, 6478 f, 7046 f,
7229 f, 7284 f, 7464 f; with, 1419 f, 1954 f, 2083 f, 2637 f, 2770
(-t alone † D), 3020 f, 3278 f (-e B), [3843 † f C,] 6149 f, 6438 f
(-e B); by, 5210 f (nyght B) 1; of, 4618 f, 6435, 7201 f; to, 6491 f
(-e B); for, 7322; through, 6200 f (-e B), 7613 f (-e B); emforth,
3841 f (emfor[th] C, after † D). (ii.) nom., 1260, 2849, 2851, 2870
(-t † hym D); acc., 8067 (-e B); with, 3085, 8084 (m. [y]serued B,
herte D); by, 6708 2; on, 5857 (miâ(ES) D); thorough, 2402; acc.,
myght hire, 45 (m. their D).—though myghte, 5778 f AB (-t CD)
(: nyght nom.).

1 In A read by for my. 2 Dele (d) in C; insert [u] in B.
Rhyme words.—knyght (227, 1264, 1419, 1718, 1654, 3020, 3278, 3841, 5281, 6149, 6200, 6475, 7201, 7229, 8117), nyght (2083, 2425, 2637, 3278, 3854, 5778, 6491, 7046, 7284, 7464, 7801, 8117), wyght n. (1264, 4618, 5210, 6200, 6438, 6491, 7201, 7229, 7613), dtype p.p. (4618), vpright (1419), aryght (2083, 3496), a-noon right (2637), vnright n. (5210), right pred. adj. sg. (3841), right adv. (7613), lyght pred. adj. sg. (5148, 6438 7046), byught adj. post.-pos. (7284), byhight p.p. (7464). [Var. B 33 myght; C myȝt, myth 1564; D myȝt.]

nyght (A.S. neȝt, Midl. also næȝt, E.W.S. nicht, L.W.S. niȝt, L. niȝt, dat. niȝte, O. niȝht), (i.) nom., 2075, 3640, 4253, 4508, 5776 f, 6907 f, 7044 f, 7282 f (C †); time, 1174 (D †), 2423 f (-e B), 3071 f, 3281 f, 3356 f (-e B), 3476, 3552, 3756 f (-e B), 4157, 4399, 5175 f (-e B), 5315, 6494 f, 7466 f, 7543,- 1818 f (-e B); acc., 7022 f (nyght(B) B) ; nyght by nyght, 7003 f (n. & n. D); next, 944; to, 2081 f (into, D), 3511, 7532, 7799 f; on, 4021 (lyght † B; of, C); upon, 7148 f; in, 6826 f (-e B); over, 2634 f; of, 2052 f (thour, C), 4488 f; after, 5083 f; a fourtynȝght, 6697 f (-e B, fourtenyȝt C); in fourtenyȝght, 5989 (in † fortune nyȝt C); syn mydynȝght, 3444 (tul, D); —(ii.) nom., 1983; acc., 3183; voc., 4271; time, 3379, 3392, 7156; at, 7559 (at n. with C); by, 452; over, 2598 (to †, D 2); at n. he, 2625; at n. homward, 4711 (at n. † thei D).—by nyghte, 7065 (-t BCD), 7517 (-t BCD).

Rhyme words.—myght, myȝhte n. (2081, 2423, 2634, 3281, 3556, 5776, 6494, 7044, 7282, 7466, 7799, 8118), wyght (3071, 3756, 5083, 5175, 6494, 6697, 7148), knyght (3281, 3756, 4488, 6697, 8118), light n. (6907, 7003), pred. adj. sg. (7044), byught adj. post.-pos. (2052, 6826, 7282), right acc. (5175), aryght (2081), anoon right (2634), as lyne right (3071), vnright adv. (7022) yȝht p.p. (6907), byhight p.p. (7464). [Var. C myȝt (nyȝt, 4167); D night, myȝt.]

ok (A.S. âc), 2465 f (ooke B, okes † D) (: strok n.); 2420 (oke D), 2474 (oke Ð). [Var. B ook.]

plît, plyt (A.S. pliht, m. Æ, L. pliht, plihte, O. pliht); influenced by O. Fr. plite), (i.) 1159 (-e BD), 1797 f (-e BD), 3881 f, (-e BCD), 3981 (-e B), 4219 f (-e BE), 4393. (ii.) 2816 (-e D), 3088, 4322 (place † D); plyt he, 2823 (-e he D).

Rhyme words.—delît (delite) n. (1797, 4219), despit (despite) (1797, 3881, 4219). [Var. BCDE plît(e); BD plyt(e); C plyt, plyt; D plït.]

sped, speed (A.S. spîd spêd, L.î ispedî, spede O. spedî), s. be, 1036 (speedâ B, spedê D); s. fro, 1094 (-e B, -e herafter D); s. al, 17 (spedê † though D).

thryft (O.N. prîft), (i.) 3713 (-e B), 4091 (-e BD, thirft C), 6292 (-e BD). (ii.) 1667, 3789 ([good] th. A); th. haue, 1932 (C †) 4
§ 11.] of Chaucer’s Troilus.

(C †); th. he, 2568.—vnthrift that he, 5093 BC (vnthryf [that] he A). [Var. BCD thrifte, BD thrifte.] wight, wyght (A.S. wiht, wiht, wyht, f., n. (Siev. § 267, n. 3), L. wiht, whit, O. wiht, P. H.7 wyht,8 wight,9 wiht, wîht), 101 f, 163 f, 1072 f, 1265 f ABC, 1535 f, 3068 f, 3621 f (-e B), 3754 f, 4126 f, 4617 f, 4635 f, 5070 f, 5085 f, 5108 f, 5178 f, 5213 f, 5406 f, 6197 f, 6287 f, 6435 f, 6493 f, 6527 f, 6604 f, 6718 f, 7150 f, 7198 f, 7226 f (-e B), 7478 f, 7611 f (-e B), 7710 f, 7918 f. Before consonants: 13 (-e a † D), 534 (-e D), 685 (wyht A, things B), 692, 1031 (nonwyti † C), 1058, 1121 AB (D †), 1273, 1432, 1613, 1655, 1881, 1916, ABC (D †), 2079, 2120, 2663, 2945, 3074 (man D1), 3213, 3300, 3338 (wit † C, sight † D), 3445, 3517 (-e B), 3534 (man CD), 3598 (hem not † C), 3602, 3631 (whit C2), 4633, 4947 (-e D, which † C), 5027, 5073 (wit † C), 5914, 6825, 6923, 6988, 7242 (-e B), 7730, 7998, 8208.—Before vowels: 268, 382,9 690,4 1372,5 1481, 2033, 2739,6 2869, 3275 (iche in † CD), 5386, 5917 (wyzt his? C, wight his D), 6851, 7290 (w. his BD, with † C.—Before h: w. hadde, 500 (D †); w. hath, 2669 (men have † D), 6736; w. he, 7289 (C om. † (hiustis), while † he D).

Rhyme words.—knyght (163, 1072, 1265, 1535, 3621, 3754, 5406, 6197, 6694, 7198, 7226, 7918), nyght (3068, 3754, 5058, 5178, 6193, 7150), fourtynyght (6694), myght (1265, 4617, 5213, 6197, 6435, 6493, 7198, 7226, 7611), ryght n. (4126, 4635, 5108, 5178, 7710), adv. (101, 7611), as lyne right (5068), aight (5070, 7478), vnright n. (1535, 5213), light n. (5406), pred. adj. sg. (5070, 6435, 6718, 7478), bright adj. indef. (163, 6527), plyght p.p. (3621), hight p.p. (5108, 6287), digit p.p. (4617), byght p.p. (6718). [Var. B wyzt, wiht, wynht, wynht; C wyzt, wiht; E7 whist; D wisht.]

won (O.N. ván), ther was non other won, 5843 f (-e BD) : noon pron. : agon p. p.).

world (A.S. woruld, W.S. weorold, L. weorld, weorkle, O. weoreldl), (i.) nom., 3264 (w. hit D), 3302 (wor[l]d C), 3318, 3481, 5052 (-e D), 5985 (-e BD, w. [ne] C), 7014 (-e D), 7196 (-e D),7 8111 (-e D), 8204 (-e B); voc., 4868 AB (-e D); acc., 504 (-e D), 3215, 4272, 4593 (-e E), 5177 (C †, -e D), 5860 (-e D †)8; in, 1262, 1320, 2855 (wor[l]d A, wîrk † D), 3132 (-e B)9, 5048 (-e BD), 5802 (-e D), 6308 (-e BD), 6805 (-e D), 7085 (-e D); out of, 41 (-e D), 5613 (-e BD); of, 1495; for, 1214 (-e B, wor[l]d C), 6099 (-e D), 8060 (-e D); thorough-out, 7425 (-e D, wo[r]ld B). (ii.) nom., 1573, 3370,

1 Read in C, wyzt was wyo[ld]ed.
2 = person.
3 Supply [y] in D (y-born).
4 Supply [for] in AD.
5 Supply [a] in A, [for] in D.
6 D unmetrical.
7 Supply [that] in D.
8 CD read in †.
9 AC defective.
Observations on the Language

§ 12. Apocope of A.S. -n in nouns is found in the Troilus in the following words (cf. Child, § 15; ten Brink, §§ 203, 207):

morwe (A.S. morgen, m., o-stem), eue (A.S. äfen, n., m., jo-stem),
game (A.S. gamen, n., o-stem), mayde (A.S. mægden, n., o-stem),
kynrede (A.S. cyn(n) + ræden, f., ja-stem). Compare also melle (mylle) (A.S. mylen, myln, m.) and fast (A.S. fæsten, n., jo-stem).

eue, eewe (A.S. äfen, éfen, n., m., L. aëuen, b heue, O. eàuen), 2386 f (euen : leue B), 3437 f, 6977 f, 7377 f, 7505 f (euene C : grene (l. -ue)) ; at, 3402 f, 6844 f ; it wol neygh euën be, 7500 (euyn CD) ;
time, eue, 7088 ; euèn and, 487 (eue BD, euyn (l) C).

Rhyme words.—leue noun (2386, 3402, 3437, 6844, 6977, 7377), bleue inf. (6944), to-cléue inf. (6977), by greue (7505).

game (A.S. gamen, gomen, n., L. gomen, gone, game), nom., [372 f D,2] 868 f, 1123 (-èn B, -è D),3 1732 f, 3968 f, 6225 f ; acc., 5224 f ;
for, 3478 f (a-game BD), on g. (C), 6127 f ; of, 3926 f, 6783 f (fame C) ; letté-game, from, 3369 f (of, BC, of . . . let[te]-game D).—
game, acc., g. bygonne †, 3092 A (gameñ pleye B, -ë pleye C, game † to D).—game, nom., 4336 (gam B) ; acc., 2195 (gàmyin in C) ; bytwene, 3096 (gam B) ; a game, 3490 (on g. C, a-game † that D), 3492 (on g. C) 4 (cf. 3478 f).

Rhyme words.—shame n. ([372 D], 868, 1732, 3478, 3968, 5224, 6127, 6225), name n. (6127, 6225), tame adj. (3369), frame inf. (3369), to blame (3926, 6783), defame inf. (5224).

kynrede (A.S. cyn(n), n., + ræden, f., cf. hús-ræden, måg-ræden, etc., P. Pl. e of kynredene, b kynrede), 7342 f (ken- C, kynred D) (: out of drede).

mayde (A.S. mægden, L.W.S. mæden, n., L. maiden, maide, O. mægden, P. Pl. mayden, mayde), nom., 1965 f (Criseyde : seyde

1 world a-gon A ; worlde gon B (defective) ; world i-gone C ; worldē gon D.
2 L. gräne (AB ; C gaine †).
3 gamé shent A, -èn shente B, -ë y-shent D.
4 In the last two examples the MSS. have no hyphen ; 3490 ABD may then (possibly) be acc., 3492 ABD may (not improbably) be nom.
ind. 3 sg.); acc., mayde fre, 7388 (-en B); -e, nom., 7836 A(f) BCD; -e, of, 8232.—cf. mayden bright, nom., 166; mayden, acc., 1168.1 [Var. BD maide; BCD maydynam.]

morwe, morwen (A.S. morgen, m., to morgen, dat. morne, L. morgen, morze, morwe, P.Pl. morwe, morwen), L. morwe, (i.) nom., 944 f2 1150, 4511 f (-owe D late hand), 7393 (-en B); time indicated, 487 f (on, C), 2183 f, 4405, 7048 f, 7088 f, 8024 f; to, 861 f, 2518, 3227, 3731 f, 4759 0 f, 6660 f, 7307 f, 7889 f; vnto, 6768 f; til, 6279 f (to = til C, til (to) m. D); on, a-, a- 1490 f, 2573, 2606 f, 3265 (-en B) 4, 4397 ([e] B), 6105 f, 6377 f, 7467; on half a m., 5970 f (morwe D); by, 2046 f, 7015 f (-owe D), 7237 f; of, 3903 f. [to morwe † wele, 7385 C (-e ABD).] (ii.) morwe, to, 2583, 3651 (to more A), 3690, 3692 (-yn C), 7114 (D †), 7358 ABD; on, a-, a-, 2179, 3394, 6882, 7555 (-yn C); on the -e he, 6649.—II. morwên,—the m. com, 2640 (-yn C), in a m. stére, 3231 (on a m. B, on a morwyn C).

Rhyme words.—borwe inf. (487, 7088), to borwe dat. (2046, 2606, 8024), sorwe (everywhere). [Var. morw, B 1490, 3651, 3690, 4311, 6768, 6882, 7015, 7114, C 2583, 4311.]


fast (A.S. fasten, n., O. faste), of, (bef. vowel) fast, 6733 (-e D).

Note.—With these may be compared a-swowne, 3934 f (on s. C, in a swoun D) (: out of towne) (L. iswoven, iswegen, AS. geswōgen p.p.).

§ 13. Hond (A.S. hond, fem. u-stem) takes -e in the dative phrases on honde, yn honde.

Note.—“Dativ auf -e bei consonantisch anlautendem Nom. liegt vor in honde, wonen bund gilt (A.E. hōnd hōnd):” ten Brink, § 209. It will be observed, however, that the dative in -e is used only in certain idiomatic phrases which had an existence independent in some measure of that of the noun (cf. infra § 14).

honde (A.S. hand, hond, f, L. hand, hond, dat. -e, O. hand, wipp handd, wiphe hande), on h., 3779 f (in hond D), 3996 f, 6066 f; yn h., 1288 f (hond D), 1302 f (on hende C, on hond D), 1562 f (-d D), 2307 f (holde † C), 3615 f (hand D), 7734 f, 7978 f, 8043 f. [acc., hondē † vp, 2287 A (pl. BCD); -e † wrong, 5833 A (pl. BCD.)

1 A remarkable succession of -en’s: “herden a mayden reden.”
2 Old-style figures indicate that D has morow (before vowels, -qw).
3 to = till.
4 morow when D.
hond, (i.) acc., 1378 (-e D); by the h., [2266 f C (hood AD), hoode B),] 4579 (-e D); of othre s h., 8127 (-e B), cf. 2090; with rakel h., 1060; withouten h., 3030 (-e B).—(ii.) [voc., 4103 f B (bond AC, god D);] acc., 6515 (-e BC), 7236 (-e B, hau e D); into hire h., 433; of here h., 2140 (-e B) 1; yn thyn h., 1046 (-e B); in goddes h., 4027 (-e B, sonde D); on h., 4702 f A (in honde B, in hond D), 6428 AB (-e D); by the h., 1173, 6444 (-e B, -e f sobirly D); by the h. here, 2689 (-e B).


§ 14. The following masculine and neuter nouns which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative sometimes or always take an -e in one or more cases in the Troilus:

(i.) masculine o-stems,—borh; botm, clút, dédó, fót (fór), græf (græf), gruod; -hádd, hég; heofon, pìn (m. ?), prín (m. ?), serín, sór, stéger, steall(), tór, tún, -twist, weg, wer; (ii.) neuter o-stems,—crat, fyr, gæt (geat), gær (gér), gód, hors, líf, los, sór, tempel; -wíl, wolcen; (iii.) neuter o-stems,—bed(d), líew; (iv.) neuter o-stems,—cnéow; (v.) masculine i-stems,—flýht; (vi.) neuter i-stems,—ge-fér, (ge)wift; (vii.) masculine consonant-stem,—fót. For stère guber-
naculum, see § 2.

(a) 2 In some of these words the Chaucerian -e is clearly the Anglo-
Saxon dative singular ending. So in bedde, borwe, dethe, fere (in yfere, see § 88), fyre, hepe, horse, knowe, lyne, towne, yere. For most of these a nominative or accusative in a consonant is found in the Troilus (thus, bed, borwe, bourgh, deth, etc.), and in all of them the -e is confined to dative phrases with a preposition. Some of the words, to be sure, exhibit also forms without -e after prepositions that in Anglo-Saxon require the dative; but it will usually be found that such phrases as preserve -e are idioms in which the preposition has come to be very closely associated with the noun, whereas in the (presumably dative) phrases that show no -e the collocation of noun and preposition may be regarded as accidental or occasional. The distinction may be seen by comparing such

1 Metre in AB ! In D supply [that].
2 The following paragraph was in type before Kluge’s note in Paul’s Grundriss, I, 900, met my eye.
idioms as _to bedde, abedde, to towne, on horse_, on the one hand, with _in his bed, on the bed, on here hors_, on the other. In the first class of examples there is no article or other word between the preposition and the noun: the phrases are units, and as such have an existence more or less independent of the individual history of their component parts (in _abedde, a fyre, a lyue, yfere_, we have actual compound words). It is easy to see how the Anglo-Saxon dative -e might be lost elsewhere but preserved in these petrifactions. In the second class, on the contrary, we have no such unified phrase, and consequently no -e. The difference is well illustrated by _to dethe_ (A.S. to décaē) and _to the deth_. In other words, _bed, deth_, etc., were not inflected in the dative by Chaucer. When he appears thus to inflect one of them, he is merely using an inherited petrifaction containing a dative (compare our use of _alive, whilom_). In a few cases, however, an article or pronoun is inserted between the preposition and the noun in these phrases, and the -e still preserved,—by analogy, no doubt. The following list of the phrases included under this present sub-head a will make this clear: _abedde, to (unto) bedde, unto here bedde, to borwe, to dethe, a fyre, on fyre, in the fyre, to the fyre, to hepe, on hors[e], on knowe, on (vpon) lyue, alyue, yn al his lyue,¹ in towne, to towne, out of towne, in the towne², to yere, of fern[e]yere_. On grounde seems to be a similar survival, and stands over against _on a ground_ (i.e. on a foundation): _cf. on the grounde, to grounde, to the grounde, through the grounde_ (but _through the ground, under the ground_). _Gode in to gode_ (A.S. tó gode) and the analogous phrases _sonnen ynto gode, for gode, for the townes gode_, probably belongs here. (Cf. on, _yn honde_, § 13.)

(b) One is tempted to refer to _a_ the following phrases: _yn stalle_ (but cf. _into a litel oxes stalle_, C. T., E 207, _in an oxe stalle_, id., 398, and see Child § 14, ten Brink § 199 Anm.), _put to flyght[e]_ (but _cf. to the flyghte_), _to were_ (but _cf. to the sorwful were_, Parl. F. 138). In _on the stayre, adown the stayre, downward a stayre_, we probably have to do with an inorganic -e, not with a dative-ending (cf. _He passeth but oo stayre in dayes two_, Compl. Mars, 129), and so perhaps in _with many a twyste and of wighte_. For _vpon a rore_, see § 15.

c) The Chaucerian -e represents an Anglo-Saxon dative plural ending (-um, later -an, L. -en) _in sithe_ (as, _an hundred sithe_, cf. _tyne_)

¹ _Lyue_ is also used in the adverbial phrases _my (his, al my) lyue = during my (etc.) life_ (but see 4140). Cf. also the adverb _blyue_. ² But,—_in to town, 4624 f._
and tymes in similar phrases, § 2, p. 3, above). So perhaps in vnder fote (see Zupitza, Guy, note on v. 598).

(d) Unmistakable inorganic -e's appear in the following words, in which -e appears in nominative, accusative, or vocative,—clowde, feere, graue, heue, pryme (French influence), pyme, tere (but also teer),

weye (but also wey), wyle, yate. So also in the suffix -hede (but also -hod). Cf. also carte, skryme. In botme, -me represents Anglo-Saxon syllabic m (A.S. botm) (cf. ten Brink, § 199 Anm.). Temple represents A.S. tempel. In heuene (dissyllabic in all cases; before vowels, heuene) the MSS. vary between -ne and -en (-yn); for walkene (A) there are the variants walken (B) and walkyn (CD): ten Brink decides for heuen and welkyn, but admits heuven (§ § 199. 1, 203. 5, 219); but it cannot be regarded as settled whether Chaucer in such cases said -në, -ën, or -y, whatever he may have written.

(e) The -e in the sothe seems the result of an adjectival analogy. But we find also forsothe (A.S. forsoð,—but to sōðe, to sōðon, -am); cf. for a soth.

Note 1.—Ten Brink's dictum that the nominative and accusative of neuter vowel stems have "tonloesse e durch Analogiewirkung in der Mehrzahl der kurzsilbigen und einigen mehrsilbigen o-Stämmen" (§ 203. 5) gets slight support from the Troilus. See the evidence under bak, col, god, gres, los, mot, path, ship (§ 18, below). Holde of, 3443 C (holte D) is an error, and losse, lose are hardly significant. As to col (cole), cole is the only form recognized by ten Brink, except in composition, but col occurs.

Note 2.—For instances of an erroneous -e written, but not pronounced, see especially § 18 under bor, brest, cold(e), dom, fend(e), flood, fowl(e), frend, gold, harm, hed, hon, knyght, kyng, lord, noon, read, ryng, thing, werk, wynd. The following apparently sounded -e's are due to copyists' errors, and are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.,—lede (A.S. leod), 1624 f D (∶ rede adj. pl.) ; ryne Holde, acc., 2032 C (rimes ABD) ; with the strentë of, 2971 D ; losse me, 4751 D. For geste (?) see § 18.

Note 3.—For thondre see thonder (§ 18). For angre see § 19; for sayvre, styvre, see § 15, n. 1. On the confusion between -er and -re cf. Child § 84 and infra §§ 15, note 1, 29. For feuere, feuer, see § 18.

bedde (A.S bed(d), n., L. bed, dat. bedde, O. bedd, i min bedd, o bedde), to bedde, 3497 (-[de] D), 3533 (-[de] D), 5905 ; vnto bedde, 2032 f (& ‡ to bedde C, to her bed D) (∶ spedde pret. ind. 3 sg.) ; vnto here bedde wente, 7384 (reste C, rest[e] D) ; a-bedde, 2390 f (in b. C, a bed D) (∶ spedde pret. ind. 3 sg.), 3531 (-[de] D), 3535 (-[de] D), 4426 (in b. D), 4521 (-[de] D) .—to bedde he, 1147 (bed D), 6574 ; a bedde, 908 B (in b. C, in bed D, a bedde and [make] A) ; a bedde half, 1152.

bed : (i.) vpon his b., 1642 (bedde B) ; in his, thi, the b., 2395

1 "Wie es scheint gilt tere statt teer:" ten Brink, § 199 Anm. But teer occurs.

2 Pandare a-bedde (so in ABCp. ; a bed DG) ♦ half yn a (om. DG) slomerynge (slomberynge B, slomberyng DGCp.). Leaf cut out in C.
§ 14. of Chaucer's Troilus.

(-dë C), 2602 (-dë B), 3897 BCD (line too long in A), 6772 (-dë D); into his b., 4377 (-dë A); on here, the b., 5395 (-dë D), 6657 (-dë D); toward the b., 5017 (-dë, B, D).—(ii.) from his b., 7899 (-dë D); in here b., 5909 (-dë BCD), 6709 (-dë D, in . . . bed ben † C); in . . . bed he, 4457 (on his bedde he D); vpon . . . bed he, 4918 (-dë BD); into bed hym, 3939\textsuperscript{1} B (-dë C, D ‡); vpon . . . bed hym, 4886 (-dë D); in . . . bed hym, 7802 (-dë D).

Note.—vpon his bedde side, 4896 D, is merely hapography for beddë side (AB, beddys s. C).

borwe (A.S. borh, m., L borh), to, 2048 f (: morwe : sorwe), 2609 f (: morwe : sorwe), 8027 f (: morwe : sorwe).—And I thi borw (borugh B, borow D) fy (om. C) no wyght doth but so, 1031.—And I youre borough ne neuer shal for me, 1219 (borugh B, borw C, borow D. [borow 2048 f D, 2609 f D.]

botme (A.S botm, m.), in . . . b., 297 (boteme C, botme † hit D); to . . . -e, 1620 (boteme † C, botmë † it D). [Cf. botmeles, § 48, n. 5.]

carte (A.S. cræt, n., L. carte, O. karre, P. Pl. cart-whel), with, 6641 ABC; nom., farë carte, 7525 f (soory † carte D) (: arte = art thou); cart a-mys, acc., 7028 (-e BCD); cartë, acc., 4597 ‡ B.

clowde (A.S. clûd, m., rock, L. clude, rock), nom., 3275 f (cloude BCD) (: kowde potuit).—cloud, (ii.) nom., 1851 (-e BC, e. that † D), 1866 (-e BC, cloudis † in D), 4862 (-e BC, D ‡).—vnder cloud[ë] blak, 175 (-ë BC, vndur blak cloud so D †).

detë (A.S. déæ, m., L. das, deæ, etc., dat. deape, deæ, O. dép, dat. dép, deæpe). A dative in -e is preserved only in the phrase to detë (A.S. to déae),—to do detëhe, 5439 f ABG (to the dethe D, don to deye C) (: til I vnshethe (conueye C †) ); to dethe mote I smetë be, 2230 CD (-[ë] BG, to deth[ë] mot I be smet[ë] A). But in to the deth no -e is preserved,—to the deth myn herte (= until death, etc.), 6937; vnto the deth myn, 606; vnto my deth to, 7348. [to deth † or, 2840 C (-ë D), and into myn deth † in, 4934 C, of course prove nothing].—A doubtful line (in which however, we should no dubt read deth) is: That of his deth (-ë D) ye be nought (not C, no thing D) to (for to CG Cp.) wyte, 1470. In 4082 C, read deth (acc.) [y-]schape (deth is shapen A, deth y-shapen BD).

deth, everywhere else, whether before vowels or consonants (though D often adds -e, which, however, is never sounded, for

\textsuperscript{1} A reads "he hym (i.e. he'm) into beddë caste."
Observations on the Language

3185 D should be corrected). Thus,—nom., 1286 (-e D), 2905 (-e D), 3913 † C, 5132, 5165, 5444 (-e D, they † C),1 5518 (day † C), 5571, 5859, 6257, 7756; acc., 1046, 2980 (D †), 3185 (-e † son e D), 4419, 7750, 7776, 7920 (day † C), 8081; voc. and exclam., 4912, 5163 (-e D), 6568 (loud e † he C); of (nort = ex), 527, 5799 f (-e D) (breth acc.), 825 (-e his D), 1423 (-e D), 1518 (-e D), 2364 (-e D), 3913 (nom. † C), 4903 (C †), 5481 (-e D), 6109; from the, his d., 469 (D †; dethes = deth his C), 536,4 1651 (-e hym D), 4085; with my, his, the d., 2952 (-e D), 3747 (-e he D), 5401; neigh the d., 3204 (-e D); after the, your, my d., 5415, 5900, 7054 (day † C), 8035 (day † C); toward my d., 7004 (C †); thorough my d., 7636; for his d., 8185 AB. [Var. BD deeth.]

fere, in yeere (var. in fere), see § 88.

fere, feere (A.S. fer, fer, m.), nom., 3425 f, 3986 f, 4183 f, 4527 f; acc., 3414 f, 3470 f, 3595 f, 4240 f; voc., 4163 f; for fere, 108 f, 768 f, 1388([-e] B), 1534 f (fer C), 5334 f, 5863 (B † om., fer[e] D), 5887 (fer † D), 6025 f, 7272 f, 7966 f; in f., 726 f; ye this f., 1399 ([e] B); in swych f., 3299 f; of (= gen.), 3932 f.—for fere, 801, 1855 (fer C), 6744 (fer D); for fere he, 875 (fer C); of the fer his, 6619 (fer BD, fer † the C).

Rhyme words.—were eras (4163) erant (3425, 3470, 3932, 4240), essent 726, 768, 3299, 3414, 3986, 4183, 6025, 7966), essent (4527, 5334), nero 3 sing. (4183), enquire inf. (4527), ere, cere (108, 726, 768, 1534, 3299, 3955), fere n. (3932), there (3414, 3425, 3470, 3595, 4163, 6025, 7272), where (4240).

flyghte (A.S. flyht, m., L. a fliht, dat. -e fliht, dat. -e, O. fliht), to the flyghte, 2324 f (flyzt C, flight D) (lyghte adj. pl.); is put . . . to flyght[e], 1851 f (the sonne slyneth bright (-e B)); put to flyght the, 1698 (fleyht C). [in flyzt as, 6121 † C.]

fote (A.S. fôt, L. fot, dat. -e, O. fot, o fot, with fote), vnderfote, 1432 f (foot D) (bote : rote); in his fote, 4034 f (foot B) (sot : I mot); nom., fot is, 2049 (-e C).

fyre, fire (A.S. fyr, n., L. fur, dat. -e, O. fir), in the fyre, 3553 f (fyr C); to the f., 3820 f (fere BCD); afyre, on fire, 2866 f, 4788 f (fere C), 4846 f (in f. A, on fere C), 5171 f (fere C), 7083 f, 7829 f; a fere, 229 f (a fere B, al fere C, ful † fere D).6 fyrc, fir, (i.) nom., 4475 f (-e BCD), 5080 (-e BCD); acc., 445 (-e C, fer[e] D), 2417 f (-e B, fer[e] CD), 3326 f (-e BCD); the ner the fyr the, 449 (fer[e] D).

1 In 5444 D dele (the).
2 In C read to for the.
3 In C supply [to].
4 In C supply [that].
5 In B insert [herte].
6 but [if]? deth me D.
§ 14. of Chaucer's Troilus.

(ii.) nom., 436 (fere D †), 490 (-e B), 4780 (fer C, fere D); a-fyr, 3698 (-e BD, à † fere C); of, 6665 (-e D); nom., fyr he, 3267 (-e BD, fyr [he] C).

Rhyme words.—ire (2866, 7829), hire, here n. (4788, 5171), desire inf. (3553, 4846, 7083), ind. 1 sq. (5171), enspire inf. (4846), inn. 2 sq. (3553); desire n. (2417, 3326, 4475), spir (-e BCD) A.S. spir (2417), wir (-e BD) A.S. wir (4475).

§ 1 fyre (fere BCD): dere adj. : here inf. (3820); a fere : were esset : dere inf. (229). [Var. C 490 fuyr; C 449 fyer.]

gode, goode (A.S. god, n., O. god, inn gode, fyr gode), sownen yn-to g., 1029 f (good D) (: vnderstode subj. 3 sg.); for g., 3766 f (good D) (: stode ind. 3 pl.) for the townes g., 5215 f (: withstode subj. 1 sg.); to good[§] mot turne, 1175 (-e BC).

good, (i.) nom., 3950; acc., 1182 A (!) D (-e B; of, CG, a doubtful line) †, 2263 f (-e B) (: stood ind. 3 sg.), 3480 f (-e B) (: on a flode, flood D), 3724 † D, 6469 f (-e B) (: stood ind. 3 sg.), 7512 f (: hood, -e BD); for al the good, 3220 (-e B), 5583, 7249 † C.—(ii.) nom., 7739; acc., 4749 (-e B), 5073 AD (-e B); ayen som g., 7529 (-e C).

grave (A.S. gref, graf, m., n., O.N. grof,f.), nom., 7781 f (: haue inf. : sune inf.); vnto, 7105 (B † C †).

grounde (A.S. grund, m., L. grund, † -e, dat. -e, O. grund, to grund, to grunde), to the g., 856 f (-d CD), 4906 f; to g., 4707 f (-d D), 4739 f (-d D); on g., 4966; on the g., 7650 f; through the g., 7863 f.

ground, (i.) nom., 939 (-e B), 1927; through the g., 1190 (-e B, -d † of D); vnder the g., 4282 (-e B). (ii.) voc., 4146 (-e BE); on a g., 3824 (-e B); to the ground his, 5184 (-e B, -e doune D).

Rhyme words.—wounde n. (856, 7863), stounde (4739, 7863), bounde p.p. (856), y-grounde (4707), exponde inf. (7650), confounde inf. (4906). [Var. C BD grounde; C. gronde.]


goodlîhede (-hed D), of, 7953 f (: in drede); -hed, of, 1927 f (-hed BD), (: hed caput : ded adj. sing.) nom., -hede, 4572 (-hed, -híd, -heed). knyghthod (A.S. enihnád), of, 7954 (knythod C); nom., -hod and, 8117 (-e 2 D).

manhod, (i.) nom., 6336 (-e B); with, 3270 (-e B), 5191. (ii.) nom., 1761; with, 7839 (-e B); acc. vnmanhod, 824 (-e BD 3; ón-manhod † C).

1 Cp. has the right reading: Is it of loue o som good 3e me le. B and the John's MS. also insert o.
2 Supply [grete].
3 D is hopeless as to metre; in A supply [a].
Observations on the Language

womanhede, to (vnto BCD), 4144 f; of, 4582 f; for, 6124 f (-hed CD); acc., 6836 f; to womanhode that, 283.

Rhyme words.—dede n. (4144, 6836), drede n. (4582, 6124), lade inf. (4582), rede inf. (6836).

hepe (A.S. héap, m., L. hæp, hep, dat. -e), to hepe, 4606 f ABC (lepe inf.).—acc., hep of, 5943 (-e D, heepe B).

heuene (A.S. heofon, m.: also, L.W.S. heofone, f., cf. eorðē, f.; L. heovene, heofne, O. heoffne, heffine), in, 878 f; to, 4046 f (in † h. B), 5285 f (heuen D), of, 4567 f.—heuene, before consonants, always dissyllabic,—nom., 1911 (-yn D †) 1; acc., 2844 (-yn D); in, 31 (-yn C), 1980 (-en B, -yn C), 3432 (-yn D), 4441 † CD; of, 1766 (-en C, -yn D); to, 3026 (-yn D); from, 3468 (heue † C, -yn avale D), 5508 AC (on D; B †); on, 6637, 8188.—heuene, nom., 1722 (-en B, -yn † on D); in, 2850 (-yn D), 4441 AB, 8182, 8207 (-en BD); from, 5374 (-en D); in . . . h. he, 4093 B (-yn † he D) 2; in h. his, 6058 (-en D); nom., h. his, 4584 (-yn D); in heuene hye, 4587. [heuene † egle, 4338 D.]

Rhyme words.—neuene inf. (878), neuene ‡ n. (4567 B), steuene (4567 ACD), seuene (4046, 5285).

hewe (A.S. hēow, n., W.S. hīew, hīw, N. hīu, see Siev. § 247, n. 3, Sweet, 1789; L. heowe, O. hew, inn hewe), nom., 461 f, 4540 f (hew B), 5402 [-e] BCD); acc., 441 f, 1388 f, 2555 f, 7766 f; of, 3145 f, 5041 f (-w C), 5398 f (-w D), 7936 f, 8135 f; with, 5325 f, 6922 f.—hewe, nom., 2936 † D; acc., 1145 (D †).—in his hewe bothe, 487 (-e C †).

Rhyme words.—newe adv. (441, 4540), adj. (1383, 2555, 5325 [of newe A], 7936 [newe C]), newe inf. (3145), trewe adv. (5041, 5325), vntrewe 3145, 7936, 8135), rewe inf. (461 [rew A, rew pres. subj. 2 pl. † CD], 5398, 6922), newe ind. 3 pl. (4540).

horse (A.S. hors, n., L. hors, an horse, to horse, O. hors), on hors[e] gan, 6400 AB (-e CD).—hors, (i.) on here h., 6545 (of = down from, BCD); from hire h., 6552 (-e D, C †). (ii.) nom., 223, 1711; acc., 4707, 7381 (-e D); on his h., 2346, 6398 (h. he D); of (= from) hors, 6876 B (of here h. AC (plu.), of horsē light D); from his h. he, 6563 (-e D; C †).

knowe (A.S. cneo(w), n., N. cnéw, cnéo, Merc. cnéu, L. a on cneowe, L. b a cnowe, O. o cnewwe), sat (fel C) on knowe, 2287 f (know D) (: I trowe ind. : sowe inf.).

losse, see § 18.

lyne (A.S. lif. n., L. lif, on liue, bi life, bi liue, O. lif, dat. lif, -e), acc

1 it an heuene (it) was C. 2 heuene om. in A.
of time (my lyue, his l., al my l.), 594 f (lyf C), 1290 f (in þ my l. D), 2141 f, 4929 f (liff D), 6528 f (in þ his l. C); euere his l. and, 6799 (lyf C, liff D); on lyue, 1223 f, 1973 f, 5156 f (lyf C), 5425 f (onlef C), 6632 f (a lyue D), 7027 f, 7251 f, 7732 f, 8226 f; alyué maken, 3734; on lyuë come, 7248; on lyue, 4958 ABD; on lyue han (haue), 5899 (o l. B, a-lyue a be C); vpon lyue, 2115 f; yn al his lyue, 2623 f ([in] C); yn lyue, 899 † C; of ( = out of) lyue, 2693 f (on þ l. C), 7924 f. [Cf. blyue adv., § 88.]

Rhyme words.—blyue adv. (594, 1223, 1290, 2623, 2693, 5153, 6528), fyue (2115, 7251), Argyue nom. pr. (5425), thyrie inf. (1223, 1290, 2141, 2623), dryue inf. (2623, 5156, 7732), dryue subj. 3 sg. (7027), depreyue inf. (4929), dyscriue inf. (1973, 6632, 7732), ryue inf. (7924), stryue inf. (6528), circumscryue inf. (8226).

lyf, lyff, nom. (i.) 1863 f, 536 ([e] † C), 772 (-e B), 1041, 1199, 1286 B (of lyf D), 1447 (lyue B), 1551 † A (lyf is B, l. in C, e † in D), 1826 CD, 1936, 4952, [5273 † f C,] 5339 (C †), 6516, 7741 † D, 7581, 79861; voc., 4264; nom. (ii.) 462 ABC, 1286 A, 1826 AB, 5217 (-e B), 4319 (acc. † D, nom. -e B), 4936 (-e B); acc. (i.) 1046, 1557, 1915 † D, 1917, 1920 f, 3257, 4447, 4559, 5229, 6703 f. (-e B), 6720, 6992 ([e] † C), 7077, 7532 (-e B, lyf † I C, liff[e] † D); acc. (ii.) 469, 1554, 1660, 4318 BD (lyf saue? AC)2, 4444, 4963 (lyf † wele C), 6004, 7741 AC, 7747 (-e D), 7770 AD, 7776; acc., lyf his, 2151; of (not = ex) (i.) 4323, 5610 ([e] † C, D ?), 5826, (ii.) 4689, 4775 ABD; with (i.), 7637, 7682; by lyf be, 2103.—wreke vpon myn ownë lyf, 2950 f.—In 4140 f, al my lyfe (lyue BC, life? D), acc. of time, rhymes with wyf, voc.

Rhyme words.—stryf n. (1863, 1920, 6703), wyf (2950, 4140, 6703), en tentyf adj. (1920).

pry (A.S. prim, m. †) seems to owe -e to the influence of Fr. prime.—
pryme, nom., 2180 f; at, 2077 f, 6378; after, 2642 f; atwixen, 6835 f. (Cf., of lusty ver the pryme, 157 f.)

Rhyme words.—tyue (everywhere), by me (2077). [Var. BCD prime.]

pyne (A.S. pyn, m. (!), L.O. pine), nom., 1761 f; acc., 2250 f, 6631 f (peyne † A), 6653 f (peyne † A), 7490 f; in, 4685 f, 5136 f (peyne † C), 6369 f (peyne † B); of, 7255 f † B (l. peyne with ACD); -e, nom., 4300 (-es † D).

Rhyme words.—encyne inf. (1761), myne inf. (1761), 5136), dyne inf. (2250, 7490), fyne inf. (4683), deunye inf. (6631, 6653), deyfne inf. (6631), twyne subj. 3 sg. (6639), Quyryne (4685), Proserpyne (5136). [Var. D pine.]

shryne (A.S. scrin, m., see Pogatscher, p. 161), voc., -e, 6916.

sithe (A.S. si&, m., L. sit$, dat. -e, O, ann sipe, ofter sipe, onst sipe,

¹ Supply [that] in A.
² Read my lyf an houre saue (so Cp.)
Observations on the Language

§ 14.

sipes), a hundred sithe, 4437 (e he B, tyme and C, tymes D); a thousand sithe, 5415 f (swythe : lythe inf.); an hundred sithe, 6835 (C, -es D); a thousand sithe, 7744 f (sith D) (blythe : swythe).

[Dat. pl. in A. S. : as, seeon si'dum.]

sothe (A.S. só, m., L. so, soxe, O. sop, to sopu). In the Middle English uses of this word there seems to be some confusion between só stbl. and só adj. The substantive phrase the sothe is perhaps due to the influence of the definite adjective form. Forsothe instead of A.S. forsoth (cf. to sódon) is noteworthy. See also in soth. In the examples that follow soth (sothe) seems to have been felt as a substantive. In ye sey right soth gyys, 1275 AB, perhaps soth[e] is an adverb.

the sothe, acc., 12, 1605, 4440 ([e] B), 5615, 6983 ([e] B), 7375, ([e] BD), 7391 ([e] B, [the] soth[e] C), 7398, 8003 ([e] B, the soth D); forsothe, 5697 f (for soth BD) (: in yow bothe; forsothë so it semeth by hire song, 1968 ABCD ([e] G), but cf. for a soth, 6069.—the sothe is, 5965 (B D; the s. (this) is C).

soth, sooth, (i.) nom., that is s., 1268 f (-(e) D) (doth 3 sg.); acc. (in soth to seyn, soth for to telle, and similar phrases,—no def. or indef. article), 343, 591 (om. D), 712 (the soth[e] D), 822 A, 1706 (-(e) B; D t), 1769, 2071 (the soth[e] D), 2367 f (ful sothe, as if adv., D, but the rhyme doth 3 sg. (doth(e) D) condemns the form), 2441 (the sothe [for] D; C t), 2601 (the soth[e] D), 3197 (-(e) D), 3272, 3492 (the soth[e] D), 3835, 4372, 4635 (-(e) D), 4709 (the soth[e] D), 5165 (soft D), 7531 (-(e) D), 7712, 7883 ; seye a soth, 1316 (-(e) D), 2222 (-(e) BD); homly s. to seyne, 2644 BC (the soth(e) D); in soth, 6506 (-(e) D), 6734 ; for a s., 6069 (cf. forsothe). (ii.) nom. (in the phrase soth is), 3461, 4166 AC (-(e) B), 5930 (so[th] C, -(e) D), 6392 (-(e) D); acc., seye . . . soth, 3420 (-(e) D); soth hym seyde, 822 C (-(e) BD); a soth, acc., 7821 (-(e) CD), 7902, 8087 ; a soth, acc., 7672 ABD (asay C); lyk a soth, 3761 ; cause of soth, 5703.

staire, steyre (A.S. stéger, m.), on the s., 215 f (starre D) (: contraire : debonaire); adoun the steyre, 1898 (steygere C, stairë anon D t); downward a steyre, 2790 (stegere B, stair D).

stalle (A.S. steall, stall, m., O. stall), oxe yn stalle, 7832 f (staH D) (: vynes alle).

temple (A.S. tempel, n.), 323 CD (disordered), 1458, 6728 (tempele C), 6929 ; temple, 162 (AB too long, temple B), 185 (D t), 317, 363,
3382 (tempel C); temple he, 267 (ô went D); tempé he, 5609.

tere (A.S. téar, térer, tæher, m.), nom., 3929 f; acc., 6585 f, 7409 f, 7945 f; of, 7243 f; with, 7544 f (ter D); for ... teer which, 3912 (tere BD, ter C).

Rhyme words.—were crant (3929, 6585, 7544), esset (7243, 7945), of his fere (3929), where (6585), ellys where (7409), there (7243, 7544). [Var. BD teere.]

towne (A.S. túm, m., L. tun, dat. -e, O. tun, to tune, i, off tune, P. Pl. to tune), in the t., 3030 f²; in t., 5250 f, 6890 (-[e] D, in(to) touné for C); to t., 4871 f; out of t., 3412 f (-n B), 3933 f, 5193 (-[e] B, of (=ex) the toun[e] C).—towne, of t., 270 (-[e] † or D, in touné † or C); into t., 2196; in t., 4724 (-n B), 5342 (-n B, tounnys † C).

—nom., touné start, 6048 D (but supply [thus]).

Rhyme words.—sowne inf. (3030), rowne inf. (3142, 5250), a-sowne (3933), howne n. (4871).

town, toun, (i.) nom., 141, 1463, 5247 (-v D), 6048 ABC, 7131 f, 7873 (-v D); voc., 7369 f; acc., 558 f, 1464 f, 4741 (t. [to] B, nom. t. is † D); in the t., in this t., in al this t., 64, 2501 f, 6002 AB (C(I), -e † (l) D), 6042 f (-e CD), 6792 f, 7353 f; of (not =ex but equivalent to a genitive ³), 186 f, 478 f, 1822, 3225 f, 4783 f, 4854 f ([=] town A), 6926 f (-e D), 7040, 7219 f, 7388 f (-e D), 7475 (-v D); out of the t., 75, 6368 f (-e BD); out of a t., 6384 (-v D, [a] town A); into t., 4624 f (to, D); into this t., 7486 (-v D); into the t., 7517; aboute Troyë t., 4692 f; on al the t., 4780; traryer to the t., 4866 f; withinne Troyë t., 7332 f (-e D); thoroughout Troyë t., 8012 f (-e C).—(ii.) nom., 804, 6763 (-v D); yn al the t., 1224, 1833 (thour, C), 1966; yn the t., 3716; out of t., 3419; nom., t. hath, 5209 (-e D); in t. his, 1069.

Rhyme words.—For town,—doun, down adv. (186, 4624, 6792, 6926, 7219, 7369, 7388, 8012), Sarpedoun (6792), attricioun (558), baroun (4962, 4854), conclusion, ion (478, 7131, 7369), condicion (7332), confusion (4783), deuocioun (186, 558), dyscression (4866), disposition (6368), entencion (7131), execution (6368), Lamedoun (4783), lyoun (4624, 4692), oppynoun (7219), oppressioun (2501), possession (2501), renoun (478), saluacioun, sauanion (1464, 6042), suspectioun (8012), tribulacion (7333).

twyste (A.S. mæst-twist, m.t), with many a t., 4072 f (-t C) (; tryste inf. : wiste indul. 3 sg).

walkene (A.S. wolcen, wolcen, n., pl. wolcnu, Pet. Chron. se wolcne; L. weolene, wolcne, pl. (?); P. Pl. walkene, welkne, e wolkene),

1 A disagreeable line, but identical in ABCDG: "'Til in a temple he fond hym allone." Cp. reads: "'Til in a temple he fonde hym al alone."
2 Old-style figures denote that D has no -e.
3 Always with some word or words (as, the, this, al this) between of and town.
Observations on the Language

§ 14.

the walkene shop hym, 3393 A (walken B, walkyn CG, welkyn D, wolken CP).

were (A.S. wer, m.), to were, 2877 f (to the † w. D) (: here eam). [Cf. This streme you ledeth to the sorwful were, Parl. F., 138 (: spere : bere inf.)]

weye (A.S. weg, m., L. weie, wai, dat. wei, weie, etc., O. we33e), acc., 5954 f¹ (wey C), 6288 f (way B, alway † C), 6459 f, 6719 f (way C); by, 495 f, 6988 f (wey C); vpon, 2576 f (forth his w. C); in, 3089 f; adverbial, what w., 4821 f.—weye, acc., -e to, 1862 A (way B, why C); -e for, 6131 A (way BD, om. C)²; which weye be, 3599 (way BC).—weye, acc., 4610 (wey B, wey † no E); nom., weye is, 1702 (e is C, way is B, wey is D); on . . . weye he, 1532 (way B). (Cf. awweye, awway, adv., § 89.)

way, wey, (i.) nom., 2336, 7432 f; acc., 1160 BD (e † A), 4851 (-e C); 5964 (-e C), 6180 AB, 6877 (woye (?) † haue C, wey † haue D †), 7380; out of, 219 (-e C); on, 2388, 6864 (-e BC); by, 7025 (-e BC); went his wey, 1055; do wey do wey, 1978 (D †).

(ii.) vpon . . . wey he, 2034 (-e him C, wey hym D); on . . . w. hym, 4365 (-e CD); a forlong wey on, 5899 (woy C).

Rhyme words.—sewe inf. (495, 3089, 4821, 5954, 6459), obeye inf. (2576), pleye inf. (3089), deye = wager inf. (6719), preye ind. ¹ sg. (5954), tweye (495, 4381, 6988), awwye (6288, 6459), awwey (7432), pley n. (6288), weylawey (7432). [Var. BCD way; C waye, woye; D weie.]

wighte (A.S. ge-wiht, n., also -e, L.a wiht,b weht, O. wipf fife wehhte off sillferr), of w., 2470 f (wyghte B, weight D, on † wyghte C) (: thynges lyghte).

wyle (A.S. wił or wile, n. (Chron. 1128), flygewilum instr. pl. (Mód. 27)), nom., 1356 f, 3919 f (w(h)ile CD); for, 719 f (gyle C).

Rhyme words.—while n. (719, 1356, 3919), byglye inf. (719, 1356). [Var. BCD wile.]

yate (A.S. gæt, W.S. gæt, Ps. get, n., Pet. Chron. late-ward, L. 3æt, dat. -e, O. gate way, P. Pl. gateward), acc., 3311 f (: late adv.), 7503 f (: late adv.); to the y., 1702 AB; vnto, 7501. But.—At the yate there she sholde oute ryde, 6395.—into the yate, 4567 (vnto BD, to C); vnto the yate he, 7555 (-is † C); on to the gate he, 6966 C (pl. ABDG).

A and D write always yate; B and C, always yate (except in 6966 C).

yere (A.S. gær, gär, gér, n., L. 3er, dat. -e, O. 3er) to yere, 3083 f (yeer D) (: dere); of fern[e] yere, 7539 f (ferne[ye]re C, feuerèr †

¹ Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
² Obj. of trusten to (on BD); or, perhaps, nominative.
§ 15. The following Germanic nouns, for which no corresponding Anglo-Saxon etymons can be cited, sometimes or always end in the \textit{Troilus} in -e:

(A) Suspicious or uncertified Anglo-Saxon words,—crampe (cf. A.S. crampeht adj.), mone (A.S. *mán, inferred from ménan), werre (see the word), whippe (A.S. hveop Somner). (B) Words from the Old Norse: (i.) masculine n-stems, awe, bole (-e, -e, never -v) (but cf. A.S. bulluc, felawe (but cf. A.S. féólaga, itself from O.N.); (ii.) feminine n-stems,—bore, sherte; (iii.) neuter n-stem,—wyndowe; (iv.) neuter o-stems,—on loft, o loft, a-lofte (O. Norw. á loft, á lofti, originally u-stem), at thy tryste (but also tryst, trust). (C) Probable Middle English formations from Anglo-Saxon words: (i) nouns from verbs,—drede, hede, hye, lette, and perhaps ferde, mase, slynge; (ii.) diminutive,—stalke (A.S. stæl); (iii.) heste (-e-formation from A.S. hēs, f.), beheste, wente (cf. A.S. wend, f.). (D) Borrowed from Middle Low German,—grote, rore. (E) Miscellaneous words of more or less doubtful etymology,—greue, haste, labbe (var. blabbe), were (?)

For hosbonde, skathe, see § 2; for arwe, wodebynde, see § 3; for feldesfare, see § 5; for bone, byrthe, routhe, sleughte, see § 9.

awe (O.N. agi, m., n-stem ; cf. A.S. ege, m., L. eï), see O. eï, a3he), 999 f (: lawe : drawe inf.), 5282 f (: lawe : gnawe inf.).

blabbe, see labbe.

bole (O.N. boli, m., n-stem ; but cf. A.S. bulluc ; L.O. bule), -e, nom., 4901 (bole f C, bulle D); -e, yn, 1140 (bullé D, bulb it B); -e, of, 3565 (bool B, bok f C).


crampe (cf. O.S. cramp, f., O.H.G. krampf, m., M.L.G., M.Du. krampe ; Sweet, 269, assumes A.S. cramp from the adj. crampeht ; P. Pl. crampe), -e, acc., 3913 (nom. f C, crampe, acc., B).

drede (L. dred, dredce, P. Pl. dre(e)de, cf. A.S. drédan, vb.), 95 f, 180 f, 499 f, 529 f, 575 f, 775 f, 1757 f, 1831 f, 1918 f, 2260 f, 2408 f,

\footnote{Supply \textit{[the]} in C.}

\footnote{A.S. dréad \\textit{sub.}, given in Bosworth, is rejected by Bosworth-Toller, the only evidence for its existence being Matth. xxv. 25 misunderstood (see Mätzner).}
Observations on the Language

Rhyme words.—dde n. (95, 6001, 6235, 6415), dde pred. adj. pl. (5753, 6179), rede A.S. wæð (180, 4562), bræde A.S. bræðu (180, 529), hede heed n. (499, 575, 1831, 6566, 7122, 7453), rede n. (775, 1757, 3260, 3332, 3549, 3569, 4734, 6195), mæde (3260), the rede red (4223), rede adj. pl. (2934), rede inf. (95, 2260, 2408, 2589 CD, 4223, 5340, 7643), rede inf. (2589 AB, 5775, 6235), atrede inf. (6117), rede ind. 3 pl. (6307, 8114), kyndere (7434), womanhede (4583, 6125), goodlihede (7955), Diomede (7453), blide inf. (499), lode inf. (529, 1918, 4582, 4588, 6179, 6993), I lede 1 sg. (6001), spede inf. (775, 7473), spede subj. 3 sg. (1831), for rede subj. 3 sg. (4817).

ferde (A.S. vb. færən; cf. M.H.G. ge-värde, f. n., 'betrug'), for ferde[e] caught, 557 (–e BD); of fered thyn, 5269 (ferd C, ferde G, drede † D); for fered out, 6073 (–e out BD, l. ferde out of [his] 3; for C †, drede † out D). [For ferdē, and myn hewe al pale, B. Duch. 1214; And he for ferdē lost his wit, Hous F. ii. 442 (950).]

greue (cf. A.S. gre défini, grinfa, 'pit,' and the confused glosses in Wright-Wülcker, 225, 23-24), by, 7507 f (grene † C) (: eceu).

grote (O. Dutch groote, cf. L.G. (Bremen) grote; P. Pl. être grote), 5248 f (: hote adv. : note).

haste (cf. Dutch haast, O. Fris. hast, Dan. Sw. hast. A.S. hæst and O. Fr. haste have also been compared), with hastē goodly, 2031 (–e D, laste † C); nom., ouer-haste, 965 (–t D, for euere † hast vb. C); nom., haste, 7968 (last D); for ... hast and, 4280 (–e BC); in al the haste he, 4428 (–t BD).

hede (cf. O. Fris. hûde, hôde, O.H.G. huota, f.; P. Pl. hede), 501 f, 577 f, 820 AB? (–e CD), 1832 f, 3306 f, 4066 f, 4389 f, 4671 f, 5514 AB (–e † thereto C), 6221 f, 6451 f, 6565 f, 6668 f (hed D), 7120 f (hed C), 7234 f, 7411 f, 7452 f, 8019 f, 8069 f; hede ther-

1 Written for-drede.
2 Supply [to] in D.
3 A also has his. Perhaps, however, ferde out is right (hiatus in cæsura). Cp. has no his.
§ 15.

of Chaucer's Troilus.

49

of, 1666; heed for, 7266 (hede BD, hed C); hede, 3481 (hed C), 5095 (hed AC), 5769 (hed D), [e] ‡ what C.e.

Rhyme words.—dredre n. (501, 577, 1832, 6565, 7120, 7452), nede n. (3306, 4066, 6221), Diomede (4671, 6451, 7234, 7411, 7452, 8019, 8069), the crede (6451), glede (6668), stede steeed (6668), brode A.S. brêdu (8019), bledo inf. (501, 4671, 7411, 8069), forbede inf. (3306), pres. subj. 3 sg. (6221), brede inf. (4389), spede subj. 3 sg. (1832). [Var C e heede; D heed.]

heste, byheste (A.S. hæs, f., behæsæ gen. pl., L. heste, bihaeste, O. hæse), (a) heste, 3999 f (liste ‡ B, heest D), 6718 (‡s ‡ A, pest[e] B, bihest‡ ‡ D); heste he, 6101 (-t C); hestē hath, 4587 (pl. BCE). (b) byheste, 3157 BC (heste ‡ A, hest ‡ D), 3188 f (-t CD), 7554 f (-t D, heste C), 8038 f (-t D); behest, byhyst, 1444 f (-e BCD), 1508 f (-e BC), 2141 f (-e B). [biheste, 7794 B, should be plural.]

Rhyme words.—feste n. (1444, 1508, 3999, 8038), at the leste (1444, 2414, 3157, 3999, 8038), by este (7554). [Var. BCD beheste, B bi-]


labbe (Prompt. Parv. blabbe, or labbe, wreyare of cowneselle, futilis, anubicus), nom., 3142 f (blabbe D): (gabbe ind. 3 pl., inf. ‡ D).

lette (A.S. vb. lettan, O.L.G. sbet. lette, M.H.G. letze, f., L. b. lette), withouten, 361 f (let D), 3077 f, 3541 f (let D), 3590 f, 4703 f (let D), 7214 f (lett D)—lëtëgame, 3369 f (let[t]e-game D).

Rhyme words.—sette pret. ind. 3 sg. (361, 3077, 3541, 7214), mette sonnivit (361), mette congressi sunt (4703), dores were y-shette (3077), shette pret. ind. 3 sg. (3590), fette pret. ind. 3 pl. (7214).

lofte (O. Norw. O. Icel. loft, n., á loft, á lofti, later Icel. lōft, etc., A.S. on loft from the Scand., see Napier, Mod. Lang. Notes, 1889, col. 278, Kluge in Paul's Grundriss, I, 786; O. o loft, P. Pl. on loft, bbi loft, 3 on loft), on loft, alofte, o lofte, 138 f (-t BD, ontolest ‡ C), 915 f (-t D), 943 f (-t D), 3512 f, 5883 f (-t C), 6371 f, 6711 f (-t B); a-lofte, 6622 (of ‡ loft B, on loft C).

Rhyme words.—ofte (138, 915, 943, 3512, 5883, 6371, 6711), softe adj. and adv. (138, 915, 943, 3512, 6711).

maze (cf. A.S. amasod, p. p.), 6831 f (maze CD): (glaze inf.).

mone, moone (quasi A.S. *mán, cf. mænan vb.; P. Pl.mone), nom., 1643 f; acc., 98 ‡ f A (l. mone inf., with BCD), 696 f, 5612 f, 6613 f; -e ‡, acc., 907 C.

Rhyme words.—allone (696, 1643, 5612, 6613), everychone (5612), grove inf. (1643, 6613).

rore (cf. O.L.G. hróra, O.H.G. ruora, f.), Ger. aufruhr 'uproar'; see, however, Murray s.v. aroar, where perhaps the quotation from the
Observations on the Language § 15.

*Paston Letters* is not in place. Confusion with *roar*, A.S. ge-rár (ἀποκάλυψις), is prob. for Chaucer's time, sette al Troye vpon a rore, 6408 f ([a]roore D) (: pore *adj. pl.*).

sherte (O.N. skyrta, f., n-stem, L. seurte, P. Pl.² sherte), aboue (vpon BC, [vp]on D), 3580 f (-t D); to, 3941 f; on, 4214 f; in, 4758 f (-t D), 6184 f (schert C).

Rhyme words.—herte (3580, 3941, 4214, 4758), ponerte (-t C) (6184), ster te *effugi* (4758). [Var. C scherte; D schirte, shirte.]


stalke (dimin. of A.S. stæl, stel; P. Pl.² stalke), on stalk[e] lowe, 2053 AB (stalke C; -ys D, *supply* [on]).

dwyste (O.N. traust, n.), Lo holde the at thi dwyste clos and I, 2619 [-e] C, tristre f D.

dwyste, trist, (i.) nom., 3783 f (-e B) (lyst *lubet*), 4147 f (-e B, trust C, truste D) (lyst *voc.*); acc., 3245 f (truste B) (lyst *lubet*; *wyst p.p.*). (ii.) nom., 154 (trost C, trust D); voc., 4264 (-e B, trust CE) (cf. 7622); for, 6044 (-e B).—trust, (i.) in t., 83 AC (-e B); for wantrust, 794 (-e B, -trost C, wantrowist f D). (ii.) nom., mystrust, 1865 (-e B; C f); for m., 3165 (-e B, -trost C).

wente (cf. A.S. wend, f.), acc., 1148 f (-t AD), 1900 f (-t C² D), 6968 f (-t ACD), 7557 f (-t CD); by, 3629 f (-t CD).

Rhyme words.—wente *pret. ind.* 1, 3 sg. (1148, 1900, 3629, 6968, 7557), *biente pret. ind.* 3 sg. (7557).

were (= doubt, perplexity, Scotch weir, cf. Skeat, *Minor Poems, Glossary*), ffrom day to day til they be in were of ioye, 7910 C, but read *ben bare of ioye* (with ABD).

werre (cf. A.S. war-scot; wyrre, uuerre, in the *Chron.* 1119, 1140, are doubtless from French (see Behrens, p. 55); cf. O.H.G. werra, f.; L.a weorra, b. werre), 134 f, 1953 f, 4614 f, 5209 f (werr D), 6597 f, 7756 f (werr D); -e, 6331 (guerre D), 7218 (werr D).

Rhyme words.—*derre adv. compar.* (134), verre (1953), *erre pres. 3 pl.* (4614), *inf.* (5209), sterre (6597, 7756).

whippe (A.S. hweep, still given by Bosworth-Toller on the authority of Somner, but not yet found; cf. M. Du. wippe), of, 220 f (wynpe C, whip D) (: skykke *inf.*).

wyndowe (O.N. vindauga, n., P. Pl. windowe), to the wyndowe nexst, 2271 (-ow BCD); yn the wyndowe bothe, 2277 (-ow D); from hir wyndow down, 4625 (-e C).—Before vowels, wyndowe,—nom., 6897 (-ow B); acc., 4895 (-ow BD, wyndowe [ek] C); thurgh out, 3443 AB; at . . . wyndowere, 2100 (-ow BD, in . . . wyndowe C).
§ 16. Four monosyllables in -e may be here put together:  
gle (neut. jo-stem), se (i-stem m., f.) stre (masc. wo-stem), tre (neut. wo-stem).  
gle (A.S. poet.) gléo, W.S. *g lleg, glíg, Ep. glíu, see Sievers § 247, n. 3; L. gleo, gle and, 2121 (glee b).  
se, see (A.S. sé, inflected partly as m., partly as f., Siev. § 266, n. 3;  
L. see, sê, O. se), 417, 1088, 1090, 1528 f: (se inf. : he), 2850 f: (tre),  
4600, 5685 f: (be sit), 6211 f: (be sim: free), 7249 f: (see ind. 2  
pl. : me), 8178 f: (vanite : felicite); se hath, 4586.  
stre, straw (A.S. stréaw, stráw-berie, stréa(w)berie, North. stré, Rush.  
stréu, Sievers, §§ 112. n. 1 and 3, 250. n. 1; P. Pl. be strawe), stre,  
2830 f: (she: he); straw is, 3701 (straw B, straw yfaH D); straw  
yset, 4846 (-e C); a straw for, 6725 (-e D).  
tre, tree (A.S. tréo(w), n., North. tré, tréo, tréu(o), Siev. § 250. 2; L.  
treo, dat. treowe, O. treo, tre), 2852 f: (se n.), 3385 f: (be inf.:  
flé inf.).—Bef. ests., tre, 4072, 4888, 7507 (trejs † C); bef. vowels,  
957.  

Note 1. For snow (A.S. snáw, m., wo-stem), cf. 525 (-e B), 5029, 7539  
(snowgh B).  

Note 2.—For wo, wuo, sbst., from A.S. xác, interj., cf. 4, 34, 248 f, 322,  
378, 503, 546 AB, 582 f BCD, 1004, 1147, 1468 f, 2445 f, 3048, 3249,  
4921, etc.; cf. also where me be wo, 2908; wo is me, 3113; me is wo,  
4285 f; wo hym, 694 (wo is hym CD); me is for hym we, 3788 f; wo is wo,  
1568; wo was hym, 356, 6422; hym was wo, 524, 6356 AD (he was wo  
B); so wo was hem, 4540. In “But lord this sely Troylus was wo”  
6892, the construction is ambiguous. Cf. ful wo to bed he went, 1147 D  
(yo wo AB).—The interjection ho is also used substantively in the phrase  
withouten ho, 2163 f AG (hoo BCp., for ay and o C John’s MS., for Ay  
and oo D added in later hand); cf. “But ho no more of this mater”  
3032; “But ho (hoo BD) for wo han right ynow of this,” 5994.  

§ 17. In the following nouns final -y comes from the  
vocalization of an Anglo-Saxon -g. Cf. also wey  
(§ 14), lady, pley (§ 5).
§ 18. The following masculine and neuter nouns, which in
Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant in the nominative take no -e in the Troilus, even in the dative.

(i) Pure masculine o-stems,\(^1\) — (a) monosyllabic, arm, bark (gender?);
berd, blast, bor, bot, broth, chep, cherl, clerk, cloth, crop, dom (and compounds), drem, em, fisch, flod (m., n.), foul, fox, frost, gnat, gód, gost, harm, hat, hauk, helm, hod, hom, hook, horn, hownd, knyf, knyght, kok, kyng, lord, lust, mouth, unn, oth, path, port, post, pyk (gender?), qualm, réd, rës, reyn, ryng, sheld, shou, slep, song, spir (gender?), ston (cheston), sworm, thank (m., n.), thèf, thorn, thought, thral, thred, top, wal, wir, wyn, yerd; (b) dissyllabic, bishop, bosom, bridel, crepal, epistol, ernest (also f.), feuer (ere), laughter, martir, thonder, wimpil; (ii) pure neuter o-stems,—(a) monosyllabic, bak, blood, bon, bond, brayn, brest, col, cold, corn, der, fel, folk, gold, gres, hed, heer, hous, lef, light, lond, loss(e), mel, mot, right, seed, shap, ship, sor, sword, thing, vers, werk, wer, wheel, word, wrong, wyf, wyn; (b) dissyllabic, donel (m., n.), forlong, gospel, iren, ordel (q. v.), timber, water, weder, wonder, yuel. (iii) masculine jo-stem,—bryd; (iv) neuter jo-stems,—kyn, net, vit; (v) masculine i-stems,—craft, del, dymt, gest, gylt, hil, streng, cf. Grek; (vi) masculine u-stems,—feld, wynter; (vii) masculine consonant stems,—fendl, fren, man; (viii) neuter consonant stems,—bred, chyld. For fader, etc., see end of list; for cros, see § 19.

In the following list MS. D has usually been disregarded, and insignificant variations in spelling have not been registered. For erroneous final -e's, not sounded, and due simply to the whim of the scribe, see especially bor, brest, cold(e), dom, fend(e), flood, foule(e), frend, gold, harm, hed, hom, knyght, kyng, lord, noon, reed, ryng, thing, werk, wyn. (cf. § 14, note 2).

arm (A.S. earm, m.), (i) acc., 2750; for, 2735 f. (ii) acc., 3970, 4416

---

\(^1\) U-stems that have in A.S. identified themselves with the o-declension are not distinguished.
§ 18. of Chaucer's Troilus.

(armes † B); yn his a. he, 1241 (-e B).—arm yn arm, (i.) 1908; (ii.) 2201, 2810.

bak (A.S. bæc, n.), (i.) his b. byhynde, 1724; at herë b. byhynde, 7174 AB; (ii.) acc., 4083; by, 7174 † C.
bark (A.S. bark, Leechd., I, 378, O.N. bórkr, m.), (ii.) vnðer, 3569; ther nys but b., 4889; thorwgh the b., 5801 (-e B, om. † C).

berd (A.S. beard, m.), in the b., 4703 (-e B).
bishop (A.S. bispoc, m.), (ii.) nom., 1189 (9-syl. verse).

blast (A.S. blæst, blæst, m.), for, 2472 f (-e B).

blood, blod (A.S. blód, n.), (i.) voc., 1679; acc., 435, 1530; of (source), 4642; vnto, 6964. (ii.) ther nas but Grekes b., 1283; vnto, 6963. [Var. B -e; -e; C blud.]

bon (A.S. bán, n.), nom., 2011 f (-e B, mylk † C).

bond (A.S. band, n. (bande, pl., Pet. Chron.), Sweet, 254; but the regular A.S. form is bünd, m., f., see Sievers, § 266, n. 2), (i.) acc., 4596 (in † a bünd C); without, 4200 (-e B); with, 4608 (bünd C); from, 4610 (-e B, hond † C). (ii.) voc., 4103 (hond † B).

bor, boor (A.S. bár, m.); bórë, boore, nom. 7812 D, acc., 4622 AB (-e † D), 7601 D, 7834 D; with, 3563 BD; of, 7645 D (: hoore adj. sg., A.S. hár; bor: hor AC; boor: hoor B).—boore he, acc., 7840 D. Everywhere else written bor, boor; cf., besides the places just cited, 7603, 7817, 7825, 7832, 7835, 7876, 7878.

bosom (A.S. bósom, m.), And yn here bosom the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 ABC (bosom doun D).

bot (A.S. bát, m.), (ii.) withinne, 416; nom., the b. hath, 1088. [Var. B boot.]

brayn (A.S. brægen, n.), yn 4346 (breyne B).

bred (A.S. bréad, n.), acc., 1529 f (: ded adj. sg. pred.). (Cf. 907 † D.)

brest (A.S. bréost, n.), (i.) nom., 6582 (-e B); acc., 5414, 5834 (bryst C); in, 4898 (-e B); on, 4258 (-e B); vpon, 5813 (-e B); out of, 5132; into, 2014 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4905; vpon, 4694 (-e B); out of, 5000 (-e B, bryst C); fro, 6155 (-e B); nom., b. here, 5477 (-e B); vnder hire b. his, 2012 (-e B). [Var. B -e-e-] out of my brest, 5438 AB (brest † commeye C).

breth (A.S. brést, m.), nom., 801 f (-e B), 4935; acc., 3961, 5840.

bryd (A.S. brid, m.), nom., 2852.

brydel, bridel (A.S. brídel, m.), nom., 946 f (: on ydel); acc., 4604; by, 6455 f (: on ydel); on, 7236. [Var. C -il.]

cheap (A.S. cěap, m.), as good cheap, 3483 (schep C).
cherl (A.S. eorl, m.), nom., 1017.
child (A.S. cild, n.), nom., 4770 D (-e B, chy[ll]d A).
clerk (A.S. clerce, clerke, m., coincident with O.F. clerc), (ii.) nom., 2883 (clerc B).
cloth (A.S. clath, m.), nom., 3575 f.
col (A.S. col, n.), thorough, 2417 (-e C, -e [the] moré B).
cold(e) (A.S. ceald, cauld, n.), for, 911 f (-d CD) (: told(e) (told CD) p.p.); through, -e, 2052 (-d B, D (?) the coldé nyȝt C). For heté of cold for cold of heté I deye, 420 (ffor cold of heté for heté of cold, etc. C).
corn (A.S. corn, n.), nom., 219 f (-e B) (by-forn adv.: shorn p.p.).
craft (A.S. croeft, m.), (i.) nom., 665, 747; acc., 379; on (acc. BC), 6120 f. (ii.) nom., 4476; in, 6453; nom., lecheécraft, 5098.
crepul (A.S. crypel, m.), by-fore, 6120 (-il C).
crop (A.S. crop(p), m.), nom., crop and rote, 1433, 7608 f (-e B) ; crop and more, 6383.
del (A.S. dél, m.), ye shenden euery del, 1675 f (-e BD) ; ony del, 2299 f (-e BD); eche a del, 3536 f (-e BD); neuer a del, 3550 f (-e BD); no del, 1082 A (-il D); euery del, 5721 f (-e B, -deH D); acc., haluendel the drede, 3549 (nom., † C). Cf. somdel, adv., (i.) 290 (-e B); (ii.) 1081 AD (some deel B), 1688 (-e BD).
Rhyme words.—wel adv. (everywhere but 5721); temporel, eternal (5721), stel n. (1675). [Var. B deele, decl.]
der (A.S. déor, n.), (ii.) acc., 2620 (deere B).
deuel (A.S. déofol, m., n.), (i.) nom., 5292 (-yl haue † C); voc., 2822 (-il C). (ii.) nom., the d. haue, 805 (-yl C). As expletive,—How deuuel maystow bryngen me to blysse, 623 (de[ue]l C).
dom (A.S. dóm, m.), (i.) to my d., 5049 (-e B), 5064; in myn d., 5258 C (supply [no]). (ii.) nom., 5850 ([the] dome B; dom C †). [Var. B doom.]—to my dome, 100 (doom B, dom C).
Compounds.—frédom, (ii.) acc., 235 (-dam C).—kýngdom, (ii.) acc., 7850 (kyndom C, kingdham D).—thráldom, nom., 1941.—wyßdom, wisdom, (i.) with, 5390 (wisdom D). (ii.) of, 1299; for, 452 (be wisdom C †).1
drem (A.S. dréáam, m.), (i.) acc., 6741 (-en B); for 7643 (-e B); in, 7615. (ii.) nom., 7806 (-e B); acc., 7651 (-e B, -ys C), 7819 (-e B; C †); in, 7614 (drem [y]schewid C); by, 8078 (-e B †); acc., d. he, 7815 (-e B).
dynt (A.S. dynt, m.), with, 7868 (-e D, dent C).

1 In B 452 dele the second (for).
§ 18.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 55

em (A.S. éam, m.), (i.) nom., 1440, etc.; voc., 1394, etc.; of (= from), 1015. (ii.) nom., 3115, etc.; voc., 2244.

epistol (A.S. epistol, pistol, m.), e. hem, 3343 ([e]pistil C, lettre † D).

ernest (A.S. érnest, -ost, m., f.), (i.) in, 2614, 2788; bytwene, 3096. (ii.) acc., 1537 (hERNEST B). [Cf. ernestful, § 49, n. 3.]

fel (A.S. fell, n.), (ii.) nom., 91.

feld, field (A.S. feld, m.), (ii.) in, 4704 (-e B), 5451 (-e D); through, 1280 (-e B)\(^1\); yn the feld he, 1067 (feulde B). (Cf. fieldfare, § 5.)

fend(e) (A.S. fëond, m.), 5099 f AD (frend B, frend † C) ( : frend voc.).

feuer, -ere (A.S. fefer, féfer, m., Pogatscher, p. 164), feuere, 909 f (: keuere inf.); feurer and, 491 (yr B, -ere CD)\(^2\); -ér is, 2605 (-ére B, -ére D, [thi] feuere C); -ére or, 4055 (fyuer D).

fissh, fyssh (A.S. fisc, m.), (i.) nom., 5427. (ii.) nom., 2877; nom., f. herbe, 2852.

flood (A.S. flód, m., n.), on a flod(e), 3482 f (flood D) (: as muchè good); fro . . . flood of, 4442 (floode B, flod C, feende † D).

folk, see § 43.

forlong (A.S. furlong, -lang, n.), a f. wey, 5899 (forlonge B, furlong CD).

foul(e) (A.S. fugol, m.), nom., foule, 6788 A (fowl B, foul C).

fox (A.S. fox, m.), fox that ye ben, 4407 (ſfor that † C).

frend (A.S. fréond, m.), (i.) nom., 1348 (-e B), 2488, etc.; voc., 584 (-e B), 610, etc.; acc., 627 (-e B), 1052, etc.; of (= gen.), 98. (ii.) nom., 548 (-e B); voc., 2444 (-e B), etc.; acc., 550 (freende B); for, 1497 (-e- B); of (= by), 3638 (-e B).—voc., frende, 602 AB (-d C), 5294 AB (-d C).

frost (A.S. forst, m.), (ii.) nom., 524 (froost B), f. hym, 6898.

gest (A.S. gest, giest, gyst, m.), nom., 2196 f BCDG (geste A) (: it thought here herte brest AC, breste BG, as thogh her hert to-brest D : yf yow lest CG, lesté AB, list D). The collation of Cp. and John’s records no variations from A in these three lines.

gilt, gylt (A.S. gylt, m.), (i.) withouten, 2365 (-e B); in, 4483; of, 4019 (-e B); for, 8138. (ii.) nom., 7620 (-e B); yn, 1329; for, 7459 (-e B); nom., g. hath, 7750. [Cf. gitles, gilités, §§ 49, n. 5, and 85.]

gnat (A.S. gnæt, m.), nom., 5257 (gnatte C).

god (A.S. god, m., n.), (i.) nom., 195, 4607, etc.; voc., 400, etc.; acc., 40; to, 32; by, 1200 (be † iouys C), 1222 (by g. he C); of (= gen.),

\(^1\) A happens to read *feld*.

\(^2\) In C dele (al).
Observations on the Language

69, 612, 1310, etc.; dat., I thankë god, 1240. (ii.) nom., 206, etc.;
vol., 2145 (B †), etc.; to, 421, 925; by, 2043, 2322, 2962, 3214;
of (=gen.), 571, 2402; to g. haue, 1667; to g. hope, 2357; I
thanke it g., 1836.
gold (A.S. gold, n.), (i) of, 6061, 7175; with, 6039; for, 7249 A. (ii.)
of, 6675; for, 3242, 7249 B; vpon a quysshon gold y-bete, 2314.—
golde, nom., 6185 ABD (gold. acc. † C).
gospel (A.S. godspell, n.), nom., 7628.
gost (A.S. gást, m.), (i) nom., 2462 (C †), 3306 (C †), 4849, 5572,
5883 (-e B), 8171; voc., 4964; acc., 1616, 5447, 7733. (ii.) with,
7884. [Var. B goost.]
Grek (A.S. Grée, Crée), 1068.
gres (A.S. græs, W.S. gærs, n.), (ii.), on, 1600 (gras D).
harm (A.S. hearm m.), (i) nom., 75 (-e B), 3755, 4006, 5505, 7588
(-e B); acc., 839 (-e B)\(^1\), 2734 f, 3647 (-e B); for, 1539 (-e B),
3167 (-e B), 4717 (-e B); with, 1925 (-e B, C †); by, 3171 BC
\(\text{om.} \text{ † A.} \) (ii.) nom., 1874, etc.; acc., 347 (-e B, h.† by C), etc.; to,
1661 (-e B),\(^2\) 2233; for ... h. he, 4000.—harmë, nom., 333 (harm
C); voc., 411 (harm C); acc., 3560 (harm C); yn, 7739 (in(to)
harm C); harme, nom., 409 (harm C).
hat (A.S. hæt(t), m.), nom., 3162 f (hattè B) (: what : that).
hauk (A.S. hafoc, m.), (i) nom., 671. (ii.) with h., 6428 (-e B).—gos-
hauk, (i) nom., 5075 C\(^a\).—sparhauk hath, nom., 4034 (sper-
hauk C).
hed (A.S. hæfod, n.), (i) nom., 1929 f (-e D); acc., 1492 f (hede D),
1742 (-e † D), 1774, 2923 f (-e D), 3799 f AB, 3897 (A †), 3921 f
(-e D), 4906 (-e D), 7290 f (with ... † hed C); at, 2781 f (-e D);
to, 5821 f (-e D); by, 530 A † C †, 1255 † D, 5255 (hed C); in,
5754; of, 5390; sauc, 1710. (ii.) nom., 6357; acc., 1625, 1952
(-e D); out of, 3736 (heuyd C, hedë † gone D); on, 6646 (in his
hed he † D); acc., hed he, 7840. hede, acc., 4415 f (hed BCD);
by here beddes hede, 3796 f (hed B).
Rhyme words.—ded adj. sg. (1492, 1929, 2781, 2923, [3796 D (dede),] 3921,
4415, 5821), goodlyhed (1929), hed, hede head (3796, 3799), red n. (2781,
5821), red adj. (2923, 3796, 3799, 4415, 7290). [Var. heued, heyed,
heuyd C 1710, 1952, 3736, 5821 f, 5390, 5754, 6646; heel, heede D.]
heer (A.S. hær, hér, n.), (i.) acc., 5398 (here B, her CD). [here in
5478 f B, 7173 C, 7362 D, is an error for heres, pl.]
helm (A.S. helm, m.), (i) nom., 1723 (-e B); vpon, 8125 (in B
supply [to]). (ii.) acc., 6670 (-e B).
\(^1\) In C supply [cruel].
\(^2\) In C supply [am].
hil, hill (A.S. hyll, m.), (i.) to, 6973 (C ?); [n] hil Parnaso, 4652. (ii.) nom., 943 (hille B).

hood, hood (A.S. hód, m.), by, 2266 f (-e B, hond † C) (: good n. : stood ind. 3. sg), 5255 † C, 7514 f (-e BD), (: good n.); acc., 2039 (-e B); in, 2195.

horn (A.S. lám, m.), (i.) as limit of motion, as in A.S. (= domum), 1995 † C, 3068, 3486, 4423 (-e D), 4871 AB, 5392, etc.; at hom, 4755 (-e B); homward, 3463 (hom C). (ii.) = domum, 6848, etc.; home, 126 A (hoorn B, hom C), home he, 1861 AB (hom C).

hook (A.S. hóc, m.), (ii.) acc., 7140.

horn (A.S. horn, m.), (ii.) acc., 1727 (hed † C).

hound (A.S. hund, m.), (i.) acc., 3606 (-e B). (ii.) with, 6428 † C. (Cf. § 15, n. 3, p. 51.)

hous, hows (A.S. hús, n.), (i.) nom., 3477; acc., 1058 (-e B), etc.; in, 3042, 6938 f (place † B) (: melodious); out of, 1522 (-e B); at, 3037; to, 3356, 6891 (C †). (ii.) voc., 6904; acc., 2871; in, 1766, 3506; to, 2546 (-e B; C †), 2625; vnto, 2599 (-e B); in the h. he, 5485.

iren (A.S. iren, n.), acc., felt iren hot, 2361 (the thorn † C).

knyfi (A.S. cnifi, m.), with this k., 1410.

knyght (A.S. cniht, m.), (i.) nom., 165 f, 1074 f, 1262 f, 1416 f, 3280 f (-e B), 3757 f, 4329 f, 4490 f, 5013, 5231 f, 5279 f (kynghght A), etc.; voc., 3018 f (-e B), 3838 f, 4151 (-e B, om. † C), 6199 f; acc., 979, 1956 f, 2679 (A †), 5376 f C (: syzt n.), 6147 f; by, 225 f; vpon, 1846; lyk, 1716 f, 2348 f (-e B); to, 3623 f (-e B), 7200 f (-e B), 6696 f. (ii.) nom., 191; of (= gen.), 1537 f, 7228 f (-e B), 8115 f (-e B); fro, 5408 f, 6696 f; knygthe, nom., 3825 f AB (-t C).

kok (A.S. coö(e), m.), nom., 4257 (C †); pekok, acc., 210 (pakoe B).

kyn (A.S. cyn(n), n.), (ii.) nom., 5287, 5993; acc., 6183.

kyng (A.S. cyning, cyng, m.), (i.) nom., 1186 (-e B), 5539 (-e B), 7297; voc., 4856 (-e B); acc., 4800 (-e B), etc.; to, 5308 (-e B); with, 6647 (-e B), 6794 (-e B); of, 4786 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4938; to, 3224 (-e B); with, 3434 (-e B). of the kynge, 664 AB (of [the] kynge C).

laughter (A.S. hleahtor, m.), for l. wende, 2254 (-tere BC, -tir D); nom., laughtre men, 5528 (-ter CD).

lef (A.S. leaf, n.), (i.) nom., 4042 (leef B). (ii.) yn, 7796 (leefe B).

light, lyght (A.S. leocht, n.), (i.) nom., 3978 (C †), 6906 f; acc., 4298, 4543, 7001 f (-e B); wo worth . . . l., 5400 f (nyzt † C). (ii.) nom., 3979; voc., 2843; acc., 2405 (lettere † C), 3821, cf. 4962;
C; of, 1994; acc. I. here (hieh), 4303 (lyth C). [Cf. lyghtles, § 49, n. 5.]

lond (A.S. land, lond, n.), yn some 1, 1123 (-e B).

lord (A.S. hláford, m.), (i.) nom., 1415, 1524; voc. and excl., 330 (-e B), 350 (now † C), 422, 528, 2924, 6945 (-e C), etc.; with, 1791; by, 2138 BC. (ii.) nom., 65, 2488; voc. and excl., 2406 † C, 2444 (-e B), 6952 (om. † B); acc., 903 (-e B; C †). lorde, voc., 6962 ABD (lord C).

loss(e) (A.S. los, n., L. to lose, P. Pl. los, loos), nom., -e, 4689 (los B, los D); -e ne, 4751 (los B, loss † me D).

lust (A.S. lust, m.), (i.) nom., 4388 (lest D †), 6235, 7618 (C †; -e B, liste D), 8194 (-e B, list D); acc., 1915 (lyf D), 4741 (-e B, nom. lust D), 5751 (-e B, wil C), 8187 A (-e B); ayens, 1561 (liste B, lyst D), 2142 (list D); for, 443 (loue C, list D); of (= gen.), 1929 (luf A, lyst and D); with, 7682; yn, 326; to, 2219. (ii.) acc., 2083 (-e D, list D), 3118 (-e B, lyst D), 4532 (-e B); of, 6389; at, 407; yn, 4661 (-e B, lyst D), 5155 (-e B, loue C); acc., 1. his, 2151 (list D), 4392 (list D).

lest, lyst (cf. A.S. lystan),—lest, nom., 1872 f (-e B) (: prest pred. adj. pl.). lyst, voc., 4145 f (liste B, lust C, truste † D) (: trist n.);
yn, 330 f (leste B, rest C, lyst D) (: best adv.).

man (A.S. man, m.) 232 f, 1633 f, 3805 f, etc., etc.
martir (A.S. martyr, m.; also, martyrre), nom., 5285 (-tyr BC).


mouth (A.S. mouth, m.), (ii.) acc., m. he, 812 BC (m. yet † A), 5823 (-e B, mout C).

net (A.S. net(t), n.), of, 4575 f (nette C); withoute, 1668 f, 6033 (C †); into, 7138. (Rhyme-words all p.p.,—set, yset, yknet, imet.)
noon, non(e), noon(e) (A.S. nón, m.), (i.) nom., noone, 7477 (non C);
after noone, 2270 (-n BC); after noon, 7493 (and at † after noné D); byfor noon, 7485 (-e D). (ii.) a-twixen noon, 6835 (-e BCD).

ordal (A.S. ordáil, ordél, n.), (ii.) by, 3888 (ordel C, ordinal † D).

oth (A.S. òth, m.), acc., 3953 f (ath B); by, 3888 f (ooth B).

path (A.S. pàth, m.), (ii.) acc., 1122; gon som by-path, 4547.

port (A.S. port, m., cf. O. Fr. port), to good port hastow rowed, 962.

post (A.S. post, m.), (ii.) nom., 993.

pyk (A.S. pic, m. (?), cf. Fr. pique), acc., 2126 f (pik C).

\[1\] In ABD read fůšč for fast.
qualm (A.S. eawelm, eawlæm, m.), (ii.) nom., 6745 (-e C).
red, reed (A.S. ræd, ræd, m.), (i.) nom., 5160f (-e BD), 6791
counsell † D); acc. 661 (-e BD), 2783f (-e D), 5822f (-e BD),
6075 (-e BD), 6690 C (rede ABD); to, 2624 (-e BD); by, 2780
(-e BD). (ii.) nom., 1474 † (-e BD), 1507 AC (-e B), 7655 (-e B, 2
counsell † is D); of, 2439 (-e BD); withouten, 6385 (-e D). [rede
once in A, 6690.]
Rhyme words.—ded mortua (2783, 5160), she lay as for ded (5822), at his
beddæs hed (2783), to here hed (5822).
res (A.S. ræs, m.), yn a r., 5012 (rees B).
reyn, rayn (A.S. regn, rèn, m.), (i.) nom., 3468 (-e B), 3498f (-e B)
(: agayn : fayn), 4402 (in B supply [me]); in, 3630f (: to seyn :
certeyn). (ii.) of, 3470.
right, ryght (A.S. rïht, n.), (i.) nom., 591, 3840f (perh. adj.); acc.,
4124f, 5177f; by r., 3758, 5105f (thour r. C); of r., 3826, 4637f,
5233f (-e B, on ryzt C), 7708f. (ii.) by r., 1848, 5058.—vnright,
acc., 1538f, 5212f.
ryng (A.S. hring, m.), (i.) nom., 3732 (-e B), 5531f (-e B, ryngis † C);
 voc., 6912 (-e B, r. of C); acc., 3735 C (-e B, ryng I A); yn, 1670
(-e B).—ryng(e), acc., 3727f AB (ryng C) (: thing acc.).
seed (A.S. sed, n.), nom., 385 C (sedæ BD, om. † A).
shap (A.S. ge-scœap, n.), (ii.) acc., 1747 (shappe B, in A supply [his]),
6836 (shap hire BC)
sheld (A.S. scœld, scyld, scœld, m.), (i.) nom., 1286 (sheild and B,
schild & C), 1617 (-e B, schild C), 1725 (-e B, scheld C), 3322
(shield B, schild C); acc., 6671 (-e B, child C); vnder sheld, 2412f
(-e B, schild C) (: byheld pret. ind. 3. sg.: held pret. ind. 3 sg.)
ship (A.S. scip, n.), (ii.) acc., 7007 (-e D).
shour (A.S. scœr, m.), (i.) in, 4709 (-e B). (ii.) Doun fille as shour in
aperið (aperil B) swythe, 5413 (Out ran as schour of aprille ful
swythe C).
slep, sleep (A.S. slæp, m.), (i.) nom., 4380 (-e C); acc., 484f (: keep
n.); 7810 (-e B, C †); of (=concerning), 4250f (shep † A, on slepe
C) (: kepe n.); of (= out of), 6883 (-e B). (ii.) in, 6724 (-e B),
8078 (-e B); yn his s. hym, 7597 (-e B); out of his s. he, 7606 (-e
B); nom., s. hirc, 2009 (-e B).
song (A.S. sang, song, m.), (i.) nom., 5828 (-e B, song is C); acc.,
7008 (-e B); of, 393 (-e B), 1961 (-e B); in, 397 (-e B), 4656f

1 red[œ] I shal A (emend to, red I sholda).
2 Supply [this] in C.
(e B); on, 1910 (-e B, lay C); by, 1968 f (-e BC). (ii.) nom., 7738; acc., 4666, 6996; on, 389 (-e B); in, 6095 (-e B).
sor (A.S. sár, n., f.), (i.) to his s., 5606 (soor B).
spir (A.S. spír, inc. gen.), an ok cometh of a litel spir, 2420 f (-e BCD)
(: fryr : désir n.).
ston (A.S. stán, m.), (i.) 1685 f (-e B), 2579 f (stoon B), 3541 (-e B),
5016 f (-e B); acc., 3733 f (stoon B); on, 2313 f (-e B); of, 2956
(-e B); in (= into), 5129 f (stoon B, into a ston C). (ii.) nom.,
1928 (A f), 8092 (-e B).
strong (A.S. strenge, m.), (ii.) acc., 2118 (-e B).
swarm (A.S. swearm, m.), (ii.) nom., 1278.
swerd (A.S. sward, n.), (i.) acc., 5433 (-e B), 5877 (-e B), 6670; with
this ... s., 5902 (-e B). (ii.) acc., 4415, 5886 (-e B; C f); with
s., 5873.
thank (A.S. þanc, þone, m.), (i.) acc., 803, 1008 (-e B), 1100 (-e B).
(ii.) acc., 3485, etc.; t. him, 1461 (-e B).—vntanhk, (ii.) acc., 7062
(-thonke B).
theff (A.S. þéof, m.), (i.) voc., 870 (theeff B, if f C). (ii.) voc., 3940.
thing, thyng (A.S. ping, n.), (i.) nom., 174, 217 (-e B, thyngys C), 254
(-e B), 5533 f (-e B), 5735 f (-e B), etc.; acc., 1229 (-e B), 3725 f
(-e B), etc.; on, 5247 (-e B); in, 5070 (-e B); to, 5684 (-e B);
fro, 748 (-e B, for f th. C); ayceynus, 2499 (-e B); of, 511, 673
(thyninge B), etc.; any thyng, any thing, adv'l., 848 (-e B), 3474 (-e
B).—(ii.) nom., 401 (-e B), 5358 f (-es B), etc.; acc., 1719 (-e B); in,
1800 (-e B); on, 2860 (-e B); of, 2960; lyk, 103 (-e B); for that
thyng hym, 1805.—no thing, no thyng, (i.) nom., 2135; acc., 1460
(-e B), etc.; for, 7057 (-e B); with, 2380 (-e B); of, 797 (-e B),
etc.; adv'l., 137 (-e B), etc. (ii.) nom., 339 (-e B), etc.; acc., 1558
(-e B), etc.; in, 5827 (-e B); no maner thyng, adv'l., 5939 (-e B).
thinge, acc., 2791 A (thyngye B, thyng C).
thonder, thondre (A.S. þunor, m., L. þunre), of thonder, 3504 f
(thonder B, thunyr C, thunrd D) (: a-sonder : yonder); with
thonder dynt, 7868 (-dir C, thunnder D); with thonder, 2230 f (-ir
C, -re D) (: wonder : yonder); acc., the thonder rynge, 1318
(thundir D, thondyr (to) rynge C).
thorn (A.S. þorn, m.), acc., 2357 f (-e BC), 3946 f (-e B).
thought (A.S. go-póht, m.), (i.) nom., 442 f, 1853, 5643 (-e B) (cf.
1856, 1891); acc., 3981 f, 4951 f, 5727 f, 7529 f, 7644; for ... th.,
579 f; yn th., 1779 (in hire th. argye BC); yn here th., 1688 f,
6465 f (-e B); in his th., 4383; out of my th., 4342 f; of here ...
th., 1737; of this th., 1830 (e B); with that th., 1741. (ii.) nom., 6316 † C; acc., 5641; with, 7682; in his th. he, 3285; withinne hire th. his, 1745; with that th. he, 827; with . . . th. hire, 1894.
thral (A.S. þræl, m.), acc., 439 (thrawlæ B).
thred, threed (A.S. þræd, þræd, m.), (ii.) acc., 6208, 6370; with, 7175 (e B).
top (A.S. top(p), m.), acc., 5658.
tymber (A.S. timber, n.), (ii.) nom., 3372 (-yr B, -ir C, -re D).
vers (A.S., fers, n., cf. O.F. vers), next this vers he, 399.
wal (A.S. weal(l), wal(l), m.), (i.) nom., 3321 f (: in al); in, 1132 f
   (walle B) (: yn al : shal 3 sg. ind.).  (ii.) nom., 1239; to . . . w. his, 4906 (walle B); ouer . . . w. he, 7508 (walle B, wàl † his C).
[Var. C wàl.]
water, watre (A.S. water, n.), (i.) to watre, 2957 (-er B, -yr C);
   withoute water, 5427 (-yr C).
weder (A.S. weder, n.), (i.) nom., 1087, 3499 (-ir C).  (ii.) nom., 3512 (-ir C).
werk (A.S. weorc, n.), (i.) acc., 1059, 8186; for, 2078, 4828 (-e B);
of, 1101, 8021 (-e B); on (vpon BC), 3539; to, 3577.  (ii.) acc., 265,
   3313, 5514 (wek † A); of . . . w. he, 3544.—worke, acc., 2045
   AB (werke C).
wex (A.S. wæx, weaks, n.), vpon, 2173.
wheston (A.S. hwéstán, m.), (ii.) nom., 631 (weston C).  (Cf. ston.)
whiel (A.S. hwéol, n.). (i.) nom., 848 (whelys † C); on, 4673; vpon
   the w., 4985 f (: of stel); of (=gen.), 839.  (ii.) from, 4668.  [Var.
   C whel.]
wimpil (A.S. wimpel, inc. gen.), acc. wimpil and, 1195 C (read barbe).
wir (A.S. wîr, m.), by, 4478 f (wyr B) (: fir ignis : desir n.).
wit, wyt (A.S. gewit(t), n.), (i.) nom., 5553 (C ?), 5599, 6273 f, etc.;
   acc., 241 f (witte B), 1358 (witte B), 3839 f (witte B, wite C), 5766 f,
   etc.; out of, 108, 4892, 5010; emforth, 1328 f, 2082 f (euene with
   my w. C); with, 2757; to, 4153 (om. † C); by, 7121 f (: yit : it).
   (ii.) nom., 1217 (B †), etc.; acc., 7706; yn, 989; of, 1928 (A †,
   wight C), 3058; out of, 7625; with, 2977 (B †), 3007, 3085 C,
   6149, 8145; thurgh, 2926 (C †).
wonder (A.S. wonder, n.), (i.) nom., 403 (-yr C), 2228 f (-ir C) (: with
   thonder : yonder), 5250 (-yr C), 5762 (-ir C); acc., 7344 f (-ir C,
   wondær B) (: asonder).  (ii.) nom., 955 (-yr C), 959 (-yr C), 1105,
   1828 (-ir C), 1834 (-ir C) (cf. 4920, 6425, 6484).  (Cf. the adverbial
   and adjectival uses of wonder, § 85, note 2.)
Observations on the Language

word (A.S. word, n.), (i.) nom., 1102 (-e B), etc.; acc, 397, etc.; of, 820 (-e B); with, 875 (-e B), 1176 (-e B), 1293 (-e B), 1961 (-e B), 2777 (-e B), 3000, 3752 (-e B); without w., 33081; at, 4150 (-e B). (ii.) nom., 2896 (-e B); acc., 737, 2113 (-e B), etc.; word by word, 2262 (C † ); by, 3273 (by w. ne † C); without w., 5362 (-e B; C † ); with that w. he, 204 (-e B), 869 (-e B), 1349, 3583, 3806 (-e B), 3820; with that w. here (poss. sg.), 1335; without w. he, 6000; word and ende, 2580, 3544 (-e B).—acc., by-word here (hic), 5131 (-e B).

wrong (A.S. wrang, see Kluge in Paul's Grundriss, I, 787), (i.) acc., 2557 (-e B), 3850 (-e B). (ii.) nom., 4017 (-e B); acc., 2764; in w., 594 (-e B); acc., wronge † to D (-ès AB).

wyf (A.S. wif, n.), (i.) voc., 2948 f (lyf), 4138 f (al my lyfe A, lyue BC); from 6701 f (lif : stryf). (ii.) nom., 678, 6134 (-e B).

wyn (A.S. wín, n.), acc., (i.) 7215, (ii.) 3513.

wynd (A.S. wind, m.), (i.) 3585 (-e B), 7036 (-e B); acc., 7041 (-e B); with w., 1851 (-e B); in the w., 3368 f (-e BC) (blynd pred. adj. sg.); o wynd o wynd, 1087 (-e . . . -e B). (ii.) thorough, 6806 (-e B); with w., 7004 (-e B); wynde, nom., 2473 AB (wynd C).

wynter (A.S. winter, m.), (i.) nom., 1137; in, 3194 (-ir C), 4887 (-yr C); after, 3904 (-yr C); yn wyntor mone, 524 (-yr C).

yerd (A.S. geard, m.), nom., 3erd, 1905 D (yerde B, gardeyn (slurred) † A, 3erd [was] C).

yuél (A.S. yfel, n.), (i.) acc., 1666 (euel B, euyl C, evil D), 4006 (euel B, euyl C); for, 5268 (euel B, grif † C); an yuyl that ye ne take, 7988 (an euyl 3b, on euyl 3c, on yuyl that D).2 (ii.) nom., 782 (euyl C); acc., iuyl and, 6780 C (harm AB, harme D).

The five Anglo-Saxon kinship nouns fader, mó дор, brosor, sweostor, dohtor (r-stems):—

fader, (i.) 5994 (fadilyr † C, fadir D †), 6043 (-ir D, -ir I C), 7499 (-yr C); cf. 121, 4756, 4938, 5329. (ii.) cf. 4687, 5217, 5220.

moder, (i.) 5424 AB (-ir D), 7589 (-ir C), 8232; cf. 5869. (ii.) cf. 1135, 4037.

brother, (i.) 653 (-er(e) D), 3094 f (-ir D), 6670, 6884; cf. 51, 1242, 2131, 2444, 2481, 2483, 2496, 2535 f, 2703 f (-er(e) D), 2711, 5067 f, 5120 f, 5203, 5270 f, 6497, 7869 f. (ii.) brother || I, 8094 A (-er deere BD); brother holdere, 1729.

1 In B insert [t].

2 In B read ne for it.
§ 19. The following nouns of Germanic origin, which have no substantives to represent them in Anglo-Saxon, end in the *Troilus* in a consonant.

For erroneous -e (not sounded), see *fold(e) lok*, *skil*.

abod (cf. A.S. *abidan*), nom., 7670 (abood B; C†).

anger, *angre* (O.N. *angr*, m.), with an *angre don*, 563 (-yr C, -re to D)¹; after *anger game*, 6225 (-ir C); *ffor angre of*, 7898 (-ir CD).

bark, see § 18.

*bost* (etym. *dub*), for b., 3090 f (-e B) (: wost *scis*); *thorugh*, 3140f (: almost : wost).

cast (cf. O.N. *kasta* vb., *k9str*, m.), (ii.) *fro*, 1953 (-e B).

cros (O.N. *kross*, m.; A.S. *Normannes cros*, Birch, Cart. Sax., III, 367, see Skeat, Trans. Philol. Soc. for 1888-90, p. 286) is of Romance origin, but its precise history is doubtful, see p. 92.

fold(e) (cf. O.N. *faldr*, m., O.H.G. *falt*, m.), in many fold(e), 1782 f (-d CD) (: told p.p. : cold).

Note.—For *fold* (A.S. *feald*) in the adverbial phrase a *thousand fold*, see (i.) 2088, 2671, 3094, 3416 (-u ‡ dye B), 4382, 4526 (-e B) ; (ii.) 1227 (-e B) ; a th. f. his, 546 (-e B) ; a thousand foldē more, 819 (-d C).

hap (O.N. *happ*, n.), nom., 2781 ; acc., 2539 ; with, 4088 (B†).—

vhap, acc., 552.

keep (cf. A.S. *cepan*), acc., 486 f (-e B) (: sleep); *kep(e)*, acc., 4252 f (kep BC) (: of sleep).

lak (O.N. *iakr*, adj.), (i.) nom., 2263 (lakke B). (ii.) nom., 2044 CD (lat ‡ A, lokke ‡ B)², 7177 (lakke BD); for, 1994 (lakke B), 2365 CD.

lasch (cf. Dutch *lasch*), acc., 1. haue, 220 (lasche C”).³

lok, look (cf. A.S. *lócian*), (i.) nom., 2352, etc.; acc., 2344, 7292 f (-e B), etc.; with, 307 (-e B), 325 (-e B), 538 (-e B), etc. (ii.) acc., 291 (-e B), etc.; of, 295 (-e B); with al his l, 229.—of *hirē lok(e)*, 364 AB (lok C).

skil (O.N. *skil*, n.), nom., it *skil(e) is*, 3488 (skyl BC, skil hit D), skyl *ywys*, 1450 (-e D).

¹ In A supply [to]. ² Verse too long in C. ³ In C supply [he].

smert (cf. A.S. smeortan; Dutch smart, O.H.G. smerzo, m., smerza, f.), (i.) nom., 5507 (e D); for s., 5035 (e BD). (ii.) on s., 5128 (e B, smerthe D).—smert (e D), 6780, is perhaps a verb (= smerteth).

[On the supposed subst. smerte, see § 67, s. v. smert, adj. pl.]

stert (cf. Dutch storten; cf. A.S. stcort tail), (ii.) with, 6617 (e B, smerthe D).

strok (cf. A.S. stričan), ace., 2467 f (e B): (ok); with s., 5173 (strook(e) B).

sweigh (= impetus; cf. O.N. sveigr, m.), nom., 2468 (swough B, swey C, sweyf D).

swough (= swoon; cf. A.S. swdgan), of (= out of), 3962 (swouj C, swoun D), 5874 (swow C, swogh D).

syk (cf. A.S. sican), with, 1230 (e D), 1548 (sike t seide B, syk(e) she D), 3643 (e D), 3965 (-ej whan B), 4335, 6189. [Var. B syhg; BC sik; D sike, sig, sigh.]

walk (cf. A.S. wealcan), in his w., 190 (C).

Note 1.—For thryft (O.N. yrft, f.) and won (O.N. vän, f.), see § 11; for skyre, styre, see § 19, n.

Note 2.—For kankcdort, of very doubtful etymology, see 2837 f (cankedort C, kankcrdorte D).

§ 20. In Romance nouns final -e (-e mute) is usually retained, both in writing and in sound, except for the regular elision. But there are a good many exceptions, in some of which the -e is preserved in writing but loses its value as a syllable, in others of which the -e is neither written nor pronounced. (Cf. Child, § 19; ten Brink, §§ 222, 223.)


§ 21. Miscellaneous Romance nouns in -e (-e mute) which sometimes or always retain -e in the Troilus.

This list contains the following words: age, Ariète, assège, batayle (bâtayle), baude, baume, bille, blame, calle, cause, cause, charge, charme, chaungge, cheyne, clause, compleȝnte ( complèteȝt[e]), constreynȝte (constreyn[t[e]), cope, corâge (côrage), corde, demaudde, descènte, discoe, doute, egle, ensample, entènte, eschaungge, ese, executrice, face, faile,
of Chaucer's Troilus. 65

fame, fate, fayre, feste, flauembe, force (fors), fortune (-e; fortune, -e), frape, garde, gaude, gemme, geste (geste), grace (grace), gyle, gyse, herbe, houre, infortune, impossible, inde, ire, iape, ioye (ioye), lesse, ligne, ma daine, martire, mayle, medecine, meruaille, message, meve (move), noble, mouse, muse, mysicsordre, nece (necce), note, noyse, orisonte, penne, peple, personne (persone his), pyen, place, planete, pleynete, pompe, polente, pouerle, prene, prölie, prouerbe, pursuyte (-e), quiete (quiete), rage, rausayile, regne, rente, reprune, requête (-e), regne, roche, route, ruyne, saucyarde, sege, signe, sire, space, steve (stuve), table, tente, terme, trace, vncle, vniverse, vrne, visage, vermine, verre, vegyn, visage (visage), visage, ymage.

Note 1. The Romance words in this list are all French except Ariete (Ital. ariete) and orisonte (Ital. orizonte). Poverté (O. Fr. poverté), and stuve (O. Fr. estuve) exhibit peculiarities of formation. Polente has no direct French etymon (cf. O. Fr. potence), and may be imitated from Latin. The four words fate (Lat. fatum), medecyne (Lat. medecina, cf. Fr. médecine), quiete (Lat. quietem, or, perhaps, Ital. quiete)1, vniverse (Lat. universum; cf. Fr. univers), vrne (Lat. urna, see p. 74, footnote 1), are included in this section for convenience. For chimung[f], see § 33, note.

Note 2. Ten Brink's rule, "Nach tonloser Silbe verliert -e regelmaessig seinen Silbenwerth" (§ 223), is illustrated by fortune, pursuyte. In all other cases it seems that the word follows begins with a vowel or a weak l, except those in § 22.

Note 3. Other instances of apocope may be seen in grace, ioye, nece, sire. For irresponsibly omitted -e's (scribes' errors), see especially entente, geste, requete.

Note 4. Egle, ensample, impossible, noble, peple, table, title, vncle illustrate the treatment of consonant + le. But cf. marbel (O. Fr. marble, marbre), 700 (infra), verbal (infra).

Note 5. Werre bellum, might fairly have been included in § 21; but it seemed better, on the whole, to give it a place in § 15.

age, 1480 f, 7189 f (: corage), 8199 f (: visage : ymage).

Ariete (Ital. ariete), 6254 f (aryete C) (: herte swete), 7553 f (aryete C) (: swete).

assege ; thassege, 6142 (thassage B, the sege CD). [Cf. sege.]

batayle, 1715 f (: withouten faile); bätayle, 8114 (-H D)

baude, 1438 f (: gaunde).

bawme, -e is, 1138.

bille (Anglo-Norm. bille, L. Lat. Billa), 2215 f ABC (: stonde stille).

blame, 1100 f (: lame pred. adj.), 3107 f (: name); -e, 5213, 5256, 7431; -e haue, 1295 (-e f haue BD 3).

calle, 3617 f (callé D) (: alle pl. : calle inf.).

cause, 854, 1812 f (: clause), 2492, 2524, 2718, 2771 (D f), 3607,

1 Cf. ten Brink, § 222 Anm., who is inclined to regard Ariete and quiete as "romanisierende Abklatsche lateinischer Wörter." He says nothing about orisonte.

2 AD defective. Supply [that].

3 Read in BD, blame haue I [myn] vncle.
3637, 3993, 4004, 4421, 4681, 5379, 1 5491, 5677, 5889 (-e hire BD),
5932, 6313, 6443 (-es † D), 7239, 7391 (-is wich † C), 7593, 7665 f
(: clause), 7668, 7757 C (-e AD); cause, 20 (D †), 579, 670 2, 1568,
1580, 1917, 2187 3, 2848, 2872, 3206, 3378, 3462 CD, 3828, 4
3833, 3874, 3987, 4761, 4803, 5350, 5589 (A †; -e to C), 5672,
5674 (-e of [the] D), 5703, 5724, 6003, 6316 (though † C), 6335,
6490 ([the] cause D; B †), 6769, 6783, 7017 (-ë is † D), 7592 (C †;
-ë † of D), 7705 6 (D †), 7757 (-e doth C), 8055.— -e (before h), (he)
4787, 4885, 6890, 7578 (-e of C, -e he? D); (haue) 7619; (hadde)
4069.—O cause of wo that cause hast (hath † C) ben of blysse,
6913. [Cf. causeles, § 85.]
cauc, 1202 f (: saue subj. 3 sg. : raue 2 pl.).
charge, 2079, 4096 † f B, 4842 6; -ë, 651 (charg C); -e he, 444.
charme, 2399 ([e] C); -ë, 2665 (charm C).
chaunge, 1107 f (: straunge), 7997 f (: straunge) (chung C : strong);
-e, 5327 (-g † for C). [Cf. eschaunge.]
cheyne (O. Fr. chaaine), 509 f (cheyn D) (: pleyne inf. : peyne n.),
1703 f (: twayne : to seyne).
clause, 1813 f (: cause), 7664 f (: cause).
compleynte (O. Fr. complainte, -ut), 541 f (-t D) (: dreyte pret. ind.
3 sg. : pleynte), 5404 f (: constreynte); -e, 5446 (-t CD), 5467
(pleynt C, compleinte † D); compleyn hym, 2668 (-e B); còmpleynt
of, 655. [Cf. pleynte.]
constreynte, 5403 f (: compleynyte); cònstrynct and, 1861 (D †; -e B,
constaunt † C).
cope, 3566 f (: Europâ).
corâge, 3739 f (: rage n.), 7188 f (: age); còrage, 564 (courâgé † wake
D), 5281 (cùrage B).
corde, 6806 f (: recorde inf. : accorde inf.).
demandaunte, 5957 f (: comaundé pres. pl.), 6356 f (: recomaunde inf.);
-e he 7222 (-ë † he D).
descente, 319 f (dissent D) (: wente iit : mente pret. 3 sg.).
dise, dishese, 1232 f, 2445, 7 3726 f, 4118 f, 4751 f, 5759 f; -e, 2072,
3885, 4658, 6472 (dese D, de-sese C, dif[s]ease D), 7783 (pl. † C).
Rhyme words.—displese inf. (1232), ples inf. (3726, 4118, 4751, 5759),
apese inf. (3726), ese n. (4118, 4751, 5759). [Var. D diseese, disease.]
doute, 152 f. (-t D), 1820 f. (-t D), 2477 f. (-t D), 5066 f, 5939 f,
6233 f (dought D), 6431 f, 7658 f, 7816 f, 7881 f, 8007 f; -e, 1451
(-t D), 3360.  [Cf. douteles, § 85.]

Rhyme words.—aboute (152, 1820 CD, 2477, 5066, 5939, 6233, 7658,
7816, 8007), oute (7881), withoute (6431), route (5066, 6431), deoute
(152), tuskes stoute (7816).

egle, 2011 (egele C), 4338 (egele C, egle ? D).

ensample, trisyll. bef. csts., 232 (-saumple BCD), 995 (-saumple B,
on-saumple C).—ensample, 3714 (-sampele by C), 1 4863 (-sampele C),
7953 (-sampele C).  [Var. B ensample.]

entente (O. Fr. entente), 61 f, 738 f, 928 f, 1448 f, 1609 f, 1913 f,
1963 f, 2008 f, 2145 f, 2304 f (-t B), 2531 f, 2645 f (-t B), 2808 f,
2967 f, 3395 f, 4030 f, 4081 f, 4424 f, 4835 f, 5297 f, 5515 f, 5882 f,
6187 f, 6513 f, 7230 f, 7473 f, 7668 f, 8057 f.  [In the above list
D has entent throughout (intent, 61), and C has entent except in 61
(where a part of the MS. is cut out) and in 1448, 1963, 3395,
4081, 4835, 5297 (in which lines it has entente.)]—entente (bef. cst.),
4008 ([e] C, -t ? is D) 3; entént[e] (bef. cst.), 4071 AC (-e B,
entent ? clene D).—entente, 5319 (-t BCD) 4; entént (bef. vowels),
2378 (-e B), 7993 (-e B, centence is ? C) 5; entént he, 7139 (-e B).

entént, 2750 f AC (-e B) (: went ierunt), 6078 f ABCD (: mente
pret. ind. 3 sg. : wente iiit).

Rhyme words.—wente iiiit (2808, 3395, 4424, 5882, 6078, 7473, 7668), wente,
went ierunt (61, 2750), wente pret. subj. 3 sg (4835), stente, stynte
pret. ind. 3 sg. (738, 1963, 4081), stente pret. ind. 3 pl. (61), repente
pres. ind. 1 sg. (928, 1609), consente pret. ind. 1 sg. (928), inf. (2531),
mente pret. ind. 1, 3 sg. (1448, 2304, 2645, 2967, 4030, 6078, 7230), 2 pl.
(8057), 3 pl. (4835), rente u. (1913), sente misit (1913, 5515, 7473), pret.
subj. 3 sg. (2531), heute pret. ind. 3 sg. (2008, 4030), assente pres. ind.
1 sg. (2145, 5297), inf. (6187), tormente inf. (5297), gente pret. ind. 3
pl. (5882), tente u. (6513).

Note.—A consideration of the above data shows that the only form that
Chaucer uses in the Troilus is entente, never entent except when a
final -e would disappear by the regular operation of the rules for elision.
The scribes sometimes omit -e where we must supply it, not only in
entente, but in the rhyme words; but Chaucer in the Troilus never
rhymes entente with a word that has no right to a final -e and never
apocopes the -e in the middle of a verse.

eschaung (cf. chaunge); -e 4808 (eschaung CD), 5221 ([es]chaunge
C), 5540 (chaunge D, eschaung ? for C).—eschaungé ? of, 4893 D
(chaungyng ABC).

ese, 28 f, 43 f, 1835 f, 2310 f, 2951 f, 3475 f, 4121 f (atese ? B),
4248 f, 4570 f, 4748 f, 5365 f, 5756 f, 6479 f.—Before consonants,

1 In 3714 C read, ensemple of for e. by.
2 In CD the rhyme word is spelled sent; but this is not sent = misit.
3 In BD read al[le].  
4 In C supply [e].  
5 In B supply [the].
Observations on the Language

2746, 3453, 5388, 6474.—ese, 2861, 4146, 5142 (-e and [in] D), 7742 (B †; crese † D), etc.; ese hym, 2744. [7722 † C (?).] (Cf. disese.) [Var. D ease.]

Rhyme words.—displese inf. (28), pres. subj. 3 sg. (2951), plese inf. (43, 2310, 3475, 4121, 4570, 4748, 5365, 5756, 6479), apese inf. (2951, 6479), contrepeyse (-pese BCD) inf. (4248), dishese n. (4121, 4748, 5756), lese, O. Fr. lëssé (1835). [Var. D ease, ease.]

exècutrice, 3459.

face, 1071 f, 1195, 1350 f, 1850 f, 4188 f, 4411 (D †), 4670 f, 4812 f, 5526 (C †), 5812 f, 5999 f, 6449 (C †), 6562 (om. A), 6607 f, 6899 f, 7037 f, 7071 f, 7277 f; -e, 1490, 5477, 5483, 6918, 71701; -e he, 5023 (fate † D); -e hem, 4730 (-e he D).—at prymé face, 3761 f (: place : grace).

Rhyme words.—grace n. (1071, 1350, 3761, 4188, 4670), space (1850, 5999, 7037 CD), pace inf. (1850, 5812, 6899, 7277), place (4188, 4812, 5812, 6607, 6899, 7037 AB, 7071), deface ind. 2 pl. (7277). [Var. C fase.]

faile, fayle, 1714 f (: batayle), 6258 f (: assayle subj. 3 sg.).
fame, 5321 (fane † C), 6783 f’ C †.
fate (Lat. fatum), 7913 (face † C); -e helpeth, 7915 (-e hym BD, face † C); -e, 6572 (stat † C); -e he, 5023 D †.
fayre (O. Fr. feire), 8203 f (faire B, fêr D) (: floures fayre (faire B, fêr D)); To morwe? allas! that were a fayre! quod he, 3692 (faire B, fayr C, [a] fair D).

feste, 161 (-[e] C, -t † D), 168 f (feest D), 1446 f (festis † C), 1506 f (feest D), 2992 f (-t CD), 3186 f (-t BD), 4001 f (-t D), 4154 f, 6440 f, 6804 f, 6819, 6887 f, 8040 f; -e, 3495 (-t BD), 4070 (-e ioye † D), 4581 (-t D),2 6667, 6809 (ferste † C).

Rhyme words.—leste adj. pl. (168), behest, -e (1446, 1506, 3186), heste (4001), the leste (1446, 4001, 4154, 6440, 6804 pl., 6887, 8040), request (-e B) (2992). [Var. B fest, feeste; D feest.]

 flaumbë funeral, 6665 (flameb C, flawe me D); -e, 4780 (flaumme C, flaume D).

force, 6137 (fors C), 6784.—fors, (i.) what fors, 1463. (ii.) In no fors, 2562, 4984 (-ce D, fors whan C), 7118, 7979 (-ce D); no fors hardly, 2802.

fortûne, 841 f (: commune pred. adj.), 4664 f (: entune inf. : commune adj.), 5053 f (: commune pred. adj. pl.), 7904.—fortûne, 138, 849 AB (-âné † to C, -e † for D), 3459, 4509, 4556 (D †), 4922 (fortûne alas † D), 4936 (-e yif C, -e yif D), 5047, 5262, 5854, 8108 (-e † ay D), 8126 (-e † it D); -e his, 6832; -e hem, 7497.—fortûne, 837,

1 Supply [of] in B.
2 B, apparently, "swich a feste and swichë proces," where swiche seems to be written, by error of ear, for swich a.
§ 21. of Chaucer’s Troilus. 69

843, 4986, 5851, 6250, 7283; e hym, 1370.—Ne remuables fortuné deface, 6344. fortuné wolde, 1420 AD (-tune B; D †). [Cf. infortune.]

frape, 3252 f ( : iape : i-shape p.p.).

garde,—sauë-gard[e], 4801 (-ë B, saf cundwydt hem C, saufe conduyt hem D †).

gaudë, 1436 f ( : baude).

gemme, 1429 (comme † B, gom[me] † C).

geste, 3292 f (geest D) ( : leste pret. sg. : the beste).—gest[e], 1168 f (geeste B, geest D) ( : leste pret. ind. 3 sg.).

grace, 42 f, 370 f, 713 f, 900 f, 926, 955 f, 1056 f, 1070 f, 1117 f, 1351 f, 1799 f, 1916 (D †), 2155 f, 2207 f, 2450 f, 2611, 3303 (spase CD), 3314 f, 3547, 3764 f, 4018 f, 4109, 4111 f, 4191 f, 4298 f, 4646 f, 4672 f, 5217 f, 5614 f, 5895, 6055 f, 6346 f, 6534 f, 6535 (-ë † bealle D), 6865, 6944 f, 6955 (-ë † C), 7057 f, 7303 f, 7320 f, 7686 f, 7994 f, 8065 f, 8231 (mercy BD); grace, 973, 998, 1328 (D †), 2058, 4925, 4955.—grace for, 3770 ( -ë had B, -ë to D, om. † C). [Cf. graceles, § 49, n. 5.]

Rhyme words.—paece, passe inf. (42, 370, 3314, 4111, 5614, 6055), passe subj. 1 sg. (7057), trespace inf. (4018), purchase inf. (900, 1117, 1799, 5217), imp. pl. (2207), chase inf. (4646), face (1070, 1351, 4191), at pryme face (3764), space (713, 2155, 2207, 7303, 7794, 8065), place (900, 955, 1056, 1117, 2450, 3764, 4111, 4191, 4298, 4646, 5217, 6346, 6534, 6944, 7303, 7320, 7686), deface inf. (6346), arace inf. (7320). [Var. C grace; C 4018 gras; D 42 gras.]

gyle, 719 f C (wyle AD, wile B) ( : begile inf. : while); 3619 f (gile C) ( : while).

gyse, see § 26.

herbe, -e, 957 (erb B), 1430 (herb B, erbe † C), 2852. [Var. C erbe.]

houre, oure, owre, 456 f (hour D), 1478 f, 1673 f ( -is † D), 2792 f (hour D), 2982 f (our C), 43182, 5200 f (hour D), 7006 f; -e, 2642 (houre † aftir D), 3374 (-r CD), 6826 (-r D)4, 7696 (-r CD). [houre † hath, 4295 C.]

Rhyme words.—laboure laboro (456), deonoure inf. (7006), subj. 3 sg. (1478), powre inf. (2792), honoure inf. (2982), he is youre (jours † D) (1673), oure ours (5200).

infortune wolde, 4847 ( -e it AB); -e, 4468, 4959. [Cf. fortune.]
inke, 4535 f (ynke C, ynk D) ( : bythenke (bithynke) inf.).

1 So in ABECp. John’s Phillipps 8252 (with renewable) G (with renewable) Harl. 2392 (with nor for ne) Selden B 24 (with At after fortune). Cut out in C. Ne resonable † fortune to deface D; No remuables fortune for to deface Durham II 13.

2 For how shold(e) (shold[e] B) I my lyf an houre (oure B, oure[e] D) saue, 4318 Cp., is apparently the correct reading. A, hour[e] my lyf (?) ; C, our[e] my lyf (?).

3 Supply [she] in C.

4 Supply [nus] in D.
inpossible, an impossible were, 3367 (im- B, &† inpossiblele C; D ?).
ire, iire, yre, 2864 f, 6952 f, 7827 f, 8118; ire, 793; ire he, 6399, 7586.

Rhyme words.—a-fyre (2864, 7827), I desire ind. (6952).
iape, 2128 f (: ape), 3250 f (: frape : i-shape p.p.); —e, 1215. [‡ in, 5258 C.]
ioye, 4 f, 118 f 1, 608 f, 1225 f, 1728 f, 1834 f, 1902 (-[e] D), 1967 f,
3059 (C † D †), 3190 (ioy † to D †), 3198 f, 3632 f, 3717 f, 4070
(-e † D), 4162, 4221, 4249, 4284 f, 4292 f, 4513 (ioy † his D),
4556 f, 4718 f, 4752 f, 4931 (ioye † C), 4997 f, 5004
(-[e] D †, -e † or B), 5047 (-[e] D), 5968 f, 5985 † C (blysse ABD),
6093, 6104 f, 6293 f, 6390 f, 6481 f, 6790 f, 6971 f, 6978 f, 7094 f,
7144 f, 7293 f, 7745 f, 7910 f; ioye, 1918, 3662, 4520, 8077, etc.;
-e he, 2389; -e hastow, 6951; —e hade 3311; —e here poss. pl.,
1861 3; —e halt, 4478 (-e haldyth † C).—ioye have (inf.), 2329 (-[e] D).—ioye and (l. ioye and [all]), 3495 C (—e AB).—ioye † may, 4535
A (—e BC, —e D).

Rhyme words.—fro ye (4), anoye inf. (5068), ayoye inf. (7144), Troye (all
the passages cited). [Var. BD ioie; C 1728, 1918 ioye.]
lesse (O. Fr. lesse), 1837 f (leese B) (: ese n.).
ligne, see lyne, § 3, p. 6.
ma dâmë, 1170 (-[e] B); —e, 1963 (madâm B).
martire, see 5480 f (under matere, § 28).
mayle, 7922 f (: by-waylle inf. : aentaylle).
medecyne, 659 f (-[e]cine B, medicynys † C, medicine D) (: fyne).
meruajle, meruajle, 476 f (: trauayl, -e BCD); —e, 3031 (merakjle
C, miracle D).—meruayle, 6484 † D (wonder AB, wondyr C).
message, 3243, 5474 f (: rage n.), 5552 f (: rage n.). [massage †, 2021
C.] [5516 B, extra metrum.]
mewe, muwe (O. Fr. mue), 381 f, 3444 f, 4626 f, 5158 f (mew D),
5972 f.

Rhyme words.—suwe inf. (381), saluwe inf. (4626), arguwe inf. (5158),
stuwe n. (3444), truwe truce (5972).
miracle, see meruayle.
moble, mooble (dissyl.), 6042 (mobelë C), 6663; mooble is, 6122
(mooble B, mebil C, mobles † ben(e) D).
mowe (Fr. moue), 4669 f (mow D) (: y-throwe p.p.).
muse, 1094 f (: vse inf. : excuse ind. 1 sg.).

1 Old-style figures indicate that D has no —e.
2 Bygan for Ioyë the amorousë (tamorousë Cp. John's, thamarousë B, the a me-
rous[e] CD) daunce.
3 Supply a third [her] in D.
mysteriorde, 4019 f (-d B) (: recorde inv. pl.).

nee, 968 (-e to D), 1177, 1334, 1559, 2288, 2550 (-e [myr] A, C defect.), 3051, 3594 (-e he C, -e quod D), 3788 (nee(ce) C, -e dere † D), 3817, 8075 (nees[e] D), etc., etc.—neece, 1409 (trowth[e] nece B), 1491 AB, 2338 (-e lo † C), 2502, 3117 (-e put C, -e † put D), etc.; e he, 1373; e hath, 8090 (nees D); e how, 4405. [Var. C 2042 nese; D 4398 nice.]—neece who, 2272; ncee se, 3804 (-e how CD)¹; nce, 1340 (-e BC, -e † alwey D).

note, 5247 f (-ote adv.: grote).

noyse, 3586, 6620 ABD; e 85 AB (C †), 1155, 3504 (D †), 4732, 4845 (voys † D), 5248; -e he, 5036. [Var. BD noise.]


penne, -e, 4675.

peple, (i.) dissyl. bef. cts., 73, 1728, 1743 (-il C), 3426 (-ës B, puples C †), 7515 (puple C, people D). (ii.) elided before vowels, 1731 (peple on CD), 3110 (pepil|| as C), 4845 (peple stert † D), 6231 A (peple al(le) B, pepele ek C; D †). [Var. C. pepelé.]

persone, 1786 f, 2572 f, 4745 f (all rhyme with to done); -e, 1253.—persone his, 2352 (person C, -e [his] D).

peyne, 9 f, 63 f², 508 f, 589 f, 674 f, 709 f, 1560 f, 1608 f, 1861 f ABC (peyn D1862), 2072 f, 2212 f, 2316 f, 2440 f, 2586 f, 2615 f, 2821 f, 2947 f, 3836 f, 3848 f, 3960 f, 4333 f, 4373 f, 4958 f, 4980 f, 5140 (pleyne † C, peyne † D), 5166 f (peyn C), 5296,³ 5372 f CD, 5411 f (-n C), 5414 f C, 5451 f, 5509 f, 5532 f, 5565 f, 5604 f, 5803 † (-es AB, -ys C), 5806 f, 5919 f, 5967 f, 6398 f (pyne B), 6653 † f A (pyne BCD), 6778 f (pyne † BD), 7041 f, 7090 f, 7255 f, (pyne † B), 7399 f (-n C), 7592 f (payn C), 7599 (-es AB), 7632 f, 7763 f.—peyne, 34, 497, 3634 (wo † B), 4058 (-es † B), 4060 (-e hath BCD), 4344 (pleyne † C), 5799, 6861; -e hym, 7563; -e hire (pl.), 5791 BD (-es † A, sorwe † of C).—peyn † ther ym, 1960 D.

Rhyne words.—pleyne inf. (9, 508, 1608, 1861, 2440, 2615, 2947, 6398, 7592, 7763), pleyne ind. 1 pl. (709), compleyne inf. (4968, 5451, 5565, 7090, 7632), inv. (2586), quercor (3848, 6778), queratur (5919), to seyne (to seyn 3848) (9, 589, 709, 1608, 2072, 2212, 2440, 3836, 3960, 4373, 5166, 7309), estreyne inf. (674, 5372 CD, 5532, 5604), constreyne inf. (1569), cogitis (2316), destreyne inf. (4373), feyne simulacum (2615), reyne pluvio (4958, 5532), reyne ind. 3 pl. (5509), freyne inf. A. X. frieman (7592), tweyne, tweyn (2821, 3960, 4333, 5411, 5414 C, 5451, 5506, 5919, 5967, 7041, 7632), Eleyne (63, 674, 7255), cheyne n. (508), soureyne adj. (4880), yeuns n. (5604, 6778). [Var. CD peine; D payne.]

place, 898 f, 953 f, 961,⁴ 1057 f (space D), 1115 f, 1128, 1163 f,

¹ Supply [can] in B.
² Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
³ AB slightly defective.
⁴ Supply [we] in D.
Observations on the Language

2449 f, 2652 f, 3060 f, 3763 f, 3856 f, 4113 f, 4190 f, 4297 f, 4339.
4645 f, 4810 f, 5220 f, 5814 f, 6347 f, 6532 f, 6586 f, 6608 f, 6897 f,
6943 f, 7039 f (space CD), 7040 f (space AB), 7073 f, 7306 f,
7319 f, 7685 f, 7992 (space C).—place, 429, 2098, 3518 (e ↑ gan D),
4322 ↑ D, 4435 (e rise ↑ D), 4970 (e ↑ is C); -e his, 2455 (e ↑ his C; D ↑); place horrible, 6613 (plase oribele C).

Rhyme words.—face and grace (q.v.), and the following:—purchase inf.
(1115, 5220), pace, passe inf. (1163, 2652, 3060, 4113, 5814, 6897), chase,
chace inf. (398, 4645), space (7039 AB, 7040 CD, 7306), embrace inf.
(6586), race (a-race C) radat (3856), arace inf. (7319), deface inf. (6947).
[Var. C plase.]

planète, 4099 f (; the svete : the grete).
pleynte, 408 f (I feyneto ind. : queyte), 544 f (compleynt D) (: compleynte : dreynte pret. ind. 3 sg.), 5001 ↑ D (pl. ABC), 5462 ([-e] C, complemente that ↑ D), 5489 B ([-e] A, complent ↓ thus D), 5593 f (-t C) (: dreynte pret. subj. 2 pl.) 2.—pleynte, 5522 (t C), 5807 (-t C), 7738 (-t C); -e his, 6631 (-t BC). [5504?] [Var. D pleint, pleinte. —pleynt of, 8107 (-e B).

pompe, 6332 (pomp B).
potènte (cf. O. Fr. potence), 7585 f (-t CD) (: wente : shente, both pret.
ind. 3 sg.).
pouèrte (irregular formation, see ten Brink, § 221; O. Fr. poverté),
6182 f (-t C) (: sherte).
preue, 690 f, 3149 f, 3844 f, 6321 f. (preue, 470 f, is perhaps an
adjective: "The shoures sharpe fille of armes preue."

Rhyme words.—leune credere (690, 3149, 6321), remeue inf. (690), greue
subj. 2 pl. (3844).
prologue, 5555 (prolong ↑ CD). 3
prouèrbe, 1482 (prouèrb B).
pursuyte, 2829 (pursute D; pursuig C); pursuyte 4 make, 2044
(purseut (?) C, pursute D).
quète, quyète (Lat. quioret), 3348 f, 4661 f, 5152 f, 5167 f (qui[e]te
B), 5443 f.—quète, quyète, 4522 (quyète and 5 A), 7370.

Rhyme words.—swete adj. indef. (all), mete meet inf. (3348), pres. subj. 3
sg. (5443).
rage, 3741 f, 4915 f, 5473 f, 5554 f.

Rhyme words.—corage, asswage inf., message (5473, 5554).
rasçayle, 8216 f (; aumylle inf. : trauayle n.).
regnè shal, 7907 ↑ B (-es AC, -is D); regne and, 2871.

1 Old-style figures indicate that D has no -e.
2 A has drenche (C drench) for dreynte.
3 Dele the first as in A.
4 Supply [the] in A. 5 But supply [thus] and read quyète.
rente, 1915 f (-t CD) (: entente n. : sente misit), 4747 f (-t D) (: wente inv).
reprèue, 1504 f (reprefe D) (: leue credere), 2225 f (-oue † B, -efe D) (: leue creditis).
requèste, 4719 f (: leste minimos), 5176 [-e] CD), 7312 f (-t D) (: at the meste : at the leste).—requèst, 2990 f (-e B) (: feste n.) ; requèst || is, 1450 (-e B).
reyne (Cotgr. reine), -e here, 6453 (-e he C, rene D).
roche (O. Fr. roche, roke), -e, 4339 (rok C, rock D).
route, rowte, 271 f (-t D), 1698 f (-t D), 1903 f, 5065 f, 5344 f, 5379 f, 6428 f, 6450 f (-t C), 6765 f, 6915 f, 7858 f.
Rhyme words.—aboute (all but 1698, 6248, 6915), withoute (271, 1698, 6428), oute (6915), shoute inf. (1698), doute n. (5065, 6428), knyghtes stoute (7858).
ruŷne, 5049 f (: deuynge inf. : defyne pres. 1 sg.).
sege (cf. assege), 6142 CD (thassègæ A, thassàgæ B); -e, 1169 (sege(e) B).
signe, 3994 ; -e of, 5826, 8015 (-e of [his] D).
sire, 2042 (-[e] BD) ; -e, 2501 (sere C, here † D), 2544 (sir BD), 6117 (syre C, sir D) ; -e his, 2925 (sir D).—sirè come, 2917 (syr B, for † D).
space, 505, 714 f, 1852 f, 2156 f, 2209 f (sp[a]ce B), 3303 (gracæ AB), 5998 f, 7039 f CD, 7040 f AB, 7305 f, 7992 C, 7993 f, 8067 f.
Rhyme words.—pace, grace, and place (q.v.) ; also, chace inv. pl. (2209), pace inf. (1852).
stuwe, stewe (cf. O. Fr. estuve), 3443 f (: mewe); the stewè dore, 3540. table, 6800 f (tabel C) (: honourable, honurabele C).
tente, 6511 f (-t C) (: entente), 7208 (-e ther B), 7385 f (-t CD) (: wente ii⅔).
terme, 7059, 7453 ; -ë hold, 7572 (-[e] D, hestis † C).
title he, 488 (tytcele C, stanza not in D).
trone, 5741 f (: sone adv.), 5748 f (: to done), 5837 f (: sone adv).
vncle (dissyl.), 1172, 1183, 1207 (C †), 1221 (D †), 1231, 1324, 1579, 1739, 2188, 2217, 2561, 2809, 3487, 3684 (vncle [myn] D), 4420, 5601 ; vncle (dissyl.) here, 2185 ; vncle, 1335 (-e hir D 4). (C always spells the word with an interior e, vncle, but never makes it a trissyllable.) 5
Observations on the Language

Observations on the Language

74

vniiuerse (Lat. universum, cf. Fr. univers), 2878 f (vniiuers(it)e A)

(: the worse).

vrne 1 (Lat. urna, rather than Fr. urne), 6674 f (: torne (turne) inf.).

vermine, 3223 f (: determyne inf.).

verre, 1952 f (: werre).

veyne, 5605 f (: restreyne inf. : peyne), 6780 f (: peyne : pleyne plorem);

-e, 866 (vayne D).

viâge, 3574 2 ; -e, 1160 (A too short); viage, 2146.

visage, 5524 f (vesage C) (: ymage); 8201 f (: age : ymage).

ymâge, 4897, 5526 f (: visage), 8202 f (: age : visage).

§ 22. Exceptions to § 21 (cf. § 21, note 2).

acôrd (O. Fr. acorde, acord), 4592 (-e B, l. om. † E).

àngwyssh (O. Fr. anguissse, angoisse), (i.) 5506 (-guys C).

(ii.) 4817 (-guys C, -gwisshe D).

aungel (O. Fr. angele, angle), 5306 + C (loue AB; loue D (?) 3).

(Cf. ten Brink, § 221.)

beste (O. Fr. beste), 2852 (best BD).

broche, broch (O. Fr. broche), (i.) broch, 4212 (-e BC, -e (of) gold (!) C), 8024 (-e BD; C †); -e || yew, 8051 (broch B, -e (!) D); -e ||

that, 8053 (broch B). (ii.) -e, 7403 (broch B, -e [and] that C); -e he, 8032.

concord (O. Fr. concorde), concord and, 3348.

cûrtyn (O. Fr. curtine, curtine), cûrtyn pyke, 2902 (-teyn C).4

marbel (O. Fr. marble, marbre), 700 (-il C, -le D) (cf. § 21, n. 4).

phisîyk (O. Fr. phisike), 2123 f (fisyk B, fysik C, physik D) (: lyk pred. adj. sg. : pyk fish).

pres, prees (O. Fr. presse), (i.) cf. 173 f, 2734, 2803, 4765 f. (ii.) pres he, 2728. [Var. D presse.] In all the above cases pres = throng;

in the phrase legye on presse, presse occurs, 559 f (: holynesse).

råket (O. Fr. rachete), råket to, 5122 (rakett D).

rebel (O. Fr. rebelle, noun and adj.), Al haue 1 ben rebel yn myn entente, 1609.

réfuyt (O. Fr. refuïte, refuït), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC, -fute D).

relîk (O. Fr. relique), relîk || hight, 153 (-ike C, -ique D).

1 Apparently then a new word: "a vessel that men clepeth an vrne."

2 Supply [te] in C.

3 Cp. has Ioue; E. Harl. 4912 John's have But any aungel.

4 Supply [in] in Α.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

rescou (O. Fr. rescous, rescousse), (i.) 4084 (rescousse D). réscou, (ii.) 478.

skàrmýssh (O. Fr. escarmouche), s. al, 1696 (scarmich B, scharmus C, skarmisshe D †); s. of, 2019 (scarmich B, charmys B, scarmysshe D).1

sours (O. Fr. sourse), (ii.) 7954 (sors D, ground j C).

text (O. Fr. texte), text || ful, 4199 (tex B, tixite † E, tixt is C);

text || to (so C), 6072 (-e D).

tráuers (O. Fr. traverse), 3516 (-eres B, curtyns J D). [Plural †]

Nobley (O. Fr. nobleie, noblée) occurs once (before a vowel), see 6332. Cf. chimeneye (O. Fr. cheminee) and valey (O. Fr. valée) (§ 33, n. 2).


That -e counts as a syllable is clear not only from rhyme, but from the cases in which mischaunce occurs in the interior of the verse before a consonant (5332, 6024; cf. also 3132). For convenience, balaunce, daunce, romaunce, and trauence are included in this list. Interesting words are aseiraunce, desesperaunce, obeysaunce, signíaunce, suffisaunse (var. sufficiaunce), vengeaunce.

In the following list all rhyme-words are given, except nouns in -aunc:—

abundaunce, 3884 (hab- A, ab- D †).

dillaunce, 4588 f.
aqueyntaunce, 6485 2; acqueyntaunce, 6492 (-ns CD).

balaunce, 1551 f, 6222 f (-auns D).

daunce, 1549 f, 2432;  f B (pl. ACD), 8031 f (chauns D).
cöntenaunce, 1637 f (: daunce n.), 2102 f, 3821 f, 4384 f. [Var. C
cuntenaunce; D countyn-] cöntenaunce, 6902 (cuntenauns C,
countenauns D).

continuaunce, 2919.
daunce, 517 f (: auaunce inf.), 1638 f (: contenaunce), 2191 f (: pen-aunce), 3375 † f C° (: ordenaunce), 6093 f (dauns D) (: penaunce).—
daunce, 3537 (C †), 6811 (dauns D).
deluyeraunce, 4864 f (delib- C).

1 9-syl. line in A.
2 Thaqueyntaunce (The aquestau[n]se C, The acquentauns D) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (-yans B, -iauns D, Troylus C) to (for to C) chaunge.
3 If we read depe before this word we can shun the -su-. 
Observations on the Language

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>76</td>
<td>desseueraunce, 4266 f (dis· BD).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>disauenaunce, 1596 f C (l. disauaunce inf.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>displesaunce, dyspleaunce, 3322 f, 4137 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>doutaunce, 5625 f (doughtauns D), 5706 f; cf. 200 f C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>gouernaunce, 1304 f (: daunce inf.: myshaunce n.), 1552 f, 2105 f, 2527 f (generaunce † B, sustenaunce ‡ D), 3269 f, 3323 f, 3787 f (gourenaeunce B), 4586 f.—gouernaunce hire (poss. sg.), 3058.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ignoraunce, 4136 f, 5646 f, 5663 f, 5733 f; -e, 3668, cf. 2133 ‡ C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>instaunce, 2526 f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mischaunce, myshaunce, meschaunce, 92 f, 1307 f (: gouernaunce: daunce inf.), 2104 f, 3533 f (: ordenaunce: traunce inf.), 4227 f (mysschaunce D) (: auauance subj. 3 sg.), 4865 f, 5153 f (−ns D), 6223 f (−ns D), 6722 f (−ns D), 7797 f (mysschauns D, myss-schaunce C) (: auauance inf.). myshaunce (bef. ests.), 5332 (mes- B, mischauns[e] D), 6024 (mes- B, myshauncse C, mischauns[e] D).—myss-schaunce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>mountaunce, 2792 (mounteau[n]s C); mountance, 4574 (mountenans C).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>obêysaunce, 3320 f (obseruaunce † D).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ûberuaunce, 1197 f (: daunce inf.), 3812 f; cf. 198 † f D, 2430 † f B, 3320 † f D.—obseruaunce, 5445 (−ns D).²</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ordenaunce, 1595 f (: disauaunce inf.), 3377 f (puruaunce † C), 3530 f (: myshaunce n.: traunce inf.), 5626 f (ordinauns D), 7968 f (ordinauns D). [Var. BD ordinaunce; B ordy.-]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>penaunce, penluaunce, 94 f, 1614 f (pen[a]unce C), 2190 f (: daunce n.), 5004 f (: traunce n.), 6091 f (−ns D) (: daunce n.), 6724 f (−ns D), 8034 f (−ns D); cf. 201 f CD (−es AB).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>persœueraunce, 44 f (: plesaunce : auauance inf.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>plesaunce, 46 f (: perseueraunce : auauance inf.), 3268 f, 3786 f, 3813 f (displesaunce † C), 4264 f, 4374 f, 4386 f, 5069 f (−ns D) (: daunce inf.), 5081 f (−ns D), 5155 f (−ns D), 6177 f (−ns D), 6304 f (−ns D), 6677 f (−ns D), 6927 f (−ns D) (: remembraunce : daunce inf.), 7623 f (−ns D), 7971 f (−ns D); cf. 5761 f CD.—plesaunce, 6324 (−ns D), 7094 (−ns D); plêsance or plesaunce, 2846 (−ns D).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>purueyaunce, puruaunce, poùrueyaunce, 1612 f, 3375 f (daunce † C°, purvéaunce D), 5623 f (−ns D), 5644 f, 5662 f, 5708 f, 5732 f, 7809 f (−ns D).—pûrueyaunce hath, 5639 (−ns D).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

¹ But 118 B supply [ye] and read mischaunce in.
² In 5445 C delo (I).
rêmembraunce, 3810 f (-ance C), 4375 f, 4387 f, 5082 f (-ance C, -auns D), 6305 f (-ns D), 6678 f (-ns D), 6925 f (-ns D) (\( \text{: plesaunce : daunce inf.} \)), 7807 f, 7970 f (-braunce C, -brauns D).—rêmembraunce, 7084 (-ns D), 8026 (-ns D), 8054 (-ns D).¹

rêpentaunce, 4150 f.

romaunce, 3822 f (-ance C).—romaunce, 1185 (-ns CD).

signification, 6725 f (signefyaunce C, significauns † ? D); signyfyaunce, 7810 f (-niaunce B, -nyfwmnce C, -nyfwmnce D). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

substaunce, 6175 f (-ns D).—substaunce, 4879, 6167 (-ns D).

suffisaunce, 4151 f (sufficyaunce C, soufficiaunce E), 6302 f (sufficiaunce C, -ficiauns D), 7126 f (sufficiaunce C, -ficiauns D).—suffisaunce, 4558 (-ns C). (Synæresis of the italicized vowels.)

sustenaunce, 2527 † f D.

traunce, 2391 f (:- daunce inf. : desesperaunce), 5005 f (trau[n]ce C) (:- penaunce).

vàriaunce, 5647 f, 7125 f (-ns C), 8033 f (-ns D).

vèngeaunce, 8071 AB (-geauns D).


This ending always rhymes with itself. In the few cases in which it occurs before a consonant in the middle of a verse, the -e does not count as a syllable (see under prescience (5683) and science (67)) (cf. ten Brink, § 223). For convenience, défence and offènce are included in this list.

absence, 513 f, 3056 f (-ns B), 4142 f, 5445 f (-ns BD), 6599 f (-se C, -ns BD); -e, 5089 (-ns BD) ²,—absence, 7759 (-ns D, -neq be C).

abstiençe, 5446 f (-ns D).

aduertence, 7621 f (-ns D); -e, 5360 (-ns BCD).

audiênce, audyence, 4732 f, 5207 f (-ns D), 6598 f (-ns BD).

consciênce, 554 f (concience C).

defênce, 2980 f (A †), 4141 f (diff- B, defense D), 4949 f (diff- D).

differênce, 395 f (-ns CD, deference A).

diligênce, deligence, 2977 f, 4139 f.

éxcellence, 3057 f, 3830 f, 4116 f, 4167 f.

expériênce, 7620 f (-ns D); -e, 4125.

innocence, 2133 (-ns D, ygnoraunce † C).

offence, 556 f, 2979 f (-nse C), 4861 f.

paciênce, 7760 (-ns D).

¹ Supply [a] in D.
² Or, absence (first word in the verse).

préscience, 5726 f (-nt † D); -e, 5649 (prescient D); -e hath, 5660 (-nt D); -e put, 5683 (-nt D).—préscience, 5673 (préscient D), 5724 (préscient D). (Synaeresis in 5673, 5724.)

présence, 6596 f (-se C); -e, 1545 (presaunce B).

prudence, 7107 (-ns BD).

resistance, 3832 f.

reuerence, 516 f, 5683 (-nt D). prescience, 5673 (prescient D), 5649 (-nt D).

(synseresis in 5673, 5649.)

presence, 6596 f (-se C); -e, 1545 (presaunce B).

prudence, 7107 (-ns BD).

reuerence, 516 f, 5683 (-nt D). prescience, 5673 (prescient D), 5649 (-nt D).

(synseresis in 5673, 5649.)

science, 7618 f (sience C, sciens D).

science so, 67.

sentence, 393 f, 4169 f, 4859 f, 5208 f (-ns D), 5725 f.

violence, 4948 f; -e, 5224 (-ns D).


(I.) For convenience distresse, oppresse, presse, and redresse are included in this list. Rhyme words are commonly nouns in -esse or in -nesse. All other rhyme-words are indicated. For -essé before a consonant, see gentilesse (3100). For accesse, excesse, see § 32.

(II.) All the examples of this ending occur in rhyme or before a vowel.

I. distresse, dystrèsse, destrèsse, 439 f (-es D) (: blysse subj. 3 sg. : provesse), 616 f (-es D), 641 f (-es D), 1011 f (: lesse pred. adj.), 1748 f, 1804 f (: dronkenesse : gesse ind. 1 sg.), 1941 f (-es C) (: shrewednesse : gesse ind. 1 sg.), 2331 f (distrès D), 2355 f, 2457 f (: impressse inf.), 2888 f (-es D), 3087 f (disdresse † B), 3104 f, 3206 f (-es D), 3634 f, 3723 f, 3827 f (sykernesse : gesse inf.), 3877 f, 4058 f, 4286 f, 4438 f ABC (: blysse inf.), 4632 f (-es CD), 4766 f, 4963 f, 5026 f, 5188 f (-es D), 5383 f (-es D), 5462 f (-es D) (: heynesse : lesse pred. adj.), 5504 f, 5560 f (-es D): heynesse : gesse ind. 1 sg.), 5744 f (detresse D), 6333 f, 7078 f, 7957 f.—distrèsse, 550 (-es D)².

durèsse, 6762 f.

excesse, see p. 87.

fèblesse, 1948 (fèblenesse B, fèblinesse C, fèblënès D)³.

gentilësse, gentillesse, 881 f (-nesse D) (: gesse ind. 1 sg.), 1245 f (ientilnesse D), 1747 f (gentilnesse BD), 1787 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 2353 f (-nesse CD), 3005 f (-nesse B, -nes D), 3244 f (-nesse BC, 3054 f, 4115 f, 4170 f, 4731 f BD (reuerence A); -e, 2882.

sapiënce, 515 f.

science, 7618 f (sience C, sciens D). —sciënce so, 67.¹

sentence, 393 f, 4169 f, 4859 f, 5208 f (-ns D), 5725 f.

violence, 4948 f; -e, 5224 (-ns D).

¹ In D supply [that].
² Supply [swich] in C.
³ Supply [that] in C.
§§ 25, 26. of Chaucer's Troilus.

icentilnesse D), 3724 f (-nesse BCD), 3878 f (-nesse C, -nes D), 3990 f (-nesse BCD) (: gesse *ind.* 1 sg.), 4256 f (-nesse B, -nes C), 7954 f (-les C, -nes D), 7980 f (-nesse D) (: gesse *inf.*).—gèntillessë triste, 3100 (gentileste † B, -nessë C, -nes to D).—gèntillessë, 4393 (-nesse CD).
largèse, 4566 f (: gladnesse : gesse *ind.* 1 sg.).
noblesse, 287 f (: gesse *inf.*), 6802 f (nobelesse C¹), 8194 f (noble-
nes † D).
opprèse, 6761 f.
prowèse, 438 f (: blysse subj. 3 sg. : distresse n.), 1717 f (: hardynesse :
dresse *inf.*), 1745 f (pruesse C), 6799 f (largesse CD).
redrèse, 5190 f (retresse B).
richèse, 3242 f, 6332 f (rich[e]sse C), 6801 f.—richesse, 3191 (rechesse
B, rehetyng f D).
oppresse, 6761 f.
prowesse, 438 f (: blysse subj. 3 sg. : distresse n.), 1717 f (: hardynesse :
dresse *inf.*), 1745 f (pruesse C), 6799 f (largesse CD).
redrèse, 5190 f (retresse B).
richèse, 3242 f, 6332 f (rich[e]sse C), 6801 f.—richesse, 3191 (rechesse
B, rehetyng † D).²
tendresse. For tendresse how shal she this sustene, 6605 A
(tendrenesse B, tendirnesse CD).³
II. déuyneresse, 7885 f (deuineresshe C) (: sorceresse).
gode, 6204 f (goddes C) (: lesse adj. pi. : wildernesse); For nece
by the goddesse Mynerue, 1317 (-des[se] C)
(goddesse, 8.
hierdesse, 653 f (hye[yr]desse D) (: heuynesse : gesse *ind.* 1 sg.).
mâystresse, 1183.
sóerceresse, 7883 f (sercheresse C) (: deuyneresse).


For -ë before a consonant, see *coueytise* (3103).

àuaryce, 4647 f (aueryce C) (: vice).
coueytise, couetitse, 4231 f (: dispise *ind.* 3 pl.), 6031 f (: suffice *inf.* :
gyse n.), 6040 f (: deuyse *inf.*). [Var. C couetyse ; D couetise.]—
couytïsë wroughte, 3103 (-ë (I)wroughte B, couetise † this D).
côwardlse, -yse, 5264 f (: emprise), 6775 f (: ryse *inf.*).
emprise, 1158 f (: ryse *inf.*), 2476 f (emprese † C) (: aryse *inf.* : for-
byse *inf.*), 3258 f (: seruyce), 5263 f (: cowardise).
gyse, 2001 f C (wyse ABD) (: 3e ben wise), 6032 f (: suffice *inf.* :
couetytise) ; -e, 7224, 8013 (-ë † C, guise D †); guise, 6427 D (wyse
AB, wise C).
malhe, 3168 f (maleys C) (: nice adj. pl. : vice).—malls if, 3722 (-ice
B, -icë 3if (? C, -icë † if D)⁴.—mâlys hir, 3997 (malece BD, -eys C).

¹ Dele (a) in B.
² Supply [his] in B.
³ In B read *if* for *of*.
⁴ Cp. has *tendernesse* ; John's has *tendrenesse*. 
Observations on the Language [§§ 26, 27.]

office, 4278 f (yse C') (: vice).

sacrifice, 3381 f (: seruyse), 4550 f (: ryse inf.), 7828 f (: dispise inf. : wyse n.). [Var. BCD -ise.]

seruyse, -yse, -ice, -ise, 82 f, 164 f, 335 f (servys D), 951 f, 956 f, 982 f, 1763 f, 2884 f, 2975 f, 3003 f, 3256 f, 3279 f, 3317 f, 3380 f, 4130 f, 4444 f, 4636 f, 4657 f, 5059 f, 5176 f, 5471 f, 5494 f, 7681 f. [Var. B ceruyse; C seruyse.]-seruise, seruys, 430, 3250, 4230 2. —sêruysse, 3834. —sêruysse, 315.

Rhyme words.—wyse n. (82, 164, 335, 951, 956, 982, 1763, 2975, 4130, 4636, 4657, 5059, 5176, 5471, 5494, 7681), wyse adj. sg. and pl. (82, 956, 982), deuyse inf. (2884, 3003, 3317, 4636, 4657, 5471, 7681), deuyse ind. 1 sg. (3279), emprise (3256), sacrifice n. (3380), suffise inf. (4444, 5059).

vice, 980 f, 1810 f (nyse † A), 1940 f, 3169 f, 4234 f, 4280 f, 4648 f, 5258 f, 8071 f. [Var. CD vise.]-vîcë || for, 3142 (vis[e] C; D †).

—vice is, 689 (C † D †) (: vices pl.); vice, 252 (vys D), 1937 3, 2974.

Rhyme words.—cheriçe inf. (980, 1810), nyse, nyse adj. sg. and pl. (1810, 1940, 3169, 4234, 5258), malice (3169), office (4280), anaryce (4648), punyce inf. (8071).

§ 27. Nouns in -ure. Except as indicated, nouns in the following list rhyme only with each other.

armure, cote arm[ur]e, 8014 (c. armûr B, cote armûre CD).

asirûse (O. Fr. azur, asur), see § 32.

âventûre, 35 f (: endure inf.), 368 f, 568 f (mys- † C), 784 f, 1085 f, 1309 f (: disfigure inf.), 1366 f, 1827 f, 2604 f (: endure inf.), 4059 f, 4209 f, 4986 f (: endure inf. : sepulture), 5050 f, 5991 f (: endure inf.), 6661 f (-tur D) (: endure inf. : sepulture), 7903 f. —disâventûre, 1500 f, 4959 f (mys- C, disauentur D) (: dure inf.), 5417 f, 7811 f; mysâventûre, 706 f.—âventûre, 1373 (‑e † bele CD).

—mysâunter 4 alythe, 766 (mysauentûre D †; mysau(e)ntur(e) B, auentûr e mys-aylyth † C).—For paraunter (var. C parauentur, perauntur, etc.; D parauntre, peraunteur, etc.), cf. 619, 668, 854, 1796, 2006, 2458, 3333, 5260, 7354 (perh. trisyl.), 7645, 7889.

creaturé, 104 f, 115 f, 283 f, 570 f (cry- C), 1502 f, 1802 f, 2855 f (: endure inf.), 4914 f (crya- C), 5048 f (crya- C), 5418 f (-tur D), 5429 f (: dure inf. : noriture), 6341 f (: dure inf.), 6517 f (cria- C) (: dure inf.), 6573 f, 6604 f (crya- C, creatur D) (: endure inf.), 6747 f (-tur D), 7077 f (l. om. † C), 7171 f, 7195 f (cria- C, creatur D),

1 In D supply [ny].
2 In 4230 the word stands first in the verse. Either accentuation is permissible.
3 In 4230 C read al[le] and in D al[le].
4 Cf. paraunter. See ten Brink, § 263.
§ 27, 28.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 81

8064 f (-tur D) (: endure inf.).—créaturë (bef. csts.), 5110 (crya- C);
-ture, 1383 (criatour C), 5113 (criateur C), 5156 (cryateur C).
cure, 369 f, 469 f (: dure inf.), 707 f, 783 f, 1084 f, 1368 f, 1826 f,
3884 f (: endure inf.), 4060 f, 6412 f (: endure inf.), 7076 f, 7902 f
(cure D); -e, 5593 (care D, cure than C).

figure, 366 f, 7812 f.
inùre, 3860 f (D †).
mesùre, 1503 f, 1800 f.
nature, 105 f, 113 f, 3858 f, 4913 f, 5430 f C †, 6572 f.—nàture, 6015.¹
nôriture, 5430 f (nôretur D, nature † C) (: dure inf. : creature).
ordùre, 6748 f (-ur D).
scriptùre, 4211 f.
sèpultùre, 4989 f (: endure inf. : aventure), 6662 f (same rhymes).
statùre, 281 f, 7169 f (stàteùre † C).


In the following list are put together, for convenience, chere,
manere, materè, preyere, ryuere, spere (= sphere). Observe manerè,
mànèr. The spelling êmyspèry for hemispère (see spere) is
interesting.

chere, cheere (14 A, and sometimes in B), 14 f, 124 f, 181 f, 280 f,
289 f, 433 f, 879 f (shere B), 1125 f, 1234 f, 1417 f, 1445 f, 1556 f,
2214 f, 2352 f, 2446 f, 2597 f, 2626 f, 2811 f, 2896 f, 2938 f,
3072 f, 3174 f, 3271 f, 3334 f, 3484 f, 3589 f (cher C), 4198 f,
4396 f, 4506 f (clere † A), 4552 f (D †), 5317 f (cher D), 6097 f †
B, 6298 f, 6394 f (cher D), 6547 f, 6779 f (cher D), 7170 f, 7276 f
(shere B, cher D), 7591 f (cher D).—cher e (bef. csts.), 2660 (-[e] C;
D †), 2592 D (-es AB, -is C).—chere, 1006, 1734 (cher C), 2343
(C †), 5020, 5060 (cher CD); chere hym, 1663 (cher C); cher
(bef. vowel), 327 A (-e B, chyr C, cheré he D †).—He neither chere
(schyr C) ne (om. BCD) made ne word (wore B, woord D) tolde,
312 (Shall we read: He neither chéré madé ne word [ne] tolde? The
Cp. collation makes no note.).

Rhyme words.—fere comes (14), manere (181, 289, 879, 1125, 2597, 2626,
2811, 2896, 2938, 3271, 4552, 5317, 6394, 6547, 7170), dere adj. (433, 879,
1417, 1556, 2214, 2446, 2811, 2896, 2938, 3174, 3334, 4198, 4396, 4506,
6547, 6779, 7276, 7591), here hic (124, 289, 1125, 3484, 6298), here inf.
(124, 289, 3334, 3589, 5317), materè (1234, 2214, 3271, 4506), requeire
ind. 1 sg. (1445), 2 pl. (1566), yfere adv. (1234, 2352, 3072, 3559, 4552,
6097 B), preyere (3484, 6298), clere adj. pl. (4198, 7170).

manere : (1) manère, 33 f, 182 f, 291 f, 880 f, 1014 f, 1052 f, 1122 f,

¹ Supply [the] in C; [yes] in D.
Observations on the Language

§ 28.

2596 f (matere D), 2628 f, 2664 f, 2812 f, 2893 f, 2935 f, 3058 f, 3273 f, 3676 f (matere BD), 4254 f, 4291 f, 4555 f, 4585 f, 4946 f, 5315 f (-er D), 5580 f (-er D), 5844 f (-er D), 6392 f (-er D), 6549 f (-er D), 7172 f, 8170 f; manere, 1077 AB (-er D).

(2) manere, maner, bef. cts., (a) manere, 1333 (-er B) 1, 1542 (-er CD), 1937 (-er C) 3, 2460 (-er BC), 2560 (-er D, om. † C), 3631 (-er D, -er of C), 4577 (-er C), 4740, 5664 (-er D), 5939 (-er BCD), 6415 (-er C, -er of D), 7115 (-er CD), 7124 (-er BD, -yr C), 7748 (-er CD), 7918 (-er CD), 8014 (C †; -er D). 4 (b) maner, 313 (-er BD), 321 (-er CD), 495 (-er D), 844 (-er D), 1944 (-er D, -er of C), 2189 (-er BD), 3159 (-er BD), 3646 (-er BD), 5822 CD (other AB), 7478 (-er B), 7582, 7640 (om. † C).—manère, bef. vowels, 742 B (-er CD, -ères A), 2001 (-er C), 2353 (-er C). (3) manère ‡ vpon, 7751 A (more CD).

Rhyme words.—here inf. (23, 1014, 1052, 2664, 3058, 4585, 5315), dere adj. (53, 880, 2812, 2893, 2935, 4254, 4291, 4946, 6549), dere n. (182, 291, 880, 1122, 2596, 2628, 2812, 2893, 2935, 3273, 4555, 5315, 6392, 6549, 7172), here hic (291, 1122, 3676, 5580), mater (1052, 3273, 4254), here inf. (2664), yfere adv. (4946), bere biær (5844), clere adj. pl. (7172), spere sphere (8170).

Note.—In most of the cases under 2a. and 2b. above, maner is used in such phrases as no manere routh, som manere syde, swych maner folk, any manere syde, every manere wyght, yourf friendy (l. fremde) manere speche, etc. 313 is an exception, however.

matere : (1) matère, 53 f, 265 f, 1055 f, 1090 f, 1236 f, 1580 f, 2124 f, 2216 f (mat[e]re B), 2332 f, 2514 f, 2596 † f D (manere ABC), 2711 f, 2779 f, 3032 f, 3128 f, 3212 f, 3274 f, 3358 f, 3676 f BD (manere AC), 3751 f, 4148 f, 4251 f, 4503 f, 5313 f (matier D), 5480 f AB (martir D), 5746 f (-er D), 7106 f (-er D), 7314 f (matier D), 7359 f (matier D), 7951 f (matier D).—matère (bef. cts.), 968 [-e B, matyr[e] C), 3371. (2) matère, 144 (matyér (disyll.) and C), 1346 (yr C, -er D), 1780 (-er C). (3) matère, 4485 AB (thyng C, thing to D), 7685 (-er C, -er ‡ D), 7753 (-er C, matier disyll. D).

Rhyme words.—dere, deere adj. (53, 1580, 2216, 2514, 2711, 4148, 4251, 4503, 5313), here inf. (53, 1055, 2711, 3212, 5746, 7314, 9751), audio 3032, refere inf. (265), manere (1055, 3274, 4251), clere inf. (1090), clere adj. pl. (3751),tere guberno (1090), gubernare (3751), clere n. (1236, 2216, 2596, 3274, 4503 (clere † A)), yfere adv. (1236, 2124, 2332, 3358), here hic (1580, 2711, 3358, 3676, 4148, 7106, 7359), preyere (3128), desire inf. (5480).

1 Supply [to me] in A. In all read fremde for friendly (etc.).
2 Supply [and] in D.
3 In C read f[ë]mek[n] ; in D, all[e].
4 In A read arm[n]e (with Furnivall).
5 In D read [a]far for ferre.
6 In C supply [now].
7 In C read defet for disfigured.
8 The correct reading seems to be martire. C omits the stanza. G has matera.

No note in the Cp. collation.
§ 28, 29.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 83

prayere, (1) preyère, 2296 f (C?), 3129 f, 3481 f, 6295 f (prayèr D). [Var. C preièr; D prayère.] (2) preyère, 4773 AB (prayer D †); preyèr, 1538 (préyers B, préiërs C, praïër D). (3) preyere A (preyere BC, prayer D), 2575 (bef. vowel), to be pronounced preyère or prey'r (monosyl.), according as we read goodly (DGCp. John's) or goodely BC (A has good †).

Rhyme words —dere adj. (2296), matere (3129), here his (3481, 6295), chere n. (3481, 6295).

ryuère, 5075 f (reuere C, ryuer D) (: dere adj.).

spere, sphaera, 4337 f (: dere adj.: fere comes), 7019 f (: dere adj.: clere adj. def.), 8172 f (: manere).—hemy-spère, 4281 (-sper(i)e B, èmëspër(i)e C, èmëspyr(e) D).

Note.—O. Fr. gutière becomes yètre before a consonant in 3629 (gotur D); pere (masc.), shows an irrational -e : As he that was with-outen any pere, 8166 (: boughten dere : here inf.), cf. ten Brink, § 222.

§ 29. Nouns in consonant -re (variants in -er and -ere).


chaambre, chambre, chaumber, (i.) dissyllable before consonants, 2004 (-ir C), 2020 (-yr C), 2202 (-ere C, -ir D); cf. 358, 547, 2258, 3508, 3518, 3630, 4882, 4904, 5014, 5016 CD, 5394 CD, 6655.

(ii.) Slurred before vowels, chaumbe || and, 1641 (-er B, -ir C, -ë † and D); chaumber afyr, 3698 (-ere a B, -re a D; C (?)); cf. 2797, 5016 AB, 5394 AB; chambre he, 6565 (-ere he C) (cf. 6363, 6877). But,—But well ye wot the chaumbrè is but lite, 2731 (-er B, -ir C). [358 B, 547 D, 1641 D, are to be corrected.]

disclaundre, 5226 (disclandre B, disclaunder C, disclaunder D).1

iaspre : iaspre || vpon, 2314 (-ër on C, -ar on D, iapery † vpon B).

lettre, 2298 f (lettere C) (: bettre adv. : vnfettere inf.), 2782 f (lettere C) (: bettre adv.). Before consonants (all forms dissyllabic): lettre, 656, 1188 † C, 2148, 2170 AB, 2175, 2205, 2240, 2246, 2261, 2281, 2286, 2303, 2403, 2421, 2787, 3034, 3062 (D †), 5222 (honour † C), 7565, 7704, 7758, 7785, 7792, 7965.5 [In 7995 B alone seems to have the correct reading.] Before vowels the last syllable of lettre is slurred. Thus,—lettre I, 171 (-ër C);7 so in 2091, 2146, 2176 ABD, 2178 AB, 2232 (-ër to C, -rë to D), 7732, 8

1 In C read mostë for mort.
2 Old-style figures indicate that C has lettere (dissyllable). B has often lettre, which also occurs in A 2421.
3 A needs transposition of thow and a lettere.
4 In D read [vn]to.
5 Supply [thad] in AC and [why] in D.
6 For This lettre this Troilus, Op. and John's have Troilus this lettre. G agrees with B, reading This troilus this lettir thouht at strange.
7 Metre defective in D.
Observations on the Language

§ 29, 30.

7761, 7963, cf. 2405 ‡ C. (In this last list old-style figures indicate that C has lettre. As before, B sometimes omits one t,—letre.) lettër here (hic), 2208 (lettere disyll. C)¹.—Towchyngh thi lettër that thow art wys ynowh, 2108 A (but omit that, with BC; D is hopeless).²

ordre, ordre is, 336 (ordere C); ordre of, 5679; ordre ay, 5444 (ordre ay D, ordre til C).
poudre, poudre in, 6672 (-er D, -ir ‡ which C).
sucre, 4036 BGCp. (seukere C, sugre D, sour A).
wyuere (O. Fr. guivre, wyvre), 3852 f (wiuere C, wythir ‡ D) (-: delyuere inf. : slyuere n.).

Note.—Feuere (A.S. fefer, fefer) appears to have been influenced by the French. There are four examples of the word in the Troilus (see § 18).


When the ending rhymes with itself, the rhyme-words are left unregistered. A remarkable verse is 4647, where we appear to have enuyé || ire (see under enuye). Remedye has the by-form reméde.
armonye, 8175 f.
astronomye, 4777 f (:- lye inf.).
baudéry, 3239 f (-ye BC, bawdery D) (:- folye : companye).
companie, companye, compaynye, 191 f (-y CD), 450 f, 1171 f (-y D), 2573 f (-y CD), 2798 f (-y C), 3238 f (-y D), 4590 f, 5369 f, 5864 f, 6429 f, 6810 f. [Var. B compaignie, -ye; CD cumpaynye, cumpayny.] compaynye he, 7580 (-paynye B, -panye C, -panie D).

Rhyme words.—aspie inf. (191), eye n. (450, 6810), hye n. (1171, 2798), thrie adv. (1171), denye inf. (2573), pyre inf. (2798), hye adj. (4590), hye adv. (5864), gye inf. (4590), deye, dye inf. (5369, 5864).
coby, 2782 (-ie BD, cōpi C).
enuye, 4937 f (:- deye inf. : crye ind. 1 sg.), 7119 f, 7842 f (:- lye mentiuntur : dye inf.).—That pride enuýë || ire and auyrye, 4647 ACD (That pride and ire enuyë and auarice B).³
espie (cf. spie), espie, 2197 (aspie B, a spie C, a spyé D).

¹ ABC we have sent, which the metre requires us to emend to send[e]. or sendeth. D reads sent to; Cp. sente.
² Cf. also 7702 C, where, however, we might read lokyn (which would still leave a hard line). 7702 is wrongly filled up by the corrector of C.
³ Cp. = B; E Phillipps 8252 Harl. 2392 = ACD; G Selden B 24 John's read That pride enuye and ire and auarice; Durham II 13 reads That ire enuyë and nuorice.
fantasie, 1567 f (-y D), 3117 f, 3874 f (-y D), 4346 f, 6132 f (C †), 6624 f, 6692 f (-y C), 6721 f, 6824 f (-y C), 6986 f (-y C), 7886 f. [Var. BCD fantasie; CD fantasie; D fantasies.]

Rhyme words.—crye inf. (3117), dye inf. (4346), espye inf. (6132), drye pati (6624), lyce mentiri (7886).

folye, 194 f (-y C), 452 f, 545 f (-y D), 1024 f (-y D), 1859 f (-y D), 2158 f (-y D), 2253 f (-y D), 2371 f (-y D), 2595 f (-y D), 3236 f (-y D), 3680 f, 3709 f (-y D), 3721 f (-y D), 3828 f (-y D), 4224 f (-y C), 6132 f CD †, 6173 f (-y C), 6626 f (-y D). [Var. BCD folie.]

folye men, 532 (-y C; D †).—folye for, 6688 (folye B, -y C). folye, 5919 (-y C, fooly D); folye he, 821 (-y CD); folye ofte, 3168 (-ye BCD). folye wroughte, 3604 (folye BC). The only case of elision with slur is folye it, 6240 C, where, however, the right reading is filthe.

Rhyme words.—aspye inf. (194, 1859, 2595, 3680), eye n. (452), multelepie inf. (545), dye inf. (1024, 2158, 2253, 2595), crye inf. (2158), lyce mentiour (3721), mentir (3721), mentiuntur (4224), thrye adv. (2371), drye pati (6626).

frenesy, 727 f (-ie D) (: dye inf.).
glotonye, 6733 f (-enye CD) (: significie ind. 3 pl.).
ialousye, -ie, ialousye, 1840 f, 3679 f (B †) (: espie inf. : folye), 3829 f (-elosy D), 3863 f (: crye inf.), 3872 f, 7576 f (: dye inf. : malencye).—ialousye, 1838 (ielosy D), 1922 (ielously D), 3852 (ielosy † the D), 3866 (cf. 3867 † D). [i̇λο̅συγε (dissyl.), 4010 Λ (ielosy † D), should be ialous (as in B; ielous C).] [Var. C ielousie; CD ielousie, ielosye.]

ianglerye, 7118 f (iangelerye C, iangellarie D).
iupartie, 1550 f (: thrie adv.), 1857 f (-dy D) (: folye : aspie inf.), 3710 f (-dy D), 3719 f (-dy D †) (: folye : lye inf.), 6048 f (: in lye), 6174 f (-dy C), 7064 f (: spie n.), 7279 f (iupardi C), 7893 f (: lye mentiuntur : dye inf.). [Var. B iupartie; C iupardie, -dye; D iupardye, jeopardie. The divided form iu-partye; 6174 B, is interesting.]

lytargie, 730 f (lytargye B, lytargye C, ltyargie D) (: plye ind. 3 pl. : melodye).

maladye, maledye, 419 f (: deye morior), 1568 f (-dy D), 6679 f (-dy CD) (: dye inf.), 7594 f (maledy C, malady D) (: dye inf.).—maladye awey, 2600 (-dy BCD).

malencye, 6723 f (-ly C, -lie D malencye B), 6985 f (-ly C, -lie D), 7579 f (-ly C, -lie D, melencye B) (: ialousye : dye inf.), 8009 f (-ly C, -lie D) (: dye inf.).
Observations on the Language.

§§ 30, 31.

melodie, -ye, 733 f (-dy D) (: lytargie : plye ind. 3 pl.), 3029 f (: hye adv. : glorifie inf.), 6825 f, 8176 f.

nouellerye, 1841 f (nouelrye BC, nouvelry D).
pàrtie, 1479 (-tye B, -ti C).
poisy, 8153 f (-ie B, -y D) (: dye moriatur : enuye inv. sg.).
opoetic, 8218.¹

prophesie, 7884 f (-cie BD, professye C) (: fantasye : lye inf.); -cüyü be, 7857 C (-cies B -sięs AD).

pye, 3369 (pie B).
rêmède, -ie, 6285 f (: dye inf.), 6691 f (-y C), 7280 f (-y C), 7573 f (-y C) (: dye inf.).

Remède and red by erbess she (I. he as in CD) knew fynye,² 661 (remèdeye and C, remèdy and D).

Remède in this yf ther were any wyse, 5551 (remèdi in C, remèdeye in D). ³

But what is thanne⁴ a rèmeued vnto this, 5934 (remade, remèdie vnto D).

Ther nys non other rèmesidy yn this cas, 6424 (C has a spurious line).

spie (= speculator), a spie, 7066 f (a spye BC, espie D) (: iupartie).⁵ (Cf. espie.)
surquidrye, 213 (sur(i)quidrie A, surquidè and C, surquydè and D).
trecherye, 3120 f (-ie CD) (: crye inf. : fantasye).
vilonye, vilenye, vylonye, 1026 f (vilyan D) (: folye : dye inf.), 1523 f (welany C, vilan D) (: crye pres. ind. 1 sg. : dye inf.)⁶, 4683 f (: lye mentiantur), 6853 f (: hye ind. 3 pl.). [Var. BD vilanye; B vylenye, vilenye; C velenye.]


This list includes (i.) comédeye, tregèdie, paròdye, and (ii.) nine nouns in -rye (following an accented vowel).
augurye,—By sort and by (om. D) augurye (augury D) ek (eke D) trewely (trewey B, truly D), 4778. And treweliche (truely D) ek (eke D, om. C) augurye (augery C, augurrye D) of this (thise B, thès D, thès olde C) foweles (-is B, foulis C, foules D), 6743.

comèdye, 8151 f (: tregèdie).

consistòrie, consistòrie among, 4727.

contrarye, in his contrarye, 7742 f (D †) (: wārye ind. 1 sg.).

¹ In A supply [ye]. ² In C read he knew for he knyt.
³ In B supply [were]. ⁴ C om. thanne.
⁵ In A supply [I]. ⁶ In AB dele ony (any) or that (I).
furye, furious—furye is, 3879; furye of, 6091 (ye of D); furye as, 6575 (y as D; C t); furye and, 4915 AD (furye and BC); furye (dissyl.) || sorwynge, 9 (wight t that D).—Anoy smert dreed [-e] C furye and ek sikenesse, 5507 (ye and BD, -ie and C).

lëtuârê, 7104 f (lat- B, letewarye C) (: carye ferunt).

memorie, 3671 f (-y D) (: transitorie), 6945 f (: storie : victorie).

mësérie, mysère in, 4934 (myn deth in C).

parodye, 7911 f (paradie D) (: vnbodye inf.).

storie, stôrye, 6948 f (-y BD) (: memorie : victorie), 8014 f (: victorye);

stôrye, 3905 † f D (storyes AB, storij C).—stôrye (dissyl.), 3341 (-y CD; B †).—stôrye (before consonants), 1116, 7400 (-ye B)2, 7414 (-ye B), 7457 (-ie B).—stôrye it, 7197 (-y it B, -i as C, -y as D).

tregedie, 8149 f (tregeedie D) (: comedye).

victôrie, -ye, 6949 f (-y C) (: memorie : storie), 8015 f (: storie);

victôrye, 3906 f D (story) (victories AB, -ijs C).

Note.—Compare the proper name Mercourye,—Mercury for the toue of Hierse ek, 3571 (Mercure B, -rie C, -ry D); Ther as Mercourye sorted hym to dwelle, 8190 A (-ie B). Study, 2265 (-ye B, -ie C, dissyl.), is perhaps rather from studium than from estudie.

§ 32. A few Romance words that end in a consonant in French take an -e in the Troilus.

accèsse (O. Fr. aces), 2400 f (: besynesse), 2663 f (axsesse C) (: sykennesse); -e, 2628 (aces C, actis D).

asure (O. Fr. asur, azur), 4212 f (: aventure n. : scripture).

audentaylle (cf. O. Fr. esventail), 7921 f (: by-waylle inf. : mayle).

darte (O. Fr. dart), 5433 f (: departe pres. 1 sg.); cf. 5134 f (§ 36, n. 2).

disioynte (cf. O. Fr. disjoiut p.p.), 3338 f (-t D) (: poynte inf.);

disioynt[e], 7981 f (-e B) (: apoynte inf.).

excesse (rather from Lat. excessus than from Fr. excès), èxcesse doth, 626 (ces C).

mene, meene (O. Fr. meien), 3096 f, 6467 f (meane D); -e, 689 (C † D †), 7914 (-e † out D).

Rhyme words.—I meene (3096, 6467), clene adj. (3096).

pere (O. Fr. per), see note at end of § 28.

trauayl, trauaylle (O. Fr. travail), 21 f, 475 f, 1088 f, 2522 f, 3364 f,

8215 f. trauayle, 6547.—trauaylle, 372 (H D †)3; cf. trauayl, 6457 † C (l. labour).

1 In C insert [none]. 2 In B read telle[th]. 3 A doubtful line. "Ymagynynge (-ing D) that (C inserts neyther) trauaylle (-naille B, -nayle C, -naille G, -vailH D) nor (and D, ne G) grame (gaine C, game D)." Mr. Austin's collation gives grace for grame as the reading of Cp.E, but registers no other variants.
Observations on the Language

Rhyme words.—auayle inf. (21, 2522, 3364, 8215), sayle inf. (1088), sayle inf. (2522, 3364), rascayle (8215), meruayle n. (475). [Var. B trauille, trauelle (2522); BD trauaille.]

Note 1.—In 2817 Professor Child has suggested to me that we should read by gyynne (dat. of gyyn "contrivance," etc.) instead of bygyynne (ABD) or be-gynne (C) (with-inne). I find that G actually reads.—And inwardly thus ful softly by gyynne. The Cp. collation shows no variants.

Note 2.—For fuere, feuer, see § 18.

Note 3.—April, etc. Of Aperil (Aperille C, appairelle D, Aprill G, April E) when clothed is the meide, 156 (no variants in Cp. collation); And seyde (seid D) frende yn April (Aperil B, Aprille C) the laste, 3202 (not in G, no variants in Cp. collation); Donne file (Out ran C, Out ronne John's) as shour (schoure G) in (of C) Aperiff (Aprille C, Apriff DG) swythe (ful swythe C), 5413. *Aperil* seems to be certain for 156, 3202, and for 5413 C. In 5413 the other MSS. require *Aperil.* On the forms of *April* in Chaucer, see Varnhagen's "Ueber die verschiedenen Formen des Namens des vierten Monats bei Chaucer," appendix to Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts, pp. 85 ff. (Erlanger Beiträge zur engl. Philol., IV). Varnhagen is inclined to believe that *Avril, April, Aperil (Averil), Aprille* are all known to Chaucer. See also Murray's Dictionary, s.v. *March* (L. Martius) occurs in 1850 as Marché *March* (March BC).

§ 33. Words ending in Old French in -é and -ée end indiscriminately in -e in Chaucer. (See ten Brink, § 223 V.)

In the following list no variants are registered. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows without elision.

aduersité, 20 f, 404 f, 2861 f, 4467 f, 7446 f, 7738 f.

auctorité, 65 f.

beauté, 102 f, 1479 f.—beahtë, 975, 1421, 1426, 1431, 1433, 1483, 4572, 4583, 7181, 7277, 7618, 7770.

benyguïte, 40 f, 1617 f, 2881 f, 4127 f.

bestialité, 735 f.

bounté, 4771 f.—bountë, 2529, 3724, 4116, 4505; b. hem, 4106.

charité, 49 f, 4096 f.

cité, cytë, 100 f, 129 f, 149, 5867.—cïte, 59, 2231, 5347, 6141, 7206, 7269, 7849, 7850, 7859.

contré, 7837 f.—contre, 7834; c. hath, 1127.

cruelté, 586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f.

degre, degree, 244 f, 437, 844 f, 6324 f, 7199, 7723 f.

dëité, 3859 f.—dëite infernal, 6205.

destenë, destynë, 520 f, 2176 f, 3576, 5621 f, 5631, 6364 f.

deyntë, 1249 f.—deynëte, 3451, 6801 (adj. t).

duëté, 3812.

dyuersité, 3247, 8156 f.

tenë, 1162 (-ee B).
§ 33, 34. of Chaucer's *Troilus.*

felicité, 3656 f, 4533, 5142 f, 7126, 8181 f.
honesté, 1791, 6238 f.
Iolyté, 559.
liberté, 1858 f, 2377 f, 6019, 6648 f, 7663 f.
meyné, 127 f.—meýné, 1699, 6889.
mutabilité, 851 f.
natiuyté, 1770 f.
necessité, 1708 f, 5676, 5686, 5695, 5719 f, etc.
niceté, 906, 2371 f, 6938 f.
possibilité, 1692 f, 3290 f.
predestiné, 5628 f.
propreté, 5054 (properte B, properete C, prosperite D). ²
propriété, 3659 f, 4469 f.
quantité, 2873 f, 4496 f.
subtilité, 3013 f.
vanité, 5198 f, 5365, 5391 f, 8180 f, 8200 f.

Note 1.—For pardé, cf. 717 f, 845 f, 1754 f, 1817 f, etc., etc. (pârdé, cf. 2404, 5186, 5208, 5752, pârdé harm, 3755) (see also § 34, VI.). For benedictice (trisyllable) see 780 f (bendistee B, ben(e)diste C), 3599 f, 3702.

Note 2.—For chimene[y][z] (O. Fr. cheminée), see 3983 f (chymeneye B, chemeneye C, chymeney D) (: twaye). For vally (O. Fr. valée), see (i.) 6430 (-e B), (ii.) 943 (valy C). For noble[y] (O Fr. nobleie, noblée) before a vowel, see 6332.

§ 34. Romance nouns which have no final -e in French show none in the *Troilus.* (A few Latin words are included in this section.)

In the following list of examples, variants are not regarded except as they concern -e (which some MSS. add sporadically, but which is never sounded). MS. D is usually disregarded altogether. The accent is recessive unless otherwise marked. For convenience the

1 B alone of the four is metrical. Cp. also has pîté.
² A has his f.
examples are classed as,—(I.) words in -er; (II.) words in -our; (III.) words in -ent, -ment; (IV.) words in -aunt; (V.) words in -s; (VI.) words in a vowel; (VII.) miscellaneous words. For nouns in -ion, -ioun, see the chapter on metre.

I. Words in -er:
astrologer, 4257 f (see note below).
auter (O. Fr. alter, autier), 7829.
aunhter, cf. auauuontour.
coler (O. Fr. colier), (i.) 8023. (ii.) 7174 (coler † be-hynde C).
corner (O. Fr. cornier, -e) (ii.) 6938.
courser (O. Fr. corsier), 6448 (curser B, coursir C).
daunger (O. Fr. dangier), (i.) 1469 (-(e) C †), 2328, 2461, (ii.) 1484, 4163 (daunder † A).
dyner (O. Fr. disner), (i.) 2574, 2682. (ii.) 2645.
herber (O. Fr. herbier), 2790 (erber BC).
heroner (O. Fr. haironnier), (ii.) 5075 (goslauk † C*).
laurer (O. Fr. laurier), 3384, 3569; cf. 7470.
leyser, layser (O. Fr. leisir), (i). 1312, 2454, 3042, 7308. (ii.) 3358;
1. haeue, 3352; 1. had, 4401.
messager (O. Fr. messagier), 4259 f (massangere C, messanger D).
papir (O. Fr. papier), (ii.) 7960 (-er † ful C).
percher (quasi O. Fr. *perchier), 5907 C (l. morter).
power (O. Fr. poeir), (i.) 5120, 6529. (ii.) -er, 1252.
presoner (O. Fr. prisonier), (ii.) p. he, 4841 (pris- BD).
quarter (O. Fr. quartier), (ii.) 7243, 8061.
soper, souper (O. Fr. soper), (i.) 3437 (A †), 3452. (ii.) 2032, 3449, 6881.
squyer (O. Fr. escuyer), (ii.) 191 (swyer B).

Note.—In some of the words in this list the ending is doubtless the native -er (A.S. -ere). So also in iapere, 1425.

II. Words in -our:
accusour, (ii.) 4292 (C †; -er D).
auctor, (i.) 394 (autour BCD), 1103 (auter D), 1134 (-our B, autour D); cf. 3344, 3417, 4038, 7451. (ii.) cf. 3858, 4607.
aauauntour, (i.) 1809 (-er A). (ii.) 3150 (A †), 3151 (-e A), 3156.
conquerour, 7157 f (-e B).
error, (ii.) 1001 (-e) B, 5655 (-e) B.
fauour, 1748, 2221.

1 Insert [this] in A.  2 Insert [the] in C.
flour, 7155 f (-e C).
hôneur, (i.) 888, 1442, 1557, 1565, 1823, 2654, 3001, 3859, 4933, 5229, 5232, 6237, 7723, 8098. (ii.) 1382, 1847, 1989, 2912, 4566, 4821, 6177, 6771 (-ur B).—honneur, (i.) 120, 1246, 1790 (C1), 2517, 2538, 3007, 3786, 6104, 6223, 7723, 8098. (ii.) 287, 1967, 2995 (-e B), 3005, 5991¹. —dishonour, 1816; dishâneur, 7429 (-e B, -our & (stur) C).
labour, 965 (-e AB), 4276, 6457 (-e B, trauayl C). (ii.) 948, 1035, 2289; labouer he, 3917 (l. (that) he C).—labour, (ii.) 5084, cf. 199.
langour, (i.) 5506 (-ur C, -or D), 6405 A (-e B, -or D). (ii.) 6608 (longyng CD), 6631 (-e B, -ur(e) C), 6760 (-ur C).
licour, 5182 (-quore D).²
myrrouer, mirour, (i.) 1351 (-e B); (ii.) 365. myror of, 1927.
parlour, (ii.) 1167.
peyntour, 2126.
rumour, (ii.) 6416.
sauour, (ii.) s. han, 1354 (-aur A).
socour, (ii.) s. hem, 4793 (-e B, mercy CD).
traytour, -or, (i.) 87, 4866. (ii.) 3115 (tractor B), 4542 (-ous A); traytoure comune, 4667.
tremour, 6618 (-or A).
tresaour, (i.) 4747, 6176 (-or(e) C). (ii.) 3716 (-or C).
vapour eterne, 2853.
vigour, (ii.) 3930.

Note.—Harpour for harper (A.S. hearpere) occurs, see 2115.

III. Words in -ent, -ment:

accident, (i.) 3760. (ii.) a. [h]is, 6167.
accusément, 5218 f (-e B, acusament C).
argument, (i.) 5139, 5841 f. (ii.) 5618.
assent, 5008 f (-e B), 5197 f (-e B,assen C), 5216 f (-e B), 5595 f.
ausément, auysément, (i.) 5598 f (-e B), 5962 f, 8174 f (-e B) (: went p.p.). (ii.) 1428 (-e B).
element, 8173 f (-e B) (: went p.p.).
entendément, 6358 (B †).
hardiment, 5195 f (-e B, hardy † men C).
instrument, 10 f, 631 f (: myswent p.p.), 6805 f (-e B) (: ywent p.p.).
iiugement, 5961 f.
pacient, 1083.

¹ Insert [an] in AC. BCp. John's have an.
² Insert [out] in A.
Observations on the Language

parllement, (i.) 4805, 4873 f (-e B), 5006 f, 5326, 5959 f. (ii.) 4880
(-men C); p. he, 5039, cf. 5221.

president, 4875 f (president BCD).

sentement, 2885 f (-e B) (: present adj.), 5839 f (-e B). (ii.) 1098.

serpent, (i.) 3679. (ii.) 7860.

talènt, (i.) 6360, 7003 (-e B, tur(ne)ment C). (ii.) 6790 (-e B,
turnent † C); cf. 404, 5473, 5554, 7017, 7955. torment, 8 f.

IV. Words in -aunt:

auaunt, (i.) 1043 (-e B), 1812 (-e B)

gaulant, 7201.

graunt, (ii.) 5214 (-e B).

remenaunt, 6038 (-e B).

seruaunt, (i.) 15 † B, 6536, 7708. (ii.) 3825, 4329.

tyraunt, 2325.

V. Words in -s:

auys, (i.) 5078 f (-e C) (: wys adj. sg.). (ii.) 620, 3295.

burges, 5007 (borwis C, burgeys and A).

cas, (i.) 29 f, 271, 568, 836 f, 1370, 1507 f, 1510, 1542 f, 1689, 1814,
2153 A †, 2431 f, 2560 f, 2696, 2765 (B †), 3121, 325 f, 3683 f,
4461, 4952 f, 5078, 5082, 5456 f, 5542, 6171, 6424 f, 7427, 7633 f,
8001. (ii.) 1843, 2741 (cause C), 3014, 5050, 5233, 5290; cas he,
5311.

coys, (ii.) 5633 (cloys † B), 5642, 5721.

conuers, 8173.

pers, (i.) 7105 C †.

perss, course), (i.) 2055, 2470 (corses B), 8108. (ii.)


encrèse (ii.) 2418 (-ees B, encreseth † hope C), 4618 (-ce D), 5919
(-cresse B).

paas, pas, 1705 (-e B), 1712 (-e B), 2434 f, 3123 f, 6423 f, 6967 f
(pace B).

pallais, pálays, -eys, payláys, (i.) 324, 1161, 1593, 1701 (l. om. † C),
2018, 2179, 2337 (to p. ward) (payleysseward B), 2622, 4371, 4376,
6564, 6875, 6903, 6907, 6910. (ii.) 6886, 6888, 6905.

paradys, 7180; cf. 5526.

pes, pees, (i.) 352, 3899, 4151, 4762 f, 5117, 5266 AC, 6014, 6021,
§ 34. of Chaucer's Troilus.

6052 (C †), 6126. (ii.) 3937, 5354, 6008, 6127; p. herafter, 5266 B, 6224.

pows, (ii.) 3956 (pous B, pous(e) C).

prøces, (i.) 1509, 2700 (-cesse D), 3176 (-cesse BD), 3312 (cesse D), 4581 (-cesse D), 5080 (-cesse BD). (ii.) 1353 (-cesse BD), 1377 (-cesse B, -cesse D), 1570 (-cesse B, mater C), 1763, 7854; cf. 6946 (before haue).

prys, (ii.) 1266; p. hym, 2670; p. hath, 273.

purpos, (i.) 142, 379, 1062, 1130, 1982, 3172 (therto C), 3291, 3973, 5396, 5782, 6539, 6858, 7117, 7133, 7392, 7939. (ii.) 5, 4209, 4699, 6082, 8162; p. how, 7823.

remôrs, (ii.) 554.

recoûrs, 2437 f.

socôûrs, 2439 f.

solâs, 31 f, 1545 f, 6970 f.

surplus, 4722.

trays (Fr. traits, pl.), 222 (-e) B.

tretis, -ys, 4726, 4798, 5332.

voys, (i.) 1911, 2887, 2934, 6940, cf. 4565. (ii.) 111, 422 (-e C), 2935, 4079, 4857 (acord C), 5809, 7164; v. he, 725 (-e B), 6999.

Note.—For ruby (O. Fr. rubi, rubis), see VI., note.

VI. Words ending in a vowel (not -e):

anoû, 5507.

araû, 2349 f, 3378 f, 4640, 6332; a. his, 2352.

assaû, 6170 f; cf. 7672 † C.

ascrû aros, 1696 (the acry C, in the skye † D).

cry, 1281.

delàû, 3721.

dieu; a dieû, 5292 (adew C, and dey † D); cf. 2170 CD. (Cf. pardieûx, 197; pârdieûx, 1844; depardieûx, 2143, 2297; parde, § 33, n. 1.)

lay, 1149 f, 2006 f.

May, 1135, 1197, 3904 f, 6788 f, 7207 f.

mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 535, 1503, 1676, 2161, 2940, 5811, etc., etc.; graunt mèrcy, (i.) (ii.) 3491, 4147, 5294, 6322; grant mercû, 1324 f.

prow (O. Fr. prou), 333 f (-e B), 2749 f, 7152 f.

tissew (O. Fr. tissu), t. heng, 1724 (-ewe D, C †).

tôrney, 6331.

* In AC supply [out]; in D supply [hem]. BECp. have oute; John's has out.
Observations on the Language

vērtu, (i.) 429, 1078, 4591, etc. (ii.) 438 (-ue B), 4130, 4977, etc.—
vērtue, 896 AB (-u CD). [Cf. vertules, § 49, n. 5.]

Note.—For ruby (O. Fr. rubī, rubis), see 1670 (rebe C), 2172 (-ye C), 4213 (-ię C), 6912.

VII. Miscellaneous.

Note.—Variants are usually not registered. In none of the following words is there a sounded -e, though -e is occasionally written, even in A. D very frequently adds such irrational -e's (-e, -ę), B not seldom (as agrefe, appellate, arte, charc, conforte, conseyle, conseylle, cowarde, delite, despaire, desire, deviloure (for devoir), estate, folc, mensche, ost, porle, pouyte, refreyne, reporte, rewarte, scorne, though in the case of most of these words the form without -e also occurs), and in C -ę or -ę is sometimes found (e. g., conseyle, 985 ; desire, 4924 ; abite, 109 ; partę, 5087 ; effecte, 212, etc.).

abet, 1442 (abek C).
agrief (a = on, O. Fr. gref, grief), 3704 f (a]gref A), 4463 f, cf. 5275 f.
appetit (O. Fr. appetit, -te), 6339 f (-e BD).
art (O. Fr. art), (i.) (ii.) 659, 920 f, 1096, 4175 f, 5928 ; a. hire, 1342.
atayr (ii.) 181.
awayt, (ii.) 3299 (om. † A).—awaytę, 3421 (-t BC).
baroun, 4695 f, 4852 f.
bayard, 218.
busshele, 3867 (beschop † C, busshele † of D).
caytyf, (ii.) 4766.
char (O. Fr. char, cf. charre), 4546 f (-e BD); charhors, 7381 (-e h. D).
closet, 1684, 2300, 3505, 3529.
confort 845, 4736 (confert B), 4980 ; confort, 7531.—comfort, 528 f, 590 f, 2840 f, 2978 f. (Cf. discomfort.)
comparson, 5112 f.
conceyt, (ii.) 989.
cōnseyl, cōnseyl (O. Fr. conseil), (i.) 985, 2129, 5101 (A †), 5517.
(ii.) 5776, 6793 (-e B).—counseyl, (i.) 743.
contek (etym. dub.), (ii.) 7842.

cost, 3364.
coward, as adj., c. drede, 6235 (-ę B); coward(e) herte, 6071 (-d BD ; C †).
daun, (i.) (ii.) 70, 4851, 7851, 7852.
debat, 1838 f (-e CD).
delit, delýt, (i.) 1794 f, 4218 f, 6330, 6340 f, 6501 f (-yzt C). (ii.) 762, 4152, 6198 (-yzt C).
desdayn, 5853 f.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

34.

desespér, (i.) 605 (dis[es]pair D).—despeýr, 813 f (dispaýr B; D †); despeýr that, 5616 (-e) D, dispair(e) B). (Cf. also 779 A, 1091, 1615 f.)

desîr, (i.) 311, 374, 465, 607, 2419 f, 3328 f, 4105, 4324, 4373, 4477 f 4493, 5235. (ii.) 296, 381, 2422, 3268, 4388, 5057, 5234, 6061; d. hym, 4381.

despeyr, see desespeir.

des- (i.) 311, 374, 465, 607, 2419 f, 3328 f, 4105, 4324, 4373, 4477 f 4493, 5235. (ii.) 296, 381, 2422, 3268, 4388, 5057, 5234, 6061; d. hym, 4381.

desport, 592 f, 4971 f.

deuoir, (ii.) 3887.

deuyn (O. Fr. devin), 66.

discomf6rt, 4973 f, 5510 f. (Cf. comfort.)
effect (Lat. effectus, cf. O. Fr. effect), (i.) (ii.) 212, 2305, 2464, 2651, 3188 D (-e B), 3347, 4422, 4657, 5552, 5956, 6541, 6740, 7372, 7786, 7984, 8147.

engỳn, 1650, 31161

estat, (i.) (ii.) 130, 287, 432 (estalf A), 884, 1290, 1304, 1550, 1746, 1792, 1836 f, 1966, 2223, 5246, 6198, 7388, 8112, etc.

eyr (O. Fr. air), 7034.

faucon, fawkon, (i.) 4626. (ii.) 5075.

feith, feyth (O. Fr. feid, feit, fei, apparently with Eng. abstract -yth), (i.) 89 (feyt C), 336 (-e B, fay C), 1254, 2048, 2188 (fey B, fay † vnkele C), 4593, 8027. (ii.) 1247, 1495, 2588 (-e B), 7622 (feight D), etc.

fol, fool, (i.) (ii.) 532, 618, 630, 1455 (fel A), 1485, 2930, 3741, 4307, 6461, 7149, 7886.

f6rest, 7598, 7600.

fruyt, 385.

fyn, (i.) (ii.) 1510, 1612, 1842, 1879, 2681, 2967, 3355, 3395, 5139 f, 5584, 8191, 8192, 8193, 8194, 8195, 8215.

gardeyn, -yn, (i.) 1899, 2202, 4580. (ii.) 1904, 2199. [With slur, 1905 A.]

greyn (ii.) 3868.

grief, (ii.) 2717. (Cf. agrief.)
growel, (ii.) 3553 (gruwel B).
groyn, (ii.) 349.
guerdon, -oun, 6957, 7752, 8215 AB; g. hire (eam), 818.

habit, 109.

idyôt, 903.
96  Observations on the Language [§ 34.

lambýc (O. Fr. alambic), As licour (-quore D) out (om. A) of a (om. D)
  lambye (-bic B, -bik C, -byke D) ful faste, 5182.
lessôn, (ii.) 2893.
mantel, (ii.) 1465.
mỳschef, (i.) 755.—chêf, 5276 f ; -chiêf, 4464 f.
nerf, (ii.) 1727.
nỳgard (O. N. hnogg-r + Romance -and), n. haue, 4221.
ost, (i.) (ii.) cf. 80, 4691, 5261 f, 6284 f, 6379, 6435, 7115, 7713
  (hest(e) C). [Var. B oost, ostê, oste.]
pailet, (ii.) 3071.
part, (i.) (ii.) cf. 918 f, 3148, 3281, 4173 f, 4718, 4843, 5087 (-e) C),
  5665, 5690, 7681 ; p. he, 2413.
pencel (O. Fr. penoncel), (ii.) 7406 (-sel BC).
peril, (i.) (ii.) 84, 475, 1691, 1960, 3209, 3695, 4775, 7388 ; p. he,
  3753.
port (O. Fr. port 'bearing'), (ii.) 1077 (-e B).
poynt, (i.) 7648 (-e) B. (ii.) 5320 (-e) B.
preson, prison, 2302, 7247. presôn, -oûn, 3222 f, 4768 f.
pylgrym, 7940.
quysshon, 2314 (-en B, -yn C), 3806 (-en B, qwischin C).
refreyn, 2656 f (-e B).
refuyt (O. Fr. refuit, refuite), (ii.) 3856 (-fut BC).
renoun, 481 f, 1382 f, 1746 f.
repôrt, 593 f, 5512 f (resport A).
reson, -oun, (i.) 796, 1451, 3693, 4250, 4826, 5234, 5236, 5710, 6340.
  (ii.) 764, 6245.
resort, 2976 f.
rêspect, (ii.) 8181, cf. 4748.
respit, 6500 f.
rewârd, (ii.) 2218, 8099.
saf cundwýt hem, 4801 C (safe conduýt D, saue-garde devise A, sauc
garde devise B).
scorn, skorn, (i.) 318, 335. (ii.) 514, 902.
scryt, 2215.
sermon, (ii.) 2050. sermôn, -oûn, 2200 f, 2384 f, 5499 f.
 seson, (ii.) 168 (-e) A.
saynt, (ii.) 6916.
signal, (ii.) 5480.
signet (O. Fr. signet, sinet). (ii.) 2172 (synet C).
sort (O. Fr. sort), (i.) 76 (soût f B, byfor f D), 2839 f (kankedort :
comfort n.). (ii.) 3889 ABC (D †), 4778 (D †), 6063 (-e B, -e † to D), 6066 (-e D †).
soun, sown, (i.) (ii.) 732, 1890, 2203 f, 6943.
spirit, (i.) (ii.) 362, 423, 3650, 4193, 4620, 4982, 5373, 5448, 5814, 5561, 5872, 6282, 7575.

Note. The metre requires that sprit (7575 C), spryst (5448 C), and spryt (C in vv. 307, 4193, 5814, 5872) be expanded to spirit, and 423 C also needs correction; cf. 4620 C.

stomak, 787.
strfyf, 1865 f (-ft A, -fe B), 1922 f, 6704 f.
subygit, 1913 (subject C, suget D).
treson, 1878, 8101. tresohn, 107 f.
venym, (ii.) 3867.
ver (Latin), 157 (veer B).
vessél, 6674.
wardeyn, (ii.) 3507, 7540.
werbul (from the verb, cf. O. Fr. werbler), w. harpe, 2118.

§ 35. The genitive singular of nouns, both Anglo-Saxon and Romance, ends in the Troilus for the most past in -es, irrespective of original gender and declension.

Note.—CD usually have -is or -ys; B has -is in 453 (brestis), but regularly -es. In the following list trivial varieties in spelling are not registered.

Examples are,—
I. aspes, an a. lef, 4042 (-is C, auspen D).
asses, 2127.
beddes, 359, 3524.
brestes, 453.
bryddes, 2006.
dayes, 1989, 1992 (daijs C), 4543.
dethes wounde, 4539.
dowues, 4338.
emes, 1551, 1557.
horses, 223.
kynges, 226, 889, etc.
loues, 15, 34, 905, 2191, etc.
lyues creature, 4914 (C †), 5429 (other † c. C); lyues ende, 7917 (last[e] † D).
maydes, 3147 (maydęnyss C, -dęnes D).
mouses, 3578.
nyghtes, 1990, 4684.
shames, 180.
somères, 3903 (-érís C, somers D).
sonnes, 4546 (sunnys C, sunnis D), 7602 (sunnys C).
sorwes, 2151 (-owis D).
tales, 1345.
widewes, 109 (wedéwys C, wydewys D), 170 (wedéwys C); wydewes, 1199 (-owes B, n
Observations on the Language [§§ 35, 36.

-owis D, wédwis C); wydyes, wykes, 6862 (wekes B, woukis
1307 (-owes B, -owis D, wédwis C).

wightes, wyghtes, 660, 1280, 7121.

Note.—In the phrase lyues creature (see 4914, 5429), as well as in that lyues
body (Hous E, 1063), Professor Skeat regards regards lynes as an adverb (A.S.
lifes) : see his notes, Minor Poems, p. 347, Prioresses Tale, etc., Glossary,
s.v. lynes. The Anglo-Saxon adverbial lifes is, however, never used
attributively, and one can hardly believe that lynes in a lynes creature
was felt by Chaucer as very different in construction from shames in
shames deth (Leg. Good W. 2064, 2072), or dethes in dethes wounde (Troil.
4539) or dethes wo (Arthour and Merl., 2108), or lynes (undoubtedly a
genitive pure and simple) in lynes day (Leg. Good W. 1624), or, especially,
mannies in the line, Edor or ony mannis creature (Troil. 1502). For a
rather late example of the construction, cf. "Whereby my hart may
thinke, although I see not thee. That thou wilt come, thy word so sware,
if thou a lynes man be": Tottel’s Miscellany, Arber, p. 154. Professor
Bright (Modern Lang. Notes, 1889, col. 363) explains lyues (gen.) body as
"a living person’s body,” “a living man,” taking lyf in the familiar
Middle English sense of “a living person;” but this does not explain
lynes creature or lynes man (unless we regard these phrases as due to
analogy) and seems less likely than the interpretation of lynes in the sense
of “of life”; cf. Byron’s a thing of life (= a living thing = a lynes creature). On Lynes and dothes cf. Mätzner, s. v.

II. disdayne[s] prison, 2302(-ys C, disleynous † D).
fortunes, 4467.

Mayes day the thridde, 1141; a
Mayes morwe, 2183.

[disdines, dyoukenes, spouses, 6709.

[doutës † wenynge, 5654 B (dout-
tous AD).]

Note 1. In one case the scribe of C has formed a genitive (to the destruction
of the metre) by adding to a proper name is as if a separate word : Nisus
is doustyr, 7478 (nisus ABD). Compare with this the form herteis (gen.
sg.), which occurs at least three times in C (viz., 1620, 2482, 3887).

Note 2.—The goddesses wereth, 933 C, error for goddes, may serve as one
more argument, in addition to those mentioned by ten Brink, § 109 a,
that s in the genitive was unvoiced in Chaucer’s pronunciation. Cf. also
heynesse for heunese, 6256 B. It is a little odd that ten Brink should
cite Mod. Eng. else as having a voiced s (“dagegen freilich else mit
tönendem s = ME. elles”).

§ 36. A few words make a genitive without change of
form. Thus,—
his lady grace, 1117, 3314 (ladi C), 4672, 4619 † D (ladies thank AB,
ladyis thank C).
this lady name, 99 ABD (ladyis C).
his lady mouth, 812 (ladyis C).
his lady heste, 3999 (his l. liste † B, his ladijs heste C, his ladies
heest D).
his lady honour, 7440 (his [lady] h. B?, C; ladies D).

But,—
my ladies depe sikes, 7038 (ladies B, ladijs C, lady D).

any herðe tale, 4076 ACG (hard † B, heerdis D).
ouë tongë deference, 395 A (tonges difference B, tungis differens C, specchis † differens D).
hertë blod, 1530 (hertys B later, -[e] D).
myn hertë lust, 1915 (-es B, -is C, -is † lyf D).
his hertë reste, 3973 B (-es A, -is CD).
herte . . . suffisaunce, 6302 BC (-es AD, -is AD, -is C).
hire herte variaunce, 8033 (-es AD, -is C).
his hertë boņme, 297 C (-es AD).

But,—
for hertes cf. 1620 (-is BD, -eis C), 2482, 3887, 3973, 8103, 8112.

thi brother wyf, 678 B (brotheres A, brotheris CD).
his fader carte, 7028 B (fadres AD, fadiris C).
3our fadir tresoun, 117 D (fadres B, faderis C).

But,—
hirë fadres shame, 107 (fadères B, fadæys C, fadris D).
my fadres graunt, 5214 (fadæys C).
youre fadres sleyghte, 6158 (faderys sleyt[e] C, fadres sleyghtes D).
hëre fadres . . . tente, 7385 (fadëris C).

Note 1.—The following cases seem to be instances of heucne in composition, not genitives (cf. A.S. heofon-cyning, -dream, -rice, etc.) :—heucne blyse, 3546 (hevin blis[se] D),\(^1\) 4164 BE (blysyd † A, blis[se] C, heven blisse D), 4499 (heuenes B, hevin blis[se] D); heuen quene, 6256 CD (heuenes A, heu(y)nes(se) † B); heuenc † egle, 4338 D; cf. the heuenes heighe,\(^2\) 1989 (the h. (h)eye B, [the] heuenis eye C, the hevenis eye D); heuencys † lyf, 4962 C. (Heuene, -es, etc., dissyllabic throughout.)

Note 2.—Compare also peple speche, 3426 AD (puples B, puple ? C\(^4\)); Criseyde darte, 5134 A (-es BD -[e] C)\(^4\); Crisyde hous, 6891 A (-es BD, -is C). But,—Crisydes net, 4575 (-is D); Crisydes eyen, 4972 (-is D); Crisydes herte, 7138 (-is C).

§ 37. Many proper names in -s have the genitive identical in form with the nominative. Thus,—
the kyng Priamus sone, 2 (Pryamys D).
Tröylis vnely aventure, 35.
Pandarûs voys, 725 (-ys C, -is D).

\(^1\) Supply [For] in A; [en] in D.  \(^2\) Read ye (wrye inf.).  \(^3\) C defective.  \(^4\) In this verse perhaps the scribes of AC took Crisyde for a nom. and darte for an inf., and this may be right. The Cp. collation has no note.
Observations on the Language

Tröylūs persone, 1786.
Pàndarūs byhest, 2414, 3188.
Pàndarūs lore, 2426.
Deiphèbūs hous, 2599 (dēiphēbus (?) D), 2625.
Pàndarūs reed, 2624 (-is C).
Pàndarūs entente, 2808.
Venus heriynge, 2890.
Tröylūs seruyce, 4657 (cf. 7369 † B).
Hèrculēs lyoûn, 4694 (-is B).
Calkas ere, 4725.
Calkas doughter, 5325.
Saturnus doughter, 6200 (Saturnes BD, -ys C).
Phebus suster, 6253.
A broche . . . That Troylus (dissyl.) wàs, 7404 ABC (D defect.).
Nisus doughter, 7473 (nysus (is) douȝyr C).
Archimōris burynge, 7862 (archimoris B, arichmoure † C, Archemories D).
Tydeus (Tideus BD, Thedeus C) sone that doun descended is, 7877.

Some other genitives of proper names—
Ioues name, 878 (Iouues B, iouys C, Iovis D).
Ioues doughter, 2845 (Iovis D).
natal Ioues feste, 2992 (-is C, D †).
Ioues face, 5999 (iouys C ; Ioue in his † face D, = in 's ?).
Martes highe seruyse, 3279 (-is CD).
Cupldes sone, 7953 (-is C, Cu(s)pides D).
Argyues wepynge, 7872 (arthmes † C).
Penēlopēs trouthe, 8141 (-ē[s]s B, Penâlopēs D).
Pallādiōn[e]s feste, (161 Palladyon[e]s B, Palas † dionis C, Pallādiōns ?
D, Pallādiōnēs G).
Troyes town, 7131 B (-ē AC) ; Troyēs cyte, 100 (-ys C).

Note.—The Latin genitive ałoës may here be added—
Tho woful teris that they leten falle
As bittre weren out of teris kynde
For peyne, as is ligne ałoës or galle, 5797-9
(lignum ałoës C one syl. over measure).

§ 38. The plural of nouns (A.S. and Romance) ends
regularly in -ēs (-is, -ys) or (if the nominative ends in
a weak -e) in -s (Child, § 22 ; ten Brink, § 202,
206, 210; 213, 225). Examples are :—
of Chaucer's Troilus.

I. belles, 1890 (-e[s] C, -is D).
foughles, 787 (fowles B, foulys C, foulis D); fowele's, 6743 f
(-is B, foulis C, foules D) 
(owlys : foul(e) is).
soules, 5866 (-is C), 8206.
tales, 2017 (-is C), etc., etc.
walles, 7029 (wallis C).
bemes, 7006 (-ys C, -es D).
stremes, 305 (-ys CD).
lymes, 282 (lemys C, lymys D), 5844 (lemys C, lymmes D).
cf. 7164.
pawnies, 3956 (paumys C).
sones, 1255 (-ys C, -is D).
stones, 1953 (-ys CD, stonnes B).
sires, 4841 (serys C, sir[e]s D).
shoures, 470 (-is C, -ys D).
speres, 4705 (-is D), 8123.
sterres, 1994 (-ys C, -is D), 6637 (-is C), 8175.
auentures, 3 (-is D); cf. creatures, 7891.
apes, 906 f (-is C, -ys D).
iapes (-is CD), 904, 930, 2252 (D t).
shippes, 58 (-is D).
sobbes (-is CD), 4910, 5037.
leues, 4887 (-ys C, -is D), 6095 (-ys C).
loues, 6707 (-ys C), 8211.
wyues, 6742 f (-ys C, vyues B, wiffes D) (lyues pl., -ys C, liffes D); cf. 1204 f.
bokes, 788 (-ys C, -is D), etc., etc.
sykles, 4999 (-ys C, -is D), etc.
Grekes, 533 (-ys C, -is D), etc., etc.
rokses, 2460 f (rochis C).
wrecchis, 3775 f (wriches B, wrecchis C, werchis D).
tacches, 3777 f (tecches BD, techis C).
tacche's, 3778 f (tecches BD, fecchis C).
speches, 3352 (-e t C).
age's, 1112 f (: vsages pl.).
dogges, 5288 (-is C).
ymages, 1458 (emagis C, ymagis D).
yates, 7540 (-is C).
nettes, 4197 (-is C).
nyghtes, 4598 f (nyty3s C, om. t D) (: myghtes pi.).
routes, 1705 (-ys C).
rites, 8212 f (vyces t A, riêtes t D) (: appetites pl.).
shotes, 1143 (shottis D).
festes, 7792 f (-is C) (: byhestes pl., -e[s] B, -is C).
abodes, 3696 (abedes, abydis, abodis).
dedes, 4392 (-is CD), 7166 (-is C), 8133.
flodes, 4602 (-is C).2
gledes, 1623 (-en C, -is D).
goddes, 3226 (-ys C, -is D), 6068 (-is C), 8213, etc.
noûdes, 355 (-is CD), etc.
hondes, 3956 f (-is C) (: bondes pl.).
clothes (-is C), 2629, 5440.
monethes, 1135 (moneths B, D t); monthes, 7129 (monethis C, monethes D), etc.
oûthes, 7626 (-is CD), etc.

1 Read my[no]-stones at the end of the line in AD.  2 Supply [so] in A.
II. dayes, 2831 f (daijs C) (: de-
layes, -is C); cf. notes 1, 2,
below.
weyes, 1907 f (: aleyes pl., 
aley[e]s C).
III. bowes (=boughs), 1906 (-is 
CD).
bowes (=bows arcus), 4702 (-ys 
D).
brows, 7176 (-is C).
clawes, 2012 (-is CD, clewes B).
hawes, 6060 f (-is C) (cf. lawes).
hawes, 7472 (waH C).
hewes, 2343 (-ys C, -is C (?)
), 2936 (-is D, -is C), 5816 
(-ys C, hewej D).
hewes, 1106 f A (-is BD). 
IV. arwes, 4706. 
pylwes, 3286 (pilous B, pilwis 
CD).
sorwes, 54 (sorowë D), 705 ([es] 
B, -ys C, sorow f D), 847 
(-ys C, sorowes D), 2427 (-is C,
-owis D (f)), 3147 (-ë C, -ow 
D), 3747 (-is C, sorow D), 
3924 (dayës C, daiës D), 3976 
(-is C), 4014 (-ys C), 4794 
(-ys C, sorowis D, sorwues 
dissyl. B), 4816 (-ë C, -owis
D), 4910 (-is C, -owes D), 
5003 f (peynes AB, teeris f 
D), 5163 (-is C, -owes D), 
5590 (-ë BC, -is D), 6499 (-ë 
C), 6561 (-is C), 6567 (-is C, 
-ë D), 6628 (-ë C, peynes D), 
6629 (-ë C), 7718 (-is C f).
V. fetheres, 353 (-ris D, fedëris C), 
7909 (fedres D, fedëris C).
fyngrs, 2117 (-geres B, -gerys 
C, -gris D), 5399 (-geres B, 
-geris C, -gers D).
chartres, 3182 (-teris C, -tris D, 
charres B).
lettres, 1188 (-teres B, sg. f C), 
3330 (-teris C), 6833 (letterys f 
C), 7960 (letres B, letteris f C), 
7990 (letres B, letteris C; 
Dt).
candeles, 7383 (-dels B, -delis C, 
-deH D).
couples, 4591 (coupelys C). 
ensaumples, 760 (examplys C, 
ensaumplis D).
mobles, 6122 f D.
peples, 4589 (pepelys C).
temples, 3225 (tempelis C, tem-
plis D), so 3957.
heuenes, 3460 (-ys C, -is (?) D).
wuenes, 6721 (trappy [al] in 
A; Ct).
VI. aduocaciës, 2554 AB (-catis f
C, -caries f D).
 amphibologiës, 6068 f (-gyis C) 
(leyes pl.)
fantasës, 4855 (-sijs C, -sics 
D); cf. 6277.

1 Supply [goode] in D.
2 Dissyllable needed.
§ 38. of Chaucer’s Troilus.

VII. Plurals with synizesis:—

aduersāriēs (-ē † C), 2520.
contrāriēs, 645 (-trarijs C).

ēnemyiēs, 6615 C (ēnemys AB, ēnemonyēs D).

fūrye, 1521 (-ēs B, furyēs † gen.
pl. C, furious † D), 7861
(-ēs B, -ēs † C, -ēs † D).
ladyes (dissyl.), 186, 1166, 2698,
5063, 6810, 6819 (laydyes AB, ladyis C, ladies D), 7887.

Note 1.—The usual ending of the plural in A is -es; but -ys (-is) occurs. Thus,—affectis, 4233 ACD (-os B); eris, 5479 f (erēs B, erēs D);
frendys, 2560 (-es B, -is CD); herys, 5478 f (-es D, herēs B); heereys, 7173 (heres BD, herēs C); hewys, 1106 (-is BD) (: neue(is); lordys, 2698 (-es B, -is CD); owlys, 6745 f (-is B, owēs CD) (: foweles: foule(e) is); selys, 4304 (-es B, -is CD); tolys, 632 f (-is B, -es D) (: scole is: folys pl.); and in the plural of tere, -ys (-is) is the usual ending in A (cf. 760, 2112, 3893, 4287, 4791, 4919, 5002, 5172, 5412, 5746 f, 5508, 6578, 7089 f). 7278, 7699, 7962, 8053; and for tere is. cf. 543, 1411, 2171, 7737). The indifferance of some scribes to varieties of ending is shown by D in 4706,—arvece darts sucercis manys. Instead of -es, -ē is written in armēs, 5881 D, 5999 D; bestēs, 3462 A. Afectis, 4233 B is doubtless a mere error for -es. Observe vulturus, 788 D (voluturis AB, vulturnus C); daeis (dissyl.), 2831 f C (dayes ABD) (: delayis C, -ēs ABD); daeis (dissyl.), 2436 C, 6760 C; dayis, 2447 C, 6602 C, 7569 C (cf. also the forms in 3924, 7022, 7713).

Note 2.—The following plurals are perhaps worth mentioning for their rhymes (cf. other rhymes of the same kind in the lists above, I. ff.):—
tolys, 632 f (-is B, -es D): folys pl. (-is BD): scole is.
hewys, 1106 f (-is BD): newe is.
hayes, 3193 f (-is B, halis + C) May is.
owlys, 6745 f (-is B, owēs CD): foweles pl. : foule(e) is.
halles, 7093 f (-is B, -es D, waft + C): wallys pl. (-is BC, -es D): galleys (galleis D).

wellys, 7737 f (-is D, wēft C): helle ys: ellys.
stones, 2026 f (-ys CD): at ones.
bones, 91 f (-ys CD): onys (cf. 805 f, 2469 f).
desertes, 4109 f (-is CD): certes.
plesy, 7862 f: lord of Argeys (Argeyes B, Argeis D).

Note 3.—In some cases s only is written where -es (-is) should be pronounced. Thus—
answer[i]s, 2435 D (-es A, -ēs B, -ēs C).
bok[es], 7423 B (-es AD, [thesa] bokys C). (Cf. 2933, 4011, 4271, 4616, 6382, 6738, 7153, 7162, 7452, 7826, 7841, 7844, 7896, 7925, 8218.)
dor[es], 6915 B (-es AD, -ēs C). (Cf. 3075, 6894.)
flour[es], 8204 B (-es AD). (Cf. 158, 1136, 2052.)

Note 4.—That the s in the plural ending -es was unvoiced is indicated by the forms erbess (661 A) and kness(e) (3922 B); cf. also goddesse for goddes (6067 C), and dyce for dēs (5760 D). Rhymes like wellys: ellys, bones: onys, are also significant (see note 2, above).

1 Hiatus in ACD.
2 Supply [most] in C.
§ 39. Exceptions to § 38. The following words ending in a consonant or an accented -e sometimes or always make their plural in -s (-s, -z) or -es (cf. Child, § 22; ten Brink, § 226):

I. Words in -aunt, -ent:


elementz, 4595 B (-tēs A, -tīs C, -tūs j E).

II. Words in -ioun, -ion:

affections, 5086 (effeciounys or effeciūnys C).
auyisons, 6737 f (auisiounys C).
complexions, 6732 f (-iounnys C).
condicions, 1251 (condisciounys or condlsciounys (?) C).
ilusions, 6731 f (-ys C).
impressions, 6735 f (enpressiounnys C).
reuelacions, 6729 f (-iouns CD).

But,—impressiōn[e]s, 2323 (-yon[e]s B, -iou[n]e)s C).
pāssiō[n]e)s, 5130 (-iou[n]e)s B, pāsciōnūnys C).

III. Dissyllables in -en, -on, -an, with the accent on the penult:

maydens, 1204 (-ys C, maydēnis j D).
resoues, 2932 (resons B, werkis j C, wordis D j).
Tròians, 2062 (Troyēs CD), 6152 (Troilus j C, Troian D), 6504 troyanys C, Troiauns D). Troiāns, 4769 (or Tròians). [6485 ?]

IV. Words in -r:

louers, 11, 198 (AB are defect.), 376, 1971, 2836, 5233 j B (sg. ACD); lueřes, 45 B (louēs AD), 331, 344, 516, 919, 2153, 2391, 2879, 4235, 4299, 4310, 7935; louveres, 22, 4985. In all the above-

1 Doubtless we should read argumentz in A, supplying [o] before blame.
2 MS. t with sign of contraction for us.
3 In A read on(y).
4 Dele (o) in D.

mànere, 742 A (manere B, maner CD).

messàgers, 2021 † D (messagës AB, massagë C).

pòrtersy, 7502 AC (portours B, porters D).

prèyers, 1538 B (preleris C, *sg. in AD*).

ambassiatours, 4802 (embassadoirs B, embassatoursy C); embassadours, 4807 (-tours B, -dourys C, ambassiatours D).

prisonères, 4721 (-trs BD); prisoniers, 4808 (presoneris C).

Note.—In 1321 *paramours* (-is C¹, -our† D) may be the plural of *paramour* = lover; but perhaps the phrase (without *paramours*) means "not taking the kind of loving that we call ‘to love par amours’ into account." In "I louede neuer woman hero byform As paramours," 6520-1 (-es B, paramour C), and in "Hath loved *paramours* as wel as thow," 6695 (paramour CD), we have this adverbial phrase *par amours*.

V. Monosyllables in -e:

dés, dees, 2432 (deis C), 5760 (deth † C, dyce rizt as [there], D).

knes, knees (*monosyll.*), 110 (kneis C), 1037, 3025, (kneis C), 3795 (knowes B, kneis C, kneës D), 3922 (kneis(æ) B, kneis C).² But,—

kneis, 4434, 3587 (knowes B, kneis C, kneës D defective).

treis 7507 C (*sg. ABD*).

VI. benygnitëes (*not* -eës), 8222 (-tes B).³

Note 1.—Many apparent cases of -es (*with syncope of -e*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are: *foles*, 217 A (cf. 3171 D) (for *folës*, *folis* footës cf. 635 f, 705, 762, 903, 3166, 4666, 5377); *tales*, 1344 A, 3456 A ⁴ (for *talesi* cf. 1234, 1342, 1393, 1533, etc.); *whelys*, 818 C; *armes*, 4416 B, 6533 B (for *armës* cf. 1038, 3024, 3414, 4029, 4043, etc.); *dremys*, 7651 C (cf. 6741 D) (for *drenës* cf. 4184, 6630, 6727, 6729, 7640, etc.); *amendës* (†), 1427 A; *effectës*, 2805 C, 3188 C (cf. 2857, 7992 C): *zatis*, 7555 C (cf. 1700, 1702 CD, 6696, 7541); *hertës*, 4955 D, 6711 D (cf. 235, 2855, 2959, 3039, 3453, 3808, 3982); *louës*, 5901 A (cf. 1113); *mihtës*, 5857 D (cf. 4599); *sykes*, 7397 A, *sikis*, 7717 C (cf. 3191, 4203, 5037, etc.); *tungis*, 1870 C (cf. 39, 565); *wordës*, 5293 A (cf. 540, 561, 736, 754, 1108, etc., etc.); *othës*, 1384 A (cf. 3955, 3988, 7626); *hestës*, 6718 A (cf. 3261, 4557, 7571 f, 7572 C); *dayis*, 6716 (†) C; *ales*, 1905 f C; *songis*, 6994 C; *tidingës*, 5324 D; *whisperynës*, 2838 C; *lesynës*, 3372 C (cf. *syngyniës*, etc., 2198 f, 2653, 4558 f, 4566 f, 6609 f); *peyneis*, 4058 B, 4300 D, 5791 A (cf. 303, 2984, 4046, 5003, etc.); *Grekës*, 1209 C, 1596 C, 3386 D (cf. 802, 1039, 4696, etc.); *fendis*, 1891 (!) CD; *kalendës*, 7907 D (-is A, *-as B, -is C), used as a singular (*a kalendæs*) (cf. 1092); *workis*, *-ys*, 285 D, 5587 C; *desës*, 7758 C. In 2820 B we may read *coronës* or *coronës*, but it is better to omit the (with ACD) and *coronës*. Forms like *hegis* (7507 † C, cf. D) and *serwes* (7559 B) are of course out of the question. In 4439 we should read *frendës* the alderbeste,

---

¹ In C dele (*as*).
² In D supply [k].
³ In A read *goode* for *garde*.
⁴ This is the famous line about the "tale of Wade"—he told[es] *tales of wade A*, he told *tales of wade* Cp. (no other variants in Mr. Austin's collation), he told[es] *tale of wade B*, he toldè *tale of wade* C, he told the *tale of wade* D, he toldè *tale of wade G*. 

§ 39. of Chaucer's *Troilus*. 105
Observations on the Language

not frendes the alderbeste (cf. 1237, 1464, 1888, 5343, 6218, 6706, 7217). 
Indulcens (3460 D), chawes (5760 f D, chawce C), and plesauns (5761 f, -aunce C), seem meant for plurals, but need correction.

But there is good MS. authority for syncope in 264 (ioyes AC) (cf., however, 846, 2976, 3660, 4351, etc.), 1725 (sawrdes AB) (cf., however, 2026, 4706), 2847 (hertes AB). For sithes, tynges, see §§ 2, 14 (but tymes, 2853, 4273, 6739).

For thynges, see thing, pl., below (§ 43). Pens, 4217 (pans BC, peynes † E), and eves (7 (wordes ‡ D), deserve notice.

Note 2.—A few Latin plurals occur. These are satyrri and fauni in

On satiry and fawny more and (om. A) lesse
That halve goddes ben of wildernesse, 6206-7

(satary B, satary(e) & fany C, statery † & ferry † D, satiri and fawny G); and manes, 7255 (manes C). But instead of Parvas we have Parvas (6366). Kalendas, 7797 B, perhaps preserves a bit of the copyist's learning. See also vulturus (etc.) for vultures, § 38, note 1.

§ 40. Plurals of the n-declension which preserve the Anglo-Saxon ending (-an) in the form -en, are the following:—

asshen (A.S. pl. ascan, L. on axen, O. asskess, P.Pl. e askes), 4781 asschyn C, asshyn D); ashen pale, 1624 B (asscliu C, asshyyn D, asshë A).

ben (A.S. pl. bëon, Ps. bían), 1278 f (ben p.p.; flen fugere), 6018 (ben [flen] C). [Var. B been; D bene.]

eyen, eien (192), eyghen (2056, 5754), eighen (3929, 4194, 5412) (A.S. pl. eagan, L. ægen, ëgen, P. Pl. e egen, eigen, eeghen, eyghes, eyen), 191, 305 f, 428, 726, 1227, 1338, 1411 f, 1619 f, 1733 f, 1948 f, 2056, 2971, 2997, 3025 f, 3894, 3929, 3979 f, 4194, 4195, 4295 f, 4908 (ey[e]n(e) two D), 4971 (eyen † C corrector, ey[e]n D), 4972 (ey[e]n D), 4976 (seyn † C, ey[e]n D), 5184, 5410, 5412, 5531, 5535, 5754 (thy nenë semen B), 5821, 5885 (eyë B, ey[e]n (?); D), 6583, 6929, 7107 (ey[e]n B), 7178, 7180 f, 7362 C (eyyn †), 7368 (e[en] A (?)), 7522, 7699, 7701, 7736. [eyen (?), 3200 † D; eyỳn, 6442 † C.] [eyen †, 3116 f B is error for engyn.]

Rhyme words.—dryen patiuntur (305), dryen pati (1948), dyen mori (also spelled dryen) (305, 1411, 1619, 3025), spyen, aspien, espyen inf. (1733, 3979, 4295, 7180), lyen (lye) mentiri (1411), by-wryn inf. (1619), cryen inf. (1733), pres. subj. 3 pl. (1948), ywren p. p. (4295), syen widerunt (7180). [Var. B eyen, yën, eyghen, eighen; C eyen, eyyen, eyijn, eyjyn, eyjyn, eyynyn (2971); D eyen, yën, yhen, ijen.]


1 In the following list all forms are dissyllabic unless the contrary is noted. No distinction of eyen before consonants from eyen before vowels has been made.

2 Supply [o] in D.

3 eyen † D

4 Transpose in D.

5 Supply [her] in D.
§ 40, 41, 42. of Chaucer’s Troilus.

Note.—Ere forms its plural in -s. Thus,—eeres, 2107 (eris BCD); eerys, 4230 (eris B, eris C); eerys, 5479 (eeres B, eeres D); eerys (tery u herys). For apes, belles, bowes, ladys, sterres, wrecches, see § 37.

§ 41. Plurals in -en by imitation (Child, § 24; ten Brink, §§ 215, 217).

doughtren (A.S. pl. dohtor, dohtru, L. dohtere, dohtres, P. Pl. doþtr, eþdohtres), 4684 (doghtryn D).
sustren (A.S. pl. sweoster, L. sustren, sostres, P. Pl. sustres, sustain, sustren), 3575 (eterin C, -trin D), 4651 (tery D), 5347 (sustren, his(e) bretheren & his sisteren C, his brethry & his sisters D).

children (A.S. pl. cild, cildru, L. childere, children, childres, O. childrde), 132 (schilderyn C, childryn D†).
housen (A.S. pl. hüs), 6910 (es AB, -is C).

Note.—Gamcn (1123 B), gkden (1623 C), bondcn (2061 f A), sorwyn (3768 C), dremen (6741 B), tenten (7033 A), are merely errors of the scribe.

§ 42. Plurals with umlaut (Child, § 26; ten Brink, § 214).²

feet (A.S. fet), 359, 1488 (-e)B, 2127. [Var. C fet.]

men (A.S. menn), 241, 279, 3438 f (: ten), 7105, etc., etc.; fomen, 4704.


¹ In C read also as.
² No distinction as to the word that follows the plurals cited in this section is attempted.
§ 43. In the following words plurals occur identical in form with the singular.

wynter (A.S. n. pl. wintræ, winter), twenty wynter, 811 (-yr C, -ir D).

yer (A.S. n. sg. pl. gær, gér, W.S. géar), 60, 1108 (ʒere B, ʒeer D).\(^1\)
yerös two, 2383; lengthe of yeres, 6343. [Var. B ʒeres, CD ʒeris.]

nyght (A.S. f. sg. pl. neaht, niht), a (ek B) wonder last but ix. nyght neuere in towne, 5250 AB (dayis B, nyghtes C, D). But,—ouer the nyghtes, 4598 f ( : myghtes)\(^2\); lyk the nyghtes, 5910; er nyghtes ten, 6347; allé this nyghtes two, 6683. [Var. C nyȝtys, nytis, nytyȝs, 4598; D nightes, niȝtes.]

folk often has a plural verb. Cf., e.g., 34, 199, 241, 243, 1888, 1973, 2592, 2663, 2815, 2874, 3860, 3865, 4204, 4271, 4680, 4710, 4864, 6707 (How don this (these C, these D) folk (folkes D) that seen here loues wedded), 6778, 7124, 7541, 7641 (men A), 7942. Cf. also : Whi allé thes(e) folk assembledin in this place, 2652 C (al this folk assembled AD, al this f. assemlede B).

If that I may and alle folk be trewe, 2695 (al[le] f. BD, allī f. ben C).

(Pandarus) Seyde alle folk for goddes lone I prey
Stynteth right here and softeſly yow pleye, 2813-14 (D †).
Swowneth not now lest more folk aryse, 4032 (cf. 6050).

As (For BC) wys[e] (wyse B, wise C, thes D) folk (folke D) in bokes it expresse (expres C), 7153 (cf. 3169).

The (for C) folk (folke D) of Troye as who seyth (wis sithe C) alle and some In preson ben, 7246-7.

If that I may and alle (al[le] BD) folk be (ben C) trewe, 2695.

Note.—In general folk is apt, as a noun of multitude, to take plural constructions, and, of course, in many cases it is impossible to determine whether a singular or a plural is meant. A good case of a certain singular is: Whil (wilc C) folk is blent to al theyme is wornne, 2828.

For other examples of folk in various constructions cf. 26, 138, 160, 169, 176, 179, 251, 308, 319, 354, 357, 560, 1164, 1704, 1860, 1995, 2242, 2279, 2732, 4275, 4637, 6486, 6951, 6965, 7219, 7332, 8144. The word is regularly spelled folk, though folkes or folkes is occasionally found (as 160 B, 169 B, 179 C, 319 B, 1704 B, 2242 B, and often in D), but not in A; fokes is found in 26 A and 176 C.

A plural in -es is also found,—folkes, 6002 (folk[es] C, follic[es] D), 8198; folkis, 4275 D; folkes, 6707 D. Folkes is genitive in good for synke folkes even, 3979 (-{es} B, -is D, follys C).

thing. Chaucer sometimes uses thing as a plural; but it is not always easy or even perhaps possible to distinguish this use from

\(^{1}\) Both cases before a vowel.  
\(^{2}\) Word omitted in D.
idioms in which the singular may be employed (note, e.g., variants in 3605, 5358).

Cf., however;—And letten other thing collateral, 262 (thing(e) B, thingis C, thinges D).

And moré thing than thou deuyset (demys C†, demist D†) here, 5205 (thyng(e) B, thyng C, thing D).

Nece al[lë] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3697 (allë thyng(e) BC). But the ordinary plural is _thynges_ (cf. 134, 1993, 2197 f, 1 2260, 2276, 2350, 2471, 2858, 2874; 3427, 3765, 4103 f, 3 4208 f, 4 4820, 5322, 5356 f, 5 5667, 5669, 5681, 5995, 6499, 7905, 7975, 8086).

_thynges_ seems to be right in 2453 A (-ës B, -is D; C †) (cf. 2001 † D, 2319 † C, 3248 † C, 3605 † C).

The phrase *all[ë] thing* seems to deserve some special attention. Ouer al[le] thyng he stood [for] to bybolde, 310 AD (allë thing(e) . . . for to BC†). Consideréd all[x] thyng it may not be, 2375 (al[le] thyng(e) B, allë thyng(e) C, al thing wel(c) D†). Considered allë thingis as they stode, 3765 (allë thyngis C, al[lë] thing[es] D). That wost of allë thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 5742 AD (al this thyng(e) B, al this thyng C).


When that he sey that al[le] thyng was wel, 3538 (allë thyng(e) B, wostë allë thyng(e) was C, wist that al[le] thing (f) D).

The last cited example is particularly surprising. May we not, however, suppose that _allë thing_, originally plural, became a stock phrase, of which the syntax was forgotten or obscured, so that even when a singular was used the plural form *allë* might be retained?

Note 2.—*God* is used with a plural verb in 1919 ABC John's, *The blissful god han me so wel best* (god have D, god hath G); but Cp. has _3e blissful god han_ which is no doubt right, *god* being vocative (cf. *lord* in the same stanza, 1922). For the regular plural *goddes* cf. 151, 3432, 4045, 4101, 4514, etc.

Note 3.—_Gere_ is the A.S. fem. pl. _gearwe_: see 2097 f (: there : were subj. 3 sg.), 6185 f (ger D) (: elles where : there); _gere_ him, 1720 (ger C). (Cf. ten Brink, § 210 Anm.)

§ 44. The genitive plural does not differ in form from the genitive singular.

seyntes lyues, 1203 (-is CD). the goddes wyl, 3465 (-is CD);
nayles poyntes, 2119 † B. the goddes ordenaunce, 7968
foles bost, 3140 (-is CD). (-is C).
foles harm, 3171 B (-ys C, A tonges ianglerye, 7118 (-is C).
defect.).
crowes feet, 1488.

1 _rh._ tid̄nyges. 2 A thing[es]. 3 _rh._ wynges.
4 _rh._ rynges. 5 _rh._ thing is. 6 But C by accident omits _he_.
7 In 2001 the proper reading is certainly _al this thyng_ (sing.) _thou_. D has _all the things_.

---

_of Chaucer's Troilus._

109
Observations on the Language §§ 44, 45, 46.

frendes gouernaunce (-is C, frendes generaunce † B, -is Mystere); clerkes ² lawes, 6059 (-is C, clerkysse); clerkes speche, 8217.

myght, 6708 (fryndis C); the lettres space, 7993 ([the] B, letterys.C).

teris ² kynde, 5798 (-es BD).

Grekes ost, 80 ABD, 5261, 6284, 6379, 6435, 7030 AB; Grekes yerde, 1239; Grekes route, 1698; on the Grekes syde, 6128; Grekes gyse, 7224. [C usually -ys or -is; D -is, -ys, -es.]

But, at Grekes requeste, 4719 A (-ys D, a grek † requeste B).

payens corsed oldé rites, 3 8212 (paynymes D).

sweuenys signification, 6725 (sweuenys C, sweuenys signification D).

§ 45. Dative plural (Anglo-Saxon -um):

whilom (A.S. hwilum), 508 (whilhom C, somtyme D); cf. 5402, 5731, 5817, 6904, 6907, 6910, 6927.
sithe (A.S. sfSum), see § 14.
fote (A.S. fó tum), see § 14.

ADJECTIVES.

§ 46. Anglo-Saxon adjectives that end in -c or -α in the indefinite use preserve a vowel in Chaucer.

(Child, § 29; ten Brink, § 230).

In the Troylus such are (i.) of the jo-declension, blithe, breme, clene, dere, ethe, green, kynde, lene, mylde, newe, shene, sterne, stille, swete, thikke, trewe. To these may be added (ii.) lame (A.S. lama, regularly used in the weak form) and allone (A.S. eall ána), for which see § 47. (iii.) smothe, and softe (A.S. smóde, sófte, adverbs, but also used as adjectives instead of sméde and sétte, see Sweet, 2051, 2081, Sievers, § 299 Anm. 1), and svote, soote (A.S. sót adv., swóte, adj. in comp.). For merye, mery, see the end of the list.

blithe, blythe (A.S. blísse, L. O. blikse), 7746 f (: a thousand sithe : swithe adv.) ; -e, 4160.

breme (A.S. bréme, O. breme), -e, 4846.

clene (A.S. cláene, L. cláne), 1665 f, 3099 f, 4008 f. [4071 † ? D.]

Rhyme words.—I mene ind. (1665, 3099, 4008), mene n. (3099), bene A.S. beau (4008).

¹ Perhaps singular, cf. frendes loue, 7443.
² Possibly singular.
³ vyces † A (: appetites).
⁴ Supply [two] in A.
dere, deere (A.S. déore, W.S. ðére, dýre, L. deore, dure, O. deore, dere), 32 f, 51 f, 434 f, 877 f, 1336 f, 1415 f, 1559 f, 1579 f, 1679 f, 1893 f, 2057 f, 2188 f, 2217 f, 2295 f, 2444 f, 2516 f, 2561 f, 2778 f, 2809 f, 2845 f, 2895 f, 2937 f, 2969 f, 3081 f, 3114 f, 3172 f, 3336 f, 3487 f (dreme † A), 3762 f, 3788 f, 3817 f, 4052 f, 4131 f, 4146 f, 4197 f, 4253 f, 4290 f, 4335 f, 4395 f, 4505 f, 4947 f, 4969 f, 5074 f, 5203 f, 5312 f, 5557 f, 5871 f, 5973 f, 6014 f, 6112 f, 6236 f, 6507 † D, 6523 f, 6550 f, 6680 f, 6670 f, 6705 f, 6777 f (C †, D †), 6830 f, 6884 f, 6930 f, 6939 f, 6999 f, 7016 f, 7274 f, 7589 f, 7678 f, 7703 f, 7820 f.—Now uncle dere quod she tel it us, 1207 (C †).—al dere ynow a rysshe (C †), 4003 (cf. 5346).—e, 8094 BD.

Of these the following are in formulæ of address (as, for example, freond so dere, gode nece dere, myn herte dere),—877, 1207, 1336, 1559, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 2217, 2295, 2444, 2516, 2561, 2778, 2809, 2845, 2909, 3081, 3127, 3487, 3788, 3817, 4052, 4131, 4146, 4335, 5203, 5312, 5557, 5871, 5973, 6014, 6112, 6236, 6523, 6581, 6670, 6705, 6777, 6830, 7274, 7703, 7820.

Rhyme words.—here inf. (32, 51, 2188, 3336, 3762, 3817, 5203, 6330, 6999, 7678, 7820), y-here inf. (5973), ind. 1 sg. (6939), here adv. (1336, 1559, 1579, 1679, 2057, 2188, 3487, 3788, 4052, 4146, 4969, 5973, 6330 BCD), there adv. (6830 A, here BCD), clere inf. (1893, 6884), clere adj. sg. def. (7016), adj. pl. (2845, 2969, 4197, 6581, 6930, 7703), adv. (6236, 6670, 6939), lere inf. (6523), require pl. (1559), manere (32, 877, 2809, 2895, 2937, 4253, 4290, 4947, 6550), materere (51, 1579, 2217, 2516, 2778, 4146, 4253, 4505, 5312), ryuere (5074), preyere (2295), chere n. (434, 877, 1415, 1559, 2217, 2444, 2809, 2895, 2937, 3336, 4197, 4395, 4505, 4506 A has clere for chere), 6550, 6777, 7274, 7589, sperre sphere (4335, 7016), bere comes (3335), y-bere adv. (2561, 3114, 5871, 6014, 6112, 6705, to yere (3081), to the fyre (fere BCD) (3817), stere n. (4131), inf. (4947), bere feretrum (5871).

ethe (A.S. eaðe, ede, L. ædē, O. æp), he was ethe ynowh to maken dwelle, 7213 (C †).

grene (A.S. gréne, gréne, L. grene), 816 f, 1145 f, 2003 f, 2790 f, 2832, 3904, 6606 f.

Rhyme words.—tene (816, 1145, 6606), queene (816, 2790), shotes kene (1145), the mone shene (2003), by-twene (2790), sustene inf. (6606).

grene as sbst.,—with newē grene, 157; in grene when, 3195; roteles mot grene sonē deye, 5432 (eterthés grenē † mot C).

kynde (A.S. cynde, but usually ge-cynde), 6079 f, 6489 f, 7283 f; -e, 8006 BC (trewe † A, kynde as [that] D).—vnkynde, 4678 f, 4928 f, 7804 f. (Cf. if ye be vnkynde, 6102 f; beth me not vnkynde, 6314 f).

Rhyme words.—I fynde ind. (6079), fynde inf. (4678, 4928, 6489, 7283), mynde n. (4678, 7804). [Var. C on-kynde.]

1 Old-style figures indicate that D has der.
lène (A.S. hléne, L. P.Pl. lene), 1217 f (leene B, C † D †) (: mene pl.) ;
-e, 7584 (leen B).

mylde (A.S. milde, L.O. milde), And stod forth mewēt (meuyth † D) myldē (|-[é] D) and mansuete, 6557 (line om. C, And stode forthe
full mylde and manswete G).

newe (A.S. néowe, niowe, W.S. niwe, niwe, L. neowe, niwe, O.
neowe, newe, P. Pl. newe, nywe), 157 (|[e] B), 1390 f, 1873 f (new
D), 4246 ([e] B, E †), 4496, 5084 ([e] BD), 6484 f (new D), 7511
([-e] D, [-e] † is B, now † al C), 7618 ([e] B, om. † C), 7632 ([-e]
BD); span newe, 4507; And vpon newē (newē BC, new D) cas
(cause † D) lyth (lyēth D) newe (new D, a newe BC) anys, 5078.—
newe is (new is BD)1 (: hewys).—made this tale of newe, 5324 f
(al newe B, this talē newe C, thes tidinges new D).

Rhyme words.—newe n. (1390, 5324), trewe indef. adj. sg. (1390, 6484),
vn trewe prod. adj. pl. (1373), trewe adj. pl. (5324), rewe subj. 3 sg. (1873),
knewe ind. 2 pl. (6484).

shene (A.S. scéne, seýne, scéone, L. scene, scone, L. scene, O. shene,
scone), 6094 f (she[ne] A) (: bi-twene : leues grene), 6639 f (: sterres
werē sene); ayen the monē shene, 2005 f (: grene indef. adj. sg.).
[Var. B sheene, C schene.]

smothe (A.S. smōþe, adv., but also used as adj. instead of smēþe,
smēþe (cf. Sweet, 2051), O. smeþe), -e, 942 ABD.

softe (A.S. sófte, adv., but also used as adj. instead of séfte, séfte
(cf. Sweet, 2081), L. softe, O. softe), 137 f (perh. pl. t) (vusoft † D),
942 f (-t D); he[r] streyght[e] bak and softe, 4089 f; with soft[é]
voys, 6999 (-e C, lofté † D).

Rhyme words.—ofte (137, 942, 4089), on lofté, a-lofte (137, 942).

sterne (A.S. sterne, W.S. stierne, styrne, L. sterne, O. stirne), 7164
(stierne B); -e, 5846.

stille, style (A.S. stille, L. stille, O. stille, still), held hirē s., 126 f
(: wylle); -e, 723 (stil D)2 1685 (stil D †), 8092; stille, 7183 † C.
swete (A.S. swête, swēete, O. swet), 385,3 3350 f, 4087 f, 4367 f CD,
4400 f, 4510 f, 4662 f, 5151 f, 5169 f, 5441 f, 5588 f, 5936 f (B †),
6252 f, 6554 f, 7552 f; -e, 4126; swet[e], 4061 f (-e BCD); swete ||
how, 4120.

Rhyme words.—mete mētan inf. (3350, 4087, 4367, 4510, 5936, 6554), subj.
1 sg. (5441), mete mētan inf. (4400), grete grētan inf. (4400), flete inf.
(4510), indic. 3. pl. (4061), ye his sorwes bete subj. (t) (5588), strete (5588),
quiète (3350, 4662, 5151, 5169, 5441), Ariète (6252, 7552), mansuete,
(6554). [Var. D suete, swette.]

1 Supply [é] in D.
2 Supply [as] in AD.
3 Supply [seed] in A.
Note.—Of the above the following occur in forms of address (herte swote, my dere herte swote, and the like): 4120, 4367, 4400, 5441, 5588, 5936, 6252, 7552.

soote, 7034 f (soot B, swote CD) (: bote A.S. bót); sot, 4036 f (soot B, sote CD) (: in his fote (foot B): I mot ind. (-e BCD)). 1—swote, 942 AB (sweté ? C).

thikke (A.S. picce, L. thicke), 941 f (thekke C, thik D) (: the wedys wykke); -e, 1278 (thik D).

trewé (A.S. tréowe, W.S. tréwe, trýwe, L. treowe, O. trowwe), 1391 f, 3175 (-[e] B), 4490, 5043 f, 6079 (-[e] ? D), 6082 f (true D), 6101 (-[e] D), 6190 f, 6487 f (trew B), 7014 f (true D), 7069 f, 7434 f, 7694 f (drewé † C), 7728 f, 7764 f (myn owené herté trewe), 7948 f.—Trewé as stel in ech condicion, 7194 (-[e] B), if not a 9-syl.

line.—vntrewé, 3148 f, 3895 f, 5108 (-trow[e] B), 6213, 7660 (vntrúd E), 7933 f, 8137 f.—trewé, 593 (-w BD, trowe C), 950 (-w D), 1424 (-w D), 1913 (-w D), 3843 (-w B, trew † with D), 4859 (soth C, sothe D), 5100 (trowis † C), 6272 (-w B, ‐e I [hauc] D), 8006 A, 8075 (-w B, true D).

Rhyme-words.—hewe n. (1391, 3148, 5043, 7764, 7933, 8137), newe adj. (1391, 3895, 6190, 6487, 7696 perh. adv.), adv. (7014, 7933, 7948), inf. (3148), knewe ind. 2 pl. (6487), ind. 3 pl. (6082), rewe inf. (6190, 7434), thou rewe (7069), rewe subj. 2 pl. (7728). [Var. C ountrewe.]

mérve, mérve (A.S. mirige, mirg), a merye somères day, 3903 (merie C, mery D); mérve, pred. sg., 4515 f (: herye inf.); with mery chere, 1234 (merie C), 3072 AB; this murye morwe, 4405 (merie C, me[r]y D); we shulde ben alle merye, 3794 f (merie C) (: herye laudo); merye dayes, 2831 (merie C, mery D). (All forms dissyllabic.)

Note 1.—fremde (A.S. fremése, fremende) occurs only in the definite use and in the plural,—youre friendly manner speche, 1333 f (frende BCp., frendely C, friend D, fremde G, friend John's), where fremde alone makes sense; In this materie bothe (both B) fremed and tame, 3371 AGB (frend C, frende D), where we should read fremde. Dreye (A.S. drýge) occurs only in the plural,—Hau . . . ded[e] ben and dreye, 3194 f (dreye BCD) (: pleye inf. : to seye); He gan the toris wypen of ful dreye, 5835 (dreye D, dreye inf. † C) (: seye inf. : pleye inf.).

Note 2.—In fawe, which occurs once,—he destroth fawe, 5549 f (: slave p.p.; with-drawe p.p.),—a final -n has been lost (cf. O.L.G. fagan, ‐in, A.S. fagen, and see ten Brink, § 44. a).

Note 3.—For the adj. frr, free (A.S. frrc), invariable in form, cf., for examples of all sorts, 840, 1073 f, 1402 f, 1856 f, 2206 f, 2970 f, 4364 f, 5633, 5642, 5721, 6214 f, 6507 f, 7032 f, 7186 f, 7725 f, 7753 f, 7768 f, 7838 f.

§ 47. In allone, lame, -e goes back to the Anglo-Saxon weak ("definite") ending -a.

1 The right reading is soot, noun, which A mistook for the adj.
allone, alone ¹ (A.S. eall áná), 97 f, 178 f, 358 f (allon B), 547 f, 694 f (allon B), 907 f (alon CD), 1602 f, 1640 f, 3255 f (alon CD), 3382 (aboue † C), 3506 f, 4882 f (alon C), 4943 (D †), 5530 f (alon C), 5609 f, 5770 † C, 6585, 6612 f, 6834 (alle one C); -e, 1021 (-n B), 1695 (-n B), 1775, 2301 (om. D), 2486, 4960 (allas † A), 7389 (-n B); allone here (hic), 806. (All singular except 907.)

Rhyme words.—mone moan n. (97, 694, 1640, 5609, 6612), eucrichone (178, 907, 3255, 3506, 5530, 5609), echone (4882), grone inf. (358, 547, 907, 1602, 1640, 6612).

lame (A.S. lama, L. lone, lame), 1102 f (: blame n.).

§ 48. Lyte, muche belong in a category by themselves.

On their relations to A.S. lýt, lytel, micel, mycel, see especially Bright, American Journal of Philology, IX, 219.

lyte (A.S. lýt, adv., lytel, adj.) is said by ten Brink, § 231, to be “im Sing. wohl nur substantivisch gebraucht,” but this is shown to be an error by two places in the Troilus: the chaubre is but lite, 2731 f (: wyte blame acc.), and yn place lite, 7992 f (light † D) (: write scribo : endite inf.); compare also 2288 f and 7653 f, though in these two cases the word may well enough be substantive. In the definite use AB have my lite closet in 3505 AB (litil CD). In 826 f, 1339 f, 1354 f (litel(l), A), 1469 f, 2112 f, 2302 f, 2363 f, 2731 f, 3582 f, 3675 f, 3740 f, 7653 f, -e, 291 (lytil C † D), 1517 (D f), 5992 B, 6539 B, lite, lyte is apparently substantive. Old-style figures indicate that the reading is a lite,—a phrase sometimes used adverbially.—That is lité fors, 7290 C, is a wrong reading for my birthe accurse. In 7290 C reads a lité with, doubtless for a lite wight (litel wight AB, lilet wight D). lite, 4410 f (a † lité D) (: wordes white), is adverbial; lyte, 4092 f, is plural (: white pl. : delyte inf.).

Rhyme words.—wyte blame inf. (826, 1469, 2363), noun (2731, 3582), delite ind. 3 pl. (1339), endite subj. 1 sg. (1354), inf. (1339, 2112, 7653, 7992), plyte inf. (2288), smyte inf. (2863), byte inf. (3582), write ind. 1 sg. (7992), subj. 2 sg. (2112, 7653), inf. (2302), myte (3675, 3740), white pl. (3740).

Note.—For lytel, litel [Var. B litil ; C lityl, litil, lytel, lytlyl ; D litte, litell, litil, litill, liteell (5256)], adjectival, adverbial, and substantive, cf. (i.) 179, 216, 1241, 1327, 1730, 1590 BCD, 2163, 2165, 2420, 3389, 3448, 3935, 4252, 4401, 4453, 4487, 4530, 4663, 4860, 5243, 5535, 5546, 6109, 7289, 7403, 7468, 7818, 7865; (ii.) lyte, litel, cf. 5046, 5256, 5992 (lite B), 6539 (lité C); litle hed, 5095; litel herties reste, 8112 (cf. 5243 C); litel hath, 5352; a litel here (acc. sg.), 5265 (a lite B, a † litél D); a lytel his, 6577 (a lite vnsvelle B).

¹ A almost always has allone (alone, 2390).
muche (A.S. micel), 386 (muchel B, meche C, myche D), 442 (-el B, mechil C, mych[e] D), 1313 (much † B, meche C, D †), 2156 (muchel B, meche C, mychil D), 3480 (B †, meche C, mich[e] D), 4529 (meche C, Michele D), 5561 (-el B, meche C, moche D); thou hast so meche don, 3228 (much i-do B, myche † for D); meche knowe, 1260 C.—muche,—as m. as, 796 (meche AC, mych D), 3840 (meche C, mich D), 5156 (meche C, moch D); as meche as, 5998 C (wyd A, wyde BD); thus muche, 2948 (meche C, mych D), 7361 (meche C, much D); in as m. as, 7428 (meche C, much † D); so m. as, 1327 (meche C, mych D); for as m. as, 7715 (meche C, much D);¹ so muche honoure, 2981 (muchel B, mechil C, D om. †).—so mych † grace, 1070 D (†).—mechil of 2744 (muchel B, meche C, mychil D). (Non-adjectival uses, substantive or adverbal, are indicated in the above list by old-style verse-numbers.)

§ 49. Several adjectives which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant, sometimes or always take -e in the Troilus.

(Child, § 30; ten Brink § 231.)

Some of the -e’s in the following list are perhaps to be explained on grammatical grounds. In brode Phebus, false Poliphebe, proude Bayard, heighe God, heyghe Ione, we perhaps have a petrified vocative like that recognized by ten Brink (§ 236. Anm.) in goode fayre Whyt she heet (B. Duch., 948), cf. fierse Mars, 2864 (-e] D). (Cf., however, Zupitza, Deutsche Litteratur-Zeitung, 1885, col. 613, and Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftalcts in Chaucer’s heroischem Verse, Erlanger Beiträge zur Engl. Philol., Heft iv, pp. 37-39.) Is it not possible that salte se, false worldes breethesse, and wode ialousie (or read the wode?) are to be referred to the same idiom? The relation between a vocative and a constant epithet is in some respects sufficiently close. The exclamatory form goode grace may also be of the same vocative nature, but harde grace has nothing to do with address or with constant epithets. Observe gon sithen longe while, etc. (see longe) and of olde tyme.


brode (A.S. brád, L. brad, brod, O. brad, P.P. bc brod), brodë Phebus, 7380 (broodë D, the † brodë Phebus C).

¹ Supply [me] in D.
Observations on the Language

§ 49.

faire, fayre (A.S. faēre, L. facer, fæire, O. fæzerr, P. Pl. fayre), the
thridde heuene faire, 2844 f (debonaire : repaire inf.); in a ful
faiř † wyse, 5472 B (seerē † A, secret(e) D, sècre G). — faire, 1309
(glad CD), 3253 (-r D, fayr nor C), 3564 (fair D). — faire, 101 (fayr
C), 1669 (-r BCD).

... faire, fayr, feyr, (i.) 815 f (-e BCD) (: despeyr n.), 882 (-e B); (ii.)
115 (-e BD), 277, 294 (goode B, good CD), 900 (-e B), 4448 (-e B,
-ē † so D), 5073 (fayr † sche C), 6535 (-e B), 6810 (-e BD). [faire
extra metr., 1171 AB.] [In address : goodly fayrē fresshē may,
7775 f.]

false (A.S. fals, late, P. Pl. fals), falsē worldēs brotelnesse, 8195 (-[e]
B, -ē D); falsē Poliphete, 2552 C (that fals † polyfete D, fals[e] AB).2
fals, sg., 87 AB, 593, 3656, 5278 (-e D), 5725 (-ē D); cf.
6199, 6209, 6319, 7642, 7889; false, pl., 5321 (-[e] B, C †),
8144 (-[e] B).

ferne (A.S. fyrn, adj., fyrn-gēar, n., fyrn-gēara, adv., O. Sax. fernum
gēre, P. Pl. ferynere), Ye fare-wel al the snow of fern[e] yere, 7539
(fern[i]yere B, fern[ē]yere C, feuerer † D) (: here hic).4
fresche (A.S. fersc, L. freche, frech, O. fressh), Yong fresschē (fresshē
B, frosch † C, freisschē D) strong and hardy as lyon, 7193.

fressh, fresch (i.) 1721 (-ē D); (ii.) 166 (-e B, frosch C, fressh †
lady D), 816 (-e CD), 1637 (-e BD), 1972 (-e BC), 2007 A (-e B),
2182 (-e B), 4626 (-e D), 5817 (frosche † pl. C), 7207, 7473.

In address,—o goodly fresshē fre, 2970 [-[e] B, fressh and D(?));
fresshē wommanlichē wyf, 4138; cf. 7680, 7775.

Var. B fresh; C frosche, frosseche; D freissh, -e.

goode (A.S. gōd, L. O. god), And seyde On suche a mirour good[e]
grace; 1351, (goode B Cp., gode E, good[e] G). Good[e] gouernaunce,
1552 CD, is an error for goddes g. Goodē, 44 AB (om. † D), 6549
(god CD), and gode, 52 (D †), are mere accidents. Goode Alceste,
8141 (good BD) may be a “petrified vocative.” Everywhere else
good (var. B good(e)), except in plural and in definite forms, where
grammar requires good(e) (cf. 335, 336, 627, 1247, 1254, 1556, 1667,
1763, 2743, etc., etc.).—goud, 1337 A (goode B, gode C, good D).
(Cf. the substantive, § 14.)

grete (A.S. grēat, O. grāt). I find no good case of grete except,
perhaps, yn purpos gret, 7939 f (grete BD) (: contrefete inf.).

1 Secre is no doubt right (secres John’s, secree E Cp., secret Harl. 2392).
2 Supply [we] in AB. Cp. and John’s have ye, ye; Cp. has falsē.
3 For cases of sing. fals (var. -e CD) before vowels, cf. 3140, 3646, 5043, 5656, 7061.
4 Apparently Cp. and John’s agree with A. Harl. 2392 reads feuerere.
§ 40. of Chaucer's Troilus. 117


Note 1.—Such -e's as there are in A are none of them sounded. They are the following,—a ful greté care, 1016 (a wol gret C, [a] ful greté D); in greté dishese, 2072 (gret C); a greté demyneresse, 7885 (gret C); a bor as gret as, 7832 (gret CD).

Note 2.—In 515 B (greté), supply [a] and read greté (gret AC, greté D); cf. also 1252. In 1903 BD a greté rovte might be read (And other of hir wommen || a greté rovte), but gret is the reading of AC.

harde (A.S. heard, L. heard, herd, O. harld), no moré harlē grace, 713 (hard[e] D).—hard, (i.) 836 (e B, -e C), 2321 (e B, D †), 2326 (-e B, 2356 (-e B †, hard here D), 2990, 3776, 6119 (-e D); (ii.) 4199 (-e E). (Cf. 4757, 5802, 6035.)


heigh, heygh, (i.) 1717 (hey C, hye D), 3128 (hey C; D †), 3739 (hi C, hy † D), 4165 (hey C, high † is E), 5853 (hey C, high D), 6799 (hey C, hié D), 7330 (hey C, high D), 7342 (hy C, hié D), 7872 † D (high). (ii.) 4113 (hi C, hié D), 5220 (hey C, high D).

longe (A.S. lang, long, O. lang), gon sithen longē while, 718 (seth gone long while (? D)); nought go (gon DC, gone D) ful long[e] while, 1592 (-e B); longē tyme agon, 1807 BD ([e] A (?), [e] C); 5 longē tyme agon, 7688 ([e] D (?)). Cf. the A.S. accusative phrases longe prāge (huile, tid.).—In Or that it be ful longe, 832 f (long D) (: honge inf.), and Ten dayes wys so longe not tabyle, 6716 (-e[?] C), longe is perhaps adv. longē lette, 7214 BCGCp. John's (more A, longer D). [longē here (hic), 3661 C].] longe (adv. ?), 4698 (long D).

1 Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -e; an asterisk indicates that B alone has -e.
2 Supply [a] in A.
3 "For gret power and moral vertu here." In B we might read: "For greté power and," etc.
4 Old-style figures indicate that B and D have -e (elided); an asterisk indicates that B alone has -e (elided).
5 Supply [And] in A, and read long[e].
long, (i.) 143 (longe? B), 2381 (-e B), 3337 (-e B), 5555 (-e B, longe † D),
1 5944 (mak[c] long(e) sermon B, -e D).

olde (A.S. eald, ald, L. ald, alde, olec, O. ald), of oldë tyme, 6833 BD
(old[e] A, oftn † C).—oldë, 1481 (old CD); olde (in address),
4992. (Cf. old, (ii.) 6031, 7647.)

Note.—All the other cases of olde (not oldë) that I have noted are either
definite or plural. Definite cases (singular) are the following,—3189, 3337
(wolde † C, old[e] D), 4766 (old[e] † D), 4789, 4803 f (BC defected.,
the old D) (holde inf.), 6123 (D†), 7489, 7499; The newë lone out clæth,
(cæthch + A, schakhyt † C) ofte the olde, 5077 f (holde p.p.: colde inf.);
my olde hat, 3162. (Oldë in all these except as indicated.) For the
plural indefinite, see the following verses,—130 f, 160 f, 2933 f, 3139 f,
4041 f, 4728 f, 5086, 5034 f, 6921 f, 7009 f, 7015 f, 7571 f, 7822, 7841, 7844
(C†), 7874 f, 7925, 8212, 8217. (In all of these the reading of all the
MSS. is olde except as follows: -e (elided), in 5068, 7015 A (old B) ; -[e],
in B in 7841, 7844 (C†), 7925, 8212; -[e], in D in 3139; old, 4728 f D;
olde, 4041 f D; olde, 7572 B, [old[e] †, 969 D.—Plural definite,—-e,
6742 [-e] B), 6743 ‡ C, 8116; -e, 760 (old D), 6118 ‡ D (!).
proude (A.S. prüt, L. prut), prouðe bayard, 218 [-e] D); proud (before
vowels), 210 ([-e] B), 214 (pryde † B).
salte (A.S. sealt), In heuene and helle in erthe and saltè se, 2850 [-e]
BD).
wode (A.S. wód), Which that men clepeth wodë ialousie, 7576 (the
wodë A).—wood, wod, (i.) 499 (-e B, D †), 3635 (-e B), cf. 2639 ;
wod, (ii.) 3240 (-e B, om. † A), 4892 (-e B, om. † D), 5579 (-e B), cf.
5010, 6201.

Note 1.—Some adjectives show an -e which is grammatically unjustifiable
and never sounded. In B this is very common; in A, however, it is
pretty rare. Thus,—sike, 575 (sik B, sek C); syke, 7957 (sik B, in †
seck C, sike D); but,—syk, (l.) 2601 (sike BD); (ii.) 2608 (-e D), 2614 (sek
C, sike D), 6776 (-e D, sek C). 4 See also faire, goode, grete, highe, olde.

Note 2.—It wele be to hire lawn, 5267 f C, is an error for lawn inf. (ABD)
(= greue inf.); cf. 278, 3487, 5273 f, 6581. Of monosyllabic adjectives,
which in Anglo-Saxon end in a consonant and which take no -e in the
Troilus in the uninfected forms, many examples are given in §§ 53, 55, 67,
69. Cf. also bold (2930, 4695, 7158), brown (109 f), fayn (6556, 6788, 8581 f,
7376 f), hoor (5809), hir (7647 f), lyk (2125 f, 5910, etc.), toucy, touhc
(2110 f, 2929 f, 6464 f), vanvar (549) (cf. note 3), wav (1638 f, 4897 f, 7584 f,
warm (2732 f), wort (2163, 4382, 5160), wyd (5289). In some of these
words there are variants in -e (not sounded): thus, hoor(e) (7647 f D),
wava(e) (1386 f D), etc.

Note 3.—For disyllables in the indefinite use, singular, cf. heuennyssh,
8176, cf. 104; holsum, 4588; open, 1125; sikere, syker, (i.) (ii.) 673, 920,
2455, cf. 4079; somnyssh, 5398; sothfast, 5353; stedfast, 5351 (stedfast
BD); vanwar, 304, a wonder thynge, 621, cf. 1120 D; yonder some, 2222;
on ydel, 948 f, 6457 f, 6835; yuel, 8000; ywar, 1483 (i-B, war C, ware
D); as Argus eyed, 6121 f; rosy hewed, 2283; horned, 7013; lewed,
3240; blisful, blysful, (l.) 1765, 1917, 2176, 6323 (voc. !), cf. 5778;

1 C out of order.
2 Old-style figures indicate that BD have old[e].
3 In B we must drop (yp-) and read on with A.
4 Sikë y me fegyme, 2613 D, is an error for syklycke, etc.
§ 50. The following adjectives of Germanic origin also show an -e in the Troilus:
badde (A.S. beeddal (?)), souned in-to badde, 6338 f ( : ye hadde ind. );
cf. sownen ynto gode, 1029 f.
lowe (O.N. lágr, L. laih, O. lah), But hold hym as his thral lowe yn distresse, 439 (low BD) :1. Cf. the definite form,—my lowe confessioun, 1613 ; lowe, pl. or adv., 2869 (lawe B, low D).
meke (O.N. mjúkr, O. meoc, P. Pl. meke), 8210 f ( : seke inf.).
schere (O.N. skáerr, cf. A.S. scír), an arwé schere, 6210 f C (clere AB, cler D) ( : here adv.).
wykke, wikke (cf. M.E. wicche, A.S. wice(e)a ‘wizard,’ wicc(e ‘witch’),
-e, 403 (C om. †, wykkyd D); now is wykke iturned vn-to worse, 3916 (wyk D, wikked torned B, like † C*); fro wikke I go to worse, 5502 (wo † A, wikked D).

Note 1.—Cf. the following cases of the plural in the indefinite use,—wykke, 939 f (wyk D) ( : thikke indef. adj. sg.), 1543 f (weke C, wyk D) ( : thikke adj. pl. or adv.).

1 Supply [hís] in D.
§ 51. Romance adjectives preserve their final -e in the
Troilus (Child, § 19; ten Brink, § 239). (A few
Latin adjectives are included in the following list.)

I. Miscellaneous:
benigne, benygne (O. Fr. benigne), 8232 f (digne pl.): -e he was,
4644 (beninge B, -nyng D). (For pl., cf. 431 f, 2868 f.)
contraire (O. Fr. contraire), 212 f A (contrarie BD, -rye C) (on the
staire: debonnaire). (Cf. necessaire.) See also § 31, to which add
references to 418, 637. Contrarie, adj., 5690 f (tarie inf.): cf. 5665.
débonaire (O. Fr. debonere, -aire), -e, 181 (-ar B, -er CD): cf. o goodly
debonnaire, 2846 f (-yre D) (clere pl.).
digne (O. Fr. digne), 429 f (benygne pl.: resigne ind. 1 sg.): digne,
cf. 961, 3856. (For pl., cf. 2865 f, 8231 f.)
eterne (O. Fr. eterne), 2853 f (descere inf.: werne inf.), 3217 f
(gounerne inf.: werne adv.).
huge (O. Fr. ahuge), 3498 (D †), 6049, 6428. [Var. heuge C.]
iuste (O. Fr. juste), 1612, 1812; iust[e], 4069, 7619 (e BCD).
large (O. Fr. large), 7167 f (Arge n. pr.).
mansuète (Lat. mansuetus, cf. Ital. mansueto), 6557 f (l. om. † C)
(sweete: mete inf.).
necessaire (O. Fr. necessaire), 5683 f (fayre adv.) (necesarie AB, -rye
D, C cut out). (Cf. contrarie.)
nice, nyce, nyse (O. Fr. nice), 1808 f (vyse A †): cherishe inf., -ice
BCD), 1942 f (vice), 2585, 5198, 5260 f (vice). (For pl. cf.
3166 f, 4235 f.)
pale (O. Fr. pale, palle, pasle), 5402 f (smale adj. pl.: bale n.), 6899 (C †).
pryme, —at prymer face (=Lat. prima facie), 3761.
strange (O. Fr. estrange), 6483 f (chaunse inf.), 7223 (D †), 7995 f
(strong † C) (chaunse n.); his manere estraunge, 1077 f (straunge
D) (chaunse inf.).
trine (Lat. trinus, cf. Fr. trine), trine † vnite, 8229 D.

II. For Adjectives in -ble, of all constructions, singular and plural,
compare the following words in the places cited (C is fond of the
spelling—bele, but sometimes has -el, -il).
able, 1292, 1821, 1988.
charitéable, 7186.
couenável, 2222 f.
discordável, 4595 f.
double, 1, 54, 7261.
écusâble, 3873.
feble, 7585.
honnurable, 6798 f.
horrible, 6613.
humble, 124, 433, 1913, 2154, 2214, 2938, 2983, 4197, 4329, 4790, 6161, 7683.
Note 1.—For the treatment of these words before vowels (elision or non-
elision depending upon accent), see 1821, 2938, 3739, 4790, 5716, 7186, 7342, 7920, 8229.
For symple cf. 181, 7183.
Note 2.—For tendre (O.F. tendre), see tendre of, 3746 (tendre BD, -dir C); cf. sobre was, 7183 (-ere C).
For transitorie (: memorie) see 3669 f.
Note 3.—French -e is of course preserved. Thus, atermype be thy brydet, 946 (atempree B, atempere t wel C, that thou t attempte be thy b. D); sècre, secré, cf. 744 f, 3128, 3154 f, 3601 (cf. also secret, secret (?),*(ii.) 744 f, 3128, 3154 f, 3601 (cf. also secret, secret (?),*(ii.)
52. But some Romance adjectives take an -e in the
Troilus that have none in French. In a few of the
following instances one might be inclined to suspect
the influence of a French feminine ending (cf. § 63). Some of the forms are vocative, but such are always indicated.

aduësere (O. Fr. advers, avers), fortune aduësere, voc., 5854 f (: verse : diuerse pl.).

asure (O. Fr. azur), a brochê gold of asure, 4212 f (g. and asure BCD) (: auenture scripture).

clerc (O. Fr. cler), 6210 f (schere C, cler D) (: here adv.); -e, 3368 (cler C, -e D t); cler, 5653 (-e BD). [For def. form clere, cf. 7018 f; for pl. clere, cf. 2843 f, 2971 f, 4195 f, 6097 f, 6372 f, 6583 f, 6929 f, 7173 f, 7178 f, 7362 f, 7701 f.]

comune (O. Fr. comun), fortune ys commune, 843 f (: fortune); she. . .

trétauor commune, 4667 f (: fortune : euntue inf.); comune astrologer, 4257 (C t); by comune t assente (i), 5008 D (on AC, oon B). [Cf. pl., 5054 f.]

diuës (O. Fr. divers), in diuës wyse, 61 (dyuës D). (Cf. Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts, p. 39.)
Observations on the Language

dyuyne (O. Fr. divin), of dyuyné purveyance, 5623 A (de- BD).
fyne (O. Fr. fin), of粪[ü] force, 6784 (-ü BD). [fyne, 5139 f C
: myn should be fyn n.]
mene (O. Fr. meien), Criseyde mene was, 7169 ([e] B)\(^1\). [Cf. the
def. form,—this mene while, 2892; in this mene while, 3618 AB
(in this wyse \(C\), in this while D).]
pure (O. Fr. pur), for pure ashamed, 1741 (-ë schamyd C)\(^2\). [Adverb?]
queynte (O. Fr. coint), swethé harne so q., exclam., 411 f (-t D) (: pleynye
n.: fynye pres. ind. 1 sg.).
secounde (O. Fr. second), 7199 f (pred. masc. sg.) (secunde B) (founde
p. p.); cf. Ector the secunde, 1243 f (-oude B, -ound D) ( : wounde
n.: abonde inf.).
sonereyne (O. Fr. souvérain), o lady soucreyne, 4978 f (-ayne B, -aigne
D) ( : peyne n.).

Note 1.—Here may be added,—the blood Thélane, 6964 f (Theban C) ( : bane
n.). The parallel form Troían Troían (regularly troîan in C) has no -e,
whether adj. or sbst. (cf. 1910, 4715, 4734, 4994 f ( : man), 6489, 7240,
7272, 7275, 7283), except perhaps in the plural (cf. 145).

Note 2.—Recreaunt has an adventitious -e due to the scribe: Or be recreaunt
of (-e for B, recreaunt for C, recreaunt of D) his owene tender, 814.
So pleyne, 5552 AB D (pleyne C).

Note 3.—For examples of the singular of Romance adjectives in the
indefinite use, see the following (accent recessive except as indicated):—
éternel (5724 f), funeral (6665 f), fynel (4807 f), general (163, 893 f, 919 f,
4644 f, 4804 f, 7185 f), infernal (6205 f), moral (1252, 6334), mortal (2860,
3218), immortál (103), natal (2992), egál (2979), royál, réal (432, 435 f,
4642 f, 6229 f, 8193); angwysshous (3668), bounteuous (883 f), cher-
vellous (7165), córgeous (7163 f), couseyoutube (4215)\(^3\), désérous (1151,
2186), dey nous (290), disleyvous (2302 D), douteus (5654), enuyous
(1942), ényous (4542), grouséous (8154, 7594, 7967, cf. 5566), huyuous
(2702), ialous, íclous (3741, 3993), pitous, potous (111, 113, 422, 3760,
5345, 6161, 6918), ñ ispitoous (6562 f), traytous (4512 A; traytoure BCD);
absent (6824, 7000 BCD), absent (3330 f, 7000 A), diligent (2818 f, 3327 f),
inocent (2647, 2808), présent (4810, 7110), pressent (3887 f, 4142); catyf
(rather sbst. than adj., 3224 B; castif A, cattyf CD, entenyt f (1923 f),
testyf (7165), cf. gylytf (3861, 3891); angelyk (102), certyen (2863, 3374,
4601, etc.), yu ceryen, certyen (467, 5550, 5667 C, 5667 f), vucerteyn
(5651), clos (2619), confus (5018), mat (5004), cûreyte (81), defet (8981,
7582), discret (3319, 3785), esy (1083, 1705), expert (67), feion (6562),
fortunat (1365), infortunat (5406 D; -ed AB, onfortune C), fûtur (7111),
genit (3746, 6336, 7294), ioly (2184, 7537), malaper (2929), pàrit (4221,
7282), pepleysh (6339), praignant (5841), secret (2749, 3320), secret
(2984), sôleyne (1752), sour (4036 f A), subjet, -git (231, 8153), subtit
(1342), vnapt (971), in vyen (4254, 4976, 7976). Some of these occasionally
show variants in -e (not sounded). For adjectives in -ous, -ouns, -aul, -ent, -el, see Chapter on Metre. For adjectives in -ay, cf. gay
(2007 f), véray (6287, very D).
article) monosyllabic adjectives take an inflectional -e (Child, § 32; ten Brink, §§ 232, 241).

I. Ordinals:

our first[e] lettre, 171 (-e B, our cheff[e] l. † ? D); the firste syght[e], 1754 (the ferst[e] C, the ferst † D); the firste tyme, 2841 ([e] D).

(Cf. also 280, 2298, 4615, 6603, 7303.) the alderferste[e], 2939 (the aldir ferste C; D †); with the firste || it cam, 4725 (the ferst hit D).

But,—the firste || that, 7430 (see § 54).

the thridde ferthe fyfthe sixte day, 7568 (C † D †); Mayes day the thridde, 1141 f (-d D) (: bytydde ind. 3 sg.); the thridde heuene, 2844 ([de] D).

(Cf. also 4660, 5353.) this ilke ferthe book, 4688 (this † ferthē b. D). (Cf. also 6839, 6856).

the seuenthē spere, 8172; here seuenthē hows, 1766 (seuentē C, vij. D).¹

that ilke nynthe nyght, 7466 (tenthē † C). (Cf. also 7044.)

the tenthe day, 6787 (the x[the] d. D). (Cf. also 6257, 6260, 6787, 7005, 7048, 7205.)

with his tenthe some yfere, 2334 (his t. sonne † B, his tensum † C, his x· somme D).

II. Monosyllabic superlatives:

for the beste, 581² f (-t C), 2409 f, 3890 f, 4171 f, 4831 f, 5539 f, 5950 f (-t C), 6090 f, 7969 f, 8113 f; the beste, 2533 f (-t C), 3295 f ([the] beste C), 3514 f (-t C), 3689 f, 3769 f, 5319 f, 5782 f (-t C), 6269 f (-t C), 7892 f (-t C); the best is 830 AD (-e BC); the faireste and the beste, 4122 f; my beste, 597 f (-t BC); thi beste, 1021 f (-t C, for the best D); the best[e] post, 993 (-e BC); the beste kuyght, 1074 ([e] BD); my best[e] frend, 1497 (-e C); thi beste gere, 2097 ([e] D);³ the best[e] harpour, 2115 (-ë C); his beste wyse, 4436 (-e D); the beste weye, 5954 ([e] D); o frend of frendēs the alderbeste, 4439 f (no article in CD, which read aldyr best, altherbest). (Cf. also 474, 947, 1467, 3797, 5470, 5947, 5987, 6188, 7670.) But,—the best, 1825 f ACD (-e B) (: the thryftiēst : the worthiest).

Rhyme-words.—I ne lest (leste) pres. subj. (581), leste, lyste pres. subj. 3 sg. (1021, 2533, 3514, 3689, 3890, 4171), leste pret. 3 sg. ind. or subj. (3295, 4831), reste inf. (597, 2409, 4122, 5950, 8113), pres. ind. 1 sg. (5319), noun (3769, 3890, 4439, 5782, 6265), vrieste (5539, 7969), wreste inf. (6090), molestē inf. (5539), in geste (3295), breste pres. subj. 3 sg. (597), Alcwste (7892).

¹ Or.—Sat in here seuēnthe hows of heuene tho.
² Old-style figures indicate that D reads best.
³ Insert [ryght] in A.
Observations on the Language

§ 53.

at the laste, 916 f (att[e] laste B), 1040 f (at † last D), 1230 f (attē laste B), 1484 f, 1776 f (-t C), 3038 f (-t C), 5185 f (-t C), 8002 f (-t C), 8182 f; at the last[e], 8093 (-e BD); at the last[e], 2023 f (-e BC); at the laste, 5885 (-ē as C, -t † D); at the laste her-of, 3407 (-t l) (cf. also 1584, 1599, 1909, 3457, 3961, 4147, 5097, 6796, 7509); to the laste, 1340 f; April 2 the laste, 3202 f (-t C); my laste, 537 f (D †), 1955 f (-t C); his laste, 3640 f; the last[e] shoure, 4709 (-ē B). But,—at the laste the, 2009 (-tē dede † D); at the laste this, 5034; at the last, 5914 (-ē BCD).

Rhyme words.—faste adv. (537, 916, 1040, 1230, 1776, 1955, 2023, 3938, 5185, 8002, 8182), laste inf. (537, 1040, 1955), caste inf. (1340, 1776, 3202), pret. ind. 3 sg. (1230, 3938, 5185, 8182), paste pret. ind. 3 sg. (1484), Horaste (3640).

at the leste, 1447 f, 2293 (-ē BD), 2415 f (-t C), 3156 f, 4002 f, 6439 f (at leste † D), 6888 f, 7313 f (attē leste B), 8041 f; at the leste how, 4678; oon the leste, 4152 f (oon † of the leste E); the leeste ioye, 4162; the leste poynyt, 4386 (-ē D).

Rhyme words.—haste, behest, byleste (1447, 2415, 3156, 4002, 8041), feste (1447, 4002, 4152, 6439, 6888, 8041), requeste n. (7813), at the meste (7813). [Var. B leeste, leest[e]; D leest.]

at the meste, 7310 f (attē meeste B) (: requeste noun : at the leste); the mostē wondir, 2228 C (-ē D, the grettest wonder AB); for the moste part, 3281 C (-ē D, more AB); here most[e] fere, 4183 (-ē CE); my most[e] nede, 6194 (-ē CD); compare,—now is most[e] nede, 3259.

the nexte word, 2942 (-ē B; D †); this next[e] wyke, 2358 (the nexte C); the nexte wise, 697 BC (-ē D). 3

the worste, 1452 (-ē D); the worste, 341 (-ē so † C, -t so † D); the worste poynyt, 342 (the worst y † D); the worste trecherye, 3120 (-ē D); the worste kynde, 4468 (-ē D). (Cf. 1389, 1622, 6459, 7090.) [Var. ABCD worste.]

III. Miscellaneous:

the bente mone, 3466 (-ē B).
here blynde wede, 177 (-ē BD); cf. 2405 f. (For indef. blyde, cf. 309, 642, 1619.)

the blynde lust, 8187; thy blynde and wynged sone, 4650 (blynd † D). (For indef. blynd, cf. 628, 1106, 3370 f).
here brighte face, 4670 (-ē D); the bryght[e] mone, 7011 (-ē C);
Criseyde the brighte, 6879 f (-t CD) (: a-light (-ē B) pret. ind. 3 pl. :

1 Old-style figures denote that D has last.
2 Three syllables (April AD, Aperil B, Aprille C).
3 A reads : For this nys not yn certeyn the nexte wyse. Omit yn (with BCD Cp. John's) and read the next[e] wyse.
§ 53. of Chaucer’s Troilus.

nyghte *inf.*). (Cf. also 5325, 7071, 7379, 7602.) here fadres faire bryghte tente, 7385 (faire bright[e] D).

here colde mouth, 5823 (-[e] B); my cold[e] care, 612 (-e C, the † cold[e] D). (Cf. 2052 † C, 5173.)

cold[e] 2009.

his fixe and depe impressiou, 298 (B †, fyx C).

thi derke wode, 4273. (Cf. 5016.)

And nexst the derk[e] nyght the glade morwe, 944 (derke . . . glad[e] D).

the foule netle, 941 (C t, foul[e] D) thy foule enuye, 4937. (For indef. *hot*, *hoot*, cf. 1977 f, 2361, 2618, 5925 f, 7465.)

his lighte gost, 8171 (-[e] B).

my righte lode sterre, 7755 (-[e] D); my right[e] l. s., 6595 (-e C); thi righte place, 4970 (-[e] BD); his right[e] lady, 21501 (-e C), 4505 (-e C); my right[e] lady, 6930 (-e C), 7016 (bryʒte C, my right lady † D); her right[e] cours, 2055 D (kynde ABC); the right[e] lyf, 1936 (-e C). (For indef. *right*, *vpright*, cf. 1418 f, 3823 f, 3840 f.)


the strong[e] cite, 7849 (-e BCD).

the swyfte fame, 5321 (C †).

My gode brother Troylus the syke, 2657 (D †) (: like *inf.*: syke *inf.*).

the white and ekē the rede, 4226 f (: drede n. : rede *inf.*).

Antigone the white, 1972 f (: syke *inf.*: endite *inf.*); cf. 2147 f.

his wod[e] peyne, 2440 (-e BC); the wode ialousye, 7576 (wode BCD G Cp. John’s, *without the article*).

the fayrē bayē stede, 7401 f (-[e] BD); his bay[e] stede, 1709 (bay3e C); but,—his stede bay, 1066 f (: day : ay).

this blewē rynge, 3727 (-[e] D, blowe C).

IV. Some examples are here given of the definite form of words which occasionally show an -e in forms not obviously definite (cf. § 49):

1 Insert [here] in A.
Observations on the Language

this false world, 1505 (-[e] BD); thi fals[e] gost, 7884 (-e CD).
the good[e] wyse worthi fresh fh and fre, 1402 (goode BC); my goodbrother, 2657 (my good trew brothir † D).
here good softly wyse, 2752 (hirë goodlly soft[e] w. BD, hirë goodle softe w. C); his gode gouernaunce, 3269 (wise CD); his good[e] gouernaunce, 3323 (-e C); my good[e] loue, 3851 A° (my good[e] 

myn B, myn goode myn C, good hert myn D); his goode chere, 
6547 (-[e] D).
youre grote trouthe, 3834 (good[e] D).
his heigh[e] port, 1077 (hiegh B, lyf[e] D) ¹; the heigh[e] worthynesse, 4451 (lyf C, hiegh D).

V. ownene, ownen, owne (A.S. āgen), is found only in the definite use. I. Singular. (i.) Before consonants; always dissyllabic, however spelled. Thus,—myn owenê lust, 407 (owne BD); thin owenê cheyne, 509 (own[e] BD, ownen C); his owenê curtasye, 2571 (owen B, owne D); myn owênê lady, 7032 (swene † B,² ousgne D) (cf. also 51, 442, 814, 1371 C (owne D), 1835, 1869, 1956, 2586, 2989, 4025, 4327, 4329 C, 6111, 6112, 6412, 6426, 6581, 6703, 6830, 6884, 6928, 7643, 7678, 7707, 7764, 7784, 8081); here owne place, 3060 (owen BD, owênê C) (cf. 2950, 3757 (owênê BC, own[e] D), 3943); myn owen lady, 6525 (owenê C, ougne D) (cf. 772, 5067, 5751); myn owênê herte, 5973 (swete B, ougne D) (cf. 3477, 5376 C); his owenê herte, 4662 (owen B, own[e] D); thyn owen help, 795 (ow[en]) B, owenê C, owne D); myn owen herte, 6214 AB (owenê C, ougnê D) (cf. 1530 (own? B, oune C, own[ë] D), 6302 (own[ë] B, owênê C, ougnê D)). (ii.) Before vowels, youre owene (predicate), 6517 (owen B, owen C, ougne D.) II. Plural, his owenê nedes, 3266 (owen B, own[e] D, owene † nede C); here owenê men, 3438 (own[e] B, owne D).

Note.—For myn owênê throte, 1410 A, read my throte. The form own (6111 C) is no doubt due merely to the omission by the scribe of the sign of abbreviation.

§ 54. Occasionally, however, -e is dropped in the definite form of monosyllabic adjectives.

his good wil, 2294 (-e BC).
this good plit, 3981 (-e B, thus good p. A).
my good wòrd, 7444 (godde C); youre goed wòrd, 7985 (C †).

¹ Read [e]straunge in D.
² This form occurs several times in B; as, 4025, 4327, 6412, 6581, 7032. Cf. sucue, 2586 B.
In these cases the phrases were perhaps felt as compounds; cf. O.N. *gōð-vili, gōð-virki*, etc., and notice the accent. But not so in,—

this heigh matere, 3358 (he B, heye C, hye D).
yowre heyghe seruyce, 4130 (heigh B, heye C, D †).
here heyghe compleynte, 5467 (heigh B, hire hye pleyn C; D †).
thy wrong conceyte, 692 (-e B, wrang D, C †).
my lowe confessedion, 1613.
Al be I not the firste that dide amys, 7430 (the firste C, the furste D).
the laste, the last, see p. 124.
the pleyn felicite, 8181 (-e B); this mené while, 3618 AB (p. 122).

Cf. the substantive use in:
Criseydé whiche that is thi lef, 5273 f (lief B, lyf C, the lefe D) (-a-leofa : myscchef). (For lef, lief, indef. sing., cf. 3706 f, 4461 f.)

Note 1.—Cases before a vowel, such as *hire old swage*, 150 (olde C, the † old D), and *here playn entente*, 2645 (pleyne BC, pleyn D), of course prove nothing. *The next wyse*, 697 A, is an error.

Note 2.—In

For which these wise clerkes that ben dede
Han euere yet prouerbed to vs yonge
That firste vertu is to kepe tonge, 3134-6

([-e] BC, The first vertu is to kepe wel the tonge D), the definite form is used by a sort of *constructio ad sensum*, though the demonstrative word (*the*) is omitted. Cf. Parforme it out for now is *mod[?]* *nedc*, 3259, and perhaps also And thanne at erst[e] shal we ben so fayn, 5983 (*at erst B, att erst D †, att este D †*, G), but here note atte in G.

§ 55. In vocative phrases monosyllabic adjectives appear in the definite form when they precede the noun (as in A.S. *léofa Beowulf*) (Child, § 34; ten Brink, § 235).

o blake nyght, 4271 (-e D).
o blyn[e] world o blyn entencion, 211 (-ë . . . -d B, -ë . . . -e C).
o bryght[e] Lathlon, 7018 (-ë C).
then foule daunger, 4163 BE (folc C; A †).²
good[e] nece, 2288 (-[e] D), 3473 (-[e] D); good[e] nece, 1468 (-e C);
gode nece dere, 3817 (?) (-[e] B, -ë C, good (?) D).³
gode brother, 3106 (-[e] D).

1 From the *Roman de la Rose* : Sire, la vertu premeraine . . . C'est de sa langue refrenier, 13117-21, II, 48, ed. Michel.

2 For *foul, ful*, in the attributive and predicate uses (*indef*.), cf. 213, 1931, 5666, 6402, 6746 (folc A).

3 Now doth hym sitte (sitten John's) now (om. BCGCp. John's) gode nece dere A.
Observations on the Language [§§ 55, 56.]

goodē swētē, louē me, 6935 ([-e] D).
Now good[e] em for goddēs loue I prey, 1394 (ẹ BG, my good eem §
D John's Hl. 2392, myn em § C, And good[e] em Cp.)¹ o good
em, 1584 (-e BC); good hert myn §, 3851 D.
leue brother, 3172, 5120 (derē § D), 5203, 6670, 6840 ([-e] D).
leue nece, 1336 (louē § B), 5588.
leue Pāndare, 5114 (C?).
o quyke deth, 411 (-e BCD).
Cf. the exclamatory line,—
o trust o feyth o depe aṣćaunçe, 7622 (depe aṣćaunçe § C, depe
aṣćaunçs § D).
In 458 good is used in the voc. : Good (-e B, God CDG, Goode? Hl.
2392) goodly (godely B, god Hl. 2392) to whom serue I (I serue
CG) and (om. BD Cp.) laboure (-r DG).
But in definite or vocative phrases in which the adjective follows the
noun no -e is added. Thus,—
myn owēnē lady bryght, 4327 f (: knyght) (cf. 7285 f).
o lufsom lady bryght, 6826 f (-e B) (: nyght), etc., etc. (Cf. ten Brink,
§ 235.)

§ 56. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do
not stand at the end of the verse², the following rules as to -e in the definite and vocative constructions may
be collected from the usage of the Troilus:

Of adjectives of more than one syllable those alone take -e which
have a primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are followed
by a word accented on the first syllable.
The special cases of which the Troilus furnishes examples may be
stated as follows:

I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following
word is accented on the first syllable. The verse will not bear such
an arrangement of accents as x’ xx’.
Example: the vykked spyrit. (See others in § 57.)

II. For the same reason dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no
-e when the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.
Example: his sodeyn comyng, 380. (See § 58.)

¹ Chas but nine syllables; AB Cp. become 9-syllable lines if good (goode) be read.
² The Troilus affords no certain means of judging how such words were treated at
the end of a verse except in the case of some plurals (see § 71).
III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives ('x') take -e unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.
Example: *the wofullest wyght*. (See others in § 59.)

IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as 'x' xx'.
Example: *his excellent prowesse* (see § 60).

V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytones take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable.
Example: *thi erratyk sterres* (see § 61).

Examples under I.—V. follow (§§ 57—61).

Note.—Adjectives of more than three syllables are not common in the *Troilus*. The accentuation of *philosophical* is interesting in "To the, and the, philosophical Strode," 8220 (D†).

§ 57. I. Dissyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite and vocative uses when the following word is accented on the first syllable. (Cf. Child § 35; ten Brink, § 246.)

(a) Superlatives:
the grettest wonder, 2228 ([the] g. B, moste C, most[e] D).
myn alderleuest lord, 3081 (-e C†); myn alderleuest lady, 6939
([myn] aldyr louelyest† C).

The following of course prove nothing:—
the hardest is, 1814 (-e B; D†).
the faireste and, 4122 (-t BD), cf. 1832.
the grettest of, 4854 (-e C).
the kyndest and, 7892 C (indef. ABD).

Cf. in the plural,—
the worthiest and grettest in degree, 244.
the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B; C†; D†).

(b) the best[e] sounded ioly harpe, 2116 (the bestë sowned B, the best† souned(e) C, the best† sownyd D).
thilke couered qualite, 2873 (couerd B, thilk[e] couerid q. D).
this furrëd cloke, 3580 (-ed(e) C, furrid† D (!)).
the heped(e) wo, 4898 (-ed B, -id D).

Note.—Compare on of the beste enteched creature, 7195 (on the best (†) B, on of the bestë enteched(e) C, on(e) of the best entached D) (c. dure inf.).

1 Or, leueste.
Observations on the Language [§ 57.

my nake|de herte se|ment, 2885 (-d BD, hertis D).

this fals and wik|ked dede, 93 (we|kedų C, e|rsyd † D).

that wy|kkedę dede, 3133 (-d BD).

that wik|kedę wy|uere, 3852 (-d B, the wik|kid serpent † wythir D).

the wy|kked spy|rit, 7575 (we|kedę C).

thy wyng|ed, 4650 (D †).

this wre|ched, 5283 (-e C), 8180 (cf. 8214).

(c) that blis|ful, 6768; the blis|ful, the blis|ful, 1319 (C †), 1919 † (je, blis|ful D), 4510, 6943.

this dre|dful, 1511 (C † om. this; dre|dful B);

this sor|wful, 139 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 4895 (sor|wful AC, sor|wful D), 5030 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 5456 (woful † C, sor|wful D), 5822 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 5914 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 596 (sor|wful AC, sor|wful D), 6359 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 6543 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D).

his sor|wful herte, 6893 B (sor|wful C, sor|wful D).

here sor|wful, 5814 (his tw. B);

his woful, 5447 (woful BC, woofuH D).

the woful, 5794 (woful BC, woofuH D).

this woful, 703 (thi w. BCD), 2446, 5022 (sor|wful C), 5027, 5034, 6560, 7077; his woful herte, 6997; herę s. h., 5843 (sor|wful CD)—the sor|wful (before vowels), 10 (sor|wful B, sory(e) C), 1537 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 213 (sor|wful C, sor|wful D), 5027, 5034, 6560, 7077; his woful herte, 6997; herę s. h., 5843 (sor|wful CD).

his good|ly, 2353 (dely B, goodli C); herę good|ly, 173 (dely B, -eli C), 446 (dely B), 2752 BD (dely B, goodę † A).

his happy, 1706 (i C; D †) (cf. 2467).

thy heuy, 651.

the holy, 3384, 7860 (the C).

1 Supply [ek] in C.
2 Read ielous in AD for ielousy(e) (ielousy(e)).
3 Omit (On) in D.
4 Insert [to me] in A.
5 Insert [his] in B.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

oure lusty folk, 560 (-i B)\(^1\).
his manly, 2955 (-i C).
his rosy, 4597 (-i C; E †), 6641 (-i B; D †)\(^2\).
the sely, 4033 (-i C); this sely, 6892 (cely B), 7456.
that smoky, 3470 (this smokë reyn C, smokis † D).
the mestë stormy, 1863.
the sturdy ok, 2465 (stordy B, sturdi C, sturdy pl. † D).
here tery face, 5483.
the wel willy planète, 4099 (the welë wyly p. D).
this worthi, 7924 (the worthy B); this ilke worthi, 8129. (Cf. 1243, 1402, 1416 CD, 2413.)

Note.—For merye see above, § 46.

(e) youre bittre,\(^3\) 3021 (-tyr C); the bittyr, 5372 (hir bitter D).
that bittre\(^3\) hope, 7276 (-tir C, the bitter D).

(f) Romance and Latin adjectives:
that noble gentil knyght, 1416 (noble and worthi CD, noble worthi D).
this gentil man, 3805 (goné g. m. C).
that wysë gentil herte, 3789 (that g. wisë h. C, wys[e] g. D).\(^8\)
this myddel chaumbre, 3508 (-il CD).
the fathal, 6364 (fathel B).
here cruel, 839 (om. † C); this cruelë, 6107 (cruël BD, crewël C);
myn aspre and cruelë peyne, 5509 (cruel B, asper and crewel C,
aspre † cruelë D); the cruel herte, 250 (crewel CD).
his réal pâlaïs, 4376 (rial C; D †).
the certayn, 5674.
this sodeyn Diomède, 7387 (cf. his sodeyn comynge, 3801).
thilkë sôneyren (disyll.) pûrueyalunce, 5732 (souëreyn D).
youre ioly wo, 2190 (-i C, om. † D).

his pitous face, 5023 (pi(e)tous † fate D).

\(^{1}\) Dele (in) in D.  \(^{2}\) D may be emended by reading cartë (as in ABC) for char.
\(^{3}\) Dissyllable.  \(^{4}\) Supply [in] in A. The word is in this line used substantively.
\(^{5}\) Sbst., insontem or insontes.  \(^{6}\) In C omit (al).  \(^{7}\) Line too short in D.
\(^{8}\) Supply [good] in A.
Observations on the Language [§§ 58, 59.

yourč verry humble trewe, 2983 (humbele C); his verry slouthe, 1371 (owene C, owne D).
the parfit blyssē, 1976.

§ 58. II. Dissyllabic oxytone adjectives take no -e in the definite use when the following word is accented on the second syllable.
herč natyf beauté, 102.

his sodeyn comynge, 3801.
his syklyche manere, 2628 (siklych B, seklyche C, sikly D).

Note.—Cf. Com(e) hire to preye yn his propre persone, 2572 (propere B, his (owene) propere p. C), and I com myself in my propre persone, 4745 (in [my] p.p. D).

§ 59. III. Trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives (’x’) take -e in the definite and vocative uses, unless the word that follows is accented on the second syllable.

(a) Superlatives:
the frėndlyéstē wyght, 1072 (-[e] BD).
the frendlyest[e] man, 1289 (-ė BC).

the fėrfullestē wyght, 1535 (ferefullest[e] B,1 sorwefullestē 1 C,2 frelyestē 1 D).

the godlyéstē mayde, 1965 (good(e)lyest[e] B, god(e)liestē C, goodliest[e] D).

the wōrthiéstē knyght, 3623 (-[e] BD).

the wōrthiēste, 1846 f (-t D) (-lyst, -e B 3: at reste).

the wōfullēste wyght, 5178 (-[e] BD); the wofulleste, 4965 f (-t CD)
(-vnnenste inv. sg.: breste inf.).

the gėntilēste trewēly, 7438 (-[e] D). [gentileste, 3100 B, should be gentilnesse.]

on the gėntilēst[e], 7419 f (-e BCD) (on(e) the worthyest[e], 7420 f (-e BCD)).

the thryftiest[e], 1822 f (-e BC) 1: the best[e] (-e B). (In these lines the worthiest[e], 1824 f (-e B) 1 we may safely read -ė, with B.)

I am one (oon B, on C) the (of the C) fairest (-e BC) out of (withoutyn D) drede
And goodlyest[e] (goodelystē B) who-so (ho so CD) taketh hede, 1831-2. Cf. the dreedfullēstē thingēs, 6611 (dredgfullestē B, dredfullest[e] D).4

1 Or, ferefullest.
2 Or, sorwefullest.
3 lyste should doubtless be read (pres. subj. 3 sg.).
4 C reads thynge for thynges.
69, 60, 61, 62.} of Chaucer's Troilus. 133

Elision is seen in:

the konnyngest of yow, 331.
the gentileste and ek, 1073 (genlyest † B, gentillest D).
the thristiaste and oon, 1074 (-t B, trustiest ‡ D).

Cf. the plural,—

the worthièst and grétest in degre, 244.

the fresshest and, 4564 (-e B, frossest [and] C; D †).

Note. — Alderfirst[ë] and alderbeste are of course treated like monosyllables (see vv. 2939, 4439 f).

(b) Other adjectives, Romance as well as Saxon:


this förknowyng[ë] wyse, 78 (-ë BC, in this † wyse D).

Bygan for ioyë the amorouse daunce, 6093 (thamarouse B, the amerous[ë] CD).

O cruel god o dispitousë Marte, 1520 (dispituse C, O thou c. g. o dispitouse mare B, thou being above the line).

Cf. also, the Troiane gcstes, 145 A (the troyan BC makes a bad 9-syl. verse, read [-ë]; troianys D).

§ 60. IV. But trisyllabic proparoxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the second syllable. The verse will not bear such an arrangement of accents as 'x'xx'.

the tèmpestous matère, 1090 (this tempestuos m. D).

his èxcellènt provèsse, 438, 1745. (But,—your èxcellèntë doughter, Sp. T. 145.)

§ 61. V. For the same reason trisyllabic paroxytone adjectives take no -e when the following word is accented on the first syllable. Thus,—

th erratyk stèrres, 8175 (the erratyk B).

his vnhàppy dède, 6003 (-i B); cf. myne vnresty sorwes, 7718 (C †).

§ 62. The following may serve as examples of the vocative of adjectives of more than one syllable.

O moral Gower, this bok(e) I directe

To the, and the, philosophical Strode. 8219-20 (D †).
Observations on the Language [§§ 62, 63.

O thou wykked serpent, 3679 (walked C, wikkid D).
o cruel day, 4292 (cruel B, cruel C, cruel † ladi D).
despitous day, 4300 (dis- BC, dispitouse D).
inmortal god, 3027 (immortal D, o inmortal god with slur C).
enuyous day, 4296 (C †).
Theou mysbeleued and enuyous folye, 3680 (mysbeleuyd enuyous CD).
olde vnholsom (on- C) and mysbyleued (-yd C, myslyued B, mysleuyd D) man, 4992.
o paleys desolat, 6903 f (-e D).
o paleys empty and disconsolat, 6905 f (-e D).
o thow woful Troylus, 519 (-H D).
o blysful light, 2843 (cf. 1007, 2145, 3547, 4159, 6945, 6962).
o brotel wele, 3662 (bretil C, Bbrotul J S-syL D).
o verray cause, 2848.
redy to, 2847.
almghty loue, 5741 (a. god C) (cf. 8105).
But,—
o wommanlyche wyf, 2948 (-[e] BD).
fresshe wommanlichë wyf, 4138 (-[e] E, wemen † lich[e] C).
O cruel god o dispitous[e] Marte, 1520 (dispituse C; O thou c. g. o dispitouse marthe B, thou being above the line).

Note.—The presence or absence of -e, it will be observed, depends, at least in part, on the arrangement of accents in the line.

§ 63. The Troilus shows few traces of the French inflection of adjectives.

Seynt Idyot, 903, and the seynt [i.e. Oriseyde] isoute, 6916, throw no light on the vexed question of the forms seynt, seynte (which are discussed by Child, § 37, and ten Brink, § 242). In o bele nece, 1373 (beale B, CD om. o), and a blauench feuere, 909 f (-[e] D) (cf. keuere inf.), we surely have to do with the intentional use of a French feminine adjective. Against o lady souereyne, 4978 (-ayne B, aigne D) (: peyne n.) may be cited my souereyn lady queene, C. T. 6630 T. Of dyuyen fureyaunce, 5623 (de- BD) is comparable with the seruyse divyne, C. T. 122 (see ten Brink, § 242, Freudenberger, Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts, p. 39). Compare also the list of French adjectives that have an inorganic -e (§ 52).

In 2859 amoreux should be singular.

§ 64. Adjectives in the Comparative Degree usually end in the *Troilus* in -er (var. -ere). Thus,—

(a) fairer, 454 (-est † A), 6843; no fayrer creature, 7171; pl., fai rer, 5064 (-er BD). (In all these C has *fayrer*.)

fre ndliour, 885 (frenlyer B, frendlyere C, frendlier D).

gladder, 884 (-ere C, -er BD).

hardere, 5567 (-er D).

hotter, 1005 (-ere C, hatter D); h. is, 449 (hatter B, hattere C, hatter he is D). (Cf. pl., -ere, 1623 (-er B), 4999 (-er D)).

leuere, 1027 (-er † D), 1437 (B † D †), 3433 (-er D), 3949 (C †, D †), 4332 (-er D), 5227, 5292 (-ere D, -er † than D); leuere a, 3616 (-er a BD).

liker, 3870 (-ere C, like † or D).

prouder, 1223 (-ere C).

rather, my r. speche, 4179 (-ere C); my rathere speche, 8162 (-er BD).

outer, that outter hous, 3506 (other † A, this vttir C, this † litil D).

swyfter cours, 2470 (-ere C).

wiser be, 986 (-er of B, -ere C); wysere, 2087 (-er BD, -ere than C).

worthier of, 251 (-ere C), plural.

So in the Romance adjective—

straungere, 5050 (-er BD, strengere † C).

(b) lenger (A.S. lengra), 3541 (langer B, moré CD), 4703 (lenge[r] A), 7025 (-ere C, longer B), 7214 D (moré A, longé BC)4; lenger, 1377 (-er D, longer B), 2050 (-er BD); lengere, 7022 (-er D, longer B). (So lengest, 474 (adv. † D)).

(c) bettre (dissyl.) (A.S. bet(era), bettra), 1262 (-er D), 1445 (-ere B, -yr C, -er D), 3772 (-ere B, -ire C, -ir † D), 5964 (-er B, -ir D), 7308 (-er BD), 7432 (-er B, -ir † D); my b. arm, 2735 (-ere C, -ir D). (In all these, unless otherwise indicated, C has -ere.)

bet, (i.) 257 (betir † D), 1211 (bettyr † C, worth † A), 1213, 1315, 1514, 2539 (B †, D adv.), 2736 (betir † to D), 3963 (bet(ir) mynde D, bet adv. A), 4065 (betir † than D), 7634 (best † C, bettir † )

1 Supply [set] in C, [d] in D.
2 CD insert ben (be), necessitating a harsh slur.
3 Insert [wel] in A.
4 Read *withouten* for *woth* in C.
Observations on the Language

§ 64.

wer j[; D]. (ii.) 5253 (betere (it) is C, -ir is D), 5593 (-ere is C, bett[i]r is D), 6404 (beste † D).

lasse, lesse (A.S. læssa), 703 f, 796 f, 1009 f (lesse(d) C), 2803, 2947, 3988, 5140 (allas † CD), 5465 f, 6981 f; for the lesse harm, 4000; lasse, 5240. (Cf. plural, 6206 f.) lasse nede, 2617 C (A † B †, the lessë nede D), a doubtful line. Cf. otherë lasse folk (?), 4716. In lesse he koude, 2163, lesse has an adverbial force.

Rhyme words.—Nouns in nesse (drerynesse, etc.) (703, 796, 5465, 6981), destresse n. (1009, 5465), gesse inf. (6981).

more (A.S. mára), I. as adj. indef. sing. in connection with nouns and pronouns,—nomorë hardë grace, 713 (n. m. hard[e] g. D); more vèrtu, 1264; more vèrte, 1244 (festis † C); nomore feste, 6887; no more sorwe, 1491 (C †); routhe more, 1649 f (; sore adv. : lore n.) 4; withoute more speche, 1582, 2506, 4352, 6751, 7494, 8079; more peyne, 2316; moreh help, 2540 D (perh. adv.) the 5 morë thank, 2551; morë pres, 2728; thi wo wax alwey more, 3084 f ( : sore adv. : lore n.); the 7 more fare, 3414; withouten more lette, 3541 CD, 7214 A; his sorwe is mucho more, 5561 (moore D) ( : sore adv.); strof ... ay which of hem was more, 7182 f (mor D) ( : euerë more adv.); more wo, 7415; Thorugh more (mor[e] B) wode and col the more fyr, 2417. —more folk, 4032, and morë thyng, 5205 (C † D †), are doubtless plural. II. more, moore, substantive use, 6452, 7772, 7974 (-[e] D); withouten more, 3815 f ( : sore adv.); 3998, 4795 f ( : sorwes sore), 5038 f ( : sore inf. : sikes sore), 6160 f ( : yore adv.); withouten ony moore, 7560 f (moor D) ( : sykes sore); cf. now is thereë morë for to done, 3389 (A erroneously inserts but); no more 10 (sbst.), 1044, 3032 (e as B), 3192 f ( : sikes sore), 3515, 6689 f ( : yore : lore noun), 7161, 8094 f (moor D) ( : euerëmore adv. : of yore), 8106 (na mor[e] B).

Note.—For more (of both kinds, adj. and sbst., —and one or two in which the adverb-line is perhaps passed), cf. 796, 3518, 5187, 5933, 6047, 6321, 6363, 6492. Cf. what sholde I more seye, 1406, 2219; what sholde I more telle, 3435; what myght I more do or seye, 3892; what hym lyste he seyde vn-to it more, 5785 f ( : sore adv.); what wolë ye more, 724; the harm that myghte ek fallen more, 1539 f ( : sore adv.); not o word spak she more, 3899 f (D †) ( : sore adv.).

1 Read [o]hiz in D.
2 And hast the (so DG Cp. John's, om. ABC) lasse (lesse D) nede to (om. BD, th to C) countrefete.
3 Supply [he] in B.
4 As neuere of thynge ne hadde I routhe more ([ne] D, no r. m. B, not r. m. C).
5 The A.S. py-construction.
6 Dele (me) in AD (or slur).
7 The A.S. py-construction.
8 Supply [the] in B. D reads,—The morë wode.
9 Insert [him] in C.
10 Sometimes written nomore (B nomor[e]).
more, I. adj. use, more ned is, 3699 (e now t B, it nedith more (i.e. potius) sodeynly C, D?); Ech(e) set by other more for other semeth, 643; more reward, 2218; out of more resplt, 6500 (without t more respite D); cf. the more harm is, 7299 (C t D t). II. no more (sbst.) in there is no more to done and similar phrases, 574, 2511 (e of CD), 3532, 7672; I kan no more but, 3232, 4035, 4115, 4156, 7731 (moor D); yet was there more to done, 7455; yet sey I more therto, 5734 (e herto BD); nor axen more that, 1232; yt I more dorse prey (?), 2521 (more C, more y D) 2; was worth more than, 4382 (worthy CD) 3; without more to, 2751 (e is t B, l. to).

mo, moe (plural) (A.S. mā, māč, adv.), 613 f 4, 614, 2490 f, 2566 f, 2651 f (sg. C), 3076 f, 3212 (moor C), 4356 f, 4881 f, 5162, 5490 (moore D), 5787 f, 6303 f, 6592 f, 7127 f, 7626 f, 8044 f 5. (Cf. 6521 f.)

Rhyme words.—wo, two, tho, so, fo, go, also.
Note.—Several of the passages cited contain the formula, withouten wordēs mo. This occurs also in the form, withouten wordēs moe (cf. 5326 f, 6419 f, 8035 f.).

worse (A.S. wiersa, wyrsə), 4542 f (wors D); I go to worse, 5502 f (wors C); i-turned vnto worse, 3916 f (s CD); in worse plyt, 1797 (e D); with worse hap, 4088 (vois t B); ye may do me no worse, 5856 f. But,—wers though, 1950; wors that, 5144 (e D); worse than, 7056 (e D); wers of, 1947; pl. wers whi t, 1820 C (wors [why] D).

Rhyme words.—acurse (acorse) inf. (3916), 1 sg. ind. (5502, wors : fors C), curse (corse) 3 pl. ind. (4542), adourse (5856), diurse (5856). [Var. BC worse ; D wurse, wurs.] (Cf. 2880 f.)

§ 65. The Comparative and Superlative of adjectives are sometimes formed by means of more and most (Child, § 38, d). Thus—

more bounteous, 883 f.
more gracious, 885 f.
the more worthi part, 2413.
the more swete, 4061 f (more swete BC).
more fayn, 6851 f.
more parfit loue, 7282.
more kynde, 7283 f.

1 Supply these in A.
2 But supply how in C and read more.
3 worth(y) more than CD (if worthy be kept, we must slur more than (mor'n)).
4 The cases cited are adjectival unless the line-number is in old-style figures : in that case, the use is substantive.
5 In A read othes for other.
Observations on the Language [§§ 65, 66, 67.]

most meke, 8210 f.
most is to hym dere, 4947 f.
the mest[é] stormy life, 1863 (cf. § 87).
the most[é] fre, 1073 (cf. § 87).

§ 66. The Superlative of adjectives ends in -est. Thus,—
best (cf. 828, 2570, 2649, 2738, 4746, 4863, 5341, 6381, 6904, 7717 f, 8210); fairest, 5817 (fayré † C); leuest (cf. 1274); lothest am (cf. 1322); shortest (7137 BD); trewest, 4665 (trusty † D), etc. B, C, and D sometimes show a scribe’s -e, which, however, is of course never sounded (for 6664 BD is to be emended).

For superlatives in the definite use or in the plural see §§ 53, 57, 59, 70.

Note.—In one case we may perhaps suspect that a single -est serves for two adjectives,—

And thus she lith with hewes pale and grene
That whilom fressh and fairest was to sene,

5816-17 (frosche and fayré † were C).

§ 67. The Plural of monosyllabic adjectives ends in -e.

In the following list no definite or vocative forms have been included without notice. An asterisk indicates that the adjective follows its noun (as, eyen bryghte); old-style figures indicate that the adjective stands in the predicate (as, eyen are bryghte)¹. No cases are included (without notice) in which the adjective refers to a plural ye singular in sense. For bare, fressh, etc., see note at the end of the section.

(a) blake (A.S. blæc. Sg. blak, cf. 170, 175), my clothes euerychone Shul blake ben, 5441.
bryghte (A.S. beorht, E.W.S. -breht, L.W.S. -bryht. Sg. bright, bright, 166 f, 2054 f, 5402, 6525 f, 8075, etc.), a fewé bryghté terys, 3893 ([e] BD); bryght[e],* 4972 f (-e D) (: sight (sichte) n.: lyght (lighte) inf.) (in C: dispyt †). Before vowels,—bright,* 7006 (-e C, of thi bright[e] bemes(?) D), * 7909 (-e C, out † A).
[Var. C bryȝte.] And sygnyfer his candele shewed bryghte, 7383 (bryȝt C, candell . . . light D) (: alighte pret. ind. 3 sg.: yf she myghte).
bygge (etym. dub.), bygge bowes, 4702 (big[gê] D).
coldé (A.S. cald, ceald. Sg. cold, 5839 (-e) BD); cold(e), 1783 f

¹ But these marks are not used with the singular forms given.
§ 67.

of Chaucer's Troilus.

(cold CD), cf. 7465 f), * 264 f (cold D), * 4044 f, * 4102 f, * 6354 f, * 7705 f¹, * 8110 f (all these in the phrase carës colde); -e hem, * 4611 (tolde † E).


dede (A.S. déad. Sg., ded, cf. 723, 1494 f, 1527 f, 1739 f, 1930 f, 2135, 2441, 2784 f, 2921 f, 3923 f, 4414 f, 5162 f, 5819 f, 7609, 7866, etc.; dede, cf. 5041, 6922), * 1624 f (sg. in A, but read ashe[n]; as rede † D), 3134 f, 3194 BD ([e] AC), 3734 (a dedé † man A), * 4781 f, 5754 f, 5894 f (D †), 6178 f; floures . . . that winter dedé made, 1137; shulle . . . liggen dede, 5288 f (deed D).

Rhyme words.—rede adj. pl. (1624), rede laygent (3134), dede n. (3134, 5894), dede n. (5288), dede n. (5754, 6178), sprede inf. (4781), rede inf. (6178).

deepe (A.S. déop. Sg. dep, 1236 C (Æ ABD)), my ladyes depe sikes, 7038 (C †).

donne (A.S. dun(n)), 1993 f (dunne C) (: sonne solem : y-ronne p.p.).
dyme (A.S. dim(m)), -e, 1993 AB.

fayre (A.S. fæger. For singular, see § 49), floures fayre, 8204 f (fair D) (: a fayre n.).

felle (A.S. fel. Sg. fel a dede, cf. 6413), fel[l]e, * 4706 f (felle BD) (: quelle ind. 3 pl. : telle inf.).

glade (A.S. gläd. Sg. glad, cf. 592, 2623, 3489, 3493, 4633, 5067, 5349, 5387, 5471, etc.), * 1135 f, * 1233 f, * 1583 f, 2436 f (glad C; D †), * 2857 f, * 3453 f.

Rhyme words.—made ind. 3 sg. (1135, 1583, 3453), ind. 2 pl. (2857), wade inf. (1233), Wade nom. pr. (3453), hadde ind. 3 sg. (2436).

goode (A.S. gód. For singular, see § 49), good[e], * 8222 f (garde † A) (: Strode nom. pr. : on rode); -e, * 1808 (om. † D). But,— of good conditions, 1251 AD (Æ BC)²; in good † chaunces, 2432 D.
grete (A.S. gréat. For singular, see § 49), * 4722 f, * 5630 (B †, grete clerkes D), * 6499 f, * 7601 f, * 8122 f; grete attendaunças, 339 (gret C); grete † effectis, 7992 C (sg. ABD).

Rhyme words.—strete (4722), hete n. (7601, 8122), trete inf. (4722, 6499), bete inf. (8122).

leue (A.S. lëof. Sg. lef, leef, lief (var. B leu(e); D leef, lef(e)), cf. 3302, 3706 f, 3711, 3712, 4461 f), 4744 f (: acheue inf. : leue credo).

lyghte (A.S. leohht, liht, shortened from léohht. Sg. lyght, cf. 5072 f, 5146 f, 6232, 6437 f, 6715 f, 7047 f, 7481 f), * 2323 f (-t CD)

¹ Supply [my] in A.
² Omit (te) in D.
(§ to the flyghte, -t BD), *2471 f (-t CD) (: wighte weight). [Var. C lyȝt; D light.]

madde (A.S. ge-mêdd, p.p. Sg. mad, cf. 5055 f), *6569 f (made B, he † made C) (: hadde habuit).—be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: a-dräd p.p. sg., adradd(e) C).

prowde (A.S. prût. For singular, see § 49), alle prowde (= omnès superbæ), 1487 f (al[le] prowD) (: lowde adv.).

quyke (A.S. cwic, W.S. cwucu, cucu, see Sievers, § 303. Sg. quyk, 2921), -e, 1137.

rede (A.S. rëad. Sg. red, cf. 867, 1730, 1737 f, 2924 f, 3798 f, 4412 f, 7288 f), *158 f, *1136 f, *1623 f, *2936 f (sg. D †).

Rhyme words.—mëde pratum (158, 1136), drede n. (2936), dede adj. pl. (1823), rede ind. 1 sg. (158), sprede inf. (1136).


sharpe (A.S. searp. Sg. sharp, cf. (i.) 1876, 3268, 4373; -(e), 5560 (p BC); (ii.) cf. 786, 4467; -(e), 7632 (hardly adv.), *470 † A (definite BCD), 3906 ([-e] D †); it maketh sharpe kervyng toles, 632 ([-e] D)¹; -e, 7564.

shorte (A.S. scort, sectort. Sg. short, 7989 (-(e) D); in short, 2490 (-(e) B), 3076 (-(e) B)²), 2041 ([-e] AD), 5298 ([-e] A), 6320 C ([-e] ABD), 7211.

sleye (Icel. slœgr), *7261 f (slye C, slie D) (: lye mentiōr : ye); sleye arn clerkês, 5634 (sleighe B, slye were D).

Note.—The rhymes show that slye (not sleye) is the correct form.

smale (A.S. smæl), *2276 f (: tale), 4304, *5399 f (: bale : pale); -e he[ř], *4089.

smerte; sorwes, peynes smerte, 794 f (-t D), 3792 f (-t D), 4910 f, 5088 f (-t D), 5803 f (peynë † smerte D), 6163 f, 6561 f (-t C), 7087 f, 7412 f (-t C), 7689 f, 7783 f (-t C).

Rhyme words.—herte (everywhere), sterte inf. (3792), he sterte pret. ind. (5561).

Note.—Sievers seems to regard smerte in sorwes (peynes) smerte as a noun. At any rate he puts Compl. Pite 13, B. Duch. 593, Compl. Mars 10, H.F. 316, along with the wounde smerte (H.F. 374), under smerte sbs. in his Glossarial Index (Minor Poems, 1888, p. 440). But his sorwes wer so smerte, B. Duch. 507, and Were my sorwes never so smerte, Id. 1107 (cited ibid.), surely make against this. Besides, the substantive seems to be

¹ In D supply [yit].
² With short[e] daryinge, 7137 A Cp. (short[e] C, shortest BDG John's), is the only case which seems to countenance shorte in the sing., but in this line the superlative is clearly right. For cases of the singular short before vowels, cf. 2578, 2743, 3298, 4698, 5552 (?), 5598.
§ 67. of Chaucer's Troilus. 141

smert in the Troilus (cf. 5035, 5128, 5507; smert, 6780, may be a verb; C. T. 3811 T. is indecisive). Cf. also the entirely similar phrase sorwes sore (2427 f, 4794 f, 7718 f).

sore (A.S. sār. Sg. sor, 7002 (soor(e) B; D ṭ); sor(e), 4263 (soor B)), *2427 f, *3191 f, *4794 f, *5037 f, *7038 f, *7559 f, *7718 f (C ṭ); -e, *4613, *7397 BD (-e doun C, here sorē sykes ṭ A).

Rhyme words.—more (all cases), lore n. (2427), sore inf. (5037). [Var. BD soore.]

sothe (A.S. sóθ. Sg. soth, cf. 1254, 4199), 5333 [-e] A.


Rhyme words.—longe adv. (all cases), inf. (7051), honge inf. (7564).

swyfte (A.S. swift), 4909 AD (-e] B).


Rhyme words.—syke inf. (2903, 4014, 4204), pyke inf. (2903), lyke inf. (4204, 7717). [Var. BCD sike; D sijke.]
tame (A.S. tan), 3371 f (sbst.) (: lette-game : frame inf.).

wete (A.S. wēt, wēt), *7472 f (C ṭ) (: hete noun), *8053 f (lete inf.).


wronge (Icel. vrang-r. Sg. wrong, 4851, 7524 (-e) B), *3646 f (wrong CD) (: longe adv.), *4233 f (: longe pl. : stronge adv.).

wrothe (A.S. wrāθ), 140 f (: bothe), 4784 f (: bothe), 6504 f (-th BD) (: bothe). (Cf. below, § 69.)

wyse (A.S. wis. Sg. wys, cf. 630, 1798, 5076 f, 5749, 7183, etc.), *954 f, 984 f, *3694 f, 3784 f, *4392 f, *4533 f, 7942 f. Cf. yf ye ben wyse, 4031 f (: aryyse pres. subj. 3 pl.).

Rhyme words.—wyse n. (954, 984, 3694, 3784, 4392), service, seruyse (954, 984), suffice, suffise inf. (3694, 4533, 7942), aryyse inf. (3784), deuyse inf. (4533), degyse inf. (7942).

yone (A.S. geon), withinnē 30nē ṭ wallis, 7096 C (the yonder AB, yonder D).

yonge (A.S. geong, etc. Sg. yong, (i.) 1721 (yung D), 7193; (ii.) 1837 (yung D)), 1204 [-e] D; to vs yonge, 3135 f (-g B)

1 Supply [his] in B.
2 This line affords an excellent instance of the disregard shown for -e by D: "The greys strong[e] about[e] troy[e] toun."
3 Read folk[es] in B, folkys (for follys) in C.
4 Supply [that] in C.
Further examples of the plural may be seen in:

In May that moder is of monethes glade
That fresshē floures blew and white and rede
Ben quyke a-gayn that wynter dedē made
And ful of bawme is fletynge every mede
When Phebus doth his bryghtē bemes sprede
Right yn the white bole so it bytydde
As I shal synge on Mayes day the thridde, 1135-41.

(b) fele (A.S. feola, fela, Ps. N. feolu, -o; really old neut. adj.), on of so fele, 4772; thow sleest so fele, 5174. [fele, 4706 f A, is f. l. for felle.]

dewe (A.S. féawe, -a, Ps. féa). I. Without a,—fewe lordes, 2672; fewe folk, 2732 (-[e] D); wommen fewe, 7051 (few B). II. With a,— a sely fewe poyntes, 338 (C † ?); a fewe wordes, 3743 (-[e] D); a fewe bryghte teres, 3893 (-[e] B); of wordes but a fewe, 6996 f (shewe inf.); a fewe of olde storyes, 7822 (C †, sue † D); in a wordes fewe, 5942 f AB (in [a] w. f. CD) (shewe inf.).

(c) So in the plural of monosyllabic superlatives:
meste and leste, 167 f (B †; A ?; the moost and ek(e) the least D) (: feste); most and leste, 4721 f (: requeste n.). (For "definite" plural phrases, the meste and [ek] the lest, with the firste and with the beste, cf. 6803, 7202.)

(d) Cardinal numerals (Child § 39. c; ten Brink, § 247):
tweyne, tweye (A.S. masc. twégen, Kent. Rushw. twégen, North. tuége, tuége, etc.).

(1) tweyne, *1705 f (twene C), *2800 f, *2820 f (-n D), *3957 f, *4332 f, *5410 f (-n CD), *5804 f, *7634 f, *7711 f; a nyght or tweyne, 3392 f (-n D), tweye(e) C); we tweyne; 4049 f, 5138 f, 5450 f (-n D), 5920 f (twayne B), 7042 f; vs tweyne, 5965 f (twayne B); tweyn (: peyne), *5412 f C. [4976 † f A, 5064 † f C.]

Rhyme words.—cheyne n. (1705), Eleyne (2800), peyne n. (2820, 4332, 5410, 5450, 5804, 5920, 5965, 7042, 7634), to seyne inf. (1705, 3392, 3957, 7711), reyne inf. (3392), streyne inf. (4049), compleyne inf. (5138, 5450, 7634, 7711), subj. 3 sg. (5920).

(2) tweye, *1255 f, 1267 f (swychē tweye), 1896 f (absolute use),

---

1 synge occurs in 184 C, —hynge synge knyzis (yonge AD, zonge B).
2 moonthes gladde B.
3 fressch[e] B.
4 bryght[e] B.
5 bool B.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

* 2917 f, 3665 f (absolute) (tweyen B), * 4791 f (twye A, tway D),
* 4976 f B (twayne † A, twye C †), 6075 f (a day or twye, cf.
6045 f), * 8091 f (twye B, tuue D) (cf. * 4820 f, * 4909 f); vs,
ye, yow, bothē twye, 2242 f (to † C), 2277 f (twyne † C), 2739 f,
3982 f, 7670 f (twyne B) (cf. 5771 f, 6165 f, 6991 f); a day or
twye, 6276 B (two A, too C, tweyne D). For the definite uso
(as, the twye, this ilk twye), cf. 494 f, 4035 f, 4156 f, 5032 f.
—twey, with twey † vesāgis, 7262 C (two AB, tuo D), cf. 3349 †
D (definite).

Note.—D almost always has twey (but cf. 2383 f, 3074 f); C has twey in
6075 f, 7670 f.

Rhyme words.—deye inf. (1255, 4909, 6075, 6991), seye inf. (1255,
2739, 2917, 3665, 4820, 4909, 5771, 6045, 6165, 7670, 8091), ind. 1 sg.
(1267, 2277), pleye inf. (1896), subj. 2 sg. (3665), preye inf. (2739), ind.
1 sg. (2242, 6165), ind. 3 pl. (6045), leye inf. (2917, 7670), puruye 2 pl.
inw. or subj. (2242), a-weye (2277, 4976), chimēney(-eye) (3982), this
olde greye (4791), what weye (4820), by the weye (6991).

Note.—For two (var. C to, too; D tuo, to), cf. 614 f, 645, 1671, 2777 f,
7736, 8226, etc.; a-two, 4317 f (on to C, a twoo D), 6543 f (oto C, in
tuoo D), etc.

fyue (A.S. fif), * 2117 f (: vpon lyue), * 6760 f (: dryue inf. : blyue
adv.), * 7252 f (: on lyue); suche fyue, 1211 f (: thryue inf.);
swych[e] fyue, 1213 (D †). [Var. BC fiue.]
sixe (A.S. sex, W.S. siex, syx), set the world on sixe and seuene
(six B, sexe C, vj D), 5284.

seuene (A.S. sefon, siofon, -an, -en, Ps. seofen), the blysful goddes
seuene², 4045 f (: to heuene); seuene (dissyl.) kynges, 7858 (vij
BD); on sixe (q.v.) and seuene (seue C, seuen D), 5284 f (: to
heuene).

nyne (A.S. nigon, R² níone), ix. (= nyn) nyght, 5250 (nyne dayis †
C); ye sustren nyne, 4651 (ix that D); and other of her
wommen nyne or ten, 3440 (ynē or (?) C), ³ a .ix. or .x. D ⁴.
twelue (A.S. twelf), * 1193 f, * 2484 f (twelwe C), * 6460 f, * 7287 f
(.vij. † C); swych[e] twelue, 5064 f (tweine † C). (All rhyme
with my-. thi-, hyn-selue.)

Note.—But ten (cf. 60, 5982, 6602, 7569, 7713). Other numerals,—thre
(cf. 2021, 3051 f, 3155 f, etc.), twenty (cf. 6069), fyfty (cf. 7866), sixty (cf.
441), thousand (cf. 58, 457, 531, 546, 819, 1227, etc.), thousandys (3165,
-ìs BD).

Note.—In Anglo-Saxon, when the cardinal numerals from 4 to 19 are used
absolutely, they form cases according to the i- declension (see Sievers, § 325
and note).

¹ No cases of the definite use included.
² Supply [tho] in A.
³ But supply [othere] and read nyne.
⁴ Supply [of] in D.
§ 68. Monosyllabic perfect participles standing in the predicate regularly take no -e in the plural. Thus—

(i.) Before consonants and at end of verse:

- they be gon, 2243 f (-e BD) (: anoon, or noon A).
- they were born, 4064 f (-e BCD) (: by-forn).
- bothë two be lorn, 4065 f (-e BD) (: by-forn).
- they were born, 5913 f (borne BD, bore C).
- we be lost, 3937 (cf. 3140).
- ye be brought, 3980 f (-e B, brouȝt CD) (: nought : thought n.).
- ben . . . laft, 4180 f (last † C, lefte E) (: by-raft p.p. pred. pl.);
  cf. 4887 f, 4889 f.—ben wyst, 5739 (-e B), cf. 5681.
- they ben met, 4523 f (mette C) (: was it bet). So,—i-met, 1671 f
  (ymette D) (: net n. : set p.p.).
- this wordes seyd, 5573 (-e BD ; seydë † dixit C).
- Til we be slayn (sleyne B) and doun ourë walles torn, 6144 (torne
- thei be wont to, 7023 (wontë BD, wontë C) ; cf. were wonëd to,
  4553 (wontë B, wonë C, wont D).

(ii.) Before vowels:

- thei ben met, 1237 (mette C ; D †) ; ben set, 4986.

(e) Monosyllabic participles (see also § 68):

- with bygge bowes bente, 4702 f AB (bent D) (: mente 3 pl. : wente
  3 pl.).
- with herte and eerys spradde, 6084 f (: he hadde).

But cf. wommen lost thorugh, 3140 (C †).

(f) Romance adjectives:

- preste wynges, 5323 ([-e] BD). (For sing. cf. 3759, 4824.)
- tuskst stoute, 7817 f (: aboute : doute n.).
- knyghtes stoute, 7856 f (: route n. : aboute).
- floures blew and, 1136 AB.

Note 1. For examples of the plural of adjectives that end regularly in -e in the singular, cf. grene (1906 f, 5816 f, 6095 f, 3674 f), kene (1143 f), kynde (7335 f), newe (2554 f, 3893 f, 6192 f), brewe (2695 f, 2959 f, 4613 f), vontrewe (1871 f). For examples of the plural of adjectives that come under § 49, cf. bare (7910), faïre, freṣte (1136, 3453, 8198), goodë, grete, hye, heyhe (3460 f, 4910, 7093), olde (see note s. v.), proudë (1487 f). For the plural of Romance adjectives that end in the singular in -e, cf. pale (3466 f), strauinge (1109 f), nyce (1109), ryche and pore (6406 f), square (7164 f) (sg. not in the Troilus).

Note 2. Bondë (A.S. bonda, weak noun) is used as an adjective (in the plural apparently) in “For as herë lyst she pleythe with free and bondë,” 840 (bond D) (: withstonde inf.). For the singular, also adjectival, see “She wolde nought ne make hire-self bondë In loue,” 2308 f (: vnderstonde inf. : in homde).
§ 68, 69.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 145

ben fled, 5530 (fledde D).

Note.—So also when the subject is ye in a singular sense: cf. (i.) 4049, 5537 f ( afflict n. : ayusement); (ii.) 2191, 2267.

But in two or three cases the -e appears. Thus—
dred(r)es waren . . . fled[de], 463 f (fledde B) (: brede pret. ind. 3 sg., bred C t., bred D).
dores were faste y-shette, 3075 f (y-chette B, faste schette C, fast yshet D) (: lette n. : sette pret. ind. 3 sg.).

here sperés were whette, 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 pl.). And don thyn hod, thi nodes sped[de] be, 2039 (speddë BC; D t.). Cf. And fond two other ladyes sette and she, 1166 A (sete B; sate pret. 3 pl. D).

§ 69. Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take -e in the plural (Child, § 41; ten Brink, § 234). Thus—

(a) hem that ben not worth two fecches. 3778 BCD (sing. A).

Cf. 3696, 4009, where worth pl. is followed by a vowel.1

wysé men ben war by folys, 635 (-e D, ware † of B).2
dedë were his iapes, 1076.

shal we ben so fayn, 5983 f (feyne B; D t.) (: ayen: seyn inf.).
tonges ben so prest, 1870 f (-e B) (: lest n.).

O verrey lones nice and blynde be ye, 202 (fooles nice and blyndë B Cp. John's; C †; αλλως D †).

(b) So particularly when the adjective in the predicate refers to a subject ye (expressed or implied) used in a singular sense. Thus—

be ye mad, 1198 f (made B, madde C) (: adrad p.p. sg., adraddek(e) C).

Note.—In,—Be 3e (so C G Cp.; ye DE John's, om. AB) nought (not CD) war (ware BD) how fals (false Cp., that fals D) Polyphete, 2552, ye is necessary to the sense. We should read war and falsë. Cf. § 49. Cases before vowels (as, glad, 3019) of course prove nothing.

ye be wroth therfore, 1385 (-e D). Cf. p. 141.

Now beth nought wroth my blod my nece dere, 1679 (-e D); beth not wroth with me, 6508; so, before vowels, in 7972, 7977. [For sing. wroth, cf. (i.) 349, 842, 1012, 2158, 3127, 3572 f, 3886 f, 3924, 3952 f, 7827, 8138; (ii.) 581 (be † 3e wroth C), etc.]

(ye that) ben so loth to, 2996 (-e D). [For. sing. loth, cf. (i.) 3211, 3574 f, 4181; (ii.) 1893, 6384.]

beth al hol || no, 3010 (-e D, hoolë B).

ye ben to wys || to, 3709 (-e)] C, wis B).

1 For sing. worth, cf. 3675, 4382, 5428, 7245.
2 For sing war, see p. 146.
beth glad now, 5978 (-e D; C?).
beth wel war, 4022 (-e D); beth war of men, 8148 (-e D). [For sing. 
war, cf. (i.) 203, 1360, 2266, 4544 f; (ii.) 2103, 3426, 4464, 7922; 
ware, 6896 (war CD).]
and ye so feyr, 6533 (-e BD).

So occasionally when the plural adjective is used 
attributively.

Ten Brink's remark, "Im Plural des attributiv stehenden Adjectivs 
gleichviel ob starker oder schwacher Flexion tritt die Apocope [des 
flexivischen -e] kaum ein; niemals, wenn der Adjectiv voransteh" 
(§ 236) is not borne out by the Troilus MSS. The following lines 
are significant:—

And ben of good condicions ther to, 1251 A (goode B, goodë 
condisciounys C, And to be of good c. therto D). We 
have no warrant to read condicion.

Ne for no wyse men but for foles nice, 3166 (no wis man C, wyse 
man D). Here one is tempted to read man. (No note in the 
Cp. collation.) But wyse men is a quasi-compound, cf. 5749.
Hath lordes olde thorugh which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C, 
high D).

Note.—Cases before a vowel (as ful, 4223, 8176) of course prove nothing.

§ 70. For adjectives of more than one syllable which do 
not stand at the end of the verse, the rule as to -e in 
the plural is the same as that already stated as to -e 
in the definite and vocative constructions of such 
adjectives (§ 56).

Of such adjectives those alone take -e which have a 
primary or secondary accent on the ultima, and are 
followed by a word accented on the first syllable (cf. 
Child, § 40; ten Brink, § 233).¹

Note.—For convenience, words in -re (-er), -le, have been included in the 
following list. A few sporadic cases of -e (as in levede) or -e (elided) 
will be observed.

(a) the worthiest and grettest in degré, 244.
the freshest and, 4564 (-e B; C † D †).

strongest folk, 243 (cf. alderwisest han, 247).

¹ In the list that follows, no definite or vocative examples, or examples before a 
vowel, or h, are given without notice.
§ 70.

of Chaucer's Troilus. 147

(b) conforted most, 249 (-id C, -yd D) (predicate).

thouked be ye, 1935 (sg. CD).
tresses vnbroyden hangen, 5479.
twynned be we, 5138, 7042.
here dorres sperid alle, 6894 (-ed BD, -ede C).
feyned loues, 8211.
payens corsed olde vyces, 8212.
(Cf. also 3931, 5670, 6186, 7482, 7702, 7907, 8143, etc.)

(c) your leyeworthy obseruaunces, 198 C (your lewd demeanour D).
hire wykked werkès, 997 (-ed B, -id D).
thesew wikked tonges, 1870 (-yd D).
we wreched wommen, 1867 (wreche[d] C; D t).
thesew wreched worldes appetites, 8214 A (this B, the D).
(Cf. also 1905, 1906, 1907.)

(d) the blysful goddes, 4045 AR,1 7613.
maisterful or (pred.), 1841 (mastoeful C, maystreful D).
sorwful 2 sykes, 4203 (sorful C, sorwful D), 7717 (sorweful CD).
sorwful 2 teres, 7737 (sorwefuH D).
the sorwful, 6346 (sorwefuH D).
wilful taches, 3777.
o wofulle eyen, 4971 (woful B, cruel C, wofuli D).
his woful wordes, 1658. (Cf. 5002, 5797.)
here woful wery gostes tweyne, 5804 f (wery woofuH D).

(e) goosish peuples speche, 3426 B (gos(y)lyche A, C om., gosissh D) 3.
here sonnyssh herys, 5478 (-e here B 4).

(f) her sydes . . . fleysshly, 4090 (flessly C, fleshly C, fleishly D).
shaply ben, 6114 (shapely B, shappely D).
gyddë † apis, 906 C (goddes apes ABD).
many wordes, 1233 (-ye BC, meny D).
In sondry londes sondry ben vsages, 1113 (sundry D).
sondry formes, 8076.
to yow angry Parcas, 6366 (angurry D).

(For other cases, definite and indefinite, of the plural of adjs. in -y,
cf. 233, 251, 742, 1112, 1203, 1233, 2171 A, 2324, 2436, 4046,
4208, 4223, 4287, 6532, 7164, 7332, 8122, 8133, etc.)

1 Supply [tho] in A. 2 Dissyllable throughout.
3 A and D have peple speche, haplography for peoples speche. The textus receptus has goothish, see Mätzner s.v. goisch. G has goossish. E has gossish. Cp. has goossish peoples.
4 Read here[s] in B (teres : eeres).
Observations on the Language §§ 70, 71.

Note.—For *merye*, see above, § 46, p. 113.

(g) *bittere* bondes, 3958 (bittere C, bittir D); *bitter teris*, 5800 (bittere C, bittir D); *bittre weren*, 5798 (-tere C, bitter D); *thi bittre peynes smerte*, 5088 (-tere ? C, bitter D†).

with-innē tho yonder wallys, 7096 (with-innē 3onē wallis C, with-innē yonder D).

(h) *certeyn tymes*, 4273; *certeyn folk*, 6396.

ye do hem c6rteys be, 2868 (curteis B, curteys D).

gentil hertis, 2847.

ye that ben expert in, 2452.

o fatal sustren, 3575 -(e) D†.

do hem c6rteys be, 2868 (curteis B, curteys D).

gentil hertis, 2847.

ye do hem c6rteys be, 2868 (curteis B, curteys D).

The plural -e is shown in the *Troianē* gestes, 145 A (the troyan[e] BC, the troianys† D), and perhaps in

Fy on youre myght and werkes so *diverse*, 5857 f ( : thow fortune adverse : no verse) (cf. § 52, above; Child, § 42; ten Brink, § 241).

Cf. *otherē besye* (dissyl.) nedes, 355 (-y CD); cf. however, 7352 (A†).

Note.—In *amoreux hem made*, 2859, we have a French plural (*amorous* D). See also § 63.

§ 71. The treatment of the plural of adjectives of more than one syllable at the end of the verse, is illustrated by the following examples. (Cf. also § 70, at the end.)

hem that falsely ben apeyred, 38 f, *rhyming with*

hem that ben des(es)peyred, 36 f (despeyred B, dispeired D).

alderwisest han ... ben plesed, 247 f (-id C, -yd D) *rhyming with* thei ... han ben ... esed, 249 f (-yd D) ( : apesed p.p. sg.).

the feste and playes pâlestrâl, 6667 f ( : funeral).

---

1 Dissyllable throughout.

2 In C read *parfit* (printed, *parfit*) and supply [and]; in D supply [and].
the thynges tèmпорèl, 5723 f (temporâl D) (e very del : èternèl).
other thyng collateral, 262 f (thinges D, thyngis collateral C).

Note.—Thei be rungen, 1890 f A, should read Thei be runge.

§ 72. Adjectives in A.S. -lic (-lic), O.N. -ligr, appear in
the Troilus with the ending -ly or -lîch.

Ten Brink (§ 270) seems inclined to recognize a tendency on
Chaucer's part to use -lîch instead of -ly when the following word
begins with a vowel¹, but the Troilus MSS. do not give evidence
in favour of such a tendency: one can only say that the ending
-ly remains unchanged in the definite use, in the plural, and in
the vocative, and that when the poet wishes for metrical or other
reasons to add an inflectional -e, he employs the form in -lîch.

In the following list old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows; déf. =
definite use (singular); déf. pl. = definite use (plural); pl. = plural (in-
definite use); voc. = vocative singular. Examples not distinguished by any
of these signs are in the indefinite use, singular number, and are followed by
a word beginning with a consonant. It will be observed that the Troilus
affords no instance of an adjective in -ly or -lîch (-lîche) at the end of a verse.
For forms in -lîch, -lîche, see under estatlyche, goodly, heuenliche, goosylyche,
gryslî, syklyche, wrommanlyche.

dedly, 5533 (dedely B), 5560 (dedely BC).
erthely, 5543 (erthly B, wordely C).
estatlychem, 7186 (-liche B, statlyche (?) C, estâlîch D).
fleystshly, 4090 (flessly B, fleishly C †, fleishely D) (pl.).
frendly, 538², 1234 (pl.), 1417 (lovely † D) (def.), 5060. [Var. B
frendelî, frendely, frendely; C frendli, frendelî.]
goodly, 162 AB³ (def.), 173 (def.), 277, 373, 405 (saury B, saury
CD), 446 (def.), 458 (voc.), 1070, 1366 (goodliche C), 2031 (perh.
a. . . )⁴, 2113, 2210 (C ?D ?), 2353 (def.), 2752 (goode A) (def.), 2846
(voc.), 2970 (D †) (voc.), 3975 (def. pl.), 4315 (D †) (voc.), 4448,
5072 AB, 7081 (def. pl.), 7185. [Var. B godeîly, godeîly; C
godeîli, godeîli, godeîli.]
gosîlychem peple speche, 3426 (goosish peples s. B, gosisshe peple s. D;
Ce †). (See p. 147, footnote 3.)
gryslî, 2785 (gryseîly B, gresaîlîche C)⁵, 4817 (grisely B, gresely C).

¹ "Aus einem genauen Studium der Ueberlieferung . . . ergibt sich u. a., dass
Chaucer . . . vor anlautendem Vocal . . . vielfach -lîch und -lîche statt -ly
gebraucht."
² In 588 C read gladyth for gladdet.
³ In AB the line is too long; CD Cp. Harl. 2392 om. goodly. G reads: And to
the temple in her goodly best wyse
⁴ In C read haste for laste.
⁵ But in C supply [Z] and read gréselîche.
hœnliche, 104 C (heuënysb B, heuënyssh B, heuënly D).
holy, 1203 (pl.).
homeli, 2644 C (apparently adv. in ABD, homly).
knynghtly, 1713 (e- BC).
lovel[y], 1417 D (def.).
lykly, 4112 (I lykly was to sterue) (lykë to (?) D).
manly, 2348 (li C), 2955 (li C) (def.).
oonly, 6330; saue only Ector, 1825 (oonly B, onli C); oonly worthiness, 6330 (oonely B, onely D).
shaply, 6114 (-e- B, shappely C) (pi).
softly, 2752 (soft[e] BD, softe C) (def.).
sunnelic was, 5398 C (sonnyssh ABD).
Syklyche, 2613 (sikliche B, sekly C, sike} D (?)); his syklyche
manère, 2628 (siklých B, seklých C, siklý D).
well willy, 4099 ABC t (wel(e) wylly D) (def.).
wortheli, 1424 (worthi A, worthy BD).

With these may be compared:
sely, 338 (om. C) (a sely fewe poynotes), 871, 1768, 4033 (def.), 5165,
6152 (pl.), 6892 (def.), 7456 (def.). [Var. B cely; C seli.]
vnsely, 35 (vnsely D).
weldy, 1721 (worthi C).

PRONOUNS.
§ 73. I. Personal Pronouns.
I (A.S. ic). Usually I or y in all four MSS. But the following cases
of ich have been noticed: 678 ABC, 864 A (iche here B), 2143 B,
2145 BD, 3474 B, 3549 B, 3715 B, 3770 B, 4319 B, 4660 AB,
4733 B, 4762 B, 4976 B, 4991 B, 5245 AB, 5287 AB, 5294 AB,
5411 B, 5419 B, 5467 B, 5585 B, 5727 A, 5999 A (ichë B), 6053
AB, 6213 AB, 6312 B (ych A), 6403 AB, 6493 AB, 6589 AB,
6590 AB, 6781 B, 6928 B, 6933 B, 6942 B, 7062 B, 7110 B, 7234

1 In B supply [se].
thow (A.S. þú), 894, 309 (thou C), 933 (thou CD), 6633 (thou C, thou D), etc., etc.; thou, 898 (thou BD), etc. (In rhyme,—two cases,—thow, 2088 (thou C) (: now : how), 6695 (3ow C, thou D) (: nowe, now BD).)

**Thow** in the reduced form -ow is very often attached to verbs. Thus:—

artow, 509 AB (art thou C, art(e) thou D); ertow, 5079 B (thow art A, are thou D); cf. 731, 5195, 5303, 5757. But,—art thow, 507 (artow B, art thou C, art(e) thou D), 3579 (art tow B), etc.

hastow, 554 (last thou CD); cf. 617, 904, 962, 3145, 3681, 4297, 4301, 4453, 4945, 5039, 5057, 5148, 5158, 5301, 5751, 5755, 6883 B, 6951, 6952.

sholdestow, shuldestow, 6714 (schuldist thou C, shuldest thou D); cf. 7651.

mayestow, 623 (mayst thou CD); cf. 673, 2101, 3738, 4927, 7522, 8074. But,—mayest thow, 5208 (maistow B, maist thou C, maist thou D); cf. 7493.

myghtestow, 4924 (maist thou C, maist thou D).

doslow, 5177 (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D); cf. 7097.

ne kastow, 5512 (ne hast thou C, ne haue ye ? D).

ne haldestow, 4938 (ne haddyst thou C, ne haddist thou D).

wiltow, wyltestow, 1011 (woltow B, wilt thou CD); cf. 4931.

woltow, 2446 (wiltow B, wilt thou C, wilt thou D); cf. 5513, 7520. But,—wolt thow, 2532 (wiltow B, wilt thou C).

nyltow, 792 (nylt thou C, nelt thou D), 3071 A (nylt to B, nil thou D); cf. 4269, 4912, 4965, 5151.

neltow, 5150 (nlytow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D).

noldestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD).

wostow, 588 (wost thou C, w. thou D); cf. 611, 775, 781, 843, 851, 855, 901, 956, 967, 3091.

wistow, 4486 (wistist thou C, wist thou D).

oughtestow, 6908 (aughtist thou C, oughtest thou D).

canstow, kaustow, 757 (cast thou C, canst thou D †); cf. 5122 (castu C), 5192.

darstow, 7642 (dastow A, durst(ist) thou C, darst(e) thou D).

dorbestow, 767 AB (durstyst thou C, trist thou D).

shaltow, 803 (schuldyst thou C, thou shalt D); cf. 5271 (shaltow(e)) B, 6391.

blamestow, 841 (-yst thou CD).

gnabestow, 5143 (-ist thou C, -est thou C).

intendestow, 6841 (entendist thou C, entendest thou D).

listow, 5056 (lyst thou C, liest thou D).

proferestow, 4303 (profrestow B, proferist thou C; D †).

sekestow, 4297 (-yst thou C, -est thou D).

sestow, 2883 AB (seest thou D).
Observations on the Language

§ 73.

seystow, 7524 (seistow B, scyst thou C, seest thou D); cf. 7654, 7886.
sceystow, seiestow, 912 (seydisth thou CD); cf. 917, 918.
sloombrestow, 730 (slomberyst thou C, slumberst thou D).
thenkestow, 2458 (thynkestow B, thinkist thou C, thinkyst thou D); cf. 5511, 5750.

It will be seen that these forms are common in AB, very rare in C (canstnu, 5122) and hardly found in D. AB have, however, full forms in -est, -st thou (thow), as well as the contracted forms.

Once the affixed -ow (= thou) is reduced to -e,—Where arte ?

(art D) (: carte), 7524.


he (A.S. hé), 21, 1164 f, and passim. he Ἰξίον, 6575 (the I. D; C†).

Note.—The colloquial contraction written a occurs (cf. a for have), but not in A: And on the Grekes ofte a wold a see, 793 J D (ost he woldē se A, oost he wold[e] se B, ōftē woldē he se C). Perhaps the scribe intended a + tough, 3269 B, for he tough (and low AC, or lowe D). For elided or slurred e in he, see § 125.

In 6440 C, Antenbrē = Antenbrē he; but cf. 5327 f.

she, 178 (scho B, sche C), 679 (sche C), 1166 f, 1689 f (sche C), 2832 f (sche C), 3995 (sho B, sche C † D), 4369 (sche CD), 5829 (see C), 7479 f (sche C), 7667 (che B, sche C), and passim; she Criseyde, 3968 B (cf. 1901 ‡). For the elision or slurring of -e in she, see § 126.

it (A.S. hit), nom., acc., and with prepositions. Usually it in all four MSS., cf. 5686 f (: sit sedet : yit), 5765 f (: yet : wit), 7124 f (: wit : yit), and passim.

But hit occasionally occurs (as, 297 D, 346 D, 1545 D, 2222 D, 3244 D); yt, 57 A.

Note.—Ten Brink’s rule “dass Chancer nach einem auslautenden Vocal, der nicht elidirt werden soll, stets hē—nicht ū—schreibt” (§ 270) is not observed in the Troilus MSS.

me (A.S. mé) dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 142 (!), 403 f, 828, 1120, 1274, 3152 f, 3416, 4744, 5497 f. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 1578 f, 4324 f, and passim. For mé with a preposition, see by me, 2076 f (: tyme : pryme). For elided or slurred -e in me, see § 126.

the (A.S. þē), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 829, 2177, 4290 (thee D), 8094, 8100 f. (b) Other oblique uses, cf. 6771 f and passim. What eyleth the, 4993 f.

hym (A.S. him), dat., acc., and with prepositions. (a) Dat. without prepositions, 82, 188, 694, etc., etc. (b) Other oblique uses, passim.

Var. him.]

hire, here (A.S. hire), dat. and acc., monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from the possessive (cf. (i.) bef. consonants; 126, 131, 177, 286, 315, 361, 370, 388, 454, 481, 840, 976, 1050, 1360, 1687, 1778, 1999, 2010, 2069, 2205, 2239, 2450, 3311, 3398, 3523, 4094, 4824, etc.; cf. (ii.) bef. vowels, 974, 1749, 3408, 3972, 4029,
§ 73. of Chaucer’s Troilus.

7223, etc.). Forms without -e occur even in A: thus,—her anoon acc., 116 A; to hyr spak, 3972 A; as hir lyste, 3974 A; sen her laughen, 7144 A.—Notice the following cases in rhyme: here (eam), 2876 f (to were = weir); of here, 3109 f (hire C) (: swere inf.); here (eam), 4484 f (hire BC) (: bere inf. : tere inf.), 5274 f (hire BC, her D) (: swere inf.).

It may be that when hire was emphatic it could be dissyllabic, even in the middle of a verse. Thus—

For-thi som grace I hope yn herë fynde, 973 A (hryc C, hiro Cp., in her y D, in hyre to B, in hir to G).

Biseching herë syn that he was trewe, 7948 A (hirë B, hiro C, hir D, hir[e] that sithe he Harl. 2392). [Here is not really emphatic. No variation in Cp. collation.]

In the following cases, however, a comparison of MSS. shows that the dissyllabic form is to be rejected: 977 C, 1056 A, 2159 C, 4827 A, 5365 C, 7212 C, 7226 C, 7454 AC, 7905 C.


we (A.S. we), 3707, 4856 f, 6176, and passim.

ye (A.S. gé), 26 f (3e B), 198 (3e CD), 202 f A (3e BC), 340 f (3e BCD), 5996 f (3e BC), 8055 f (3e BC, yee D); cf. 1364 f, 1373 f, 1667 f, 2860 f, 3441 f, and passim. For yé with a preposition, cf. yow.

they, thei (O.N. þir), 60 (theye B), 136 (thai B, the C), 763; cf. 134, 1167, 1260, 1302, 4224, etc., etc.

us (A.S. us), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 1034, 1412, 1526, 1585, 6488, and passim. For examples of the dat. without prepositions, see 1181 f (: Pandarus : thus), 1568, 6010. (Us rhymes with -us in Pandarus, Troylus, Diphnebus, Tydeus, and with thus: cf. 620 f, 1181 f, 1207 f, 1286 f, 1517 f, 2273 f, 2404 f, 2563 f, 6842 f, 7400 f, 7414 f, 7841 f, 7925 f.)

yow, you (A.S. éow), dat., acc., and with prepositions, 331 f (yow BCD) (: prow n. : how), 1329 (you B, yow C, om. † D), 4975 (yow B, you D), and passim. For examples of the dat. without prepositions, cf. 342, 431, 1421, 7728, etc., etc. [yowe, 4763 f (yowe B, you D) (: now).] yow rhymes with now, prow, how (cf. 331 f, 2523 f, 2746 f, 3165 f, 3853 f, 4322 f, 4406 f, 4491 f, 4763 f (yowe A), 5540 f, 5988 f, 6492 f, 8103 f).

Yé in fro ye, 5 f (: Troye : ioye), is apparently a reduced yow (cf. arte for artow), whatever one may say of ayeyn ye, 334 AB (C †, 3e D), where, on the whole, ye prob. = yea.
hem (A.S. him, hecom), 908, 2791, 2805, 4227, 4521, etc., etc.

Note.—Hem is found in all MSS.; him or hym sometimes replaces it (as, 31 A, 303 BD, 518 B, 558 B, 911 B; § CD, 2567 B, 4240 A); them is found only in D (see, e.g., 29, 31, 36, 50, 553, 4862, 5805); theym, 41 D.

§ 74. II. Possessive Pronouns.

my, myn (A.S. mīn). I. Sing. (a) my before consonants: my fo, 837 (myn C, my wo B); my brother, 2496 (myn C); my lord my brother, 2535 (myn ... myn C) (cf. 2711); my dere brother, 2760 (myn C), etc., etc.; mi spirit, 423 AB (myn C, the D). (b) myn before vowels: 16, 407 (D †), 432 (C †), 683, 772, 1134, 3081 (my D), 6112 (my D), 8081 (myne D), etc., etc. (c) myn before h: myn herte, 599, 606, 1652, 1664 (my D), 6593 (my D), etc.; myn hod, 2195 (myne D); myn hows, 3037 (my D); cf. 530, 1845, 1954, 3001, 3157, 6866; my dere hert alias myn hele and hewe, 461 (mi ... myn B, myn ... myn C); myn herte ayens my lust, 1560 (myn hest † ... myn C, my hert ... my D). (d) myn before consonants: myn peyne, 1560 AC (my BD); on myn byhalue, 2543 AC (my BD); myn dere herte, 3685 AC (my BD); go litel myn tregedie, 8149. C, so far as I have observed, uses only myn, whether before vowels or consonants; cf. 527, 612, 616, 2188, 2366, 2705, 2711, 2735, 3018, 3085, 3713, 3788, 3838, etc. (In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.) Cf. myn swetē herte, 5973 B (myn ownē AD, myne C.) (e) my before vowels: my auctor, 394 (myne BCD); cf. the variants under b, above. (f) When the possessive follows its noun, myn is of course the only form used. Thus,—Com(e) nece myn my lady queene, 2799 ABD (nece myne myn C); cf. 1510, 2280 (mynē B), 2320. And so when the possessive stands in the predicate (cf. 21, 3835, 5141f (myne BD) (: for fyn)), and when the noun is omitted (cf. 3849, 6960). II. Plural: myn peynes, 2984 (my BD, myne C); my sorwes, 4014 (myinne C); my cares, 7705 B (D †, myne C, [my] A); myne othe re lordes, 2566 (myn D).—mynē wordses, 4173 ABC (my E); cf. 6680 † C.—lordes myne, 4733 A (my BD).—myn eyen, 7699 ABD (mynē C).

thi, thy, thyn, thin (A.S. pīn). I. Singular. (a) thi bef. cons'ets.: thi brothères wyf, 678 (thyn C, thy D); thi bed, 2602 (thin C); thy destene, 520 (thi B, thyn C), etc., etc. (b) thyn bef. vowels: thin

---

1 "Som of hem took on hym."
2 myne (5973 C) is merely a graphical variety.
3 No variations noted in Mr. Austin's collation. 9-syl. in E.
owené cheyne, 509 (thyn CD); thyn aventure, 2604 (thin BD); cf. 513, 795, etc.—thi synne and thyn offence, 556 (thi . . . thin B, thyn . . . thyn C, thi . . . thyn D). [thine, 5751 D.] (c) thyn bef. h.: thyn help, 672 (thi BD, that † C); thyn hert, 923 (thin BD); thyn hod, 2039 (thin BD). (d) thyn bef. cons’ts.: thyn peyne, 589 (thi B thy D). C, so far as my notes indicate, uses thyn exclusively,¹ whether before a vowel or a consonant (cf. 346, 524, 587, 653, 677, 801, 926, 935, 1018, 1916, 2481, 2588, 2597, 2696, 2723, 3237, 3580, 4829, 4946, 5079,² etc.). The other MSS. usually have thi before a consonant (but cf. thin lif, 5079 D). (e) I have observed no instance of thy before vowels. (f) When the possessive is in the predicate, thyn is of course used, cf. 861, 1036, 3118 f (-e C) (: engyn), 4354, 6303, 6950. So when it follows its noun: cf. 8232. Cf. to hau for thynye, 3255 A (thyn BC, thin D). II. Plural: thi prouerbes, 756 (thyné C, thy D); thi sorwes, 794 (thyyné C); thi bryght eyen, 4289 (thyné C).—thyné olde ensaumles, 760 (thin BD); thyné eeres, 2107 (thyn B, thin D); thyné hestes, 3261 (thine B, thynne C, this † D); thyné † heunenes, 3460 C; thin hones, 7015 (thyn B, thine D, thynne C); thyn eyen, 7522 (thynne C, thyn D); thyn owené folk, 6951 (thynne C, thin D).— thyné nedis, 2039 C (thi AD, thy B); thynne † dremys, 7651 C.

his (A.S. his), so passim as possess. pron. with both masc. and neut. nouns sing. and plu. Cf. especially a friend of his, 548, 3638 f (: this); a man of his, 4883.

Note 1.—No MS., except perhaps D, by far the worst of the four, is free from the spelling hise (-e of course never sounded) for the possessive with plural nouns. Examples are: hise aventure, 3 AB (cf. 471 AC, 2430 AC, 5535 A); hisé fous, 994 A; hisé besté iapes, 2252 A (cf. 1658 AC, 1808 A (hysé C), 2117 A (hysé C), 2121 A, 2486 AC, 3339 AC, 7410 BC, 7452 AC); hisé honden, 3026 AB; hysé worthi dedes, 8133 A; hysé eyen, 1948 C; hysé honden, 2059 C, 8165 A; hysé bony[s], 305 C.—C even uses hisa for the singular: hisa here, 7591 C.³

Note 2.—Is is occasionally found for hís. Thus, 637 B, 4206 C, 6971 A, 6167 A. Dethés = deth his in 469 C (Lo here his lyf and from the dethes care).

hire, here, possessive (= her) (A.S. hire).

In the attributive use before consonants A varies between her and hire; for her, cf. 839 (C †), 5764, etc., etc.; for hire, cf. 95, 107, 975, etc., etc. Varieties are, BC hyre; BD hir; C hyr; D her. (Cf. also, for further examples, 102, 108, 126, 173, 281, 282, 285,

¹ thynn fo, 4823 C.
² In some of these cases the n is written in C; in others it is represented by the familiar stroke.
³ Supply [so] in C.
427, 542, 846, 1150, 1304, 1688, 1699, 1759, 1853, 1911, 2717, 3439, 6944, etc.) An examination of these cases, which are fair examples of the use of here, hire before consonants, will show that A has -e in all of them (here or hire); that the usual form in B is hire; in C hire or hyr; in D her. Forms without the -e are not common except in D, and are hardly found in A.

Good lines to illustrate this word are:—Hire wommen soonë til hire bed here broughte, 1999 (hire ... hire ... hire B, hire ... hire ... hire C, her ... her ... her D). Hire gouvernaunce hire wit and here manère, 3058 (hire BC, her D). Al thoughtë she here seruaunt and hire knyghte, 3825 (hire ... hire BC, her ... her D).3

Note.—Cases before vowels present no interest, for there elision would in any case reduce the word to one syllable. The spellings are in general the same as those already noted. (Cf. e. g. 305, 347, 1335, 1619, 1737, 3060, 3408, 6426, 72285. For cases before h, cf. 127, 655, 1742, etc.)

Absolute use:

A kynges herte semeth by hires a wrecche, 889 AB (hire C, her D).
And that I thus am herës dar I seye, 4450 (hires B, jouris C, her[s] D).
Shal han me holly herës til that I deye, 5106 (hires B, his C, hirs D).

Note 3.—It is doubtful if the possessive singular is ever hire (disyllabic) in this poem. The following cases, which seem to require or admit that pronunciation, disappear as evidence on a comparison of MSS.: 1350 A, 1903 C, 1995 A, 1999 B, 5221 C, 7132 C, 7316 C, 7413 C+, 7510 C.

The following two passages admit of a dissyllabic hire, but may also (if one likes the sound) be scanned as lines of nine syllables:

With a certayn of here owene men, 3438 (hire own B, hire owene C, her owne D).

I comende hire wysdom by myn hood, 7514 ABC (hir witte D).

oure (A.S. úre), gen., as singular possessive. In the attributive use the regular spelling of ABC is our, D usually has our (cf. (i.) before consonants, 171, 558, 559, 1518, 1728, 2506, 5985, etc.; cf. (ii.) before vowels, 710, 1448, etc.). But ourë is also found in D (as, 5721); and neither A nor B is free from our (thus, our wrecche, 7259 ABD (oure C), cf. 965 B, 8157 B, 8186 B).

All these cases are monosyllabic. Indeed, there seem to be no

1 This and 847 illustrate the indifference of A with regard to hire and here: That as here ioyes moten ouer gone So mote hire sorwes passen everychone (hire ... hire B, hyr ... hire C, her ... her D).
2 Here is rare in C (see 1853); hire is rare in D (see 6944).
3 In B, read thought[e]she; in D, thought[c].
4 hyr B.
5 In most of these A has here.
cases of disyllabic attributive *oure* (sing. or pl.) in the *Troylus* (see 5906, where *owre* would give an intolerable verse, and 3598 C, where comparison of MSS. restores the monosyllable). Cf., however, the following predicate use: she shal bleuen oure, 5201 f (our D) (: *owre* = *hour*). In the plural possessive use the attributive form is the same as in the singular. Thus,—oure hierdes, 3461 (our D); oure walles, 6144 (our BD); oure † cruel foone, 8229 D; cf. 1598, 2017, 4109, 4955, 5866, 8206.

your, youre (A.S. *éower*). (a) **Attributive position:**

Both forms are found in A before consonants. Thus: your, 429 (jour BD, joure C), 4955 (jour B, youre C); youre (in A the usual form), yowre, 122, 1180, 1219, 1307, 1426, 1508, 2190, 2523, 2801 (œuvre † C), 3051, 4018, 4830 (-e B), 7099, 7236, etc., etc. [Var. BCD 3oure; BD 3our; D your, yowr, 3owr; B iooure, 3owre; C 3ourre.] (For youre, cf. 337, 2526, etc.; for youre where l follows, cf. 334, 1378, etc.) *Youre* is monosyllabic in the attributive position, except perhaps in 2687, 3509; other exceptions (as, 198 AB, 1388 C, 5548 C, 7267 C, 7985 C) vanish on a comparison of MSS.

(b) In the predicate:

he is youre, 1672 f (joure BC, joures D)1 (: *oure horum*); youren is Mi spirit which that aught[é] youre be, 422-3 (jour[e]s . . . jour[e]s B, joure . . . jouré C, your[is] . . . youris D)2; he that is . . . your[es] fre, 2206 (joure B, jouris C, youris D);3 I haue ben yowre[s] also, 2944 (joures B, jouris C, joures D);4 cf. 4450 † C; I was youre and, 6342 (joure B, your D); I am youré † a[é], 6303 D (thyn ABC); I am joures † bi, 4354 D (thyn AC, thin B).

hire, here, = their (A.S. hire), monosyllabic, not distinguished in spelling from here = her. Cf. (i.) *bef. cons'ts*., 49, 63, 149, 151, 154, 705, 763, 907, 997, 1126, 1260, 1286, etc., etc. Cf. (ii.) *bef. vowels*, 51, 150, etc. The variant *heir* (5804 D, 7323 D; heire, 8218 D) deserves notice. *Their* is sometimes found in D (cf. 4861, 5369, 8123); *there* occurs in C 5803.

In,—Of *here* teris and the herte vnswelle, 5808 AC (hire B, om. † D), one has one's choice between *heré* and a 9-syl. line. 3304 A, however, should be corrected.

§ 75. III. Reflexive and Intensive Pronouns. The compounds of *self* (A.S. *self*, *sylf*, etc.) appear in the

1 *rh. ouris D.*
2 In B supply [that] in 423; in C dole (*the*) in 423.
3 In C supply [al].
4 Supply [al] in D.
Troilus in the forms -self, -selue, -seluen. (Child, § 46; ten Brink, § 255. Cf. also § 79 below.)

my self, myn self, myнюselue, myнюseluen.

myself, (i.) 537 (myself D, myn selue C), 669 (–e B, myn self C), 2286 (myn seluen the † C), 5204 (myn seluę † C; D †), 5286 (myn s. C, my selfe D); cf. 3729, 4495, 4940. (ii.) 628 (myn seluę † sen C, my seluę † sen D), 927 (myn s. C), 7637 (myn seluyn C); cf. 2225, 3632, 4745; my self hate, 5501 (–e D, myn self C).

myn self wil, 2094 (my s. BD); myn † silf vnethe, 7770 C.

my selue, 1191 f (myn s. C) (twelue), 726 f (meselfue B, myn seluue C, my sif D) (twelue); my selue I, 5903 (my sif D, myn seluyn wolde C).¹

my seluen, (i.) 5439 (myn self[e] C, my silfe † D), 6108 (myn selue C, my self[e] D), 7635 (my self[e] D, myn self † to C).

thi self, thy self, thyn self, thyn selue, thyn seluen.


thi selue, 3101 (–en B, thyne -yn C, thy -yn D), 5062 f (thyn s. C, thi silue D) (swych[e] twelue).—thi self[e], (i.) 5253 (thi seluen B, thyself † C †, thinself[e] † D); thi self[e] helpen, 5190 (–en B, selue (?)) C; D †. (ii.) thi selue, thy selue, thi selfe, cf. 3141 (–yn † C), 3212, 5513 (?), 8074.


hym self, hym-selue, hym-seluen.

hym-self, (i.) cf. 320, 896, 1460, 1864, 2163, 2249, 2558 BC, 3270, 3397, 5787, 5890, 6401, 6704, 6869, 6969, 6986, 7031, 7536, 7894. [Var. C hym self(e) (320); CD hym silf.] (ii.) Cf. 457, 745, 815, 1544, 5746, 5824, 6626, 6980, 7135 (seluyn C †), 7148.

¹ Metre doubtful: My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, sif D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) hae (hau B, a C) slaye (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho. (No variations in Mr. Austin’s collation.)
² Supply [ne] or read silf[e] in D.
³ Supply [so] in C.
⁴ Supply [it] in C. D, himselfe (?).
§ 75. of Chaucer's Troilus. 159

7233. [Var. CD selfe ; C selue.] Before he, his, cf. 662, 5890 C, 6572, 8184 AB.

hymselue, 2485 f (: twelue), 6461 f (hym=es. BD) (: twelue).

hym self [y]beten, 741 (h. s. ybeten BD, h. s. i-bete C). hym-self[e], (i.) 2558 (h. self BC), 4907 (-en B, -e C, h. silf to (i) D), 6704 CD, 7396 (h. self ABD 9-syl.), 7940 (-en B, -e C). hym selue sle, 5581 (-en B, [-e] D, [-e] fle † C).


herse-lself, hire-self, here-seluen, singular feminine.

here-self, (i.) 7079 (hirè-s. B, hire sowle D). (ii.) hire-self, here-self, 3619 (h. seluyn C, her self D), 1 5299 (hirè self D, hire self[e] wolde † C), 5418 (h. selue C, hire selfe); here self hym, 2716 (hirè s. BC, her self al D).


ourself seluen se, 2416 (-yn C, our seluyn D).

yourself self, youre self, youre selue, your seluen, yow seluen.

youre self, (i.) 2368 (jourè BC, jour D), 3751 (3. BC, your D).

(ii.) 118 (jourself B, jourè s. C, jour s. D), 4 5896 (3. B, 3. sylf C, your silf quod D); your self, 3621 (jourè s. BC), cf. 5513 D; jourè selue †, 2951 C.


youre selue, (i.) 3510 (3. seluen B, 3. seluyn C, your seluyn D); youre silf[e] † (?), 5512 D.


1 Supply [e] in A.
2 If we read makè (-yn C), we shall have hire-self in two syllables.
3 In this v. ABC have dane, D diane, for Daphne. In D read daphne her self[e] seluet.
4 Supply [ye] in B.
5 yow self † D (9-syl. †).
§ 76. IV. Demonstrative Pronouns.

that (A.S. ðæt), as demonstrative pronoun, passim. That = the, that
oon(\text{e}), 5349 A (that oon B, that on C, the toone D).

tho (A.S. þā), plural demonstrative (in substantive and adjective uses),
cf. 924, 1078, 2452, 3272, 4016, 4223, 4285, 4813, 5087 f, 5293,
5356, 5797, 5835, 6025, 7033, 7096, 7569.

thilke, sing., 185 (the ūlke C, that D ū),\textsuperscript{2} 939 ([e] D, thynke ū C), 2873
([-e] D), 3305 ([e] B, the ūlke C, that D ū),\textsuperscript{2} 4387 ([e] BD, theilke
C), 4501 ([e] B, ūlke C, that D ū),\textsuperscript{2} 5732, 6196 (ilke C ū), 6213
(that ilke CD), 6318 (theilke C), 7550 (thilk C), 8053 ([e] B,
that ilke C), 8202; thilkē haze, 3560 ([e] D).\textsuperscript{3} [Var. B thylke,
thylk\textsuperscript{[e]}.]

thilke, pl., 4114 (ilke CD), 5377 (theilke C), 5667, 5711 ([e] B).
[Var. B thylk\textsuperscript{[e]}].] thilke effectes, 2857 (thilk\textsuperscript{[e]} B, thilk D).

that ilke, sing., 2347 ([e] D), 5409 AB (that ylke D), 5435 ([e] B,
that ylke D), 5898 ([e] B), 7466.

this. Singular of course monosyllabic, and almost always written this
(cf. 424 f (i.e. is: i-wys), 484, 551, 1035, 1509, etc., etc.). Thisse,
1010 f A (this BCD) (: i-wysse : yse \textit{est}), is perhaps due to an
attempt to indicate the unvoiced sound of final s.

Plural variously written: thiss (7, 540, 5090, 5537, 5573, 6683,
etc.), these (169, 561, 1188, 2350, 5952, 8086, 8116, etc.), thise
(2110, 3460);\textsuperscript{4} but always monosyllabic, as well before consonants
as before vowels.

For further examples of the plural, cf. 705, 742, 893, 903, 995,
1086, 1870, 1875, 2152, 2391, 2469, 3134, 4299, 4533, 5333, 5347,
5642, 6359, 6707, 6742, 6743, 7423, 7502, 7599, 7711, 7935, 8091,
8142, 8214.

Note 1.—2350 C is corrupt. In 2153 A, transpose \textit{alle} and \textit{these}. In 3193
A, insert [\textit{as}]. In 4332 A, read \textit{weri} and \textit{theses}.

this ilke, sing., 2791 ([e] CD), 4688 AB, 6401 (this ylke D), 7232,
7876, 8115, 8129; cf. 1822 AB.

this ilke, thise ilke, these ilke, pl., 3349 (this ilk\textsuperscript{[e]} BD), 4180
([-e]
D), 5915 (thes ilke D), 7674; cf. 4035, 4156, 4236, 5032, 5810.

\textsuperscript{1} Supply [\textit{thei}] in C.
\textsuperscript{2} 9-syl. in D.
\textsuperscript{3} Supply [\textit{as}] in C.
\textsuperscript{4} 
\textit{This} and \textit{these} are common in A; \textit{this} and \textit{thise} in B; D has often \textit{theis} (501,
etc.). Varieties are,—\textit{thyse} (919 B, 2110 B), \textit{these} (1971 C\textsuperscript{2}), \textit{thysse} (5090 D).
§ 77. V. Interrogative Pronouns.

who, nom. (A.S. hwá), 551 (ho C), 2338 (ho CD), 3593 (ho CD), 7626, etc.

whos, gen., 2275 (whas B, hos C), etc.

whom, dat., 6598 (ho nom. † C; D †).

whom, acc., 3428 (hom C, what † that D), etc.; whom that I loue, 717 (hom that C).

what, I. Sbst., nom., 828, 1214 f; acc., 320, 356, 3159 f. II. Adj., nom., 401, 3512, etc.; acc., 552; of what man, 3992; what = why, 1347, 1377, cf. 1308. (Rhymes with that and hat.)

Note.—Remnants of the instrumental hwy are seen in why (cf. 1760 f, 3992 f) and in for-whi, for-whif, 714, 1097, 2601 (also occurring as a variant of forthi).

which, see under Relatives.

§ 78. VI. Relative pronouns (and pronominal adjectives), and the interrogative (etc.) which.

that, passim. that = id quod, 7567. ho at = who that, 3861 C.

whos, gen., 532, 700 (C †), 787 (whois C), 5025, 7680 (whoos D), etc.; the whos, 7339 (whos C †, the woos D), 7722 (whos (?C).

whom, dat. and acc., 189 (whan C), 533 f (‐(e) D) (: from), 937, 2802; cf. 98, 1244, 1912, 6676, etc.; for whom that, 766 (C †).

who so, 147 (ho so C); cf. 77, 603, 857, 2880, 4104, etc.

what so,—in what wyse so yow ylyste, 3889 (that 3ow C; D †).

what, as a "general relative,"—of what it be, 2418; evry gentil womman what she be, 8136; or of what wyght that stont, 3338.

which.

I. Interrogative (in both direct and indirect questions and in exclamations).

A. Singular. (1) Adj., which hous, 2274 (wich C, whiche D); to enqueren which thyng cause of which thyng be, 5672 (which . . . whiche B); whiche † opynyoun, 5635 D (whos AB). (2) Sbst. which of, 3040 (wich C). (3) = qualis, interrog., which a labour, 199 BC (swych l. A, such a l. D); what thyng and which is he, 401 CD (=e B, what A); into wich helle, 5374 C
(unto which heH D; st. not in AB). (4) = qualis, exclam., which a thonk, 803 (wych C; D †); which a dede, 5893 BD (swych A, wich a dede C).

B. Plural, which (= quales ?) doutances (ind. quest.), 200 (-e B, with † D, which dotauce[s] C).

II. Relative.
A. Which (without the).

(a) Which is used as a relative pronoun for all genders, with or without a following that. In the following examples the which is a simple relative (not attributive adj.); the presence of a following that is indicated by old-style figures in the verse-number.

(1) Singular, which, bef. cons'ls., cf. 74, 78, 94, 106 (whiche B), 206, 527, 1471, 7217. [Var. BC whiche; C wich, whych, whiche]-which, bef. r vocels, cf. 261 (wych C), 7925 C; in which he, 366 (-e B, wich C); of which hym, 3345 (wich C, of the which D).-whiche, 54 (the whiche B), 1121 (wchehe B, om. † D), 1415 (wich C; D †), 2231 (which [that] † B; l. om. † C), 2492 (wich B, wich C, which D), 2689 (wich CD), 2843 (wich BD), 3374 (wich D, whiche = which she), haplography, C), 5273 (wich BD, wich C), 7578 (of which † he C, for whiche † cause D).-whiche he, 1712 (wiche B, quych C, which D).

(2) Plural, of which that, 4236 C (whom AB, wych † I E; in which that, 8199; which er, 3575; which I, 7569 (-e B, the whiche C); 2 which that 2858 (wich B), 3427 (wich as B, wich that C, which that D).

(b) Which as a relative adj. (not = qualis). (1) Singular, by which reson, 5710 (wiche D), cf. 7578 D. (2) Plural, of whiche † sykis, 4207 C (wych [e] † D, swiche A, shwich [e] B defect.).

B. The which. Used either (a) as a purely relative pronoun, or (b) as a relative adjective (not = qualis).

(a) (1) Singular, the whiche, 3565 (the which BD; C †); bef. cons'ls., the which, 603 ([the] whiche C), 7241 (-e C). (2) Plural, the whiche he, 4884.

(b) (1) Singular, the whiche tale, 5328 ([e] BC); the which[e] cote, 8016 (-e C, -e? D †); the whiche thyng, 4331 (the which

1 C has the wheche for to wheche.
2 Supply [of] in A.
3 9-syl., exc. in D; but we are hardly to read which[e].
B, the whech C).1 (2) Plural, the whiche frendes, 6046 (-[e] BD; C †).

Note 1.—In 5930 we are apparently to read: “Soth is the wo the which that we ben inne,” but the MSS. vary. Which is sometimes miswritten by the scribe for swich, as 3299 D (cf. 2435 D).

Note 2.—Which. . . his is equivalent to whos in “The kynges dere sone, The good[e] wyse worthi fressh and fre, Which alway for to do wel is his won” 1401-3. Cf. “Which with a thred of gold she wolde it bynde,” 7175 C (but read woldé bynde). Cf., perhaps, “Er deth . . . Dryf out the gost which (so in ABD John’s, which G, that CCp.) in myn herte he (so in ABDGCp. John’s, om. C) beteth,” 5572.

Note 3.—As is used as a relative pronoun (— that) in 3244 C,—this as thow dost (this that AB, [this] that D), and in 3427 B,—thynges which as neuerç were (which(e) that A, wich that C, which that D).

swich, such (A.S. swile, swele). Examples are,—

I. Singular:

In A, swich, swych, such, (i.) 475, 550, 1794, 1970, 2153, 3338, 6627, 8001, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 619, 762, 985, 1750, 1813, etc.—In B, swich, swich, shwich, swich, (i.) 127, 475, 550, 777, 1794, 1879, 1970, 3338, 3604, etc.; (ii.) 369, 521, 1351, 1750, 3320, 3382, 3604.—In C, swich, swych, swech, (i.) 412, 1794, 1879, 1970, 2153, 3338, 4070, etc.; (ii.) 296, 369, 521, 762, etc.—In D, such, (i.) 1794, 2153, 3338, etc.; (ii.) 2245, etc.

Note.—Forms in silent -e occur in all four MSS. Thus,—in A, swiché (412)2, suche (1351); in B, swiché (291, 475, 562, 935, 1088, 2216, 2355, 3002, 3236, 7314, 7926), swiché (412), swiché (1663), swiché (619, 762, 955, 985, 1713, 2245, 3176), swiché (296), swirche, (2784); in D, swiché (550; cf. 2355, 4070). Cases in which we have an apparent -é (before a consonant), as, swiché, 227 B, 4581 B (cf. 1393 C, 1970 D, 3306 C, 6627 D), all depend on bad readings; so also swych[e] aventure, 5991 A (swich[e] C, suché D), in which we should read swich (swiché) an (with B cp. John’s HL. 2392; swiche an G).

II. Plural 3:

The plural ends in -e. Thus,—swiche fyue, 1211 (-[e] D, A †); swyche twyey, 1267 (such[e] D); suche tales, 1393 (-[e] B, [e] D, [-e] tale[s] C); swiche sikes, 4207 (-[e] B, whiche C, wych[e] E). So we should read,—swych[e] fyue, 1213 (-e BC; D †); swych[e] sorful sykes, 4203 (-e BE); swych[e] twelue, 5064 (-e D, -e tweine † C). Before vowels this -e is elided and often not written: cf. 1292, 2435, 3523, 3696, 3985, 4009, 4205, 6192, 6737. Cases of apocope occur: swich thornes, 2359 (swoché C, suché D); 4 if ye be swych youre, 1426 (swiché B, swich C, 1 Either the whiche thyng trwely, or the whiche thyng trwely.
2 Supply [the] in A.
3 Variations in spelling not registered except as they concern final -e or MS. A.
4 It is possible to read swich[e] if we read sende (mittat); BD have send.
such D); swych festes, 7792 (swich B, sweché C, suché D). For
suché thyngis, 562 C, read swech thyng.

§ 79. VII. Other pronominal words.
same (O.N. samr, definite sami; cf. A.S. same, adv.), selue (A.S. sylf, self, definite -a), in the definite use,—the same prys, 1266; the same thing, 1269; cf. 2606, 4390 (the selue wyse C), 6087 (C †, the
self[e] wit BD), 8018; the same hele, 7779; this same wyse, 5706
(the s. D); that selue wyse, 3197 (selue C, self[e] D); this selue
swerd, 5902 (seluyen C, the same D). (Cf. myself, etc., § 75.)

som (A.S. sum), adj. and subst. I. Sing. (i.) 33, 555, 844; cf. 973,
1215, 1344, 2210, 2884, 3333, 4658, 7068, 7115, etc. Irrational
e's are sometimes found, even in A: as, in some lond, 1123 ABD;
somme swych fantasye, 3874 A (som B, sum C, some D †). [Var.
BD some; C sum; D somme.] (ii.) 1197 (e D), 2079 (sum C,
some D †). II. Plural, some, (i.) 240 f (: ynome p.p. : overcome p.p.),
5630 f A (some † B, som D) (: to come : overcome p.p.), 5730 f (C †,
som D) (: come inf. : over-come p.p.), 7246 f (som C, somme D)
(: come inf.); somme, 5657 f A (some B, som D) (: to come); som
men, 1132 (somé B, somé grane D), 1341 (sum C, somé D), 2503
summe C, some D)1, 7123 (somen CD, somme han A), 7167 (e BD);
some, 1866 † D, 2669 † D, 3333 † D; some, 1132; som, before
vowels (var. BCD some, D somme), 911, 1042, 2257, 2523, 4403;
some han, 913; somme han, 7123 (some men B, somen CD).

And somé (somme G) wolé (wold BDG, wolde C Cp. Hl. 4912),
mucche (muche B, frete meche C, monche D, methe G, frete
Hl. 4912) here (hire B, her D, he G, and Hl. 4912) mete
(mone C, brede D, meten G, be hem self Hl. 4912) allone (alon
CD, al on G, alone Hl. 4912). See ten Brink, § 327.
And som (some BCD) thow seyst that a blaunché feuere, 907,
909.
somwhat, sumwhat (A.S sumhwæt), sbst. (used also adverbially), cf.
672, 1646, 2078, 2394, 2410, 5187.

other (A.S. óðer). I. as adj. (a) singular, other (var. B oother; D
othir),2 both definite and indefinite, before both vowels and conso-

1 Read wold[e] in D.
2 Otheré is sometimes found in the singular; see 352 C, 489 C, 4055 A, 4826 C,
7039 A. In 348 C, read othir enchesoun for othir entencioun.
nants: cf. 348, 352, 444, 489, 577, 702, 707, 709, 1574, 1592, 1639, 1894, 2079, 2251, 2537 f, 2747, 3506 A, 3586, 3953, 4050, 4573, 4826, 6180, 6493, 7573, 8044 A, 8055;¹ non other wyse, 5955 (not otherwyse C); o tyme eck and other, 2537 f (brother); the tother side, 7050 A (that other BCD); at the other out it wente, 5096 (atother C, at other? D); noon other, 7039 B.

(b) In the plural of the attributive use (whether definite or indefinite), othere (dissyllabic) is the regular spelling of AC, other of B, and othin or other (var. odir) of D: cf. 179, 355, 463, 465, 1583 (othere B), 1854 D, 2152, 2260, 2430, 2527, 2566, 3777, 4716, 5539, 5995, 8139 A. But other also occurs in A: cf. 26, 314 (other thing) (?), 1860.

II. As substantive: (a) singular, other, another, regularly: cf. 203, 643, 1449 (neut.), 2063, 2703 f, 3093 f, 3521, 3819, 4888, 5006 f, 5118 f, 5271 f, 5792, 5911, 7871 f. [Var. D othin.] otheř occurs: cf. 203 C, 3093 fB, 5253 A (prob. plural); an other in, 3618 (a nother B, another C, a nothir D), cf. 5351 A. (b) Plural. Forms as in I. b: cf. 1903, 3440, 5310, 6305, 6735 (othier B), 6738 (othier D); but I have not noted other in A—these othere in (pl.), 893 A (other B; C?; other vertus D). For othere seyn, 6735 C, read othir seyn [that].

Note.—For the genitive singular othere (dissyllable), see 3792, 4532 (othir D), 8127 (other D); othieris, 3586 D. [Var. C otheris dissyl.] For the genitive plural othere (dissyllable), see 8139 BD (othere dissyl. A).

ech (A.S. ēlec), adjective and substantive; eche, 510, 2703 (ich B, ēuarychę C), 3031 (ich B, ichę C); cf. 637, 643, 1127, 3263 A, 3266, 3850 D, 4182, 4890, 5069, 5911 A, 6204; ech for, 5074 (ichę C, eche D); eche rakel dede and eche vnbrylded chere, 3271 (ech . . . ech B, eche . . . eche C, eche . . . eke D); eche, 1343 (ech BD, vech C), 1479, 3819 (ech BC), 4532 (ich B), 4888, 5000 (ech B), 6149 (ech BD); cf. 2063, 2567, 3263 C (ich B), 3792, 4074, 5911, 7871, 8112; eche hym, 1071 (ech B, eche wight D); eche a del, 3536 (ech B); ichę, 3275 C (eche D; euerwyght AB); ech, bef. vowlis, 1078 (-e A), 4644 (-e BCD).—echone, 4880 f (echon C, ēuarychon D); (: allone).

Note.—The Troilus MSS. give no evidence for a dat. eche (see ten Brink, §§ 255, 260 B).

euary (A.S. afrere + A.S. ēlec) counts as a dissyllable (cf. ten Brink, § 262). The usual spelling is eury (cf. 84, 101, 185, 268, 328,

¹ Another is variously written an other, another, a nother, a-nother, cf. 577, 769, 1894, 3953, 6493.
Observations on the Language | § 79.

382, 397, 444, 484, 1097, 1273, 1280, 1478, 1613, 1675, 1686, 1800, 1889, 1975, 2033, 2074, 2262, 2472, 2663, 3023, 3068, 3196, 3275, 3339, 3369, 3445, 3469, 3670, 3850, 4527, 6012, 6341, 6998, 7121, 7478 (var. cueri, as 30741 C, 3322 C). But *eueryich* (2251 B (euere-ich), 4338 B, 6533 AB), *euerych* (6180 ACD, 6533 D, 7683 B), *eueryche* (512 D, 2703 C †), and *eueryche* (6533 C) also occur.

In the following lines we must read *euerych*, *euery* as a trisyllable, or regard the verses as consisting of nine syllables:

Every thing that sounded into badde, 6338.

*Euerych (euery C) ioye or ese (ese (is) C) in his contrarye, 7742 (D †).*

Note.—Certain apparent instances of trisyllabic *euery* (*euere*) disappear on comparison of MSS. Such are 2676 A, 3074 C, 3334 C, 3362 A, 3671 A. *Euerychon* rhymes sometimes with words that have no final -e, sometimes with those that have. Thus,—“euerichon, euerychon, 154 f (-oun B) (: Palladion), 5633 f (: on : noon); euericheone, 176 f (-ychon B, echon † D) (: allone); euerychone, 847 f (-on C) (: ouer gon(e) inf.), 905 f (: on BCD) (: allone : grone inf.), 5611 f (-on CD) (: allone : mon e n. moan) (cf. also 2683 f, 3254 f, 3507 f, 4880 f f D, 5529 f, 5440 f, 8230 f),

any, ony (A.S. ænig), sg. and pl., cf. 20, 23, 848, 963, 1259, 8044, etc. [Var. C oni ; D eny.]

*Eyther* (A.S. ægðer), adj. and sbst., (i.) 4792, 7869 (D †), 8127. (ii.) 5695. [Var. BD either ; D eythir.]

Note.—For *eyther* in 30ure eyther loun, 4830 B, A has bothere, C botheis, D bothe, EG Cp. brother†, John's brother, Harl. 2392 bothes.

*nether* (A.S. ne + A.S. ægðer), sbst., (i.) 5033; (ii.) 5792 (other † C). [Var. BD neither.]

bothe (O.N. bàðir), adj. pl., 139 f, 4782 f, 5698 f, 6506 f (both BD, bothe C); bothe yow, 983; vs bothe two, 1034; hem bothe lest, 4521 (hem † two ? D),2 6880 (-[e] B). (Cf. also 687 ([e] D),3 984, 1248 (bathē ? B), 1412, 1526 AC, 1572, 1585, 2277, 2373 (bathē D), 2825, 3262, 3784, 4007, 4065, 4160 BCD, 4312, 5254 ? D, 5794, 5894 ([e] D),4 6176, 6512, 7497) bothe, 1414 (-ė paire † D; bothe C), 2961 (both BD), 4528 (both BD), 4955 (both BD, bothe † 3oure C), 5546 AD (both B), 5592 (both † with D), 5595 (both B); bothe his, 2059 (both B); -e here (gen. sg.), 2914 (both B, -e ? D).

1 Read woyd[ed]. 2 brought[e] C, or supply [that].

3 Old-style verse numbers indicate that B has both[x].

4 Supply [we] in D.
§ 79.]

of Chaucer's Troilus. 167

Rhyme words.—wrothe adj. pl. pred. (all exc. 5698), forsothe (5698).

Note 1.—There are no genuine cases of apocope (cf. 4955 f, C, 5592 f D).

In 1526 BD, for bothe to deye read bothe deye (with AC).

Note 2.—The genitive plural is seen in ouer bothe labour(e), 965 (our bothe D, our bothis C); hire bothe awys, 3295. Cf., however, youer bothere lone, 4830 (ether B, bothis C, bothe D, bother John’s, bothes HI. 2392, brother + EGCp.).

owene, owen, owne, see § 53, V., p. 126.

men = one. The use of men as an indefinite pronoun (= Ger. man) is seen in men is nought alwey (y)plesed, 3288 (man is C, men be D), and in men was wont, 5528 (men were wolne C). In such cases as men clepeth, 6674 (callyn D, clepē an D), 7576 B (-eth A, -yn C, -ē D), men seyth (seyn BD) (see other examples in § 97), the verb may be regarded as plural (cf. of whos folye men ryme, 532 f, and see 241, 748, 7105 f). The form me does not occur in the Troilus (but see 5496 f C).

oon, on, o; noon, no, no (A.S. án, nán). 1 I. The full forms are found in all substantive constructions; so also in adjective constructions when the adjective follows its noun or stands by itself in the predicate. Thus,—

of yow oon, 350 f (oon(e) BD, on C); to loue swych on, 369 (oon B); so goodly on, 373 (oon(e) B); quod first that oon(e), 5349 (oon B, on C, the toon(e) D); I loue oon(e) best, 667 (on C, on(e) D); cf. 203, 521, 619, 626, 955 (an B), 1668, 1923, 2259 f, 2666, 2770 f, 7271 f, 8227 f, etc., etc.

oon (neut.) thenketh the bere, 6115; oon (neut.) of the tweye, 494 (on BC; D t); anauntoure and a lyere al is on, 3151 f (oon(e) B, on(e) D, is al on C); eure ye oon, 816 (oon(e) B, on C, on(e) D); they felle at oon, 3407 f (atton(e) B, at on C, at on(e) D); on(e) of tho (neut.), 5087 (oon B, on C, oon(e) D).

when ye ben on, 2825 f (oon B, on(e) D); cf. 4247 f, 5254 f.

oon the best, 474 (on(e) D, on of the beste C); oon the beste knyght, 1074 (oon(e) B, on D); on(e) the fairest, 1831 (oon B, on(e) D t (!), on of the fayrest C).

clerkes grete many on, 5630 f (oon(e) B, grete cl. m. on(e) D). 2

nas noon so faire, 101 (non BC, so fair was non(e) D); cf. 188, 1287, 1587, 1830, 1862, 2826 f, etc.); non(e) of tho, 924 (noon B, non C); thank not on smert and thow shal fele noon, 5128 f none B, non C).

pes ther may be noon, 6021 f (non BC, non(e) D); other bot is noon, 4050 f (non BC, noon(e) D); other wol ye she non, 3153 f

1 Cf. ten Brink, §§ 247, 264, 270. 2 B t omits clerkes.
(noon B, non(e) D); swych a ryng I trewe that ye have non, 3735 f (noon C, none D); nor other cure canstow noon, 757 (non(e) B, non C, om. † D); cf. 1451 f, 1702 f, 1809 f, etc.

cause non, 3993 f (noon(e) D); storye noon, 3341 (B † C †, non(e) D); lady noon, 6308 f (non C); bote noon, 7690 f (non BD; C †).

Pl., But whether that seche children hadde (hadde † c. A) or noon, 132 f (non BC, non(e) D) (: goon inf.).

II. In the attributive position, o, no are the forms usually found before a consonant (but C is fond of non); on, oon, non, noon, before a vowel or h. Thus,—
o day, 1573 (a B, oo C); o thing, 3725 (on C); not o word, 3899 (a B, on C; D †), cf. 1023; o god, 6506 (on(e) D, on † good C); cf. 673, 1122, 1253, 2118, etc.

no deuocioun, 187 (non C); no man, 238; no shame, 374 (ne † CD); no maner waye, 495; cf. 437, 590, 600, 631, 640, 670, 685, 689, 714, 722, 733, 737, 1281, 4118, etc.

Pl., no dremes, 7644; no suche tales, 1393 (non swich tale † C); cf. 7089.

oon entente, 61 (on D); on assent, 5008 (oon B, comune † D), etc.
noon other bote, 352 (non BCD); non yuel, 1666 (non BCD); non other wyse, 5955 (not † C); cf. 1538, 3826, 6805, 7039, 7451, 7573, 8055, etc.

Pl., none other fownes, 465 (doon † A, non C, non othir † fantasye D).1

noon helpe, 695 (non BCD); non hosbondne, 1839 (noon B, none (†) D); noon harm, 1886 (non CD), cf. 1661; noon hope, 3257 (non BC, no D); non heuy thought, 3981 (no B); noon hede, 4671 (non BD); noon honour, 6771 (non BCD); non(e) hate, 477 (non CD).

Note 1.—As indefinite article a is used before consonants, an before a vowel or h: an other, 540 (another C, a nother B, other pl. † D), cf. other, above; an a, 171 (D om. † an); an asse, 781; an errorn, 1001; etc., etc.; an heuenysh, 104 (a † perfit D); an heune, 1722, 1911; an hors, 223; an hauk, 671; an hows, 1058; an hed, 1952 (han hed B); an herte, 2956; an hard request, 2990; an heigh matere, 3128 (D †); an halle, 3698; an helle, 7759; etc.

Note 2.—In 645 ABD, Sith thus of two contraries is a lore (on lore C), a apparently = the numeral rather than the article (see also the variants in the examples under o, above).

ought (A.S. āwilht, āht, āwuht, ōht), (i.) cf. 578, 3309, 5947, 8100, etc.; (ii.) cf. 123, 1028, 3366, 7485, etc. [Var. B aught, ought; 1 In C, read desyre for desyred.
C ouȝt, ouȝt; D aught, ought.] Woot ought my lord ... this matere, 2711 (-e) B, ouȝt C, ought D); that I haue out myswent, 633 (aught B, ouȝt C, ought D).
nought (A.S. nāwilt, etc.), (i.) cf. 444 f, 1690 f, 5180, 5729 f, 6463 f, 7483, 7527 f, etc.; (ii.) cf. 4878, etc. [Var. BC nouȝt; D noght.]
For nought, nought, as a strong neg. particle, cf. 576 f, 807 f, 4344 f; an interesting "transitional" case is 1660 f: But for to saue his lyf and elles nought (-ȝt C, not D) (: wrought p.p.).

§ 80. Al, singular.

I. In its strictly adjective use al (sg.) is commonest before the definite article (cf. 212, 1192, 1224, 1506, 1833, 1906, 2626, 2844, 3220, 3277, 7581) and other more or less definite words. Thus,—

before this (cf. 504, 551, 1101, 1262, 1383, 1509, 1934, 2405, 2446, 2580, 2675, 2685, 2798, 2892, 3173, 3302, 3358, 6764)1; before that (cf. 1036, 3071, 4751); before thilke (cf. 2873, 3560); before thi (cf. 522, 589, 830, 2401, 2597, 3205); before my or myn (cf. 721, 873, 1954, 1956, 2083, 2770, 2977, 3020, 3085, 3235, 3843, 4140, 4146, 4749, 5602);2 before his (cf. 265, 327, 665, 994, 1142, 1419, 1657, 2442, 2623, 2637, 3278, 3726, 6438, 6927, 7902); before here (poss. sg.) (cf. 2214, 2555, 2752, 2757); before hire (poss. pl.) (cf. 63); before swych (cf. 2824, 4241, 7125); before your (cf. 4741).

Note.—In these uses the word is regularly written al; but alle (alle) is also found.3 Thus,—alle this thyng, 2001 A (al BC, af the thenges D); alle this matere, 2514 AB (of þ this m. C; D (?)); alle the richesse, 3191 (al BC, al the þ rehetynge D (?)); alle this work, 3544 (al CD); alle that tale, 4245 (al BD; C†); alle our labour, 948 (al C); alle his fulle myȝt, 1419 C (alle his ful[le] C, al his fulle A, al his ful[le] D) (cf. 7046). Cf. also, for alle in these uses, B 212, 1192, 1506, 1509, 1934, 1954, 2083, 2405, 2824, 3220, 7125; for alle his, B 265, 994, 1142, 2623, 3726, 6927.

II. The half substantive use of the singular al (as in: here is al, al is wel, etc.) requires no special notice. The proper form is of course al (cf. 544, 952, 1045 f, 1406, 1757, 2000, 2297, 2583, 3101, 3148, 3370, 3482, 3494, 3687, 4459, 4641, 7378), but alle is sometimes found; the final -e, however, has no significance, and is never sounded (thus: alle, 2583 B, 3370 B; alle, 1406 B, 1757 B, 3482 B, 3687 B, 4459 B, 7378 B). For the substantive use of al (sg.) as object of a verb, where the proper form is of course al, cf.

1 For cases where no noun follows the this, cf. 351, 386, 2544, 2591, 2716, 4638, 5062, 5734.
2 Remark 1914 f.
3 B 2626 is unmetrical, unless, with Furnivall, we supply [w].
4 Supply [his] in B.
Observations on the Language

1302, 1914 f, 2409, 2680, 3102 BCD, 3766, 4027, 4166 f, 5636, 8180. Here too alle is found, both at the end of the verse (cf. 4166 f B) and elsewhere (for alle, cf. 1302 B, 3102 A, 3766 B; for alle, cf. 4207 B), but the -e is never sounded. For al (sg.) used substantively after prepositions (as, yn al, for al, ouer al, with-al, etc.), cf. 396, 437 f, 921 f, 1129 f, 2306, 2494, 2655, 2709, 3306, 3319 f, 7183 f, 7682 f. As before, the variants in -e are merely graphical (cf. 921 f B, 1129 f B, 2655 f B, 7183 f B, 7682 f B; for alle, cf. 396 B, 3306 C). Exception—with alle, 288 f (: falle inf.). This is the only case.

Note 1.—Observe: he at hool, 3855; thy lady vertuous is al, 891 f (alle B) (: in general : yn special); whom I am al and, etc., 4449 (alle B); this (= this is) al and som, 5855 (alle & somme D), cf. 5936.

Note 2.—The spelling of AC is almost uniformly al (aff occurs, however, in 386 A, for example). In D aff is very common.

III. The form alle in the singular is found or required in the following verses:

In whom that al[le] vertu lyst abounde, 1244 (all[e] B, euery D; C is diff. †).

As alle trouthe and al[le] gentiltesse, 1245 (alle ... alle B, al[le] ... al[le] C, in all[e] trouthe and all[e] ientilnesse D).

To euery wight that alle prys hath he, 1273 (al the prys C, al[le] pris D).

By al[le] right it may do me no shame, 1848.

In al[le] ioye and surete out of drede, 1918 (alle ... seurte B, al[le] ... seurte CD).

Thurgh which is al[le] sorwe fro me ded, 1930 (Thurgh [which] is allë s. f. m. d. B, Thour wiche as † al sor f. m. d. C, Thurgh which is al[le] sorow fro me dede D).

To flemen alle manere vice and synne, 1937 AB, (To fle[me]n alle maner v. & s. C, To flemë al[le] manere v. a. s. D).

Of alle ioye hadde opned here the yate, 3311 (al[le] B, alle ... openyd C, al[le] ioy ... openyd D).


And in despit hadde alle wrecchednesse, 4629 (al[le] C, despite had al[le] D)

And alle worldly blysse as thenketh me, 5497 (And (and) alle B, And euerywordely ioye C, all[e] worldly blisse D).

By alle right and in a wordes fewe, 5942 (al[le] BC).1

1 In CD supply [a].
As I that al[le] trouthe in yow entende, 6311 (all[e] D).
Thus Pandarus with al[le] payne and wo, 6861 (alle D).
Enlumyned with the sonne of alle blysse, 6911 (enlumyned with
sonne of a. b. B, enlumynyd with the forme of a. b. C, enluminèd
with sonne of a. b. D).
And here I dwelle out-cast from alle ioye, 6978 (cast out C, out(e)
cast(e) D).
And thus despeired out of alle cure, 7076 (oute BD ; 7 lines om. † C).
But alle trouthe and alle gentiinesse, 7980 (al[le] . . . al[le] B,
But subgit be to alle poesye, 8153 ABD (not in C).

It will be observed that in all these cases alle has a natural accent,
and consequently needs an ictus, and that the noun that follows is
accented on the first syllable. In these circumstances the form al
is obviously impossible. In other words, the verse will not bear
such a phrase as al sorve when al is emphatic: the poet must use
a form alle, or give up the phrase. Child (§ 30) has cited several
cases of this alle. Ten Brink ignores the idiom. Freudenberger,
Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in Chaucers heroiischem Verse,
1889 (Erlanger Beitriige, iv.), p. 35, remarks that Chaucer "vor
Abtrakten im Singular häufig die schwache Form alle setzt, war
auch die bessern Hss. meist haben," referring to ten places in the
Canterbury Tales and to eight in the Troilus (1848, 1930, 3311,
3447, 4629, 5942, 7980, 8153). As to the grammar of the final
-e, one hardly dares to hazard a guess.

If the noun that follows allows an accent on the second syllable,
alë is of course unnecessary. Thus,—
As to my dome in âl Troyès cyte, 100 (allê B).
To âl honoir and bounte to consente, 2529 (alle BC).

Note.—In al nyght, either al or nyght receives the accent, but not both.
Hence,—âl nyght, 3705 (C (?), allê B), 4308; al nyght, 3710 (allê B),
3715 (allê B, al wold D).

IV. Al, whether adjective or substantive, has in the plural (1)
regularly the form alle, which is of course elided to alle before (2)
vowels, and (3) h in certain cases. When such elision takes place,
we sometimes find (4) the -e left off, as in the case of all other words
in elided -e.
(1) ye wysë proude . . . folkës alle, 233 f (folk[es] alle C, folkys
alle D) (; thralle inf. : bifalle inf.).
allë ye, 340 (al[le] D).
of allë louers, 376.
Observations on the Language

Mystrusten alle or elles alle leue, 688 (al . . . al[le] C, aH . . . al to leue D).
the Grekes alle, 1039 f (: falle inf.).
alle prowde (omnes superbae), 1487 (al[le] D).
here brighte thoughtes alle, 1854 f (aH D) (: falle inf.).
this othere termes alle, 2152 f (: calle inf.).
alle folk, 2695 (al[le] BD); cf. 2813.
hem alle thre, 2805 (C (?); al[le] D) (cf. 987, 3051).
on alle syke, 2903 (al[le] D).
thyne hestes alle, 3261 (this hestis aH[e] D).
alle tho that lyuen, 3272 (al[le] BD).
of vs alle, 3600 f (of hem alle BC, of hem aH D) (: calle inf.: falle inf.).
as ye wommen demen alle, 3614 f (aH D) (: calle inf. : calle reticulum).
amonges alle, 3700 f (aH D) (: halle n. : falle p.p.); cf. 6614 f.
we shulle ben alle merye, 3794 (al[le] BD).
in alle nedes, 4614 (alle the B, al the D).
the goddes alle, 4930 f (aH D) (: calle inf. : falle p.p.).
of sorwes alle, 5163 f (: byfalle inf. : calle ind. 1 sg.).
hom they wenten alle, 5392 f (aH D) (: out of the halle : falle inf.).
alle, 5670 f (aH D) (: falle accident); cf. 5712 f.
among vs alle fynde, 6488 (al[le] B).
houses alle, 6910 f (aH D) (: out falle p.p.).
this drede I most of alle, 7067 f (aH D) (: by-fallo accident : calle cadam); cf. 5762 f.
here corn and vynes alle, 7833 f (aH D) (: in stalle).
(Cf. also 561 f, 903 f, 3527 f, 3530 † B, 5090 f, 5130 f, 6143, 6533 f, 6561, 6725, 6894 f, 6955, 7426 f, 7542 f, 7783.)
(2) men myghte on vs alle y-se, 1439 (alle se C; om. † D).²
the goddes alle, 3226 (al D).
his(e) wordes alle, 3339; cf. 4384.
I spake hem alle vnder correccioun, 4174.
myn othere things alle yfere, 5995 (al B, aH D)³; cf. 8134.
to fayllen alle yfere, 6114.
(Cf. also 240, 463, 688, 2858, 3449, 3608, 4109 † D, 4609, 5730, 6141, 7246.)
(3) alle herë (poss. sg.) lymes, 282 (al D).

¹ In all the cases in rhyme cited is this parenthesis the rhyme-words are infinitives.
² Supply [myghte] in B.
³ Supply [ek] in B.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

alle here (poss. sg.) wommen, 3530 (al D, alle † wommen B); alle here sore sykes, 7397 (aH D); cf. 2513.
alle his goodly wordes, 7081 (7 lines om. † C, aH D).
alle hire (poss. pl.) goddes, 8213 (aH D).

(4) ye lyue al yn lyst, 330 (loue al in rest C).

al and some, 1448, 2234 (alle C).
al hire folk, 1995 B (alle C, aH D); cf. 1704.
aH hise fyngres, 2117 (alle BC, al D).
hire folk weren al aweye, 2279 B (alle C, om. † D).

3 cf. 2513.
al hire (poss. pi.) goddes, 8213 (aH D).

(4) ye lyue al yn lyst, 330 (loue al in rest C).

al hire folk, 1995 B (alle C, aH D).
al hire folk weren al aweye, 2279 B (alle C, om. † D).

3 cf. 2513.

§ 80.]

V. But alle is the plural form before the, this, etc., when these words count as a syllable (ten Brink's rule, § 255). Thus,—
alle † the ladyis, 186 C (ay ABD).
alle youre observaunces, 337 (al D). alle the men, 838 (al D).
alle these othere, 893 (alle this other B, al the other † D †). alle the othes, 1384 (al C, aH D; othës B, othis CD).
alle the weyes, 1907 (al D).
alle the folk, 1973 (al BD). [Plu. verb.]
aH the thinges †, 2001 D (sg. is right).
alle the dores, 3075 (aH D).
alle the temples, 3225 (al D).
alle these thynges, 3641 (al this wonder B, of this wonder CD); cf. 2405 C.
alle youre wordes, 4409 (al B, alle these C).
alle the goddes, 4514 (al the goodnes † D).
alle the nedes, 4614 B (al the D, alle nedes AC).
alle youre frendes, 6218 (alle † oure C).
alle this nyghtes two, 6683 (al B, alle these C, aH thes D).
alle these thynges, 8086 (al B, aH D).

Note.—Allë these louveres (†), 2153 † A, needs transposition (these l. alle).
al the peple, 1743 (alle B).
aH the thinges, 2001 D † (alle this thyng A, al BC).
aH these thynges, 2350 (al this B, C †, al this thing[es] D).

1 Can this al be adv.? 2 Singular †
3 A † omits alle. 4 Supply [and] in C.
al this folk, 2652 (alle thise folk C); al the world, 3119 (al BC, al the peple D)\(^1\); cf. 1463, 3119, 3264, 3318, 4765.

al the prophesies, 7857 (alle D, -cy C).

Ten Brink (§ 255) leaves the impression that alle pl., is usually apocopated before “syllable-building” article the (or pronoun), but not otherwise. This is surely not accurate. We should expect such apocope as well when the is reduced to th', if the word following the th' is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have,—

This yard was large and rayled aH the aleys, 1905 (alle thatelys B, alle the aleys C, D om. al).\(^2\)

Indeed it is hard to see how we can in any circumstances have the order “alle X ’” without apocope. Accordingly we find,—

Another day shal torne vs alle to løy, 6293 (aH D, com vs al D).

This is o word for al, this Troylus 4502 (al, that B). [Sing. ?]

Now hem he hurte and hem alle down he caste, 1284 (cf. varr. ll.),

is not a sure case. Alle may be merely the adverbial al. Similarly the construction of al is not entirely unambiguous in,—

And of the furyes al she gan hym telle, 7861 (furies also ? C, furîes she ? D). [Should we read als ?]

Me from disesis from alle peynys smert, 7783 C, should be emended to dise of alle peynys, &c., as AD indicate.

On hys by-halue which that vs alle sowle sende, 2819 A, is also clearly wrong. The reading of G: On his half which(e) that soule vs alle sende, seems right, and is rather supported by B † and C. Cp. and John’s read: On (Of J) his halfe (half J) which (om. J) that soule vs alle sende.

In 688 D, read alle leue for al to leue.

Note 1.—In 3765, Considered alle thingês as they stode (all[le] thingis e) D, is of course to be read, not,—Considered alle thingês, etc. But cf. Considered aH[le] thyn(g) it may not be, 2375 (all[le] thyn(g)e) B, alle thyn(g)e C, al thing well(e) D. In 1920, al is doubtless a collective singular.

Note 2.—In the following lines thyn(g) is probably to be regarded as a plural.

Ouer all[le] thyn(g) he stood [for] to byholde, 310 (alle thing(e) ... for to B, alle thyn(g)(e) [he]\(^3\) ... for to C, all[le] thing (e)he stood [for] to D).

Neez all[le] thing hath tyme I dar avowe, 3987 (alle thyn(g)e BC).

\(^1\) In the case of collective nouns (like world = people), I have assumed that they take plural constructions unless the text has some indication to the contrary (as, e.g., al the world is blind, 3370). This remark of course does not apply to al this world = this universe, 3215, and such cases (cf. 3302). For doubtful instances, cf. 173, 804, 1578, 4086 (alle this world AB), 4446.

\(^2\) A reads garden, repeated by error from the preceding line. Yard is surely right (3erd B, 3erd CD). C omits was, which must be supplied.

\(^3\) thynge = thyn(e) he.
In alle thynge is myn entente clen(e), 4008 (al[e]e B, alle thynge . . . entente[e] C, al[e]e thing al D).
That wost of alle thing(e) the sothfastnesse, 6742 (of al this thynge(e) B, of al this thynge C, of alle thing(e) D).
As to : Whan that he sey that al[e]e thynge was wel, 3538 (alle thynge(e) B, woste alle thynge(e) C, wist[e] that al thing D), see p. 109.

§ 81. The genitive plural of al (cf. Child, § 44; ten Brink, § 255) remains in the Troilus in,—
alderebeste, 4439 f (alde beste B, aldyr best C, altherbest D).
alder best (adv.), 1001 (alder best(e) B, aldyr best C, althermost D).
alderfirst, 10621 (altherfirst D), 4736 (aldirfirst(e) B, aldirfirst D);
alderfirst[e], 2039 (aldir first(e) C, alther first[e] D).
alder leuest, 3081 (aldyr leueste C, alther levest D), 6939 (aldyr louest)
aldermost, 152 (althermoost D), 248 B (alderemost A, aldrymost C, althermost D), 996 (aldyr most C, althermost D);5 althermost,
alderwisest, 247 (aldyrwysest C, altherwysest D).

ADVERBS AND OTHER PARTICLES.

§ 82. Anglo-Saxon adverbs in -e preserve their termination in the Troilus (Child § 69; ten Brink, § 246, Anm.).

Note.—Besides Anglo-Saxon adverbs, the following list includes a few later analogical formations. For blyue, inne, oute, thanne, whanne, see § 88.
blythe, 4836 f C, is an error for blyue.
bryghte (A. S. beorhte), 7383 f (-ht C, light D) (: alighte pret. 3 sg. : myghte pret. 3 sg.);
bryght and shene, 4700 (-e B);
clene (A.S. clâne), -e, 4672, 7417, 7561, 8058.
depe (A.S. déope), 1655 (-e C), 3434, 5251 f (: wepe pres. subj. sg.),
depe (A.S. déope, W.S. diere, dyre), 8164 f (: pere n. : here inf.) ; -e,
defere (A.S. déere, W.S. diere, dyre), 8164 f (: pere n. : here inf.); -e,

1 A 9-syl. verse in ABD (C cut out).
2 Supply [me] in D.
3 Supply [the] in D.
4 Supply [him] in D.
5 For arn (are) C (D), read erren.
6 Supply [saide] in B, [wa] in C.
 Observations on the Language

§ 82.

dare, fayre (A.S. forg(e)re), 1413 f (aperyre subj. 1 pl.), 4398, 5684 f (: necessarie 1); -e, 1971, 6710 (om. † C).

daste (A.S. fæste), 534 f (-t B), 748 f, 917 f, 1038 f, 1229 f, 1282 f, 1361 (om. † A), 1742 f, 1773 f, 1957 f (-t C), 1983 f, 1985 f, 2022 f, 2239 f (-t C), 2249 f (-t C), 2360 (-e) B, 2443 f, 2650, 2795 (-e B), 2999 f (-t C), 3936 f, 4029 (-e) B, -[e] † hent D), 4609 (-e) BE), 4779, 4792 2, 4884 (-e) B, 4916 (-e) B), 5182 f, 5336 f, 5576 (-e) B), 5892 3, 6901, 6959 (-e) B), 7317 (-e † hadde C), 8004 f (-t C), 8185 f; fast[e] for, 962 (-e C); -e, 3069 (-t BD), 4705 † A (sharpe B, sharp C), 6736 (-t BC), 6817; fast (before vowels), 1174 (-e C) 4, 2789 (-e C), 7019 (-e CD); fast he, 190 (-e † he C) 5; -e he, 360 † D, 2180 AB, 7598; -e here (gen. sg.), 7374 (-t B); om. † C); -e hadde, 7317 † C; -e homward, 2388 (-t BD).

In all cases registered above in which faste occurs at the end of a line D has fast, except in 5182 and in 8185 (which is not found in D). Old style figures indicate that D has fast[e]. In 1361 D it is possible to scan fast.

Rhyme words.—laste inf. (534, 1038, 1957, 5336, 8185), the laste, my laste (534, 917, 1038, 1229, 1773, 1857, 2022 (last[e] A), 3936, 5182, 8004), caste pret. ind. 3 sg. (1229, 1282, 2443, 3936, 5182), caste inf. (748, 1773, 2249, 2999, 5336, 8185), paste pret. ind. 3 pl. (1742), thraste pret. ind. 3 sg. (2239), past e pres. ind. 1 sg. (2249), agaste inf. (1982).—fast adv. = faste adv. (1835-5).

foule, fowl, -e, 5684, 6239 (foul B); -e his, 6129; -e falle(l), 5124 (-e CD; -e B † ).


hard[e] (A.S. hearde), hard or, 1353; hard hym, 4373 (-e C).

heighe, heyhe, hye (A.S. héeah, héeage), heighe, 1486 f (hie C, hy D); hye, 3026 f (highe B, hyhe C), 5861 f (heye B, high D, in † hye C); heighe, 5658 (heigh B, high D), 6371 (?) (heigh B, hie † D), 6622 (heigh B, hie C, hie D); heyhe, 4985 (heighe B, hie C, high D).

Note.—For hygh and low, 3260, and hye or love, 2869, see note to love.

Rhyme words.—eye (l. ye) (1486), prye inf. (1486), glorifie inf. (3026), dye inf. (5861), melody (3026), companye (5861):

hoo te (A.S. hâte), drenken (l. dronken) hadde as hoot and stronge, 4232 (hote B); cf. I hadde it neuere half so hote as now, 4492 (hoo te B, hoot D, ofte † C).

i-lyke (A.S. ge-lite), To seruen (-yn B, -e D) and ben (ben(e) D, ay ben C) ay (om. CD) i-lyke (i-lik C, y-lyke D) diligent, 2986; Was euere y-lyk[e] (i-lik[e] C, yholde † B) prest, 3327. (Cf. lyk, § 83.)

1 So AB; -rye D. We must read necessarie.
2 Read ran[re] in D.
3 Supply [hire] in B, [her] in D.
4 Supply [seyde] in D.
5 But supply [ful] and read faste.
6 But hath in A is the corrector's insertion.
late (A.S. late), 3310 f (:yate n.), 7104, 7504 f (yate n.); late, 1483 (lat B, -ė war C), 3218, 7106; latē † is, 7433 (-e BC, -ė; it (f) D). 2

longe (A.S. longe, lange), 59 f (long D), 617 f, 1487, 1630 f (long D), 2212 (langē B), 2325 f (long D), 2330 (-[e] D, -e B), 2475 (-[e] ? D), 2860 (-[e] D), 3043 (long † shal D), 3647 f (long D), 4988 (-[e] D), 5133, 7054 f, 7225 f, 7495, 7565 f (long D); -e, 2008 3, 2075, 3207 (-</d [e] B) 4, 4159, 4270 (-e † as BC 5, -[e] [as] E), 5770 (alonē † be C), 6350 (-e † D), 6659 (lenger † endure D), 6795; -e he, 723 (long D) 6; -e hadde, 5832 (-e † hire (sg.) C) 7; longē † of, 2807 A (-ė his B, long his D, -e here (pl.) C); longē here (hic), 3661 C 6 ()[-ė] D, alwey AB).

Rhyme words.—longe inf. (617, 1630, 7054), longe pres. subj. 2 pl, (2325), inf. (7565), wrongs adj. pl. (3647), stronge adj. pl. (59, 7054, 7225, 7565).

Note.—In some of the following cases there may be confusion between the adverbial and the adjective construction:
For it were a long disgression.
Fro my matère and you to longē to dwelle, 143-4 (-ė dwelle C, for you long to dwelle D).
Or that it be ful longe (long D), 832 f (: longe inf.).
Long streyght he hyre leyde, 5825 (-ė B, a long f C, longē strey(e) D). Ten dayēs nys so longē not tabyde, 6716 (-ė to ? × C, -ė to D).
How longe it was bytwene, 7449 ABD ([how] longe C).
Thenk not longē to abyde, 7518. 8 (Certainly adj. = Don't regard it as tedious.)

To longe were it for to dwelle, 7847 (long it B, [all] to longe C, longe it D).
lowe (O.N. adj. lág-r), heng here hēd ful lowe, 1774 f (lawe B) (: throwe n.); stoupen on hire stalk[e] lowe, 2053 f (: rowe n. : throwe inf.).
lowe lowte, 3525 (-ė † to D, low † risit (f) C); she stood ful lowe and stille alone, 178 (low BD); I . . . wol . . . folowe here spirit lowe or hye, 5861 (low B, forth † C).

Note.—In "For hygh and low withouten any drede I wole alwey thynke hestes alle kepe," 3260-1 (heigh + a lough B, key and low C, hy or lowe D), and "And hye or lowe after (after that D) a wyght entendeth The ioyes that he hath youre myght it sendeth," 2869-70 (heigh or lawe B, hye or low D), the construction is probably adverbial rather than adjectival.

lowe (A.S. hlūde), 1485 f (-d D, froude † C), 2005 (-[e] D), 2162 f (-d D), 3520 f (-d D), 3585 (-[e] D, -ė † C), 7868 f; -ė, 390 (-d D) 9; -ė † he, 6568 C (deth ABD), 7607.

Rhyme words.—prowd adj. pl. (1485), the proude sg. (7868), koude ind. 3 sg. (2162, 3520).

1 † But al to latē cometh the letturnye.
2 AD easily emended so as to read late.
3 Old-style figures indicate that D has long.
4 But read, longe ich [it].
5 In OC supply [when] and read longe.
6 Supply [he] in B.
7 Supply [ē] in C.
8 Dele the first (to) in A.
Observations on the Language

narwe (A.S. nearwe), narwe ymasked, 4576 (harde \(\dagger\) C, narwe yma[\(\dagger\)]ked A).
newe (A.S. néowe, W.S. ní(e)we, L. neowe), 222 (-[e] B, new y-shorn D), 440 f, 2988 f, 4541 f, 6628 f, 7013 f, 7020 (-[e] BD, -e \(\dagger\) C)\(^1\), 7696 f (new B), 7935 f (anewe \(\dagger\) C), 7946 f; newe and newe, 2958 f (new and newe BD); newe, 364 (new B), 1907 (new BD), 5119 (new D), 7373 (new D, newely \(\dagger\) now C); -e his, 2766 (new B, now \(\dagger\) D); new hym, 4388 (-e BCD).

Rhyme words.—hewe n. (440, 4541, 7935), trewe adj. sg. indef. (7696, 7946), sg. def. (2985), pl. (2958, 7013), vntrewre prod. sg. (7935), rewe inf. (2958, 6628), knewe ind. 3 pl. (4541).

rathe (A.S. hraðe), 2173 f (bathe inf.), 4867 f (skathe n.: bathe inf.), 7300 f (skathe n.).

rowe,—loken rowe, 206 f (lokkyd row D) (browe n.).

sharpe (A.S. scarpe), 729 f (harpe n.), 2119 f (harpe n.: harpe inf.); -e, 4705 (sharp D, faste \(\dagger\) A). [Var. B charpe; C scharpe.]

shene (A.S. adj. sci(e)ne, scène), 4700 f (bytewne), 5901 f (quene).

[Var. B sheene; C schene.]

shorte; short[ê] for to syke, 2900 (schorte C). Cf. This (= this is) short and pleynë theeffect of his message, 5552 (-e B, schort C, Thus shorte D).

smerte, 4905 f (herte: sterte inf.).

smoth (A.S. smóðe), That han herë top ful heighe and smoth y-shore, 5658 (smoth D).

softe (A.S. sófte), 195 f (soft D), 279 (-[e] B, -e he C, soft he D),\(^2\) 914 f (soft D), 2113 f, 3284 f (soft B), 3450 (-[e] BD), 3509 f, 4480 f (-t B), 5202 f (soft B), 5884 \(\dagger\) C, 6710 f (soft B), 6982 f; -e, 1735 (softly \(\dagger\) synk D), 2914 (-t B, om. \(\dagger\) D),\(^3\) 4377 (-t B), 6446 (-t B);\(^4\) soft vnypynne, 3540 (-e C); softe he, 3408 (-t BD). [soft \(\dagger\) gan, 5024 B.]

Rhyme words.—ofte (all); a lofte, on lofte, o lofte (914, 3509, 6710).

sore (A.S. sáre), 667 f, 751 f, 827 (-[e] \(\dagger\) to D), 1080 f, 1540 f, 1642, 1647 f, 2182 B (só[r]e A; do \(\dagger\) C; om. \(\dagger\) D), 2988, 3082 f, 3654 (-e \(\dagger\) to D), 3748 (sor(w)e C), 3814 f, 3842,\(^5\) 3898 f, 4370, 5378 f, 5487 f (soor D), 5559 f (C\(\dagger\)), 5783 f, 5848, 5879 (for \(\dagger\) B),\(^6\) 6425, 6495, 7101 f, 7241 (D\(\dagger\)?) \(-e\), 95 (therfor \(\dagger\) D), 1200; -e he, 3964 (ë \(\dagger\) he B, -e I \(\dagger\) D), 4313 (soor B); -e hath, 1618.—sore, 1404 \(\dagger\) C.

Rhyme words.—more adj., adv., sbst. (all except 7101), sore inf. (667), lore n. (751, 1080, 1647, 3082, 7101), of yore (5378). [Var. BD sore.]

---

1 Perhaps adjective.
2 sof te he may be right.
3 sof te [sp]lon C.
4 Supply [he] in B.
5 In C read sore [that] I.
6 In C read therewith[al].
§ 82.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 179

stille (A.S. stille),\(^1\) 752 (stil[le] BD),\(^2\) 2213 f (stil\(\) D) (: bille document), 5183 f (: distille inf.); stille, 178 (stil D), 2000 (stil BD), 2579 (stil D), 3541 (stil D), 3790 (stile C, stil\(\) D), 5016,\(^3\) 5183 f (: distille inf.); stille † gan, 1627 A (-e BC, stil\(\) away D).\(^4\) [Var. BC style.] stronge (A.S. strange), 4232 f (: longe pl. : wronge pl.). [ Cf. hoote.]

swythe (A.S. swithe), 5413 f (: a thousand sithe : lythe inf.), 7747 f (swith D) (: a thousand sithe : blythe pred. adj. sg.). [Var. B swithe.]

swote (A.S. swóte), swoote\(\)e] smellen, 158. (swote B, swete C, swete smellyng flouris D).

thikke (A.S. picce), 1541 f (thekke C, thik D) (: wykke pred. adj. pl. (weke C, wyk D)); thikke, 6018.\(^5\) [Var. B thykke.]

vnethe, vnethe (A.S. uné\(\)e), 3876 (-[e] B), 7583 (vnethe hym (l) BD); -e, 354, 1089 (-e † get D),\(^6\) 5485 (-th B, vnethis D), 6394 (vnethes B), 6762 (-th B, -thë † vs D),\(^7\) 7770 (-th D); -e he, 4095 (-th B, -thís D), 6398 (-th B, -th † for D). [Var. C onethè.—onethè, 4920 † C (wonder is the AB, wondrë is the D). (Cf. vnethes, § 91).

In 1089 the accent is on the first syllable; in all the other cases, on the second.

warne, though thou sittë warme, 4472 f (: harme inf.).

wete, ybathed was ful wete, 5477 f (: trete inf.).

wyde (A.S. wide), 629 f (: gide inf.), 1700 f (: ryde inf.), 7458 f (: chyde inf.); wydde where, 3246 (weyde C)\(^8\); wyde, 384, 1260 (meche † knowe C, wyde know D). [Var. BD wide.]

yerne (A.S. georne), 2993 f, 3218 f (ge[r]ne B), 4774 f, 4863 f.

Rhyme words.—werne inf. (2993, 4774), yerne inf. (2993, 4863), gounere (gouner A) inf. (3218), descerne inf. (4863), eterne (3218).

To these may be added the Romance words clere and ferme.

clere, 1910 f, 6237 f, 6671 f (cler D), 6941 f.

Note.—In "cler stod on a ground of sykernesse," 3824 (clere B ; clerë D," which om. a), cler is doubtless an adjective.

Rhyme words.—dere adj. (6237, 6671, 6941), here inf. (1910), here ind. or subj. 1 sg. (6941). [Var. B cleere.]

ferme,—and thow this purpos holde ferme, 2610 f (: conferme inf.).

1 Some of the cases cited may be adjectival. It is impossible always to distinguish between stille adj. and stille adv. even in Anglo-Saxon (cf. Grein, s. v.).
2 In C supply [that].
3 Dele (only) in A.
4 Transpose in A and read stille ; in B supply [lo].
5 Supply [fleu ] in C.
6 A has conynge, D conyng, for connyng.
7 In D supply [it] and read vnethe. Supply [wel] in A.
8 Supply [so] in D.
Observations on the Language [§§ 82, 83, 84.]

Note 1.—Deuoute appears to be an adverb in

Hire old vsage wolde thei not letten
As for to honour e hire goddes ful deuoute,

150-151 (: aboute : doute n.); but it is possible that the construction is adjectival. In 5552: This (= this) is short and pleynge theffect of my message (pleyn C, Thus . . . pleine D), the construction is perhaps adjectival.

Note 2.—Scarce (with hiatus), 1128 D, should be scarsly.
Note 3.—For maugre (O. Fr. malgré, maugré), prep., cf. 4713.

§ 83. Exceptions to § 82.

ryght (A.S. rihte), cf. (i.) (ii.) 99 f, 171, 288, 307, 1022, 1200, 2090, 2636 f, 3070 (? f), 4674, 7614 f; vnriight, 7024 f.

Aright (A.S. on riht) has of course no -e: cf. (i.) (ii.) 2085 f (-e B), 2346 f, 3070 † f D, 3494 f, 5073 f, 6125 (-e) B, 6919, 7480 f, 7943.

lyk (cf. A.S. gelîce), (i.) 5322 (-ê BD); (ii.) 1080 (-e D), 1129, 2700 (-ê B, as ‡ D). vnylyk that, 2741 (-ê BD). (Cf. ilyke, § 82.)

Note 1.—For fayn and both in an adverbial sense, see § 85, note 1. For adown, see § 88, note 1, p. 201.

Note 2.—Lest (A.S. pî lîs þe, L. leste) has lost its -e. Thus,—(i.) lest 319, 4013 (-e B), 4032, 4253 (list B, last C, lest E), 4815 (list B), 4828 (-ê B), 5333 (-ê D, si[‡ C); lyst ye, 2680 (list B, lest C, lest ‡ y D); (ii.) lest, 2133 (-ê B); l. he, 5091 (list B); lyst it, 321 (lest BCD).

§ 84. Adverbs in -liche, -lich, -ly (A.S. -lice, -lice, O. N. -liga).

Ten Brink (§ 270) thinks he has discovered a tendency on Chaucer’s part to use -lich or -liche before a vowel or h.1 The following lists (I. and II.), which are meant to be exhaustive, exhibit the testimony of the Troilus MSS. on this question.

List I. contains all the adverbs which in any of the four MSS. show a form in -lich or -liche. When the same adverbs have also a form in -ly, references are added for that form.

List II. is intended to contain all adverbs in -ly not already included in I. Old-style figures indicate that the word that follows begins with a vowel or h. Variants in any way significant are registered, but trivial irregularities in spelling are not always noticed. It will be observed that occasionally some MS. has a form in -lye or -lie (see under bisily, fermely, hardily, lustily, prevely, shortly, sikery, strangely, unhappyly), but this spelling is unknown to A and is chiefly affected by D.

1 “Dass er vor anlautendem Vocal oder h vielfach -lich and -liche statt -ly gebraucht.”
The somewhat reckless insertion or omission of an interior e deserves attention (see especially trevely and softely). Some of these interior -e's are due merely to analogy (cf. Child, § 71; ten Brink, § 262).

An examination of I. and II. shows that, so far as the Troilus MSS. are admissible as testimony, there is no tendency to use -lich or -liche before vowels and h to the exclusion of -ly, but that, on the other hand, -lich or -liche is not common before consonants. In A -lich (-liche) occurs 25 times before a vowel or h; in B, 39 times; in C, 16 times; in D, 8 times; whereas -lich (-liche) before a consonant is found only twice each in A and C, three times in B, and once in D. In all MSS. -ly is far commoner before a vowel or h than -lich (-liche). In the following cases (a—c) none of the four MSS. has -lich (-liche):—(a) before vowels, 771, 978, 1064, 1357, 1369, 1448, 2200, 2335, 2451, 2691, 2936, 2972, 2998, 3062, 3180, 3201, 3296, 3312, 3351, 3591, 3642, 3643, 3723, 4028, 4187, 4385, 4561, 4656, 4840, 4886, 5042, 5615, 5668, 5950, 6263, 6382, 6423, 6846, 6853, 6922, 6941, 6950, 7189, 7197, 7300, 7304, 7445, 7527, 7656 BCD, 7728, 7853, 8067, 8171, 8209, cf. 1578; (b) before he, his, hym, hire (poss. sg.), heres (sg.), hastow, haue, hadde, 89, 209, 274, 306, 366, 1645, 2157, 2344, 2378, 2409, 2504, 3398, 3496, 3632, 3922, 4169, 4416, 4424, 4430, 4458, 4752, 5057, 5106, 5474, 5586, 5612, 5617, 5787, 5855, 6100, 6579, 6869, 6885, 7899, 7947 (-ly(e) D), 7998, 8007, 8169; (c) before helpe, 2315; before how, 7449. In all, then, we have nearly a hundred instances of -ly before a vowel or -h, not counting those places in which one or more MSS. have variants in -lich (-liche).

In most of the cases of -lich (-liche) before a vowel or h, the adverb is polysyllabic, and an ictus falls on the termination (as, cêrteinliche). One might be tempted to conjecture that under such circumstances -lich would be preferred to -ly as a means of avoiding an hiatus which the ictus would make particularly noticeable; but even here -ly is very common (see bisily, blýsfully, curteysly, etc.). In the present state of our knowledge, therefore, it is hardly safe to formulate a rule as to -lich or -ly before vowels and h, even in the cautious words of ten Brink (cf. also supra, § 72).

When the metre requires an additional unaccented syllable, the full form -liché is used, never -lyé (see sodeynlyche, tendreliche, wonderliche). In rhyme -ly only is found.
Observations on the Language

I.
certeinliche, 6463 B (-ly ACD). certaynly, -eynly, (i.) cf. 713, 1257, 1571, 2763f, 3401, 4616, 5293, 5459 ‡ D, 5622, 5681 f, 5714 f, 6681, 7197, 8079; (ii.) cf. 2451. cértaynly ‡ I (with slurred -y), 1531 A (certein adv. B, sërteyn C, cérteyn D).
craftyliche, 2111 C (craftily AB, craftly D).
cruwel[ly], (i.) 8119 (cruely B, cruelly D).
cruwel[ly], (i.) 5966 A (craeliche B, crewelly C, cruelly D).
delyuerlyche, 2173 (-ly C, -lich D).
digneliche, 2109 (dyneleche C, dignlych D t).
enentiflych and, 332 (-liche B, -lich D, eiitentif(ul)ly C).
esilyche he, 317 (-liche B, -ly D).
esternaliche, 6202 B (-ly AD, -ally C) within C c.
eternally, (i.) 5137, 5449.
feruentlyche hym, 6046 A (-liche B, -ly CD).
formeliche, 5159 B (-ly A, -aly C, formably D).
fullyche, 316 (-liche B, -ly CD); Therfore as (as a A) frend fullych yn me assure, 680 (-liche B, -ly y[n] D). fully, (i.) cf. 319, 2383, 2611, 2840, 3003, 3100, 3124, 3417, 3635, 3850, 4690, 4942, 4954, 7044, 7129, 7392, 8179; (ii.) cf. 391, 3180, 4656, 7720; fully his, cf. 4124. fully excuse (with slurred -y), 3652 (ful BC).
hasteliche, 5980 C (-ely AD, -ily B); hastileche the, 6787 C (-ely ABD). hastely, (i.) cf. 4284, 5577 f, 7656 ‡ A (-ily a BCD), 7675; (ii.) 4886, 7656 BCD.
nameliche, 743 BC (-ly AD); -elych of, 1297 A (-liche BC, -ly D); -elich, (i.) 5254 C (-ly B, nam[e]ly A, -ely D (!) ); -elyche, 5996 (-liche BD, -ly C). namely, (i.) 165, 7466, 7927; nam[e]ly, (i.) 6220 (-e- BCD).
onlyche, 5994 A (-lich B, only ‡ but (!) C, onely it D), 7040 (-ly BC, onely D). only, oonly, (i.) 480, 1445, 3104 (onely B), 6330 (oonely B, onely D); (ii.) 3351 (C ‡ D ‡ ); al oonly here (eam), 5758 ([al] only C, al onely D †).
outreliche his, 1795 B (vttirly A, vttirliche C, vttirlich D). outrely,

1 C has: I wot thou nylt dyneleche ne mystileche endite. ABD have no mystileche.
2 In A supply [I]; in D supply [had], or read have.
3 In BD, read The which[ε] at the beginning of the line. In C the verse consists of nine syllables, unless we read The wich[ε] for ffor wich.
4 CD need correction.
5 Perhaps adjective.
(i.) 8057 (-erly B, vttyrly C, vttterly D); cf. 382 f, 2089 f, 4328 f
(outerely C); (ii.) outerly he, 5617 (vttirly D).¹
pitouslyche, 6676 B (-ly ACD). pitously, pytously, (i.) cf. 2161,
2438, 2584, 5476, 5564, 5574 f (pitusely C), 5836, 6442 f
(pitously C), 6623 f, 7244, 7787; (ii.) cf. 5042, 5911, 6922;
before h, cf. 6100, 6579, 6885, 7947 (pitouslye he D); dispitously
hym, 8169 (ful † pitously D).
pleynlich al, 2708 B (-ly AD †, -li C). pleynly, playnly, (i.) cf. 395,
2211, 4519; (ii.) cf. 1357, 1448; p. hire (poss. sg.), cf. 2378.
rowfullych his, 6353 A (rewfulliche B, pitously D).² rowfully she,
7092 (reu- C, rue- D, ioyful † B); rufully, 2907 f (reu- BC, rew- D).
scryvenlich † or, 2111 D (scryuenyssh A, stryuenyssh B, coryously ne C).
secundelich ther, 2826 A (-ound[e]ly B, -undeli C, -ondly D).³
sobrely he, 1733 A (-liche B, sobirli C, soberly D), 6656 A
(-lich B, sobirly D, sobërélhcé † grette C)⁴; sobrelch he, 6869
(sobrely D, soft[e]ly B, softely C); sobreliche he, 7536 B (-ly AD,
soberly C)⁵; sobrelch on, 7292 A (-liche B, -ly D, sobirly C).
sobrely, (i.) 3796 (-irli C), cf. 3000 f D, 6444 f; (ii.) 3201 (sobercely
C), 4840 (-irly D); sobrely he, 4430 (-irly C); s. hym, 4458 (-erely
C). [sobrely for, 7372 D (read shortly).]
sodeynlycché red, 2924 A (so deynlyche B, sodeynli[che] C, sodenly[che]
D), 3798 B (-lych[e] A, -li[che] C, sodenly[che] D); sodeynliche,
3934 C (-ly AB, sodenly D)⁶, 6617 B (-lych A, -ly CD); -lyche his,
3198 A (-liche B, -li C, sodenly D); -leche his, 8022 C (-ly AD, -li
B). sodeynly, (i.) cf. 231, 1758 f, 3636, 3699 (sodeynly A; D (?) ),
3801, 4084, 5924 f, 6563, 6855 f; (ii.) cf. 3642, 4028, 6853; before
sorwfullyche he, 7996 B (sorwefully AC, sorwéful he D).—sorwfully,
(i.) 114 (sorowful † D), 596 A (sorowful adj. B, sorwéful C, sorwúful
D), 605 (sorweful (?) C, sorwfully (?) D †), 1513, 4012, 6421,
cf. 1603 † D; (ii.) 3643, 6423 (sorowly † D); s. he, 3922 (sorwfulli
[he] sight D). [Var. B sorwowfully, sorwoufully; C sorwously, -li; D
sorowfully, sorwously.]
sternelelych it, 3519 A (-lich BD, -liche C).
tendrelliche wepte, 5015 A (-lych[ç] B, tenderely † (?) C, tendirly †
(?) D)⁷; -lyche, 5031 (-lich B, entirely C, tendirliche D). tendrely,

¹ In B supply [to].
² Leaf cut out of C.
³ In CD read deynmeth for denyeth C, deignith D.
⁴ In 6656 C supply [tho] and understand sobérlche as = sobérlch he.
⁵ In B supply [fyl].
⁶ Accent in D ?
⁷ A certainly has the right reading.
Observations on the Language [§ 84.]

(i.) 111 (-erly BC, pytous ‡ and D), 7088 (-yrly C, -irly D), cf. 6445 f; (ii.) tendrely he, 5612 (-erly B, -erely C, -irly D).

trewelyche the, 7414 B (-ely ACD); -elyche, 6077 (-eliche B, -ely CD); -eliche, 1249 B (-ely C, -ely A, tru[eliche D), 2246 C (-ely AB, tru[ely D); -[eliche, 6773 B (-elich (l) C, truely (l) D, -ewely ‡ A); -[elich as, 7350 B (-ely ACD); -elych it, 246 (-elyche B, -ely D); -elyche he, 6476 BC (-ely AD); treweliche, 6743 (-elyche ‡ C, truely D). [Var. D truely.]—trewely, (i.) cf. 1326 f, 1713 f, 2909 f, 3001 f, 3020, 3677, 4331 f, 4778 f, 5349 f, 5601 f, 5717 f, 5725, 6112, 6509, 6857 f, 7179, 7438 f, 7986, 8083; (ii.) cf. 5950, 6382, 6846, 7189, 7350, 7445, 8067; t. how, cf. 7449. [Var. B trrew[ely] (common); C treweli; D. truly, tru[ely], trew[ely], treuly, truely, ‡ 6846), truly ‡ (7445.)] trewely, (ii.) 1578 (trorwely ‡ C, trew[ely] D); trewely, (i.) 6537 ‡ A (-ely BC, truely D), cf. also 8067 (trueye yef D).


wommenliche, 2753 C (-ly AB, -ly ‡ him D).2 womanly with, 6940.
wondurliche, 729 B (wondyrliche C, wonderly A, -urly D); wonderlye loude, 3520 A (-liche B, -urlye CD).

Note.—In 5466 C child liclicra deface should be chyllyshly deface. In 6899, with chaungcd duMych pale face (decllich t B, dut & D, pale dedlych was ‡ C), dedlych is apparently an adjective.

II.

bisily, bysily, bysyl, cf. 771, 2442, 3995 f, 5148, 5331, 5384, 5603 f, 6815, 6933 f ‡ C, 7046. [Var. C busily, busylly, besyl; D besily, besily(e).]

bitterly, cf. 4543.

blysfully, 6933 f (busily ‡ C), 8171 AB.

brenynly, 607 (brenyngly B, brenynge (? C, brennyng D ‡). byhouely, 1346 f (be- CD).

coryously (trisyly), 2111 ‡ C, see scryvenlich in list I., above.

cowardly, 5858 (couardely C).

curteysly, cf. 5252 ABD.

debonairly, 2344 (-erly CD), 2998 f (-erly CD).

dredfully, 2213.

1 In 4778 treweyly is much more probable than treweyly.

2 In C read saluce for seluyn.
falsely, 38 (falsly B), 89 (falsly ‡ C, falsly † broken D); falsly, 5855 (-ely CD).

falsely, 518 (fiebly B, febly CD).

feithfully, feythfully, cf. 1348 f, 2662, 4514, 4776 f AB, 7439 f (feythfully C, feithfully D).

fermely, 4330 f (formely ‡ C), 4385 (formely † C), 6858 f (-lie D, frendely adj. † (!) C).

fiersly, 4602 B (fersely C, freshly | A, fersly D).


frendly, 2972 A (frenli ‡ B, frendly J C), 3201 (frenly on C, frendly vn D), 3484 J D. (In 6858 ‡ C freundely is perhaps an adjective.)

trely, 3484 ‡ C, 4561 (-ly B D).

frendly, 2972 A (freshely ‡ B, fresshe C), 3201 (freetely B, frenli J C, fresschely D).

finally, cf. 2985 (frosch[ly] (!) C, fresshe D, 4602 A, 5119, 6753, 7373; freshely, 2972 ‡ B. [Var. C fresschely, froschely; D freisshly.]

finally, 682 (fyimli B, fynally C, final adj. D).

frcshly, 2972 A (fresschely B, fresschely C, fresshe D), 4602 A, 5119, 6753, 7373; freshely, 2972 ‡ B. [Var. C fresschely, froschely; D freisshly.]

generally, 86 (line om. ‡ C).

gentilly, 1272 f.

gladly, 3832 A), cf. 253, 2347, 2575, 2691, 2805 f, 2936, 3496, 3832, 3877, 4627, 6936, 6941. [Var. B godely, goodely; C godely, goodely, goodli.]

gostly, 7393 (gostely D).

hardely, 1389 (-i C, -ily D), 2510 f (-i C, -ily D), 3055 f (-ily BCD), 6182 (-ily B, -eli [ne] C, -ily [ne] D), 7527 (-ili C †; D †), 7669 (-ily BC); hardely, 2097 (-ily BCD), 2802 f (-ily BD, -ili C), 7487 f (-ily BC, -ely(e) D).

heighly, 2818 (holy ‡ D, heyly [jow] C).

hertely, 2362 f (-[e]- B, -ily D), 2762 f (-eli C, -ily D); hertely, 7304 (hertely B).

holly, hoolly, cf. 366, 2206, 2818 ‡ D, 2987, 3118, 4169, 5057, 5106, 5474, 6950, 8209. [Var. CD holly.]

homly, 2644 AD (in BC prob. adj.).

humbly, 2342 (humili C); humbély, 2804 f (humblély B, vmbély C, humb[e]ly D), 7717 (humili C).

inly, cf. 640 AB, 4448.

1 In A read haue as=haue ye.

2 Scansion † In A read good[ly].

8 In A read hardly [right] ye.
Observations on the Language

Observations on the Language

186

Observations on the Language

186

inwardly, 1349 f; ynwardly, 2817 † D.
largely, 2792 (-li C).
lightly, lyghtly, cf. 1374, 1753, 2324, 2473, 2732, 3062, 3646, 5131.

[Var. B lightely; C lyghtely (-li).]

lowly, 2207 (louli C), 6537 (lawe- B, loue- C, lou- D); lowly he, 2157 BC (lowly D, loue- A).¹

lustily, 6931 f (-li B, -ly(e) D).

manly, 5284 (nameëli † C), 6393.

mekely, cf. 3628, 3723, 5586.

myghtily, 428 f, 6625 f (-li D, -ely B).

nedfully, 5666, 5716 f (nede- D); nede-, 5736 (ned- B).

nedly, 5632 (nede-B);

newely, 7373 † C (l. fresshly).

nicely, 7515 f.

openly, cf. 2567, 3018, 3312, 3390, 3543, 3959, 3998, 4278, 5003, 5312, 5333, 5615, 7372, 7395, 8189.

[Var. B shortely; C shortely(-li); D shortely(e).] shortely, 3390 (-ily B, shortli C, shorty D); cf. 5544 C (shortly he D).

sikerly, sykerly, cf. 1605, 3000 f † C, 3588, 4776 f CD,² 5314 f (sikirly e D), 7485 f. [Var. C sekiirli ; D sikirly.]

skarsly, cf. 1128 (scarcë † in D).

skilfully, 8527 f.

sleyly, 1547 (sleughëly B, sleli C, slely D), 2270 (sleigh- B, sly- C, sle- D)³; sleyghly, 6446 (sleighe- B, sly- C, s[le]- D).⁴

softely, 78 f (C D ?), 1604 [-e] D, softly † hym A), 1712 f, 2621 f [-e] (?) B), 2814 [-e] D, softly B †), 2817 (softly † D)⁵, 3000 f [-e] (-? B, sekyrly C, sobrely D), 3591 [-e] BD), 5017 [-e] B, softly † D), 5577 f † C, 6869 C [-e] B, sobrelich A, sobrely D); soft[ely], 2335 A (-e- BCD); softly, 1604 † A; cf. 7516 f (where

¹ In AD supply [this].
² In CD supply [it].
³ In C dele [this].
⁴ Supply [le] in B.
softely is no doubt the right reading). [Var. C softeli; D softily.] sothly, cf. 4350, 5459, 5627, 6850, 7372 † C. [Var. BD sothely.] straungely, cf. 7318 (-li(e) D); cf. 2508 f.

thrytyly, 3053 f.
vnfelyngly, 1104 f.
vnhappily, -plyy, 666 (ohnhap[il]y C, vnhappy[ly] D), 7300 (vnhap-
vulgarly, 6175 (-[l]y A, wolgaly C).

warly, 3296.

wikkedly, 1526 (wekedeli C).
wofully, 1603 (sorow- † D).

worthily, 1271 f.
wrongfully, 414 f (wronge- B), 2504 (wrongli † C), 7853.
wylfully, cf. 1369.

wysly, cf. 205, 949, 1064, 1459, 6710 (wisely (?) C), 7654 (wisē- † D).

[Var. BD wyse-; BCD wise- .]

wysly, cf. 2315, 3555 † D, 3632, 3767, 4343, 4360, 4495, 4752, 5043, 6026, 6106, 6519, 7728 (wisely as C †). [Var. BC -e; D wisse-, wisse- .]

Rhyme words.—Adverbs in -ly rhyme usually with each other, but the following rhyme-words also occur: I (428, 1101, 1104, 1271, 1272, 1626, 2089, 2508, 2510, etc.), by, therby (380, 382, 1626, 2362, 4776, 4778, 5574, 5577), why (1758), grant mercy (1326).

Note.—In 2111 AB, one -ly seems to be used for two adverbs (cf. Shakespere's fresh and merrily): "Ne scryenenyssh (scryuenyssh † B, coryously C, scryvenlich D) or (ue C) craftily (craftyliche C, craftly D) thow it (ou. C) wryte."

§ 85. The following adverbs which have -e neither in A.S. nor in the Troilus deserve notice:

unmys (see Mätzner), cf. 491 f, 1398 f, 2133 f, 2593 f, 3015 f, 3112 f, 3687 f, 3876 f, 3967 f, 4022 f, 4471 f, 5933 f, 7102 f, 7430 f, 7549 f, 7641 f, 8047 f, 8090 f.

Rhyme-words.—is, yyys, this.

Note.—Of. that yet is mys and, 5929 (that is amys D); that is mys, 6010 f (that is amisse D) (: is : this); al that was mys, 7789 f (amys † CD).

anon (A.S. on án), (i) (ii) cf. 75, 324, 349 f, 2096 f, 2636 f, 2840, 3396, 3406 f, 3516 f, 3545 f, 3991 f, 4704, etc., etc. CD occasionally have anon(e); B sometimes has anon. (Accent in 2636 †)

ful (A.S. ful adv.), (i) 151, 167, 3589, 5472, 6630, 6633 (fulle BD), 7614, 7998; (ii) 378, 626; ful humble, 124. [Var. D fuH.]

Note.—Ten Brink, § 246 Anm., notices that "das steigernde ful (ful vel, ful hard u. s. w.)" has no -e. Of the above-cited cases all but two are instances of this "steigernde ful." These two, however, do not come under ten Brink's category: they are,—"Who koude telle aright or ful discoryue," 6630, and "But fynally he ful ne trowen myghte," 7998.

nygh, neigh, neih, ney, adv. and prep. (A.S. néah, néh, adv. and prep.),

(i.) (ii.) cf. 108, 180, 499, 543, 582, 2325, 3345, 5019, 5035, 5894, 6895. [Var. B negeh, neygh; C nyʒ, nyh, nyʒh; D ny, nye, niʒ (4404 † D).]

streyght, streyt, straught (A.S. streht, p.p.); streyght, (i.) 53 (streight B), 4802 (streught B †, streyt C), 5905 (streughte B, streyzt C, streitê D), 6655 (streught B, streyt C, streyte D); (ii.) 324 (streught B, styrte † C), 607 (streught B, streyt C), 6351 (streught B, streyte D); streygh[t], (ii.) 2258 (streught B, streyt C, streight † D); streyght he, 5825 (streught B, streyt C, streyte = streyt he).—streyt, (ii.) 2546 (streught B, streight D, [as] streit C).—straught, (ii.) 3394 (streight BD, streyt C).

wys (really neut. adj. used as adv., cf. y-wys), god so wys be my saluacioun, 1466 (wis CD); god so wys me saue, 2063 (wis CD); as wys as I the serue, 3555 (wis C, wisly † D); as wys I neuere, etc., 6317 (wis BC, wisse D).

ynough, ynowgh, ynowh, ynow, inow (A.S. genōg, genōh), (i.) 2108 f, 2675 f, 2927 f, 3039 f, 4471, 4796, 5058, 5720, 6462 f, 6654, 7213, 7357, 7459, 7533 f; (ii.) 5346 (inow (of) C).

Rhyme words.—towh, towgh, tough (2108, 2927, 6462), lowh, lough pret. ind. 3 sg. (2675, 3039, 7533). [Var. B inough, ynowh(e); D ynow(e), inough, inowh.]

y-wys, i-wys (A.S. ge-wis, adj. neut.), (i.) cf. 425 f, 802 f, 1213 f, 1313 f, 1814 f ([y-]wys A), 5353 (iwise(e) D), 8095 (i-wis(e) D), etc., etc.; i-wyssee, 1012 f (i-wis BC, ywys D) (: this(se) : ys(se)).

Cf. wys.

Note.—In eucle, yucle, -cle merely represents syllabic -l. Thus—ful yucle fare, 626 (eulenæ C, evil D). This becomes consonantal before a vowel; as, eucle apayed, 5304 (yuel B, euil D), cf. 649; yucle as, 6601 (yuël B, iułe C, yueil D).

A few Romance words are used adverbially without termination:

certeyn, -ayn, -ain, (a) with accent on the ultima, (i.) cf. 492, 1475, 1476 † B, 2654 f, 3631 f, 4118, 5720 f, 5780 (-e) D, 7491 f; (ii.) cf. 5266. (b) With accent on the penult, (i.) cf. 674, 1809, 3996, 4782; (ii.) cf. 3938, 5864 (-e) D. Cf. the use of syker in 2076.

complet, cf. 7191 (perh. rather adj.).

egal, 5322.

plat, cf. 681, 1664.

seur, al so seur as day cometh, 5083 (sure D).
Several adjective formations in *-es* (A.S. *-léas*) are used adverbially (cf. § 49, note 5). These are (i.) (ii.),—

causeles, 779 f (-*les* B), 3853, 6139 ABD.
douteles, 1499 f (*-e* D), 1579 C (*-e* AD, trew[e]ly B), 2614 f, 4220 (*-e* E), 4630 (*-e* D), 4764 f (*-e* D)\(^2\), 5092 (dou[t][e]les D), 5161 C, 5897 (dou[t][e]les D).
dredeles, 1027 B (*-e* ACD), 3368 (*-e* AD)\(^3\), 3844 (*-e* AD), 4738 B (*-e* AD), 5940 (*-e* A)\(^4\); -*les*, 1041 B (dred[e]les AD), 1270 B (dred[e]les ACD).

deneles, 4685.
giletles, 1413 BC (*-e* AD) (perhaps adj.).
kno[t][e]les, 7132 (knotteles C, kno[t][e]les \(^\dagger\) out D).\(^5\)

Note 1.—*Fayn* and *loth.*—The adjective *fayn* (A.S. *faeg(e)n*) is used in connection with *wol* and *wolde* with the force of an adverb. Thus,—
wolde *fayn* remene, 691 (fayn B); I wol right *fayn* with al my myght ben oon, 2770. Examples of this use may be seen in 3064 f (feyne B, *feyn* CD) (: *ayen* : *scyn* p.p.), 3497 f (: *agyn* : *rayn* a.), 7358 f (*e* BD) (: *ayyn*); cf. 3769, 3854, 3945, 4359, 6432, 6550, 6914, 7595, 8104, in most of which the word that follows begins with a consonant. *Fayn* in this idiom has no proper *-e*, though B and D sometimes add one, which, however, is never sounded (so 2310 A).\(^6\) (Cf. *fawe*, note 2 at end of § 46.) Similarly the adj. *loth* (A.S. *láx*) is used with an apparently adverbial force: *God wolde* of full ulfe *loth* bygonne Cométh ende good, 2319-20 (loth D\(^7\)); For trewey ther kan no wight yow serne That halff so *loth* yowre wratthe wolde deserue, 6509-10 (soth \(^\dagger\) C).

Note 2.—*Wonder* in connection with adjectives and adverbs (*wonder* *bylue*, *wonder* *vel*, etc.) is sometimes regarded as the first part of a compound; but it was apparently felt as a separate word (cf. the adjectival use of *wonder* in such phrases as *this wonder* *maladye*, 419). For examples cf. *wonder* *bylue*, 7912; *w. crusuel*, 7831; *w. faste*, 5336 (marvellously *shurred* \(^\dagger\) D); *w. ofte*, 139 \(^\dagger\) A; *w. sore*, 751, 1540, 3964; *w. stronge*, 7564; *w. vel*, 288.

Note 3. For *scrumpyng* or *craftily*, see note at end of § 84.

Note 4.—For *half* used adverbially (cf. A.S. *haelf* *instr.* with compar. ; *healf- in comp. healf-dead*, etc.), cf. (i.) 6510 (*e* D), 7101, (ii.) 1152.

Note 5.—The following adverbs, etc., of various formation, are for convenience thrown together in a note:

ay (O.N. *ei*, cf. A.S. *å*, *åwa*, and see o below), (i.) cf. 186 (alle \(^\dagger\) C), 2488 f, 3376 f, 6515 f, 7074 f, 7158 f, 7935 f; for *ay*, cf. 4454 f, 4655 (aß *D*); the forth *ay*, 1069 f; (ii.) cf. 180, 5593; for *ay* and o, 2167 f C (and oo D).
est (A.S. *eft*), (i.) 137 BC, 4322 (*-e* CD), 4374 (*-e* D), 4395 (*-e* B, ofte \(^\dagger\) D), 4525 \(^\dagger\) D (erst ABC), etc.; (ii.) 6391 (*-e* D), 6979 (*-e* D), etc.
est (A.S. *est*). See *west*.
fer (A.S. *feorr*), (i.) 855, 2203; (ii.) 137, 451, 565 (ferre [as] D), 888, 1301, 2305 (fayre \(^\dagger\) C ; *om. \(^\dagger\) D*), 3275, 3325, 3502 \(^8\); fer han, 4653 (B\(^\dagger\) ;

---

1 In E read *a[ț]s[o]*.
2 In D, read *ze* for *is* (*yis*?) 3: otherwise *dout[e]les* is adj. \(^\dagger\). 4 In C \(^\dagger\) perhaps adj.
3 9-syl. verse.
4 In C \(^\dagger\) perhaps adj.
5 In C read *thor[r]oud*.
6 For 7595 D is to be emended by transposition. In 2310 C we are to insert *[to]*, not to read *fayn[ț]*.
7 Supply *[I]* in A.
8 Read *lyggen* for *lyn* in C.
Observations on the Language

fer henne, 5908 (ferc B) ; from a fer his, 313 (from affer C, from ferre her 9-syl. D). [D has usually ferc(e), ferr(e).]

forth (A.S. forh), cf. 2345, 4809 ; the forth ay, 1069 f ; emforth, -(e), cf. 1328, 2082, 3841 ; fro this forth, cf. 1094, 1529, 4976 ; ferforth (accented on either syllable) in the phrases,—so ferforth, as f. as, so f. that, thus f., how f., cf. 121, 2045, 2191, 4336, 5553, 5960. (In these examples no note as to whether a vowel or h or a consonant follows.)

on . . . along (ylong) (A.S. on (set) . . . gelang). On me is nought ylong thin ynuel fare, 2086 (along CD, along(e) B) ; but it were on hym along ye, 3625 (-e) l, on al † a long ye D.

tho (A.S. þa), cf. 1600 f, 1766 f, 2290 f, 2487 f, 2913 f, 3968, 5402, etc., etc. ; er tho, 6811 (or this C, or tho D).

wel (A.S. we!), cf. (i.) (ii.) 12, 57, 68, 76, 131, 167, 288, 1177, 1677 f (wele ABD) ; (del : stel), 2297 f, 3538 f, 3552 f, etc., etc. (Often written wele in BD and sometimes in A (cf. 246, 387, 1677 f), but of course the -e is never sounded.)

west (A.S. west), est or west, 7795 f (est or weste B, est and west D) ; best adv. ; lest ind. 3 sg.) ; est and west (as subst. acc.), 2188 f (est and weste B) ; lytt ind. 3 sg.) ; by est or west, 7114 f (weste B, be(n) est or west C, by este or west D †) ; (lest ind. 3 sg. : best pred. adj. sg.) ; by west and ek by este, 7556 f (by weste . . . bi este B, he † west . . . he † est C, by weste . . . by est D) ; (by ythese n.).

yond. See note at end of § 86.

§ 86. Comparison of Adverbs (Child, § 70 ; ten Brink, p. 134). Comparative degree.

Of the "old" adverbal comparatives, A.S. bet, wiers, má, lés, nér (nyr), ðer survive in the Troilus (a) ; for sǐØ, see § 88, p. 196. Other adverbal comparatives are adjective forms : (b) (I.) bettre, more, lasse, derre ; (II.) A.S. comparatives in -or and their analogues.

(a) bet (A.S. bet), (i.) 275 b (b. hire † C) 4, 1363, 2524, 3963, 6832 (but † C), 7284, 7629 (beste † B), etc. ; the bet, 481, 1177 f (bette BCD) ; (let p.p., lette BCD), 1589 (C †), 1921 f (bett B, bete C) ; (beset p.p.), 2600, 3819 (the b. † other (!) C) ; cf. 746, 3318, 3332, 4406, 5562, 6020, 7347, 7405 ; for yf it erst was wel tho was it bet, 4525 f (bette C) ; (met p.p.). [Var. B bett ; BD bett(e).]

bet, (ii.) 3264, 3965 (B † C †), 4333 (the bettir † endure D) ; bet and bet shal, 3556 ( . . . wil C).

wers (A.S. wiers, wyrs), wers bygon, 7691 (wers B, wersc C, wurse D) ; wers(e), 2703 (wers(e) B, wers(e) C, wers D).

In 5856 f, no worse (wurse D) ; adverse voc. : dierse pl.) is an adjective.

mo (A.S. má), euer mo, 1465 f (more † D), 4268 f, 4603 f (euer more † moo E) ; cf. 418 f, 787 f, 6088 f, 7026 f, 7418 f, 7502 f. neuere mo, 2498 (neueuermore † C ; D †) ; cf. 5645 f.

1 Or supply [a] in D.
2 Dele (al) in C.
3 Old-style figures indicate that D reads better, betir, bettr, betre, though the metre calls for bet (cf. 746 C).
4 Supply [gon] in A.
Rhyme words.—to and fro (418, 6088), two (418), also (5645), so (1465, 4603, 7509), wo (787, 1465, 4268, 7418), go inf. (4268, 4603, 6088, 7026, 7502), ago p.p. (7418), tho adv. (7026). [Var. BE moa.]

les (A.S. læs), preserved in nathëles (A.S. nä pé læs), (i.) cf. 19, 170 f (: makeles : prees), 750, 916, 923, 1552, 3011, 3214, 3424, 3827, 3925, 4327, 5185, 5716, 6098, 6462, 6546, 6872, 7141, 7232, 7932, 8002; (ii.) cf. 5536, 5629; n. he, cf. 4814, 7547.

C usually has neuer the les (trisyllabic, as if ne'ertheless). Other variants are nathëles, 750 B, 916 B, 3011 A; nathales, 5536 B; nethëles, 3925 D, 4327 D; nathëllec, 5716 D, 7232 D; betteres, 6872 C; nath[cl][ë]les, 6098 A.

Note.—For lest (A.S. þy læs þe), see § 87, n. 3.

ner (A.S. nær, nýr), the ner the fyr, 449; the ner he was, 448.

Ner I come, 1647, may be either positive or comparative, and there is a similar uncertainty with regard to 2902 (ner D)?, 4404 (nij f D), and 6443 (nec B, nere he D). For the positive ner, nere, cf. 451, 582 C.

(b) II. bettre, betre (A.S. bet[þ]re, neut. comp.), 2300 f (betere C); b. plese, 3728 (better BD, betere C); bettre his, 3729 (more BC, better D); the bettre, 2780 f (betteere BC); the b. pleyne, 2616 (better B, betere C, betir D); the bettre at, 6013 (betteere C, better D). (All dissyll. except 3729, 6013.)

Rhyme-words.—lettre (2300, 2780), vinfette inf. (2300).

more, (A.S. máre, neut. comp.), 647 f, 669 f, 753 f, 883 (C f), 885 (e C), 931 (e C D (?)), 1082 f, 1820 AB, 2413 (D ?), 2424 f, 4061, 5380 f, 5488 f (mor D), 6007 f (D ?), 6387 f, 6851, 7036 f, 7282 (C ?), 7283, 7716 f, 7719 f, 8096 f (cf. 2540 C, 5610 D); e, 2556, 3324 (D ?), 4021, 4494 (e ? me C), 4919 (om. D), 6007 (mor B; D ?), 7036, 7329 (e ? to C; D ?), 7744, 7751 CD (manere A); more he, 448; more here (sing.), 2717 (C ?); but,—nomore haue, 3013 (nomore han B, no more han C ?).

more than, 376 f, 532 (e D), 537 (mor B; D ?), 578 (e C ?); mor (?), 1425, 3162 (e B; C ? D ?), 3873, 4389, 5654; the more that, 406 (e C D); mor † thrust, 406 D; ne more desirede, 567 (ner more D); nomore com, 1515; for euere more myn, 1915 (mo BC); euere more whan, 4243 (mo BC); nomore come, 6130 (nomor B, no morë D); euere more lo, 4946 (cf. 2498 C). But,—morer than, 1226 (e C), 3289; more that, 4493; more thing, 539 (more 3e C, mor ye D).

Rhyme words.—lore n. (647. 753, 1082, 2424, 6387), sore adv. (669, 753, 1082, 5880, 5488), adjl. pl. (2424, 7036, 7716), sore inf. (669), of yore (5380 8097), restore inf. (6007), more adv. (7716), no more sbst. (8098). [Var. BD moore.]

1 Supply [e] in A.
2 We can avoid morë in this verse, but only by reading alle louers instead of allë louers.
3 I kan no morë but, 4654, seems to be substantive.
Observations on the Language

lasse (A.S. lęsse, neut. comp.), 284 (lesse B; C†), 651 (lesse BD), 1986 (las[se] D, lesse hire B)¹; lasse hadde, 886; the lasse, 2928 f (the les CD), 5278 f, 5794 (the lesse C), 5971 (the lesse D, lasse B, lesse ² C); the lasse, 967 (the lesse, B, [the] lasse D).

Rhyme-words.—masse missam (2928), passe inf. (2928, 5278).
derre (A.S. déorre, neut. comp.), boughten they . . . it derre, 136 f (dere BD) (: werre n.); to ben presed derre, 174 f (: sterre).
II. depperé (A.S. d'oppor), 1570 (depter † B, depper D).
ferther (A.S. furðor), f. go, 3123 (-ere C, forther BD)²; further-ouer, 5689 (further o. D, further now B); no ferthere out, 5969 (forther B, further D).

gladlyer (dissyl.), (ii.) 8140 (-lier B, gladder D).
hyer (A.S. hē(h)or), 2671 (heighere B, heyjer C, hier D).

lengere, longer, longere (A.S. leng); lengere, 1065 (langer B), 1683 (neuere C, neuere (?) D), 2478, 2699 (D†), 3010, 3183, 4500 (er B, -ere C, -er aftir D), 6370, 7273, 7562 (cf. 5370 C (er D)⁵; lengere, 2603, 2707 (line om. † C), 4870⁶, 8029 (langer B); lengere here (hic), 4970; longere, 2327 (lengere C).

In all the instances so far cited, unless there is a note to the contrary, B has longer, D longer.
lenger, (i.) 5610 (nothyng † C, more † D), 5852 (langer B, more C †).

leuère vnwyst, 2594 (lever D).
rathere, rather (A.S. hræðor), (i.) cf. 835, 865, 3221, 3415, 4825, 5186, 5256, 5589, 5701, 6410; (ii.) rathere, 5650 (-er BD) -ere here (hic), 6111 (-er BD); -ere anoon, 5102 (-er sterre B, -ere s. C; om. † D).
sonner, 1771 (sonere C).

Note.—For after (adv. and prep.) cf. 30, 1581, 2434, 4888, 5597, etc.; for heder, hider, hyder, cf. 5594, 6022, 6849 f, 6977; for schider, schider, cf. 3223, 4944, 5309, 6791, 6849 f; for yonder, yender, cf. 2231 f, 3505 f, 6928 (yendé A), 6931, 7032, 7033 (for yonder as an adjective cf. that yonder place, 6943; the yonder hill, 6973; zondyr † he, 2369 C (yend A, zonde B, zond D)⁵; yender † I, 6975 D (yond A, zonde BC); zondyr is, 7525 C (zond B, yond nys A, yendé nys D)⁸; for outher, outher (other . . . or, cf. 1501, 2433, 2436, 5193; for other (= or), cf. 3665 A (or BCD)); for neither (neither) . . . ne (nor), cf. 312, 1370, 3364, 5433, 5926; for whether, cf. 423, 1398, 2237, 5673; for wher, wher (whether), cf. 270, 2348, 2551 C, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5524, 6556.

¹ This line is best scanned "And ay gan hire lasse for to agaste." In B, transpose lesse and hire.
² BC om. the.
³ Supply [wol] in A.
⁴ Read may for make in A.
⁵ This stanza is not in AB.
⁶ D † (supply [su] and read blis[se]).
⁷ In A supply [ye].
⁸ In 6928 B for yonder saugh ich (yender saugh D, zondyr say C, yende saugh A) read yond saugh ich. 6936 B for yonder so (-er C, yonder D), read yond so (with A); in 7521 C for zondyr sche, read yond she (-er D, zonde B). For yond, cf. also 5688.
§ 87. The superlative adverbs best and mest, when preceded by the definite article, may take an -ĕ after the analogy of adjectives (cf. Child, § 70; ten Brink, p. 187, Anm.).

The following are all the cases in which the is used with these superlatives in the Troilus:

the beste ynorishshed, 7184 (beste entèched, 7195 (best BD); [the] beste yprèysèd, 7836 (beste C, the best D, the best [y]preysed B).

the most[ĕ] fre, 1073 (moost[ĕ] BD).

When no the precedes, the forms are best and most. Cf. for best (i.) (ii.) 47, 332 f (lyst u., lest B, rest C), 718, 1001 (allerbest), 1322, 1914, 2481 f (: yf the lyste, lest B, lyst CD), 2515, 2667, 2697, 2758, 3196, 3208, 3454, 3901, 4107, 4494, 4822, 4951, 6752, 6792, 6995, 7137, 7145, 7440, 7630, 7677, 7793 f (: west beste lubet), 8064. For most, cf. (i.) (ii.) 152, 230, 242, 720 f, 1332, 1748, 2235, 2453 f (: west see(e)), 2495 f (: wost), 3523, 4617, 4628, 4947, 5223, 5259 f (: ost : wost), 6283 f, 6955, 7067, 7426, 8120, 8143, 8210, etc.

Note 1.—In none of these cases is best or most preceded by the or by a demonstrative or possessive pronoun. In all of them A has the form best or most. Variants in -e occur, but the -e is never sounded (for most(e), cf. (i.) 1322 B, 2235 B, 5259 f D, 6283 f, etc.; for best(e) (i.) (ii.), see B in 1001, 2515, 2667, 3454, 4494, 7740, 7793 f).

Note 2.—For almest almost (A.S. eal- æl-mest), cf. (i.) (ii.) 1855, 2906 f, 2995, 3188 f, 5368.

Note 3.—Best and mest excepted, no superlative adverbs take an -e in the Troilus. Examples are (i.) (ii.) first, fyrest, first(e) (cf. 381, 659, 1875, 4076, 4834, 6318, 6930, 6944, etc., etc.), var. BD first(e) ; last(e) (cf. 7550 (-e) B ; D (?) ); erst (cf. 299, 542, 2425, 4339, 4512, 4518, 4525, 4830), var. BD arst ; next, nest, as adverb (cf. 2067, 3386, 4098, 4100), as preposition (cf. 399, 941 (9-syl.), 943, 944, 1729); lest (cf. 1925, 2236, 41101); strongest feythed, 1000 (strongest B, strongest fiche(e) C); see also alderfirst, alderlest, § 81.

§ 88. The following particles, of various formation, appear in the Troilus sometimes or always with an -e (cf. Child, § 72).

In this list are thrown together, for convenience: (i.) particles in A.S. -an, -on, —aboute, abouen,-e, byforn, byfore, toforn, byhynden,-e,

1 Perhaps substantive in the accusative case.
Observations on the Language

bitwene, selde, sitken (etc.), withinne, withouten, -e; cf. aside, byside;
(ii.) particles in A.S. -a-, -one, yore; (iii.) inne, oute, out, thame, whanne;
(iv.) northe (A.S. nú þa); (v.) -me (A.S. mélm); (vi.) atwyne, yfere, blyue, bothe; (vii.) therfore, -for, wherfore, -for.

For down, adown, grauf, aswnder, see notes at end of list. For by weste, see § 85, note 5.

aboute, abowte (A.S. ymbûtan, onbûtan), 149 f, 268 f, 1819 f; 5063 f, 5342 f, 5364 (C †), 5377 f, 5937 f, 6231 f (C †), 6448 f, 6463, 6763 f, 7483
(abouȝt C †), 7657 f, 7814 f, 7859 f, 8008 f; -(t D, -ë for? C †), 4072, 6586; -e his, 3911, 4575 (D †), 6618, 7588, 7595; -e hym, 4562 (hym aboute alwey A, which transpose); -e her
(sing.), 3642 (yn C), 5479 2, 5531 (-e (l) † B); abowte thin, thi, 863 (-t C), 7019; -e the, 4904; but,—abowte this, 3380 (-ën B, [-ë] D, -yn his C).

Rhyme-words.—doute n. (149, 1819, 2478, 5063, 5937, 6231, 7567, 7814, 8008), route n. (263, 1904, 5063, 5342, 5377, 6448, 6763, 7859), deuoute (149), lowte (268, 3523), stoute adj. pl. (7814, 7589).

abouen, aboue (A.S. on-butian); aboue, 230 f, 3720 f, 3869 f, 7367 f, 8193 f, 8207 f; abouve euery, 6517 (-ën B, -yn C, -e? D †); aboue, 3617 (vpon † C), 8182; aboue † thi, 3580 A 3; -ë the goddes, 4930 (-yn goddis C); abouenç, (ii.) 6341, 6561 (-ë C, -yn D).

Rhyme words.—lowe n. (all), shone p.p. (3869).

aside, asyde (as if A.S. on skulan), -ë, 291 (on syde D; C †), 5886 (om. † C); -ë his, 7290 (-e a BCD).

a-twynne (cf. O.N. tvinnr), 4508 f (a twyn D) (: bygynne inf.), 6276 f (a-twyn C) (: wynne inf.; with-inne). (Cf. atweo, etc., 6893 f.)

blyue (A.S. bî lîfe), 595 f (bîlyue B), 958 f (bîlyue B), 1222 f, 1293 f, 2622 f, 2690 f, 3067 f, 4836 f (blythe † C), 5157 f (blyf C), 6017 f, 6526 f, 6759 f (bîliue B), 7912 f; b[e]lyue, 2598 f (bêlyue C, blyue? D).

Rhyme-words.—thrîne, thrîye (inf. 958, 1222, 1293, 2690), dryye inf. (2598, 2622, 3067, 5157, 6017, 6759, 7912), stryye inf. (4836, 6526, 7912), al my lyue 6 (595), my lyue 6 (1293), yn al his lyue (2622), his lyue 5 (6526), on lyue (1222, 5157), of lyue (2690), hyue n. (6017), fyue (6759).
[Var. D blyve.]

bothe (bothen) ... and (O.N. báSir pron., cf. A.S. bá, bá-twá); bothe thow and I, 711 (bothen B); bothe fals and foul is, 6746 (-[e] B); so bothe ... and in 168 (D †), 7131 (-[e] B), 8077 (-[e]

---

1 Old-style figures indicate that D has about.
2 Supply [a] in D.
3 Supply [a] in D.
4 In D read [a][l][e].
5 Expressing time.
§ 88.]

of Chaucer’s Troilus. 195

B); bothe . . . and 1, cf. 97, 130, 167, 264, 464, 1396, 1397, 5340, 5705; bothe he . . . and, 1718 (D †); bothe heroner and
faukon, 5075 (both B, bothe † goshauk and C)): But,—As seyden
bothe the moste and ek the leeste, 6803 BD (bothe meste = both the
meste C, A om. ek); cf. 167 AB (-e C), 1862 † D, 2423 † D.—
bothen worship and seruyse, 82 AB (bothe C; D †).

byforn, biforn (A.S. beforan), 221 2 f (aforon C), 376 f (byforn D),
1226 f (byfor D), 2356 f (beforne C), 3144 f, 3917 f (aforene C,
biforne D), 4062 f (biforne D), 5022 f (aforene C, beforne D), 5636 f,
5755 f (byfore: born A, beforon C), 5910 f (byfore C, before D),
6520 f (byforn D), 6644 f (byforn D), 7806 f (byfore C, before D);
b. withouten, 5646 (-forn B), 5663 (bifore B); b. our, 5641;
b. haue, 7463 (before BCD).

Rhyme-words.—corn (221), shorn p.p. (221), born, born(e) p.p. (376, 1226,
2356, 3144, 3917, 4062, 5755, 5910, 6520), lorn, y-loru p.p. (376, 3917,
4062, 5910, 7806), sworn, i-sworn p.p. (5022, 56363, 6644), to-torn p.p. (5022),
thorn (2356). [Var. CD beforon.]

byfore, 5660 f, 5701 f, 6389 f (to-fore B); byfore, 2051 (beforn C,
byfor † he D), 3582 (byforn B, aforo C, byfor D), 6120 (bifor B,
to-forn C); be-fœr certeinly (?), 5681 D (? byfon A, ? bifor B);
byfore the, 1428 (byfor D); -e that, 5739 (-e the BD); -e to, 5639
(befor B, befon D). [Var. BC bifore; CD before.] (Cf. 5755 f A.)
byfor noon, 7485 (bifore C, before D).

Rhyme-words.—forlore p.p. (6389), yshore p.p. (5660), more root (6389),
therfore (5660, 5701).

byhynden, byhynde (A.S. be-hindan); byhynde, 1604 f (-d D), 1724 f
(-d D), 2192 f (-d D), 7174 f.—byhynden othere, 179 (-yn C,
-[en] D).

Rhyme-words.—mynde (1604), fynde inf. (1714), pl. (2192), rynde n.
(1724), bynde inf. (7174). [Var. (at end of line) C behynde, -hinde; D
behinde, -hinde, -hynd.]

byside, bysyde (A.S. be-sidan), 1161 f (: gyde pres. subj. 2 sg.), 4623 f
(: ryde inf.); -e hire (poss. sg.), 1819 A, 3464, (poss. pl.) 1819 B;
-e hym, 7045 (-ö B4, -ö was D3); thære be sýdýn schal, 3510 † C.
[Var. C besyde; D beside.]

by-twene, bi-twene (A.S. betwéonan), 1908 f, 2791 f, 3096 (bytwyxën
B, betwixë C, bytwix[ö] D), 3343 f, 4698 f, 6092 f (betwen D),
7449 f (betweyne B, betwen D); by-twenn[ö] wyndes, 417 (betwexen

1 Var. BD both . . . and.
2 Old-style figures indicate that B has byfore or bifore.
3 suco A, sworne B, sworn D. 4 But supply [this] and read -e (elided).
5 But supply [him] and read -e (elided) (?).
Observations on the Language

Rhyme-words.—grene adj. sg. and pl. (1908, 2791, 6002), shene adj. def. sg. (1908), adj. pred. sg. (6092), shene adv. (4698), I were pres. ind. (3343, 7449), queene (2791), contene inf. (3343). [Var. BC be-twene.]
ine (A.S. inne), 387 f (in C, yn D), 821 f (yn D), 1091 f (yn D), 1936 f (in C, yn D), 1960 f (ther † yn D), 3499 f (in C, yn D), 3753 f (in C, yn D), 5422 f, 5568 f (in C), 5921 f, 5930 f; inne, 7882 (in D).


ther-inne (A.S. þær-inne), 3537 f (in D), 4474 f (ynne D), 5447 f (in CD); ther-yn but, 1354 (-in BCD).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne inf. (3537), vynynne inf. (3537), wynne inf. (4474), twynne inf. (5447).

mele (adverbial termination, A.S. -mélum, dat. pl. of mél, mél, n., m. (?)), stundémele (A.S. stundmélum), 7037 (stormyal † C).

nowthe (A.S. nú þá), 978 f (nouthe CD, nought † B): youthe : kouthe posset.

Note.—Now is sometimes spelled nowe, even in A, but the -e is never pronounced (cf. 2857, 4674, 5691, 6693 f, 8101 f).

oute (A.S. ðite, ðût, ðút of). But at the yate there she shoulde outé ryde, 6395; the seyn is oute, 6916 f (out D) (route n.); thow art oute, 7882 f (doute n.); oute of, 3857 (out C, out † hym D), 4672 (out D); out of, 3894 (-e B).

out (adv.), before consonants, 1061, 4701, 4708, 4872 (e D), 4874 (-e ? D), 4919 (e BD), 6912 (-e D), 7733 (-e D).
though-out, thoroughly-out; t. a, 3443 (throw-out C ?); t. the, 4566 (throwout C); t. Troye, 5323 (throw-out C †).
selde (A.S. seld-, seldon); 1462 f (seld D) (behelde pret. subj. 3 sg.); seldé sêynge, 5085 (pref. adj.); selde, 1253 (selde B, seldé seyn C, seldom seyn D).
sithen, sethen, sith, syn (A.S. síð þám, síðþan, etc.).

I. In causal sense:

A almost always has syn. Thus, (i.) 520, 1665, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 4954, 5215, 6859, etc. etc.; (ii.) 721, 1133, 1380, 1856, 3429, 4006, 4767, 5081, 5107, 5164. Other forms found in A are: sith,1 (i.) 645, 696, 1345; (ii.) 598, 1380, 1524,

---

1 A has she[f].
2 Either pure adverb (as in this Diomedé is inne), or prepositional (in such phrases as hyf that I am inne).
3 Read brayn[es] in D.
4 That no rule can be formulated as to syn or sith according as th does not or doe, begin the following word may be seen by comparing 645 and 696 with 520, 2144, 2953, 3108, 4324, 6859.
§ 88.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 197

1527, 3211; (before h) 1794, 3422; sithè, 719; sithèn that, 934; sithèn I, 720.

B, like A, commonly has syn. Other forms are: sith (i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, 3256; sith, syth, (ii.) 598, 720, 1380, 1524, 1527, 3211; sith he, 1794, 3422; sithè, (i.) 520; sen, (i.) 3993, 6859; seyn, (i.) 3980; (ii.) 4006; sithèn thow, 934.1; sithèn thende, 1345.2

C has usually sythè or sithe before consonants (for sythe, sithe, before vowels, see 598, 1380, 1524, 1527, 4006). Other forms are: syn, (i.) 4319, 4954, 5057, 6859, etc.; (ii.) 5164; sith, (i.) 3422, 5171; (ii.) 3429; sithè, (i.) 960, 2953, 3256, 5231, 6717; (cf. 1345); sythyn thyn, 891; sythyn that (or sythyn that ?), 4971; sythyn al, 721.

D commonly reads seth. Thus,—(i.) 645, 696, 1665, 2144, etc., etc.; (ii.) 1524, 1527, 1856, etc.; before h, 1794, 3422.4 Other forms are: syn, (i.) 4971, 4975, 5057; (ii.) 5087; synn your, 4977; sen, (i.) 4954, 4994; sith, (i.) 520, 6909; sithè, 5146, 5171, 5215, 5254; sythe, 5174; sithè, 5107, 5164; sithè we, 6887; sithèn, (i.) 3980, 3993; (ii.) 4006; sithèn that, 4319, 6859; —en I, 5231.

II. Temporal (= cum):

sith that, 2354 (æ C, seth D), 4064 (syn they B, sithè they ? C, sithèn thei ? D); sith I, 3627 (syn C, seth D).

III.

gon sithèn longè while, 718 (æ C, seth D); sithèn honge, 833 (sithèn B, sithyn D, sythe me C); sithèn do, 3086 (sythè C, seth[e] D, sithen B ?)

IV. Preposition:

sith that day, 2497 (seth the D ; C ?); syn mydnyght, 3444 6 (sen B, sin C, tul D).

soone, sone (A.S. sóna), 234 ([-e] B, C ?), 524 f, 553, 1160 f, 1296 f (D ?), 2376 f (soene B), 2395 f, 3185 (D (?)), 3500 ([-e] to] B, -ë for to D), 3515 f, 4376 f, 4548, 4551 f, 4727 f, 4812 ([-e] B), 5432 (C(?); -[e] B), 5455, 5743 f, 5789 f, 5838 f, 5922, 5935 (D ?), 6074 (C(?); -[e] B), 6432 f, 6641 f, 6754 f, 6958 f, 7008 f, 7210 f, 7265 f, 7454 f, 7574 (?), 7578 (D ?), 7662 ([-e] B ?; D ?), 7671 f, 8082

1 Read, sith [that] show !
2 Read, sith the ende !
3 Dele [that] !
4 Supply [that] !
5 Supply [To] !
6 Supply [in] in A.
7 Supply [for to] in Â.
8 Or, write (pres. subj. 3 sg.) and soon se.
Observations on the Language [§ 88.]

(cf. 1999, 5317 C †); soone, sone, 41, 1531 1, 2693, 2951 2 (D †), 3410 3, 4309, 4358, 5938, 8204, etc., etc.; soon as, 2769 (-e CD); 4 soone he, 6657, 7595 † C; -e hope, 3794 (soon B, -e y D); soon on, 7727 (-e vpon CD); sone, sone, 2954 (soon B), 5 4368 (-e C; D †), 8030 † A (-e BCD). 6—eft soones, eft sones, 2553 (-es † D, -ys † aboute † C); 2736 f (eftt sonsy C) (: what to don is); eft-sone hym 4843 (-e hem C, -ës hem B, wel † some hym D.

Rhyme-words.—mone, moone moon (524, 1160, 2395, 6641), to done (1160, 1296, 2376, 3515, 4376, 4551, 4727, 5789, 6432, 6641, 6754 f, 7008, 7210, 7265, 7454, 7671), bone boon (4727, 6958), trone (5743, 5838).

thanne, thenne, than (A.S. þonne), temporal and illative?; thenne, 409 f BC (thanne A, than D †) (: brenne subj. 1 sg.), 1295 f (thanme C) (: henne adv.), 2638 f (than C, then D) (: renne inf.); 3471 f (than C, then D) (: henne adv.); thanne, 7790 f (thanme C) (: whanne). Before consonants: (1) thennè, 865 (thanne B, than D; C †), 1052 A (than B, tho D); (2) then, 529 (than BD, thanne C), 803 (than BD, om. † C); (3) thanne, 849 (D †), 2000 (than B, tho C; D †), 2247 (than BD) (cf. 2510, 3048, 3474, 8 4922, 5218, 5496, 5741); (4) than, 221 (thanne B), 349 (get † D), 2167 (thanne C) (cf. 2461 † D, 2710 † D, 2832, 3347, 5249, 5686, 5693). In the following instances thanne (temporal or illative) seems to have two syllables before a word beginning with a consonant,—498 ([ne] B, -ne † D), 2966 ([ne] B; D †), 7354 ([ne] BD); than[ne], 7652 (-ne C); cf. 4585 † C, 5138 † C, 6622 † C. Before vowels: (1) thanne, 1489 (than D) (cf. 2973, 3158, 3255, 3346, 3485, 3718, 4845; (2) than, 874 (thanme BC) (cf. 1435, 1670, 2710, 3658, 3927). Before h: thanne he, 4313 † D, 4459 (than B), 4585 (than D, thannè † wólde he C); than haue ye, 1413 (thanne C); than hastow, 4945 (thanne C); thanne hastow, 5301 (than CD).

than = quan (A.S. þonne, þon), (i.) 532 (D †), 537, 614, 1226, 2471, 2671, 3014, 3289, 3415, 3873 (thanne B); 4065 (thanne B), 4825, 5050 (then B, than † is D), 5253, 5257 (C †); (ii.) 1425, 3988 (D †), 4497 (er † A); than he, 819, 3332 (thanne B, as C).

whanne, when, when (A.S. hwonne); whanne, 2067 (when B, than D), 3874 (when B, when C, wher D †), 4001 (when B, when C), 5355 (when B, when CD) (cf. also, 71, 1002, 1237, 1672, 1689, 1849, 2095, 2255, 2386, 2577, 3445, 3925, 4001, 4257, 4665,

1 Read certayn for certaynly in A. 2 Old-style figures indicate that B has soon.
3 Supply [o] in D. 4 Supply [î] in B.
5 Before that. If we read soone, we have neuerie how; if soone,—neuerie how.
6 Dele (forth) in A, and read soonê.
7 In 2107 A, than = whan (when CD, when B). 8 Supply [î] in A.
4693, 4989, 5790, 5909).—when (bef. cons'ts), 155, 1139 (when B), 2278 (when B), 3386 (when B, whi † C), 3513, 4071 (when B, whanne D), 4801 (cf. also 358, 545, 876, 914, 1369, 2107 (than A), 2185, 2209, 2569, 2669, 2805, 2825, 3036, 3044, 3294, 3418, 3450, 3985, 4043, 4076, 4237, 4243, 4423, 4521, 4624, 4915, 5207, 5482).—when (bef. cons'ts), 3195 (when CD), 5249 (when CD).

Before vowels both whanne (whenne) and whan (when) are found. Thus,—whanne, 85 (when B, whan C †), 4239 (when B, when E) (cf. 4270, 4321, 4755); whan, 1483 (when B; C †), 1868 (when B) (cf. 2000, 2471, 2474, 3074, 3437, 3698, 4668, 4811); whanne, 404 (whanne C, whens † D); when, 3083 (when CD). Similarly before he, here (poss. sg.), hem: whanne 505 (when B, when D) (cf. 1820, 2630, 5330); whan he, 323 (when B) (cf. 750, 1731, 2941, 3907, 4080, 4634).

Note 1.—*When* is the usual form in B, whether before a vowel or a consonant; but *whan* also occurs in B (as, 155, 3513, 4239, 4801).

Note 2.—No good case of *whanne* (whenne) or *whan[ne]* occurs in the interior of the verse. Apparent cases are to be corrected, usually by the insertion of *that* (cf. 196 AD, 331 AB, 545 C, 1880 A (D †), 2386 D, 3446 BD (C †), 3925 C, 4624 D (C †)). *Whanne* (when CD) occurs once in rhyme, in 7791 (: thanne).

therfore, therfor (A.S. þære + A.S. fore)¹; wherfore, wherfor.¹—therfore, 5661 f, 5699 f (there- B); wherfore, 2496 f (where- C, wherfor D).

Before consonants,—therfore, 813 (‐for B; C †; therfor † hym (f) D), 855 (‐for B)², cf. 5662, 7365, etc.; therfor, 17 (‐e B, om. † D), 574 (‐e C), 576 (‐e BC), etc.; wherfore, 430 (‐for[e] B, wherefore C, wherfor[e] D).³ Before vowels,—therfore, 472 (there- B, therfor D †), 680 (‐for BD), 761 (‐for D †), cf. 133, 1385, 1480, 3180, 5467, 5702, etc.; therfor, 488 (‐e C), etc.; wherfore, 981 (wherfor B, therfore C, therfor D), 1100 (‐for BD), 2423 (‐for BD, wherefore C), cf. 3676; wherfor[e] † er, 3123 (‐for BC, wherfor D)⁴; cf. wherfor he, 311 (war for C).


to-form,⁵ to-for (cf. by-for, by-for); to-forn, (i.) 1381 f (biforne B, before C, byforn D), 1042 (‐e B, ‐for[e] † D), 1516 (‐e B), 2448 (‐for[e] C, ‐for D), 3177, 3691, 4481 f (‐e BC); (ii.) 2077 (‐e B,

¹ These words are accented indifferently on the first or the second syllable.
² In C supply [what]; in B read be[se]che.
³ BCD omit [my] (not necessary to the sense) before lord.
⁴ But supply [wol] in A, and read wher-fore.
⁵ Commonest in the phrase God to-for.
Observations on the Language [§ 88.

-for D), 4168 (-ne B, -forn [I] E), 7326 (-ne BD).—to-fore, 2494 f
BCD (to-fore † A), 5381 † f C, 6418 † f C.


whanne, whan. See after thanne, than.

wherfore, wherfore. See therfore.

with-inne ¹ (A.S. wið-innan), 1061 f (-yn D), 2462 f (-yn D), 2815 f (her yn D †), 3818 f (-yn D), 4206 f, 4620 f (-in C, -yn D), 6277 f (-in C), 7332, 8023 f; -e, 1108 (-yn D), 1167 (-yn D), 5940 (-in B, that † in C), 6075 (-in D), 7818, 7824 (-in D) (cf. 3443 D); -e here (sg. poss.), 1745 (-in BD), 1762 ² (-in D); -e his, 6837 (-in D) ³; -e hym, 7135 (with[in] C).—with-inne the, 267 (-in D), 305 (-in D), 7544 (-e nyght BC); -e tho, 7096 (-e zonê C, -e yonder D); -e myn, 8060 (-in D).

Rhyme-words.—bygynne inf. (1061, 2462, 2815 (?), 3818), wynne inf. (1061, 2462, 4620, 6277), blyynne inf. (4206), twynnne inf. (8023), a- twynnne adv. (6277).

Note.—The form in-with is found in in-with myn, 4341 (riyt † in D), and in-with here (poss. sg.), 7385 (with-inne CD); and this may perhaps be the right reading in some of the cases where the MSS. have with-inne or with-inne.

with-outen, -owten, wit-outen, ⁴ -owten ⁵ (A.S. wið-utan), (i.) 1714, ⁶
1799, 1922, 2477, 3308, 3599, 3815, 4105, 5038 (-e C), 5162 (-e D), 5787 (-en(e) D), 6020 (C †), 6303, 7681 (-e CD), 8035 (-e C), etc. [Var. CD -yn.] (ii.) 1757; 3077, 3260, 4655, 5066, 5646, 5663 (-e D), 5733, 6255, 6258, 7127 (-e † wordis C), 7560, 8166. [Var. CD -yn.] with-outen awayte, 3421 (B †; -oute C; D †); -en answere, 5820 (-oute C); withouten his, 2365 (-yn C, -out D); -en here (sing.), 5756 (-yn C); -en ho, 2168 AB; -en hond, 3030 (-yn CD).

with-outen, -owte, 270 f (-t D), 1321 (-en B), 1696 f (-t D), 2506 (-en B, -yn C), 3076 (-en B, -yn C), 3526 f (-t D), 3587 f, 4703 (-en B) ⁷, 4795 (-en B, -yn C, without † (†) D), 5257 (-en B), 5427 (-en B) ⁸, 6033 (-en BD, -yn C) ⁹, 6430 f, etc.; without[e], 1838 (-en B, -yn C, -out † (†) D); -e, 4827 (-en B, -out thassent D) ¹⁰, 7142 (-out B,

¹ Preposition in 267, 305, 1108, 1167, 1745, 1762, 3443 D, 5940, 6075, 6837, 7096, 7135, 7332, 7818, 7824, 8060.
² Hire is dative in ABC (in all of which the line seems to consist of nine syllables), possessive in D. The line needs considering.
³ Supply [and] in C. ⁴ 6020. ⁵ 3590.
⁶ Old-style figures indicate that D has without (which, before consonants, makes the line short by one syllable in the cases in question).
⁷ without eng † D. ⁸ Dele (or slur) J in A.
⁹ Read where[with] in C.
¹⁰ Supply [ne] in AD.
-en D) ¹; -e his, 5430 (-en B, -yn C †); without the yates, 7541 (ouer † C); without † bothe, 1862 D.

Rhyme-words.—route n. (270, 1696, 6430), route inf. (3587), shoute inf. (1696), aboute (270, 3526), lowte inf. (3526), doute n. (6430).

Note.—It will be seen from the foregoing examples that our MSS. use without-ên or with-out-ê differently before a consonant, the reading often varying in the same line. Compare also the following cases, in all of which a consonant follows: (1) (A has -ên) 361, ² 2490, 2563, 2356, 3332, 3541, 3998, 4150, 4200, 4583, 5362, 5839, 6333, 6385, 6419, 6900, 7214, 8035; ² (2) (A has -é) 1685, 2651, 2725, 2751, 2974, 4352, 4881, 5326, 6160, 6654, 6751, 7494, 8079. It is to be observed that all the instances of without-ên, cited are prepositions, except the four in which with-out-ê (never -ên) occurs at the end of a verse. These last are adverbs.

yfere, ifere (i.e. i(n) + fere, dat., cf. A.S. gefer, on gefere), 1237 f, 1253 f, 1995 f, 2122 f, 2201 f, 2334 f, 2351 f, 2562 f, 3073 f, 3115 f, 3357 f, 3588 f, 3660 f, 4554 f, 4689 f, 5452 f, 5866 f, 5868 f, 5995 f, 6016 f, 6096 f, 6114 f, 6706 f, 7176 f, 7216 f, 8134 f.

Rhyme-words.—chere n. (1237, 2351, 3073, 3588, 4554), deere, dere adj. (2562, 3115, 5368, 6016, 6114, 6706), here inf. (2201, 3588, 7216, 8134), here hit (1237, 3357, 3660, 4589, 5866, 5995), mate (1237, 2122, 2334, 3337), mane (4554), fer companion (5452), berer feretrum (5868), cler adj. pl. (6096, 7176), apper inf. (1995). [Var. B i-fere, i-fere, yfere; CD in fere; D yn fere, in fer-r.]

yore (A.S. géara, L. 3(e)are), 6159 f, 6418 f (to-fore † C), 6687 f; of yore, 5381 f (tofore † C, of your D), 8097 f (of your D); yore ago, 6680 (your D).

Rhyme words.—more subst. (6159), adj. pl. (6418), no more (6687, 8097), more, eueremore ade. (5381, 8097), soro ade. (5381), lore n. (6687).

[Var. BD yoore; C fore.]

Note 1.—Down, down, adown, adown (A.S. of-dune, dune-stigan, adûne, adûn-ward Chron. 1083) show no -e (except sometimes -(e) in D): cf. (i.) (ii.) 110 f, 184 f, 299 f, 359, 1065 f, 1254, 1492 (adowny B), 1744 f, 2202 f, 2938, 3815, 3921, 4434 f, 4625 f, 4896, 6705 f, 6924 f, 7174, 7222 f, 7368 f, 7386 f, 7675 f, 8133 f, etc., etc.

Note 2.—Gref in the phrase fallen gruf (O.N. falls á grifu) occurs once: fil gruf and 5574, (gref CD).

Note 3.—For asunder (cf. A.S. on-sundron) see 3502 f (a sundyr C, a sundre D), 4181 BE (a sondry A †, a sundir C), 4605 ABE † (asundery C), 7346 f (a sundir C, a sondr D).

Rhyme words.—thou dre n. (-er B, -yr C, -re D), yonder (-re D), wonder n. (-ir C, wondr D).

§ 89. To the list in § 85 may be appended: I. atwixen, -e, bytwyxn, -e, aweye, eke, often, -e, saue; II. here, there, where, and their varieties,—particles in which the form of the termination has been influenced by various analogies (cf. Child, § 72, b).

¹ Supply [nat] in D. ² Dele (ony) in A and read with outên ôt. ³ Cf. also 1820 CD, 1831 † D, 6431 † C.
atwixen, atwixe (cf. by-twixen), atwixen noon, 6835 (attwexen B, bettwixe CD); -e here (sg.), 5483. (See variants under bytwixen.)
aweye (A.S. onweg, aweg), 1208 f (-y D), 2279 f (-y D †), 4977 f, 5019 f, 5544 f (-y A, to dey C, to dey D), 6456 f (-y D), 6820 f (-y CD).
[Var. BD aweye; C awoye.] awey, away (i.) 572, 2600, 6263 f, 7431 f. [Var. C. awoyy.] (Cf. 574 † C, 1195 † C, 1196 † C.)

Rhyme-words.—pleye inf. (1208), dey ind. 1 sg. (1208), seye inf. (5019, 5544, 6456), seye ind. 1 sg. (2279), tweye (2279, 4977 †), wheye (6456), pleye inf. (6820), keye n. (6820).—day (6263), way (7431), weylawey (7431), may 3 sg. (6263).

bytwext. See by-twyxen.


ekte (A.S. ēc, ēc, cf. A.S. tó écan), 2761 f (ek C) (: byseche ind. 1 pl., bisike B, besche B), 2918 f (ek C) (: besche inf., byseke BD, besek C), 4790 f (ek B) (: cheke n. : byseche inf., -seke BD, besek C), 6296 f (ek C) (: besche ind. 1 sg., besche BD); ek, 3571 f (ekte BCD) (: byseck ind. 1 sg., bisike B, besche C, byseke D); ekē, 475 (ek C, eché D), 1720 (ek BC), 4226 AE (ek BC), etc.; ek, (i.) 32 (om. † D), 1827 (ekë D), etc.
ofte (A.S. oft), 135 f (-t D), 196 f,5 212 (-en B, [e] † D), 625 (-en C, -yn D), 912 f (-t D), 940 f, 1145 (om. † D), 2114 f, 2319 (-en B, -e (?) C, om. † D), 2406, 2466, 3127, 3286 f, 3511 f (-yn † C), 4091 f, 4361 [-e] B, 4479 f, 4485 (oft to B, al day CD), 4799,6 4876 [-e] B, ofte D), 5204 f (-t B), 5793 C, 5828 C, 5881 f, 6351 B, 6373 f, 6708 f, 6980 f (-t B), 7030 C (ofte a wold a = ofte wolde lie D, ost A, oost B), 7945 (-t † and B); ofte tyme,7 913 ([e] D), 1850 (yn C), 1877, 3971 (yn C; B †), 5823 ([e] B), 7399 ([e] B), 7946 ([e] B), 8121 ([e] B); ofte[es] tyme, 7172 (-e CD); ofte, cf.

---

1 twy[y(n)e A.
2 Old-style figures indicate that D reads by-twix[e].
3 In D read des[es]perauaunce. 4 In D read Troy[es].
5 Old-style figures indicate that B and D have off[es]. 6 Supply [hem] in C.
7 Variants of tyme not registered, see tyme, § 2, p. 3.
344, 646, 740, 1782, 1876, 2419, 3168, 3903, 4561, 5164, 5166, 5400, 5828, 6037, 6351, 7052, 7078, 7589, 7685, 7931; ofte he, 506 (-B, ofte D), 4579, 5479, 6100 (-t B, -e ft pitouesly C, -e ft ful D), 6969 (-t B); -e his, 445, 2343 (eft † C), 3976 (-t B), 4625 (-t B; D †); ofte hastow, 904 (-en B, -en C); ofte, 346 (-t BD), 137 † A (-t † (!) D), 139 † A, 4395 † D, 5828 D (cf. 3171 † D, 4561 † D); ofte tymė, 5986 (oft B, oftyn † there C, ofte ther D).

Rhyme-words.—softe adj. and adv. (135, 196, 912, 940, 2114, 3286, 3511, 4091, 4479, 5204, 5881, 6708, 6980), on lofte, a-lofte, o lofte (135, 940, 3511, 5881, 6373, 6708).

often as, 3143 (-t D); -en here-byforn, 3144; -en here (eam), 5387 ([en] B, -e D; C †); -en harme, 333 (-e C, -e D).—often for, 2331 (-e C, -e D); -en myght[e], 3351 (-e] † (!) D; C †); -en peyne, 4058 (-e CD, oft † peynės (!) B); -en guan, 5024 (offte D, soft † B); -en was, 7465 (-e] B, -e CD); -en seyde, 583 (-e C, -e D) (cf. 625); -en se, 4056 (-e] B); oftyn † tymė, 6833 C; oftyn as, 3168 C. (Cf. 1876 † C, 2419 † C.) [Var. CD -yn.]

sauf (O. Fr. sauf), -e, 395 (-e † that (!) D), 1241 (D ?), 1825, 3351 (C †, D †), 3632, 3729 (saf D), 4617 3, 4754, 7040, 8167, 8168; -e here (poss. sgy.), 7176 (saf C); -e his, 1710 (saf C) 4, 6573; sauf Troylus, 2489. Cf. Myn honour sauf I wol, etc., 3001 (sauyn † C, savė † I D).

here (= hic) (A.S. hér), 121 f, 292 f, 399 f, 1124 f, 1183 f (heere B), 1252 f (her D), 1337 f, 1577 f, 1680 f, 2058 f, 2189 f, 2714 f, 2729 f, 2836 f, 3355 f, 3483 f, 3489 f, 3661 f, 3678 f, 3790 f, 4053 f, 4149 f, 4690 f (heere B), 4970 f, 5102 f, 5205 f, 5585 f (heere B), 5582 f (heere B, her D), 5585 f (yfere † A, her D), 5870 † C, 5976 f, 5993 f (her D), 6212 f (her D), 6297 f (her D), 6829 f BCD (there † A), 7108 f (her D), 7361 f (her D), 7538 f. [1281 f D † (see there), 4990 f D † (see there).] 5

Rhyme-words.—chere n. (121, 292, 1124, 3483, 6297), manere (292, 1124, 3678, 5582), matere (1577, 2714, 3355, 4149, 7108, 7361), preyere (3483, 6297), here inf. (121, 399, 2189, 2714, 2836, 5205, 6829), yhere inf. (5976), lere inf. (2729, 5102), ye me lere inv. or subj. (1183), yfere adv. (1252, 3355, 3661, 4690, 5365, 5870 † C, 5993), dere adj. sg. (1337, 1577, 1680, 2058, 2189, 3489 (drede † A), 3790, 4053, 4149, 4970, 5205, 5585, 5585 † C, 5976, 6829), clere adj. sg. and pl. (6212, 7361), of fern[e] yere (7538).

1 In most of these cases B reads oft; so sometimes D, and once, at least, C (7931).
2 Old-style figures indicate that BD have oft (or ofte).
3 In D read [yfere].
4 In D supply [ful].
5 For the rhymes of these two lines see under there.
Before consonants here apocopates its -e, which, however, is regularly written except sometimes in D. For herë (var. B herë; D her), cf. 868, 1054, 1096 (A †), 1115, 1188, 1282, 1409, 1462, 1515, 1728, 2076, 2208 (hire B), 2338, 2815 (D †), 3255, 3953, 4303 (hirë C), 4844, 4902, 5139. Cf. also, herë byforn, 2356 f, 5910 f (there C, her D); hère-to, 3362 B (herto CD, herë † myghte A); hertë, 5734 f BD (thertë A); herë with al, 6441 CD (ther-with-al AB). For here, cf. 432, 1406, 1525, 1569, 2405, 2688, 2814, 2990, 3341, 3476; for here in compounds (here after, and the like), cf. 938, 3377, 3515, 4805; for her in such compounds (the second member beginning with a vowel), cf. 984, 1094 D, 1193, 3407; for here before his, hym, havë, cf. 469, 1544, 4415 A.

Instances of herë in the body of a verse are at any rate very rare. The strongest case is: "Intendedstow that we shul here bleue," 6841 AB (but: herë beleue C, her be-leue D)² where here is emphatic (or at any rate has the ietus). In the following apparent cases comparison of MSS. shows a better reading: 3362 A (l. herë-to), 5594 A (l. hyder), 6826 C.

there (A.S. þér, þér), 1281 f (thare B, here D), 2095 f; 3366 f (thare B), 3411 f, 3428 f, 3469 f, 3593 f, 4162 f, 4990 f (here D), 5305 f (ther D), 5359 f (ther D), 6024 f (ther D), 6146 f (thare B), 6186 f (ther D), 6829 f (here BCD)³, 7242 f (ther D), 7273 f (ther D), 7543 f (ther D), 7721 f (ther D).

Rhyme-words.—ere, ere n. (1281, 3593, 5305), gere n. (2095, 6186), were ind. 2 sg. (4162), ind. 3 pl (3428, 3469, 7543), subj. 1 sg. (4990), subj. 3 sg. (2095, 3366, 3411, 5359, 6024, 7242, 7721), fere n. (3411, 3428, 3469, 3593, 4162, 6024, 7273), fere inf. (6146), ellys where (5359, 6186), tere n. 7242, 7543).

therë, 3993 (ther BD); cf. 4049, 4198, 4227, 4368, 4570, 4658, 5111, 5760, 5761, 6022, 7033, 7455, etc.—ther, (i.) 4483 (-e C), 5606 (-e BC), 5614 (-e D); cf. 5505, 5630, 5649, 5685, 5843, 5859, 6021, 6156, 6308, 6316, 6509, 6532, 7085, 7609, etc.; ter mot, 5698 A (ther BD).

In compounds before consonants: thérby, 447 (tharby B); therby, 383 f, 5682 f; thërfore, 472 (therë-fore B, therfor D †); thërfore, 133 (therfor D); cf. for further examples, 17, 243, 247, 266, 274, 488, 574, 576, 627 f, 680, 761, 813, 855, 1161, 1251 f, 1385, 1434, 1480, 1576, 2094, 2137, 2935, 3180, 3378, 4232, 5467, 5662, 5702, 5734 f, 7365, etc., etc.

1 See also § 88, under byforn.
2 Cp. John's appear to agree with A, but II. 2392 has beleue.
3 For the rhymes see under here, which is the right reading.
there, 273 (ther BD); cf. 892, 1960, 2604 (thare B), 3247, 3406, 3415, 3510, 4902, 5048, etc.; ther, (ii.) 5243 AB (ther but D; C †)  
(cf. 7341).—there he, 1282 (thar B, that † C) (cf. 1418); there haue  
(pres. ind. 2 pl.), 3042 (ther B); ther helpeth, 5962 (-e CD). In  
compounds in which the second member begins with a vowel ther  
is usual: thus, ther-after, 5208; ther-inne, 5447 f (therin CD); cf.  
333, 1354, 1454,1 1703, 2282, 4474 f; there-vp-on, 4805 C.  
The strongest cases of dissyllabic therë are: That he cam therë || and  
that he was born, 3915 (ther[ë] B, therë or CD) 2, and And ther[ë]  
lat vs spoken of oure wo, 5906 (therë C). 3 In 604 † C, 3420 A (l.  
therof), 5357 C (l. thennes), 6737 C (l. therof), comparison of MSS.  
affords a corrected reading.  
Note.—nor (= ne ther †) occurs in 1262 A, but is perhaps merely a slip of  
the pen for per.  
where (A.S. hwær, hŵér), 4239 f (whare B), 6582 f (wher D); every  
where, 4724 f; ony where, 3534 f; ellys where, elles where, 5360 f  
(ellis wher D), 6183 f (ellis wher D), 7407 f (elles wher D).  
Rhyme-words.—feere n. (4239), ere n. (4724), gere n. (6183), terer n. (6582,  
7407), were ind. 3 pl. (3534, 4239, 6582), subj. 3 sg. (5360), there (5360,  
6183).  
wher, (i.) 357 (-ë [that] C), 1880 (-ë C) (cf. 1291 A, 3874 † D,  
5795); no wher, 4302 (no wher B, nower C, nowherë † D); and  
in compounds of wher in which the second member begins with a  
consonant (as, wher-so, wherby, wherfor), cf. 311 (whefor A, war  
for C), 409 (where-to B), 430, 436, 981, 1100, 1387 f, 2423, 2496 f,  
3123 (A †), 3620, 3676, 5774 (whar-with B).  
where, 3501 (whare C, wher D); wydë wher, 3246 (wher CD);  
wher, (ii.) 1164 (-e B); where as, 1357 C (wher D, there A, ther B);  
wher as, 3358 BD (-e C, there A). In composition (wher-on, etc.):  
wher-ôn, 1776; where-of, 4489 (wherof BCD).—where he, 1285  
(wher BD); wher he, 1461 (-e BC), 2236 (-e C); wher hym, 1291 BD  
(-e C, wher that A), 2034 (-ë C); where hastow, 5158 (wher BD);  
wher hastow, 276 (-e BC); no wher hool, 954.  
There are no cases of wherë. All apparent cases yield to com-  
parison of MSS., as in 357 C (where † hem), 1291 C (where hym),  
1932 A, 4302 D.  
Note.—From a comparison of the rhyme-lists to here, there, and where  
(which are complete), it will be seen that these fall into two classes which  
do not cross: (a) rhymes to here and (b) rhymes to there, where. A  

1 Seems to be a 9-syl. verse.  
2 But the reading of Cp. is certainly right: therë || and that that.  
3 No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.
striking instance of the difference in the sound of (a) and (b) is shown by 6581-5, where, the order of rhymes being ababb, the rhyme-words are:
dere, where, evere, were (erant), lere (n.).

§ 90. Ever and never (A.S. £fre, nêfre) are (as a rule)
dissyllabic before consonants and monosyllabic before
vowels and weak h.

The usual spelling, whether before vowels or consonants, is euere,
neuere in ABC (and so often in D); but euer and neuer are not
uncommon in BD, and euer is found in C 3605, neuer in A 2843,
C 1362.

For the spelling euer, see B, 9, 418, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4243, 4268, 5772,
6785, 7892; for neuer, see B 294, 501, 534, 675, 910, 970, 3199. There
are some petty variants: as, nevir (1942 D), euer (7892 C), eyr
(6025 D).

I. Before consonants both words are regularly dissyllabic: cf. for
euere, 418, 584, 638, 1151, 1465, 1864, 1915, 1925, 1958, 2117,
2656, 3086, 3121, 3354, 3473, 3519, 3556, 3653, 4021, 4243,
4268, 4440, 4603, 4681, 4942, 4946, 4966, 5049, 5161, 5179,
5772, 5984, 6082, 6126, 6387, 6405, 6593, 6781, 7026, 7181,
7418, 7502, 7691, 7719, 7892, 8096.

For neuere, cf. 37, 294, 534, 539, 586, 639, 641, 675, 774, 910,
959, 1219, 1228, 1386, 1653, 1671, 1813, 2316, 2354, 2498,
2545, 2692, 2968, 3093, 3199, 3229, 3331, 3409, 3427, 3626,
3706, 3711, 3712, 3717, 4088, 4503, 4550, 4869, 4961, 5002,
5059, 5135, 5521, 5858, 6022, 6142, 6486, 6788, 7139,
7143, 7187, 7238, 7341, 7724, 8045. So before consonant y in
the phrases euere yet, neuere yet: cf., for euere yet, 1325, 2080,
3135 AB, 7123; for neuere yet, cf. 657, 812, 1278, 1916, 3161,
3548, 3682, 3896, 4288, 4447, 7991.

II. Before a vowel both words are regularly reduced to one
syllable by slurring: cf., for euere, 9, 318, 513, 541, 816, 1290,
1633, 2229, 2328, 2299, 2494, 2681, 4685, 5749, 6025, 6264, 6306,
6785, 6814, 7119, 7439, 7745, 8224. For neuere, cf. 501, 622,
1329, 1362, 1522, 1574, 1643, 2183, 3000, 3236, 3550, 3605
(neuere thoughte A), 4356, 4375, 5250, 6243, 6518, 6804, 7198.

III. Before he and his the same slur takes place as before a
vowel: cf., for euere, 541 C, 2958, 5095, 6799 (C†), 7136, 7534;
for neuere, cf. 1946, 4188.

But before other h's, the dissyllabic pronunciation seems to be the
rule: thus, euere haue (subj. 1 sg.), 1225 (euër B); neuëre han
(inf.), 3414 BC (neuëre the AD); euere help, 1040 D†; neuëre
of Chaucer’s Troilus.

how, 2954; 1 neuëre half, 4492; neuëre herte, 7746 AC (-ër D). 
Cf., however, neuere haue {inf.}, 6104 AB (neuere haue C, -er? D †); 
neuere han {inf.}, 900 B (neuere a A; C †).

Note 1. The only case of ever or never in rhyme is 7442-4,—neuere, 7742 f 
(-er D): euere, 7444 f (-er D).

Note 2.—The following lines in which there are various readings (some 
MSS. following the word with a vowel, others with a consonant), may 
be compared, but are of little utility (presenting no instances which 
transgress the general rule, except for a manifest corruption or two): (1) 
for euere, cf. 236, 787, 1205, 5461, 6807, 7003, 7305; (2) for neuere, cf. 
1755, 3605, 5101, 6317, 6528, 6811.

The rule, then, is clear enough. Euere and neuere are dissyllabic 
before consonants; monosyllabic before vowels. This is the enun-
ciated (as to euer) by ten Brink, Compleynte to Pite, p. 176, n. to 
v. 33, who indeed makes it so stringent that he changes euer to ay 
in that verse. It seems doubtful, however, if the present state of 
our knowledge allows us to emend in this way (and this is admitted 
by ten Brink, Ch’s. Spr. u. Versk., § 263). The Troilus contains 
some cases which seem to show that Chaucer allowed both euere and 
neuere to count for a single syllable before consonants. I give the 
sure, or tolerably sure, cases first:

Quod Troylus for al that euere ye konne, 776. 
To ben hire helpe yn al that euere they myghten, 2709 (om. † D). 
As euere she was shal I fynde yn som route, 5065 (As she euyr was D). 
She wolde come as soone as euere she myghte, 6874 (euere D). 
Nas neuere yet thing seyn to ben presed derre, 174 (B †; -er C, -ëre † 
seyn D).

So hyd it wel I telle it neuere to me, 613 (neuer D). 
Were hisse nayles poyned neuere so sharpe, 2119. 
Now goode nece be it neuere so lyte, 2288 (-er B). 
For she was wys and louede hym neuere the lasse (not = nathelis), 2928 
(neuer C; D †).

To knowe of this ye were it neuere so lite, 7653 (D om. ye; neuer D). 
Cf. Be she neuere so faire or (ne so C) wel ishape (schape C), 3253 (no note 
in Austin).

Cases that are easily emended by comparison of MSS. are: (1) for 
euere, 897 BC, 3316 BD, 4620 C, 7420 C; (2) for neuere, 739 
BC (but perch. BC are right), 883 C, 1655 A, 2461 D, 7056 A, 
7556 C, 7791 C; and some cases of neuere the les in C (as, 170 C, 
750 C, 916 C) where nathelis is the correct reading. Very doubtful 
is 1144; and one does not like to dogmatize on 3253 or 4406.

Such of the above cases as are certain (for it will be observed that 
emendation to ay is impossible in the four cases 776, 2709, 5065, 
6874, and no emendation for neuere can be devised) seem sufficient 
to show that ten Brink’s rule is not rigid.

1 That is, if we read sonë (soon B) that. If we read sonë that, we have neuere 
how.
On the other hand in a few cases the disyllabic forms are found before vowels. Thus,—

God helpe me so I neuëre other mente, 1449.
Fro this forth shal I neuëre eten bred, 1529.
And neuëre other creature seyn, 5110 (neuër D).
The obsenaunce euëre yu youre absence, 5445 (C †, euër D).
Less secure are 897 AD, 4763 BD; and certainly to be emended (as comparison of MSS. easily allows) are 3103 D, 3146 C, 6816 C.2
Similarly euëre his, 6799 C † and neuëre his, 4181 C †, are to be corrected.

Note 3.—Such monstritosies as euëre and neuëre, sometimes perpetrated by this or that scribe, mean nothing, of course, and are easily corrected by comparison of MSS. (cf. e.g. the various readings in 2525, 2623, 3234).

§ 91. The following particles end in the *Troilus* sometimes or always in -es, -s (Child, § 73). This is sometimes an A.S. -es, sometimes a formation by analogy.

(i.) ayens (ayeyns, ayen, agayn, afornyeyn), elles, nedes, to medes, towardes (etc.), vnnethes; (ii.) hennes (henne, hens), thennes, uhennes; (iii.) ones (nones), tuyes, thries (thrie); (iv.) alweyes (alweys, alwey), other weyes, amonges (among), togederes (to-gëdëre); (v.) algates (algate), ascacnece, certyes.

In the following list the examples cited occur before a consonant (not h) unless there is a note to the contrary.

afornyeyn (A.S. foran, on-gægnes), aform yeyn vs, 2273 (a-for-ȝeynes B, aform [ ] C, aforynyens D). (Cf. byform.)
algates (cf. O.N. alla gotu, *adverbial acc.*), algatês hem, 2866 (-is D);
algate, 2049 (-ez † D), 2754 CD, 7434.
alweyès (cf. A.S. calne weg, *adverbial acc.*), alweyës arise, 2754 A (alwaþy B, alge CD); alweys a, 6415 (alweyës B, alwoy C, aH-wey D). (Cf. weyes.)
alwey, (i.) 782, 1403 (D †),3 1468 (-oȝ C, -eȝ D), 3084, 4477, 4942 CD (euëre AB), 6505; àlwey here (*hie*), 3661 AB (cf. 1818 † B);
alwey, (ii.) 1122, 1803. alwey (i.), 1847, 2437 B (A † C †; àlwey C; D †), 5618 f; alwey hym, 2169 (àlwey D †). [Var. B alway; C alway; D alwey.] (Cf. alwaþy, 6288 f C †; àlwey † his, 3328 C.)
amonges (A.S. ongemang, onmang), (i.) 7835 (omanges B, among[e] C); (ii.) 893 (amangë B, among[ê] C, among D †), 2260 (-ë B, -is C, -[is] D), 3700 (-is CD), 6614 (omanges B, amongis C, amongë D); among[fës] al, 4765 AD (-ë B).
among, 1970 f (-e B) (: song n. (-e BC)), 3110, 3702 (-ë B), 4658 f

1 Where A seems to have two light syllables before the caesura: *neuëre* || *yif*.
2 So probably 7807 A. In 3327 read *euere yîyk[e]*.
3 Supply [his] in C.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

§ 91.

(...song n. (-e B)), 4727 (omange B), 6148 (omange B, amonge D), 7051 (-e D, omange B), 7944 (-e D, omange B); among (before vowels), 6488 (-e D, amang B, amongis C), 7911 (-e D, amang B); among his, 5037 (amang B); among hem, 5359 (-e D, amang B, amongis C).

ascacunces (etym. dub.), 205 (asscauunis C, askauns D), 292 (aschaunis C, askauns D 3).

ayëns, ayèyns, agaýns, ayën, (A.S. on-gægnes, on-gægn).

I. As preposition:


(b) Before vowels,—ayên, 4837 (ažeyn B, ažen C); ayeýns, 2499 (ažeins B, ažens C, ayens D); aforin yein vs, 2273 (a-forçeynes B, afor C, a foryens D). Cf. ther ayeñís, 1454 (ažeyn B, ažen C, ayens D).

(c) Before h,—agayns his, 4362 (ažeins B, ažen C, ažens D); ayëns hire (poss. sg.), 5175 (a žeins B, ažens C).

II. As adverb.

(i.) ayën, 1476 (certeyn f B), 1606, 1694, 3061 f, 4425, 6972 (ayën f D), 7277, 7964 (cf. 5980 f, 6588 f, 6848 f, 7373 f, 7493 f, 7661 f); a gaýn, 3495 f (-e BC, ayen D), 5665 f (ageyne D); ayeýn, 7360 f (ażeynne B, ažeyn C, ažen D). (ii.) ayën his, 280; a gaýn hym, 1533 B (ayen D; hym agayn by A). [Var. B ażeyn, ažen; C ažeyn, ageyn, ageyne, ažen, ažyn, ažin; D azên.] ayenward, 3592 (ažeynward B, ažyn- C), 6243 (ažin- C, ažeynward B, om. f D).


certes (O. Fr. certes), (i.) 572, 773 (D f), 1618, 4108 f (; desertes pl.), 4138, 5652, 5687; (ii.) 3651, 4320. [Var. BC certys; CD certsi; C sertis, servyts.]

1 Supply [the] in D.
2 Supply [what] in C.
3 If the reading of D were to be kept, both these lines would consist of nine syllables, and we should have to accent askauns.
4 In 292 escacence translates Boccaccio's quasi dicesse.
5 Perhaps 9-syl. Supply [the] in C.
6 9-syl.
7 Supply [new] in CD.
8 Supply [ne] in ACD.
9 Transpose, and read agaýn.
observations on the language

elles, ellys, ellis (A.S. elles), (i.) (ii.) 345, 688, 728, 948, 972, 1564, 1660, 2160, 2237, 2775, 3408, 3433, 3661, 3811 (D †), 3933, 3996, 4183, 4186 (om. † C), 4204, 4268, 4353 (C †), 4622 (om. † D), 5085, 5718, 5792, 5931, 7740 f (cf. 1501 C †), 5992, 5999, 6418, 6701, 7033, 7067, 7407, 7519, 7664, 7844, 8160). [Var. C eH (= ellis).]—elles-where, ellis-where, ellis-where, 5360 f, 6138 f, 7612, 7681. [Var. C eH (= ellis).]

Rhyme-words.—wellys pl. (7740), hell yis (7740).

Note.—I do not think a good case of elles (monosyllable) occurs (cf. 371, 3517 D, 4268 E, 4353 C).

hennes, henne (A.S. heanon, L.W.S. heonone); hennes, 4679 (nis D), 7624 (henys † C, hens † D); hen[ne]s, 3009, 6766, 6970, 7016 (hens † (? D), 7254 (hennes D), 7258, 8080 (leaves gone in C); hen[ne]s liye, 6852 (hennes B, henys C); hens away, 572 (henne B, hene C); hens (before consonants), 574 † D, 4267 A † (hennës B, henys C, hen[ne]s E), 7220 † D (? he).—henne, 1294 f (: thenne), 3472 f (hende † B, hen CD) (: thenne), 5908 f (: brenne inf.).

medes, in to medes (A.S. tó médes, Siev. § 320), Myself to medes were the lettre sowe, 2286 (Myn seluen † the medis C, My self † the medis D).

nedes, nede (A.S. néde, niéde, nédes, niédes); nedes, 1524 (nede C), 3458 (nedës (? A), 4004, 4362, 4551 (D †), 6015, 6681 (C † D †), 7715, 8025, cf. 5277 † C. [Var. CD nod).—nede, 1756 f (: drede n.); nede, 4129 (nedës C), 6261 (C †; nèdes † D).

nones. See ones.

ones, onys (A.S. sene, Pet. Chron. ánes), 472 (D †), 549 (om. † D), 792, 2742, 4429, 4499 (D †), 6129, 6933, 6934, 7402; onys have, 1566;—at ones, at onys, 90 f, 804 f 2024 f, 2468 f, 2708 (D †), 3192 (es † thei D), 4845 f, 5503 f, 6404 (D †), 6406; at ones er, 2961 (ys or CD). [Var. BD ones; CD onis; B atoneses.15]

Rhyme-words.—bones pl. (90, 804), stones pl. (2024, 2468), the none, nonys (2468, 4845), non is (5503).

for the none, nonys, 561, 2466 f, 4847 f, 5090. [Var. B nonees.]

other weyes. See weyes.

thennes (A.S. þanon), 3987 (thenë C, thennë D), 5396 (then[ne]s CD);
then[ne]s, 5357 (tennes B, therê † D, themse dissyl. D), 6924 (tennes B), 7034 (tennes B, themys C), 7143 (tennes B), 7248 (tennes B, thens † D), 8177 (tennes B). [then[ne]s] wolde he, 6839 C.] thriês, thrie, thrye (A.S. ðriwa); thrihs hadde, 6372 (cf. 2484 † D); thrie, thrye, 1174 † (thry D), 1548 f (thrye B), 2370 f.

Rhyme-words.—companye (1174), iuypatie (1548), folye (2370), yn hye (1174), lye mentior (2370).
togederes, togedre (A.S. æt, tô-geдрre), togederes euere, 5984 (-gideres B, -gedir D, -gedere d[w]elle C); to-gedere 1 so, (to-gider B, to-gedere C, to-gider D). 2
to medes. See medes.
towârdes (A.S. tô-weardes, etc.; towardes, (i.) 523 3; (ii.) t. hire, 2307; t. hym, 6080. [Var. BCD towardis; C -ys.] toward, (i.) 5017 (-e BD), 6054 (-e B, -es D; C †), 7004 (-e B); to Troyëwârdes and, 59 (troy[e] wardis D); to meward shal, 6328 (-e BD)—thidewârdes † gan, 2335 (thiderward B, thedirward C, thidirward D) 4; cf. whedirwârdes, 4944 D (wheder A, whedir(e) B, whedyr C); vpwardis † at, 3047 D; her-âifterwardis † for, 984 D (her afterward A, here afterward B, here afterward C), cf. 6193, 7291. 5

Note.—Other words in -ward 6 are: ayenward, 3592, 5689, 6243; bâkward(e), 6215; downward, 1991, 2790, 6211; éward, 4261 BE, 6640; hómward, 2388, 3463, 6845, 7545; invward, 2810, 2817; outward, 2789; vpward, vpâward, 2913, 3047, 5821, 7471, 7723.
twyês (A.S. twiwa, Chron. 1120 twiges), 2484 (thriês † D), 2940 (D †), 6460 (twiis C), 6760 (twyê B), 7252. [Var. BCD twiês; B tweyes; C twiis, twyis.]

vnnethes, vnnethes (A.S. unéæc), 301 (-e (?) C, -is D), 1651 (-is D, onnethis C), 4911 (-e C, -is D). (Cf. vnnethie, § 82.)

-warde, -ward. See to-warde.

weyes. He feleth other weyes dar I leye, 4500 (othere wayes B, othere wayis C, other-wis D). (Cf. alwayes, algates.)

whennes (A.S. hwanon), 408 (whenys C †, when[ne]s D); when[ne]s, 402 (whenne B, whennys C, when[ne]s D). 9 —whens † euery, 404 D (whenne AB, whanne C).

1 Dissyllable. 3 Supply [me] or [i] in D. 4 Read soft[e]ly in A; dele [he] in D.
5 Afterward † res, 4261 A (afterward † C, estward BE).
6 Variants not noted, but no MS. has -es, -is, in the cases cited. In some MSS., however, -e is at times written, though never sounded. In this note no distinction is made as to whether vowel or consonant follows.
7 Dele [he] in B. In C, dele [he-] and [e]; then read twies.
8 Supply [how] in C. ("A later to stuck in." Furnivall.)
9 In both 402 and 408 we may reduce whennes to one syllable by reading cometh instead of cometh.
Observations on the Language

§ 92. Present Indicative.—The First Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends regularly in -e (Child, § 48; ten Brink, § 184). Thus,—

I. In rhyme:

besche, byseche, 855 f (be[se]che B) (: leche n.), 2505 f (: speche);
   cf. 1331 f, 3235 f, 3597 f, 4178 f, 5116 f, 6749 f, 7492 f, 7972 f;
bes[se]che, 5811 f (biseche B, besche C, besche D) (: speche);
besche, 6294 f (bescheke BD) (: eke adv.); bysek[ə], 3573 f (biseke
defende, 2818 f (: amende subj. 3 sg. : sende pret. ind. 3 sg.).
defyne, 5052 f (: ruyen n. : deyne inf.).
desire, 6954 f (: ire).
deuysse, 3277 f (: seruyse), 4921 f (: suffise inf.).
directe, 8219 f (: corecte inf.).
dye, 420 f (deye AC) (: maladye); cf. til I dye, 5061 f (deye C, dey
   D) (: eye); til that I dye, 6319 f (deye BCe, dey D) (: ywrye p.p. :
   eye); cf. also 4449 f, 5106 f.
gesse, 989 f (: goodnesse : wikkednesse), 1803 f (: dronkënesse :
distresse).
grete (A.S. grétan), 4100 f (: the swete : planete).
herye, 3793 f (herie CD) (: merye pred. pl.).
hope, 932 f (: drope n.).
leue (credw), 993 f (: greue inf.), 4743 f (: acheue inf. : leue adj. pl.).
leye, 1046 f (ley D) (: seye inf.).
loue, 927 f (: loue n.), 1935 f (: loue n.).
lye (mentior), 2368 f (: thrye : folye); cf. 1385 f (: eye).
mene, 1666 f (: clene pred. sg.).
mete (A.S. métan), 4186 f (: swete voc.).
pace, 5467 f (pace C) (: deface inf.).
recomaunde, 7777 f (: comaunde inf.).
rede (lego), 159 f (: mede pratum : rede adj. pl.).
rede (moneo), 258 f (: lede inf.).
requere, 1443 f (-ire CD) (: chere n.).
resigne, 432 f (resyne Ce) (: digne : benygne).
sacrefise, 6786 f (: aryse inf.).
sayle, 7004 f (: bewayle inf. : fayle subj. 1. sg.).
serue, 15 f (: sterue inf.), 3555 f (: til I sterue).
seye, 3124 f (dey inf. † D) (: though I preye : wreye subj. 2 sg.), 4236 f (seyde † B) (: pleye inf.). (Cf. note, below.)

stere, 1089 f (: clere inf. : matere).
suppose, 2339 f (: rose).
swere, 3214 f (: spere).
swete, 12550 f (: Polyphete : plete inf.).
telle, 2681 f (: dwells inf.).
trowe, 2106 f (: glowe inf.).
warye, 7741 f (: contrarye).
wene, 3249 f (: Polixene), 3341 f (: bytwene : contene inf.), 5455 f (: sustene inf. : tene).

write, 4675 f (: endite inf.), 7989 f (wryjte C) (: endite inf. : lite adj.).

II. Before consonants:

bidde, 3717 AB (preye to (?) C, pray to D), 4312.

breke, 3157 BC (A ? D ?).

combre, 4941 (combere C ; D †); cf. suffre, 2947 (-er B, -ere C).

fele, 6679, 7632.

graunte, 785 (-[e] D), 1575 (-[e] B ? D ?).

iape, 1225.

kepe, 676.

loue, 2495, 5421, 6283.

Before th:

bydde the, 1020 (-[de] D); coniure the, 3035 (D †); fynde that, 8121; mene this, 6168 (-e thus † C ; D †); pose that, 3413 ABC (suppose? D †); preye the, 6963 (-[e] D); reioyse thus, 7528 (reioyé C).

Before y (consonant):

telle yow, 3620; trowe ye, 5538 (-e I C †).

III. This -e is regularly elided before a vowel. Thus,—

clepe, 8, 7126; hope, 47 (B † (? †)); 2139, 2357, 2610; late, 133 (latt B); fele 400; pleyne, 409 (C † D †), 534; consente, 414; compleyne, 415; hide, 581 (hid(d)e B); loue, 667, 1382; hope I (: redy), 983; drede, 1012; hate, 1018, 5501, 8095; answère, 1454; make, 1569, 7966; yeue, 1914 (C † D †); fare, 2593.

1 Perhaps subjunctive.

2 Read hold[œ], later in line, in CD.

3 pleynt taught † D; pleyne taught B.

4 Supply [no] in A (D †).

5 Supply [her] in D, or read faré a mys.
Observations on the Language

- passe, 2680; mene, 2712; recche, 2954; warne, 3011; here, 3031; cause, 3113; rede, 3500; excuse, 3878; clippe, 4186; ende, 4660 (D †); sufre, 6403 (-fere C); write 7695; speke, 8225.

I knowe also and alday here and se, 1818 (know D).

Nece I conioure and heightly yow defende, 2818 (O nece I conioure & hevely defende C).

Yet eft I the by-seche and fully seye, 3124 (The pray y eft al-thoghthow shuldest dey D †).

For that I taryfe || is al for wykked speche, 7973 (-ie is CD).

IV. Elision before h:


holde hym, 7734.

hope his, 8068.

loue hym, 5562 B (loueth † A).4

V. Exceptions.

There are several genuine cases of -e:
deye ye, 6594 (dey D).

praye the, 6693 (pray D); pray the, 6668 (-e B, -e jow C); pray to, 930 (-e B), 1667 (-e C); pray to god (†), 5101 A (preye god BC, pray g. D); pray yow, pray yow, 1101 (-e B), 2362 (-e (?) B), 2491 (-e B, -e † that C),5 6301 (-e † quod B),6 6494 (-e B), 7984 (-e B).

Cf. also,—preye to, 7726 C (prey[ε] god A, pray to D); pray to, 3717 D (preye C, biddē god AB); pray with, 2145 A (-e I C, pray ich BD).7

seye yow, 7361 (sey CD); seye that, 5640 (sey D), 5692 (sey BD); -e though, 5703 (sey D); sey nought, 1758; sey for, 2738; sey not, 7365, 7366, 8142; sey no, 7771; sey this, 3165 (-e nought B, sei not C, sey not D).

knowe not, 1267 (note † not D).

loue parde, 717; loue yow, 6296 (C †? D †?). Cf. also loue, 1332 † B (-e ACD).8

menye that, 4133 (-e ye † B, -e † wil C, thus he † wyll E).

rede that, 495 (-e I CD).

settthat, the, 1452 (set BD).

Cf. also dwelle, 6978 † C (-e ABD); hope, 973 † D (-e B; A † C?), 3794 † D (-e ABC); leue, 7418 † D; lyue, 3647 † D (-e ABC); make, 3183 † A (l. may); plught † my, 6272 D (p.p. ABC); trowe,

1 Read in B, soon[e to]. (D †)
2 Insert [ellis] in C.
3 Supply [to] in A; [†] in B.
4 D too long. C has a different line.
5 D ridiculously inserts deiphbus.
6 Praye, with -e fully sounded, may well enough stand for pray ye = pray yow.
7 In B, read god for and.
8 Supply [that] in C.
3735 A (trow I B, trow y D, -e C). In 1491 bidde appears to be the right reading.

Note 1.—The final -e is often omitted at the end of a line in one or another MS. Thus,—assent, 2143 f C (-e AB D) rh. entent CD (-e AB); begyn 1934 f C (gynne AB, y bathel + yn D) rh. in C (inne AB, yn D) rh. syn C (synne AB D); bryng, 2394 f D (-e ABC) rh. incoyng D (-e ABC); bysek, 3573 f A (-e BD, besuche C) rh. ek A (eke BCD); consent, 929 f CD (-e AB) rh. repente ind. 1 sg. ABC (-t D) rh. entent CD (-e AB); fast, 2251 f (-e AB) rh. fast ade. CD (-e AB) rh. cast inf. CD (-e AB); feynt, 410 f D (-e ABC) rh. pleynt D (-e ABC) rh. qweynt D (-e ABC); ges, 1372 f C (gesse AB D) rh. wrecchednes CD (sse AB); ges, 4569 f D (gesse ABC) rh. largesse ABCD rh. gladness D (sse ABC); repent, 926 f D (-e ABC) (see consent); repent, 1610 f CD (-e AB) rh. entent CD (-e AB); thynke, 2498 f D (-e A, thynke BC) rh. forthenk inf. D (-thynke ABC); trow, 2284 f D (-e ABC) rh. sow inf. D (-e ABC) rh. on know D (-e ABC); trost, 3208 f C (trist D, triste AB) rh. lest subj. pres. 3 sg. C (lyste AB, list D) rh. most pref. subj. 2 sg. C (wyste AB, wyst D); trust, 1323 f CD (-e A, triste B) rh. lust pres. subj. 3 sg. (-e AB, lust D) rh. kynt ind. 3 sg. (keste A, kiste B, kust D later hand).—So especially in verbs ending in -eye, -aye. Thus D has prey, pray in the following places in which the other MSS. have -e.,—760 f rh. sey dico D (-e ABC) rh. deye inf. AC (dye BD), 1588 f rh. purvey inf. D (-e AC, playe + B), 2218 f rh. say inf. D (-e ABC), 2244 f rh. twey D (-e AB, to + C) rh. purvey inv. pl. D (-e ABC), 2293 f rh. sey inf. D (-e ABC) rh. dey inf. D (-e ABC), 2755 f rh. plye + D (pleye inf. ABC) rh. lay inf. D (-e ABC), 2813 f rh. play inv. pl. D (-e ABC), 6531 f rh. obey inf. D (-e ABC), 8106 f rh. sey inf. D (-e AB), 8147 f rh. sey ind. 1 sg. D (-e AB), 8224 f rh. sey dico D (-e AB). So also,—sey, 1266 f D (-e ABC) rh. twey D (-e ABC), 1525 f rh. dey inf. D (-e ABC), 2280 f rh. twey D (-e AB, tweyne C) rh. away D (-e ABC), 5431 f D (-e ABC) rh. deye inf. ACD (dye B); ley, 1046 f D (-e AB) rh. sey inf. D (-e AB); dey, 1209 f D (-e ABC) rh. pley inf. D (-e ABC) rh. away D (-e ABC), 1512 f D rh. purvey inv. or subj. ag. D (-e ABC), 2294 f D (-e ABC) rh. sey inf. D (-e ABC). In 1394 f, A has prey, D prayer, while BC have preye (-aye inf. ABC, say D). Cf. prey, 5555 f CD (-e AB) rh. say inf. C (sey D, saye AB) rh. wey acc. CD (-e AB), 6935 f D (pray C, preye AB) rh. pley inf. D (play C, pleye AB) rh. say inf. D (say C, saye AB); say dico, 5585 f CD (-e AB) rh. dey inf. CD (-e A, dye B).—In the interior of the verse an -e necessary to the metre is sometimes omitted by the scribe: as,—trow[e], 1831 BD (-e AC); cf. 601 AD, 1020 D, 7726 A, etc.

Note 2.—The omission of elided -e is not uncommon. Cases of it occur in all the MSS. Cf. the following lines (old-style figures indicate that A omits the elided -e): I. before vowels: 240, 263, 406, 424, 759, 864, 1103, 1191, 1269, 1807, 1818, 1836, 1837, 2423, 2533, 2590, 2873, 2951, 3090, 3102, 3124, 3249 D, 3347, 3474, 3478, 3689, 3755, 4020, 4191, 5585, 5908, 7148, 7608, 7734. II. Before h: 3649.

Note 3.—Hiatus is very rare. "I fyndé ek in storyes ellyn where," 7407, seems a pretty certain instance, though B has fyndé, saving the metre by the insertion of the before storyes. Cf. also loué von, 1923 AD (-e B, leue + C); mené + I, 3463 A (-e B, -e it CD); bathé + yn, 1934 D (bathe inf. AB, -e + inf. C); take + it, 7851 A (-e BD, tok + C).

Note 4.—For the monosyllabic se, cf. (i.) 842 f, 1517, 1818 f, 2909, 5907, 5986, 6261, 6268, 7355, 7432, 7498, 7525, 7736 f, 8085; (ii.) se hym, 1418; se here (exam), 7521. [Var. BCD sec.]
Observations on the Language

§ 93. The Second Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in -est (-ist, -yst), -st (-cst) (Child, § 49; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186, 259). Thus,—

I. -est:

abydest, 7538 (-yst C).¹
biddest, 5118 (-yst C, counsel-
lest † D).
coniestest, 5688 (-iect-
B, comit-
ist † D).
counseyllest, 2613 (-ist C, -ist D †).
desirest, 7821 (-ist f C).
deynest, 4277 (-yst C).
dremest, 7645 (-yst C).
durest, 785 (-yst C, -ist D).
errest, 4964 (-yst C).
fardest, 5125 (-[e]st C).
feynest, 6776 (-yst C).
hycst, 4283 (hijest D).
menest, 3179 (-ist C, -yst D).²
regnest, 8227.³
semest, 2601 (-yst C, -ist D).
sorwest, 5302 (-ist CD), 5763 (-ist C).⁴
stondest, 3089 (-ist CD).

II. -st, -est:

(a) Monosyllables:

leest, 4277 (leest BD).⁵
lyst (jaces), 2076 (list B, lycest D).

(b) spekest, 2508 (-ist CD).
rennest, 6211 AB (-yst C ; D (?)).
entrermyst, 1019 † C (?) (entremetist † (?) D).

Note.—Forms in -ës, -ys, un-Chaucerian and due to the scribes, are louis, 2481 C (-est AB, -ist D), and demys †, 5205 C (demist † D, deusyest AB).

¹ Supply [that] in CD (?).
² Supply [so] in C ; [for] in D ?
³ Supply [de] in D.
⁴ Supply [thow] in C.
⁵ Supply [vul] in AD (?).
⁶ Supply [thow] in C ; dele (nict) in D.
§ 94. The Third Person Singular of the Present Indicative ends in -eth ( -ith, -yth), -th ( -eth, -ith, -yth) (Child, § 50; ten Brink, §§ 184, 186). Examples are:

I. -eth ( -ith, -yth):

- He spendeth

- He yeueth

- weneth, 216 (-yth C, -ith D).

- gynneth, 218 (-yth CD).

- turketh, 324 f (-yth C, -ith D).

- soiborneth (-yth C, -ith D): borneth

- serueth, 332 (-yth C, -ith D).

- asketh, 339 (-yth C, -ith D).

- themketh, 403 (-yth C, -ith D).

- knoweth, 450 (-yth C, -ith D).

- causeth, 551 (-ith D).

- defendeth, 603 (-yth C, offendith † D): offendeth (-yth C, -ith D).

- auayleth, 604 (-yth C): sailleth (-yth C, saileth † A): assayleth

(-yth C, -ith D); etc., etc.

The above cases are chosen from lines which all four MSS. give. Cf. also the following examples, also from such lines, in which AB have -eth, CD

- yth or -ith or both: 625, 632, 667, 764 f, 766 f, 856, 1296, 1458 f, 1850, 1882 f, 2002, 2065, 2072, 2142, 2216, 2471, 2510, 2536, 3377, 4493, 4494, 4981 f, 7876, etc., etc.

It appears, then, that the usual ending in unsyncopated cases is -eth for A and B, -yth or -ith for C and D. But C sometimes has -eth: as, seseth, 1873; aceth, 2156; desireth, 2235; causeth, 2331; erith, 4979, etc. That D sometimes has -eth is shown by the first list of examples; others are: nedeth, 2626; endeth, 5166; beteth, 5572; floureth, 6239; dreydeth, 7026, etc. The usual ending of D is -ith, as that of C is usually -yth.

Note 1.—Forms in -it, et, -yt are occasionally found. Thus,—brestyt, 258 C (read brest); comyt, 402 C (read comth); fallit, 142 C; fallyt, 212 C; preuet, 7311 B (perhaps meant for preterite); louet, 8001 B (possibly meant for preterite); rennet, 2839 B; turnyt, 1883 f C (: sporuyth); wexit, 942 C. Brennyt, 5340 C, is probably meant for a preterite, and so perhaps rentitud, 6832 C. It is barely worth while to note such spellings as,—dauneth, 1484 B; forseth, 1460 f B; geteth, 1461 f B; hang[e]th, 2071 B; lowyt, 8001 C; ployeht, 840 B; stynteht, 3740 B; thenketh, 221 A; douneth, 6251 B; etteht, 1458 f B; sumourneth, 3880 B; chasith, 5077 D; occupic the (for occupitche), 7685 D.

Note 2.—A few examples of the third person singular in -es, -s, occur in B: comes, 5715 B (comth AD); has, 3457 B (hath BCD); loues, 1753 B (-ede AC, -yd D); thankes, 2306 B (thonked A, thankede hym C; thonyk Dy). Regoles, meddles, worre, in A, 4956 f, 5001, 4744, are more

1 But iuslyth † D.    2 Cf. 4979-81-82.    3 Supply [wykke] in C.
Observations on the Language

scribe's blunders for repeled, meddled, we ren. In 5100 C, trovis should be trace is. (Cf. Child, § 50; ten Brink, § 185.)

Rhyme words.—The ending -eth, 3 sg., rhymes usually with itself: cf., besides the places already cited, 1892-4-5, 2869-70, 4493-4, 4979-81-83, 5235-6, 5571-2, 6674-6, 7146-7. But see also semeth, 643 f (-yth C, -ith D): the wyse it demeth AB, the wise demyn C, thes clerks demith D), and occupieth, 549 f (C f (men fieth).

II. The Present Indicative Third Person Singular in -eth, -th (e-syncopated) is not uncommon. As we should expect, we find instances of it (a) in verbs ending in a vowel, or (b) in m, r, v (or f); but (c) it is not confined to such verbs.

(a) Verbs ending in a vowel:

lyth, lith, 1550,1 1800 (ly3t C), 1826, 2658,2 2823 (ly3t C),3 4890 (li3thank(e) D), 5005 (lietb D), 5078 (ly3th D),4 5120 (leyth C, lietb D), 5530 (lietb D), 5816, 7648 (lietb D), 7650 (lietb D), 7780 (lietb D). (Cf. 1551 A, 7633 CD, 7782 C.)

pleyeth, 840 (-eht B, pleyth D).

purueiceth, 5728 (-ueyth D, -ueyed A).

seth, seeth,5 (videt), 4082 (seet C), 4410 (seet (f) D), 5625, 5636, 6595 (seet C), 7546 (seet (pret) C); seyth, 2339 (seeth B, seet C, seyd D); cf. 6820 C.

Whoso me seth he seth sorwe al at onys, 5503 (seeth ... seet B, seet ... seyth D).

seyth, seith, (dicit), 1004 (seyth B, seet C), 1181 (seyth B), 1755, 1940 (sayth C), 2461, 3110 (soeth B), 3153, 3344, 3638, 3876, 6265,9 7042, 7246 (sith C), 8014; seith, 1103 D, seems to be dissyllabic, but read seyd (Cf. AB). In 2394: He song as who seyth (seith B), seith C) sumwhat I brynge, are we to insert he before who or to read seyth? Mr. Austin's collation makes no note.

sleeth, 7706 (sleeth D).

Note.—fieuth, 5323 C, is a wrong reading. In D 4410 we are hardly to read knoweth.

(b) Verbs in m, r, v (f):

comeyth, 402 (comth B, comyt C, -ith D),10 405,11 408 (-yth (f) C, -ith (f) D),12 1369, 1461 (comth B), 1728 (-yth B), 2320 (comth B),

1 ly(e)th (f) C; but supply [now] and read lith.
2 Supply [to] in CD.
3 Supply [of] in B.
4 But read now(e) and lyeth in D.
5 But supply [now] in D, and read lieth.
6 But supply [him] in D, and read lieth.
7 Seeth is always monosyllabic in this list. A has usually seth, but seeth in 6595; D has usually seeth.
8 Not a very certain line as to metre; apparently a nine-syllable verse.
9 Supply [had] in A.
10 If we read whens (so AD), we must read cometh (-ith); if whens B (ys C), comth.
11 Old-style figures indicate that CD have -yth or -ith.
12 Cf. 402.
2338 (comth B, -yth (↑) C, -ith D), 2420 (comth B), 2470, 2877¹ (D ↑), 3721 (comth B), 5083 (-yth C), 5166, 6754 (come B, comth D), 6789 (comth D, -yth C),² 7104 (-yth C, comth D), 7505 B (-yth B, comth D, com(e) ↑ A). (Cf. 4067 ↑ B, 5761 ↑ C, 7486 B); bicometh, 1880 BC (-eth A ↑, -ith D ↑), 1882; ouercometh, 6246 (-yth C, comth D t).

comth, 5704 (-eth B), 5715 (comes B), 7532 (-yth C).³ (Cf. 7486 D, 7506 ↑ D.)

For al that cometh comth by necessitie, 5620 (comth...

semeth, 889 (-yth C, -ith D), 3030 (-yth C, -ith D); cf. 7969 D.

meneth, 1472 (ieth D, mene J B, mene 2 pl. C). (Cf. 1806 J D, 7513 C f D.)

bereth, 939, 940, 1272 (-ith C, -ith D f), 1486 (berth B f), 6823 (-yth C, kepith D).

fareth, 956.

swereth, 1739 (swerth B), 7793 (swerth B).

byhoueth, 5666, 5716; cf. 5967 CD.

dryueth, 7464 (drietth C f, driueth D t). (Cf. 1085, 7903.)

loneth, 1404 (-yth C, -ith D), 1815 (-yth C, -ith D), 1862 (-yth C, -ith D), 2854 (-yth C, -ith D).

(c) Other verbs:

liketh, 3227 B (-ith C, -eth ↑ A, lyke ↑ D); cf. 7729 C (D (?)).
maketh, 1318 (-eth B, -yth C, -ith D)³; cf. 2468 C.

nedeth, 1261 AB (-ith C ↑ D ↑), 2475 AB (-eth ↑ C, -ith (? D)¹⁰; cf. 6699 ↑ C.

speketh, 6599 (-en ↑ B, -ith C).

thenketh (videtur), 1292 (-yth C, -ith D),¹¹ 1486 (B ↑; -ith C), 2714

³ Supply [now] in E.
⁵ Supply [nec] in C.
⁹ Dile (to) in C.
¹² Supply [for] in BD.
¹⁰ In D, read long[e].
Observations on the Language [§§ 94, 95.

eth † B, -ith C, -th † D), 5146 (-yth C, thinkest † D), 6942 (-ith C; D (!)); me of-thynketh, 1043 (mathynketh B, me athinkith † D).

But,—

likëth, 1247 (-yth C, -ith D), 1527 (likë † 3ow C, -ith D), 1615 (-ith CD), 3196 AB, 4809 (-ith CD).

makëth, 4669 (-ith D).

nedëth, 1096 (-ith D), 1547 (-ith CD), 1582 (-ith CD), 3791 (-ith CD), 4305 (C †; -eth D), 4485 (-yth C, -ith D), 4518 (-yth C, -ith D), 8211 (-eth D). (Cf. 740 A, 3699 CD.)

thenkëth (videtur), cf. 1392 † D, 2714, 3222, 5497, 5772, 5926, 6483, 7235. Cf. thenketh (putat), 1118 (thynketh B, thenkyth D).

Note.—In some cases of apparent -eth (-yth, -ith), a comparison of MSS. makes it certain or probable that the unsyncopated form is right. See 122 D, 195 C, 868 D, 1087 B, 1397 D, 1464 CD (perhaps right), 1568 C, 1876 C, 4674 B, 4901 D, 5967 CD; and cf. also 1031 † C (!), 3084 † C, 3792 † B (!), 4479 † CD, 5390 C †, 6598 C. See other cases of syncopated -yth in the variants under § 95.

§ 95. The following examples of the third person singular in -t from verbs in t, d, s, occur in the Troilus (Child, § 51; ten Brink, § 186): abit, 1084.
bet, 1498 (let B, redith C, ret D).
bitt, 1133 (betyt D); by-tyt, 6708 (bitit B, be-týdýth C, betidde † D).
(Cf. týt, below.)
bytrënt, 4073 (be- C; bi- D (!)); cf. 5532 (!).
blent, 4667 (blent(e) B).
brëst, 258 (brestyt C, brestith D), 4479 (brestyth C, brekith D).

drat, 3170 (dredith D).
forbët, 1802 (forbed(e) C, forbod(e) D †).
halt, 1122 (holt D), 3849 (holdyth C, holdt D), 4216 BE (holt AC), 4478 (haldyth C †, holt D), 4589 (last † C), 4606 (holt E), 6711 (holt C, halt(e) D); holt, 4562 D (held AC, hold B).
hent, 4667 (hent(e) B).
hurt, 6713 (hirt C).4 (Preterite †?)
last, 5250 (lestyth (?) C, last(e) D).
lat, 4862 (lat(e) them [not] D).
let, 1967 BC.5

1 In B read sith for soth.
2 In CD read des(es)péraunce.
3 Insert [other] in A (D †).
4 Supply [e] in D.
5 But AD have led, and a past tense seems almost necessary: "led here lyf."
lyst, lest, lust, cf. 518, 840, 852, 1308, 2136 f, 2233, 2479 f, 3243 f, 3417, 3493, 3781 f, 5753, 7716 f, 7796 f, etc.; lyst(e), cf. 2479 f.
ouer-sprat, 1852 (ouersprad D).
put, 5683.
ret, 1498 D (see bet).
ryst, 937 (ryseth C), 1897, 4894 (ryst(e) B, ris sûth D), 5825 (rist(e) D);
vp rist, 6105 (rist vp C).
ritt, 2369 (ride f B, ritt C, ridith D); right, 6423 (rit(e) B, rau3t f C,
ritt(e) D),—read rit.
sent, 2208 ABCD; but the metre is short by one syllable except in D, which reads sent to. Perhaps we should read sent[e], pret.
sit, 12 (sitt D), 246 (sitt B, seyth f C, syt D), 976 (sitt B), 2020 (syt D), 3869 (is f B, syt D), 5685, 5688 f (: it : yit), 5693, 5699, 5701, 6596 (sitt(e) D), 7367 (sitt B, sitt(e) D), 7675 (settith D), 8207 (sitt B).
smert, 6780 (-e) D. Perhaps noun.
stant, 602 (stonde f B, stondith C), 2273 (C (?); stont D), 2463 (stond C, stont D), 3238 (stond AD), 3627 (stont C), 3745 C (stont AD, stant(e) B), 4404 (stont AC), 5212 (stont C), 5679, 6048 (stant(e) B),
stant(e) B, stont C), 8091 (stont B, stant(e) D); vndirstant †, 8005 C (-stod A, -stood B, -stood(e) D).
tret, 1432.
tyt, 333 (tit B). (Cf. bitit, above.)
gwent, 1121 f (went(e) B) (: shent p.p.), 1897 (om. † B, wentë C).³
writ, 394 (writ(e) B, wryt CD).
wryth(e), 4073 (writh(e) B, written † (? ) D).
yelt, 385 (yelt B, zildyth C, yeldith D).

But forms in -eth are found. Thus,¹—
beteth, 5572 f.
bite, 1458 f: foryeteth : geteth. (Cf. et, Leg. G. W., 1389.)
kneteth, 4590 (endytyth † C, kennyth † D).
lasteth, 4664.

¹ Supply [she] in D.
² Supply [thus] in D.
³ May perhaps be preterite (went[e] here).
⁴ Trilling variations in spelling are not registered.
Observations on the Language

lysteth, listeth, 671, 1785 (leste pret. C, lest D †), 4659 (lest[e] pret. (? D).

nedeth, 1096, etc.

rideth, 1773, 6924 (redyn † C).

sendeth, 2870 f (: entendeth).

smerteth, 667 (cf. smert, Ch's. ABC, 152).

spredeth, 2065.

stenteth, 3740; stynteth, 4076.

stondeth, 2231 (l. om. C).

Cf. also hasteth, 949, 4549 (-ith J D); tlireteth, 5571 f B (-yth C, treteth A, treth † D) j

thursteth, 7769 (trustyth † C); versteth, 1478; and the Romance verb,—iusteth, 4560.

§ 96. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends regularly in -en or -e; but forms occur in -eth (and rarely in -es) (cf. Child, § 52; ten Brink, § 186).

Before consonants, -en is commoner than -e; in rhyme, -e is commoner than -en. Before vowels or h, -en and -e (elided) are regular, -en (apocopated) is rare. For -eth, -es, see § 97.

The following list is arranged as follows: I. -en before consonants. II. -en in rhyme. III. -en before vowels. IV. -en before h. V. Syncope: -en, -n. VI. -e before consonants. VII. -e in rhyme. VIII. Elision: -e before vowels. IX. Elision: -e before h. X. Apocope: -e. XI. Present plural of A.S. fléon, sión, sléon, wréon.

I. -en before consonants: (a) First Person:

seggen we, 4856 (siggen B, seyde † C, sey we D).

seruen bothe, 6506 (-e D, were † C).

departen ye and I, 7436 (-yn 2 pl. C).

(b) Second Person:

preysen thus, 1180 (-in D, pryse C).

lyuen by, 1435 (-yn CD).1

slepen so, 1632 (-in C, -yn D).

faren wel, 2234 (-e C †, -yn D).

felen wel, 2368 (-e C, -yn D).

holden regne, 2871 (-yn D).

heren wel, 2994 (-yn CD).

liggen wel, 3511 (-yn C, -e D). (Conditional sentence.)

lysten for, 4652 (lest[e] to D).

comen be, 4989 (-e D, -yn to C).

louyn most, 5259 C (-eth AB, -eth 3 sg. D).2

1 Dele (that) in A. 2 Query this line †
knowen wel, 6030 (-e C); cf. 2737 B ⚫.  
mystrusten me, 6268 (-yn C).  
touche nought, 7359 (-e C, [-e] D).  
yeu men, 7778 (-yn C, -e D).  
requeren me, 7963 (-yn C, -e D).  
(c) Third Person:  
reden not, 241 (-yn C, -ith D; B ⚫).  
slepen softe, 914 (-e C, -(t)en B; D ⚫).  
written clerkes, 954 (-e C, -yn D), 3694 (-yn CD), 4041 (-yn C); w.  
folk, 4680 (-yn D); w. they, 6083 (-e CD); 2 w. that, 7179  
(wotyn ⚫ C).  
faren wel, 1248 (-e C, -yn D).  
tellen that, 1270 (-e CD); t. xx., 6069 (-e C ⚫, [-e] D), t. this, 6728  
(-yn C, -e D).  
fallen thikke, 1541 (-es A, -e C, -yn D); f. chaunces, 5760 (-yn C (?),  
-en D (?)).  
louen wommen, 1819 B (-yn CD, -en ⚫ a A); l. nouellere, 1841  
(-yn CD).  
defamen loue, 1945 (-yn CD).  
spekten but, 1946 (-yn CD).  
euren folk, 2665 (-e C, -ith D).  
dreden shame, 2867 (-yn D).  
wondren so, 2874 (-in D).  
seruen the, 2882 (-yn D); s. best, 4107 (-yn CD).  
techen bokes, 2933 (-in C, -yn D).  
lyuen soth, 3272 (-yn CD).  
dremen thynges, 3427 (-yn D, demyn C).  
callen fals, 3656 (-yn D, tellen B, -yn C); c. loue, 4224 (-e C,  
clen E).  
comen nough[t], 3660 (-yn D (?), [-e] C).  
bryngen folk, 4046 (-yn C, -eth B).  
commenden so, 4534 (-yn CD).  
drawen forth, 4546 (-yn CD, [-e]n B).  
desiren now, 4864 (-yn C).  
vsen frendes, 5343 (-yn C).  
bytiden by, 5719.  
semen dede, 5754 (-yn C, -e D).  

1 Subjunctive ⚫  
2 Supply [of] in C.  
3 In 4718 dredden (dreden B, dreddyn D) is of course preterite.  
4 Read thing[es] in A.  
5 Apparently a 9-syl. verse.
purposen pes, 6012 (-yn C, -ed † D).
proceden thei, 6733 (-yn C, -en † D).
wenen lese, 6744 (-e C° D).
knowen folk, 6778 (-en D (!), -yn C (!)); cf. 4951 C).
stonen for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).
II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).

II. -en in rhyme. Third Person:
dryen, 303 f (: eyen : dyen inf.).
treten, 742 f (-e C, -yn D) (: beten p.p.).
deseyuen, 1370 f (-en D (?), -yn C (?)).
knowen folk, 1378 (-en D (?), -yn C (?)); cf. 4951 C).
stouden for, 7482 (stode they C).
showen bothe, 8077 (-yn D).
of Chaucer's Troilus. 225

commenden, 7124 (-yn C, com-

aundyn [ D).
tellen, 7841 (-yn C, 7925 (-yn

C).

IV. -en before h.
(a) First Person: vsen here (hic), 4844 (-yn CD).
(b) Second Person:
maken hertes, 2865 (-yn D).
(c) Third Person:
redressen hem, 2054 (-yn D).
dennen hot, 2618 (-ë CD).
knowyn hym, 3162 CD (pret. AB).
reuesten hem, 3195 (-yn CD).
suffren here, 3860 (-re B, -fere C, -fryn D t>.
semen here, 3978 (-yn C, -eth D t).
bryngen hors, 4707 (-en D).
expounden hem, 7641 (-poungyn t C, -pounë D).

V. -en, -n. (a) Second Person:
seyn ye, 1558 (sey D t); cf. 1275 C, 2367 D.
(b) Third Person:
seyn, (i.) 708, 5632, 5659, 5668 f (seyne B) (: agayn : in certayn),
6035 (seyn(e) B, say D), 6115 (say D, seith B, sen t C), 6246 (say
D; C t), 6732 (seyn(t) A, seyn(e) D), 8002 (say D, seyn [that]
C); cf. 1886 t C. (ii.) 1833 (s. thour C), 5636, 7413 (sey D, sen t
C); 3 seyn he, 7167 (sein(e) D; C t).

Note.—Seyen (dissyllabic) appears not to occur in the Troilus (cf. seyn t, 6735 C, 8002 (!) C).

speken in, 6068 (-yn CD).
proceden of, 6723 (-yn C, -ë B; D t).

comen ayen, 7495 (-yn C).

Note.—Such cases as the last three are rare except as mere variants. Cf., for
the 2nd person: knowyn ek, 3757 C, 5993 C; takyn it, 7969 C; knowen
how, 7688 D. 4 For the 3rd person, cf. luyen vnder, 1259 B (-yn C, -eth
A; sg. : D); louen a, 1819 A; anauntyn of, 3160 C; lighten and, 4707
B; takyn it, 6710 C: tellyn iwis, 6730 C; dremyn and, 6740 C; spekyn
of, 7216 C; spekyn for, 6599 B (sg. ACD). cf. §§ 136, e, 139.

1 Supply [ne] in C.
2 Dele (the proude) in D.
3 Supply [that] in D.
4 Read long[e] in D.
VI. -e before consonants.  
(a) Second Person  
make me, 1200 (-en B, -yn C); -e this, 3714.  
mende ye, 1414 (wyn[ne] ‡ D (?)).  
wene ye, 1975, 7267 (C ?).  
slepe ye, 2180 CD.  
recche lest, 2236 (-yn D).  
like ‡ ye, 2281 D.  
wite ‡ what, 2373 D.  
trowe ye, 3441 (-e D), 1 ‡ 4215 (-e B; D ‡), 6000 (-e B).  
knowe ye, 4743 (-yn D).  
thinke ‡ ye, 5511 D.  
lyue ye, 5877.  
speke not, 5988 (-e B, spake D).  
(b) Third Person:  
hunte faste, 748 (-ith D).  
wake whan, 914 (-en B; D ‡).  
know[e] folk, 4860 ‡ D (weten A, witen B, wetyn C).  
gynne sprynge, 7020 (-en B, -yn D, begynne ‡ C).  
bytrayse yow, 8146.  
VII. -e in rhyme.  
(a) First Person:  
pleyne, 711 f (pleyn D) (: peyne n. : to seyne).  
rede, 1185 f (: dede n. : rede inf.).  
drinke, 1869 ‡ f C (inf. ABD).  
byseche, 2759 f (bisike B, beseche C) (: eke, ek C).  
deuysse, 6191 ‡ f C (2 pers. ABD).  
hye, 6852 f (: vilonye).  (Perh. subjunc.)  
(b) Second Person:  
eschuwe, 344 f (-ewe BCD) (: mysconstrue inf., -ewe BC, -ew D)  
2340 f (-ewe BCD) (: saluwe inf., -ewe D, salwe B, salue C).  
endure, 682 f (: assure inv. pl.).  
fare, 1194 f (: care n. : bare), 6601 f (: care n.).  
mene, 1218 f (meue ‡ CD) (: lene adj. pred. sg., eue ‡ C, leve ‡ D).  
auysse, 1361 f (: wise n.).  
requere, 1558 f (: chere : dere).  
swete, 2028 f (smete ‡ C) (: y-bete p.p. : hete n.).  
leue creditis, 2226 f (: repreue n.).  
constreyne, 2317 f (: peyne n.).  
chese, 4851 f (: lese inf.).  
deuysse, 6191 f ( 1 pl. ‡ C) (: wyse n.).

1 Supply [now] in C.  
2 The first part of 748 D is corrupt.
deface, 7278 f (: pace *inf.* : face).

speke, 7325 f (: wreke *inf.*).

(c) Third Person:

e ndure, 34 f (: auenture *n.*).

write, 147 f (: Dite *nom. prop.*).

ryme, 532 f (: tyme).

plye, 732 f (pleye C, pley D) (: lytargie : melodye).

kepe, 763 f (-yn C) (: by-wepe *inf.* (-yn C)).

knowe, 1945 f (know D) (: bowe *noun* (bow D)).

resigne, 2867 f (: digne *adj. pred. pl.* : benigne *adj. pred. pl.*).

make, 4203 f (: take *inf.*).

lye *mentiuntur*, 4222 f (: folye), 4682 f (: vilonye), 7844 f (: enuye *n.* :

dye *inf.*).

ake, 4403 f (: wake *inf.*).

erre, 4616 f (: werre *n.*). (Subjunctiv?)

quelle, 4708 f (: felle (fele A) *adj. pl.* : telle *inf.*).

procede, 4809 f (*inf.* † D) (: nede *n.*).

dwelle, 5347 f (: telle *inf.*).

bynde, 5525 f (: kynde *n.* : fynde *inf.*).

preue, 5631 f (: leue *inf.*).

falle, 5711 f (: alle *pl.*).

preye, 6046 f (prey CD) (: se ye *inf.* : tweye).

rede, 6306 f (: drede *n.*).

mene, 6727 f (: bene *n.*). (Indirect question.)

carye, 7105 f (-ie D, om † C) (: letuarye).

declare, 7162 f (: square *adj. pl.*).

cape, 7496 f (gape CD) (: ia pe *inf.*).

reyn, 7699 f (: pleyne *inf.*).

Cf. also the following cases of -e (3 *pl.*) in rhyme: 705, 788, 1092,

2153, 2452, 3131, 3143, 3432, 4063, 4229, 4271, 5508, 6046,

6382, 7153, 7640, 7826, 7896.

VIII. -e elided before vowels. (a) Second Person:

lyue, 330 (loue † C).

knowe, 340 (know BD, -yn C) ; * cf. 1107, 2873, 3757, 5993.

mene, 1311. [Indirect question.]

speke, 6217 (spek B, -ē † awoy C).

hate, 6508 (-ē † be D).*

take, 7969 (-yn C).

1 Perhaps subjunctive. 2 Read *all[e]* in D. 3 Subjunctive †.
(b) Third Person:

graue, 1132 (somé graue D).

iangle of, 1885 (iangle C, iauglyn (!) D).

deuyné, 2830 (déuyné † C).

fele, 2853 B (feld † A, fele inf. † D).

yelpe, 3149 (jelp C, yelp D).

auaunte, 3160 (-e † wommen B, -yn of C).

take, 4252 † C (toke pret. ABE), 6710 (-yn it (?) | C).

twynne, 4553 (twyn CD).

fyghte, 4707 (-en B, fight D).

trete, 6008.

telle, 6730 (-yn C).

dreme, 6740 (-yn C).

speke 72,16 (-yn C).

write, 7992.

IX. -e elided before h. Second Person:

yeue hym, 2861 (3af † pret. D).

suffre hym, 3705 (suffere C), 3723 (suffere C).

Note 1.—knowe hem, 3 pl., 4240 B (-yn C), should be preterite (knowe A, known D).

Note 2.—Elided -e is occasionally omitted in writing.—Thus,—2nd pers., know how, 7888 (-e BC, -en D); 3rd pers., com and, 5761 (-en (?) D, -yth sg. (?) C), lat hem, 1820 A (lat hym = hem B). Cf. also the variants under VIII., above.

X. Cases of apocope of -e are rare. (a) Second Person:

sette lite, 1517 (settê C, set[tê] D).

trowe ye, 6231 (trow B, -e C; D (?)).

yeue ye, 6598 (3euyth † 3ow 3 sg. C, frome † your D).

sey right, 1275 (-e B, seyn C, sey D †).

sey me, 2367 (say BC, seyn ful D).

Cf. also know wel, 3757 † D, 5993 † D.

(b) Third Person:

say may, 1707 (seyn(e) B, seyn C, sey D).

begynne † to, 7020 C.

Note 1.—In the case of sey, say, 2, 3 pl., the correct reading may be seyn (see V., above, and observe the variants there cited).

Note 2.—For the omission of -e at the end of the verse where the rhyme requires -e, see variants in the places cited under VII., above (no cases in A); cf. also torment †, 5003 f D. An -e necessary to the metre is occasionally omitted in the interior of the verse (not in A): see variants under VI., above (in particular, trow[e] ye, 2 pl., 4215 B).

1 Subjunctive? Supply [that] in C.

2 Read long[e] in D.

3 Subjunctive?

4 Dele (ek) in A.
XI. The A.S. verbs *fleôn, séon, sléan, urvôn*, show in the *Troilus* the following monosyllabic contracted forms in the plural of the present indicative:

2nd person: *sen* that, 6007 (seen B, see D †, se † ek (?) C); *sen* hym, 2995 (sen(e) D); se, see, cf. 1424 f (1 pl. † D), 3508 f, 7247 f, 7765 f; se ye (†), 995 A.

3rd person: *sen* seen, 6007 (seen B, see D †, se † ek (?) C); *sen* hym, 2995 (sen(e) D); s. in, 5342 (see D, seyn C); s. here, 6707 (sen(e) D); s. hem, 6709 (sen(e) D).

wrien with, 1624 (wren B, wryen D). (Monosyllable.)

fien (= flyen, see ten Brink, § 158) from, 6018 (fleen B, flien, D †). 

§ 97. The Plural of the Present Indicative ends occasionally in *-eth* (*-ith*, *-yth*), *-th*.

The following list is meant to be exhaustive for the four MSS.

Old-style figures indicate that the subject is *men*. An asterisk indicates that the verb precedes its subject.

(a) Second Person:

knoweth what, 2737 A (en B, wite D, knowith *inv. pl. † C*).

causeth al, 4408 D (es A, -ed B; can syre † C†).

loueth most, 5259 AB (-yn C, -eth sg. D).

grauntyth that, 7307 C (-e *inf. AB, -e subj. 2 pl. D*).

doth(e) me, 8063 B (do A, don C, don(e) D).

(b) Third Person:


hath ben, 242 BC (han A, havë with D); hath this, 1809 (han AC, haue D); hath go, 4547 D (han ABC); cf. 2467 D (?)

demeth, 644 f (-yn † C, -ith D) (: semeth sg.).

seyth wo, 694 (seyth C); s. eche, 1127 (seyn BD); s. men, 1809 (om. † D); s. impression[e]s, 2323 (sey C, seyn D); seith that, 6115 B (seyn A, sen C, say D).²

maketh of[t], 740 B (-yth C, -yn D; -eth sg. A).

huntith fast, 748 D (-e ABC).³

lyueth vnder, 1259 A (en B, -yn C; -ith sg. D).

to suche as hym thenketh able, 1292 (thynketh B, thynkyth C, thinkith † D).

1 Subject: *the wyse*. Supply [and] in D.
2 Subject: *these wyse*, the *wise BCD*. Perhaps singular.
3 Supply [the] in D.
4 D has for thy with for fro thyng which.
bereth lyf, 1920 (-ith CD).\textsuperscript{1}  
gyde\textsuperscript{th} yow, 2189 (-ith C; sg. D).\textsuperscript{2}  
doth these, * 2391 A (dos(e) B, don(e) D, don 3e 2 pl. C).  
longeth yn, 2431 (-ith C, -yn D).\textsuperscript{3}  
furth\textsuperscript{ereth} most, 2453 (furth\textsuperscript{ereth} B, fer-\textsuperscript{erith} \textsuperscript{†} C, furth\textsuperscript{rith} D).\textsuperscript{4}  
hakketh ofte, 2466 A (dos(e) B, don(e) D, don $\pi e$ 2 pi. C).  
longeth yn, 2431 (-ith C, -yn D).\textsuperscript{3}  
furth\textsuperscript{ereth} most, 2453 (furth\textsuperscript{ereth} B, fer-\textsuperscript{erith} \textsuperscript{†} C, furth\textsuperscript{rith} D).\textsuperscript{4}  
cometh swich, * 6737 AB (-yth C, -e D); cf. * 5761 C (f).  
trei\textsuperscript{is} lest\textsuperscript{ith} al, 6764 C (trewes lasten ABD).  
weneth best, 7630 (-yn C, -e D).\textsuperscript{6}  
sle\textsuperscript{th} my, 7706 ABC (sle\textsuperscript{eth} D).  

\textsuperscript{1} Perhaps singular: "al that bereth lyf."  
\textsuperscript{2} "What maner wyndes gydeth yow (wynd D)."  
\textsuperscript{3} "And didde also his\textsuperscript{e} other observ\textsuperscript{a}unces That to a loue\textsuperscript{r}e longeth yn this cas."  
\textsuperscript{4} "It is oon of the thynges that furth\textsuperscript{ereth} most." In this succession of words there is often a confusion of numbers in modern speech.  
\textsuperscript{5} In E (Harl. 1239), read bond for boute, and duryng for doyng.  
\textsuperscript{6} Supply \{to\} in D.
Third Person:
bigiles, 7640 f B (-e ACD) (: while).

falles thikke, 1541 A (-en B, -e C, -yn D).
dos(e) this, 2391 B (doth A, don(e) D, don 3e 2 pl. C).

§ 99. The following Indicative Preterites (first and third person) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the Troilus (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 162, 165, 168-70).

(a) Stems originally short,—lette, leyde, sette, shette; (b) stems originally long,—aȝyte, aȝlhtes, aȝled, bente, blende, blente (A.S.

blende), blente (A.S. blent), bredde, bytydde, demede, dyghte, dreynete, fedef, felte, ferd, frette, hente, herde, hepte, knette, kydde, kyste

(kyste, cussed), ladde (ledde), laste, lefte (lafte), lente, lyste (leste), mente, mette (A.S. mette), mette (A.S. mette), myssed, nedede, radde,

rente, reste, reynede, semed, sente, shende, spedde, spradde, stytte, thrasie, wende, wente; (c) irregular verbs,—boughte, broug/ite,

dwelled, raughte, roughte, sorgia, taughte, thoughte (A.S. pōhte), thoughte (A.S. pōhte), tolde, wronghte. For hıtte (O.N. hitta), thriste

(O.K. >rystci), trusted (cf. O.N. treysta), see § 100.

Of these ayled, demede, myssed, nedede, reynede, semed,1 are unsyncopated preterites formed on the analogy of the second weak conjugation (A.S. -ode) and replacing the proper Anglo-Saxon forms egl(e)de, dénde, meste, nédde (but cf. néadian, -ode), rýnde, sývle. For cussed (kysed), a similar formation, see kyste. In these -ed, -ede preterites final -e is not sounded except in neded (q.v.) and is often not even written.

Dwelled corresponds to A.S. dwelde (-ode), inf. dwelían (Siev., § 407, Anm. 1); dwelte (A.S. dwelde, inf. dwelían) does not occur in the Troilus.

In bente, blente (A.S. blende, inf. blende), felte, lefte (lafte), lente, mente, rente, sente (but also sends), shente, wente, A.S. -de is replaced by -te (cf. ten Brink, § 170 e, ɛ). Brennen (O.N. brenna, cf. A.S. bærnan) has both brende (: amende inf., etc.) and brente (: sente

ind. 3 sg.) : see § 100.2

Several preterites of weak verbs belonging properly to the second conjugation show syncopated forms after the analogy of the first. These

1 Ten Brink (§ 165) notices demed, semed.

2 Ten Brink (§ 170 ɛ) appears to recognize only brente.
Observations on the Language [§ 99.

are,—answèrde (-swerde), caste (O.N.), made, plyde, putte, ræfte, shapte (O.N.), twayne : see § 101.¹

Syncopated perfects, after the analogy of the first weak conjugation, are shown by several verbs strong in Anglo-Saxon: bryege, dreyde, fledde, lepte (var. lcp), loste, sightte (sighed, siked), slepte (but also slp), smerte, [swetle] wepte (but also wep) : see § 103. So also deyde (O.N. deyja, pret. de). For highte, see § 101. For other syncopated preterites from verbs of Germanic origin see glente, plichte, swepte, twayne (§ 100). For syncopated preterites from Romance verbs, see aspyde, caughte, cryde, harte, paste, preyde (§ 104).

For rong (A.S. bringde), see § 103, note 2.
In the following lists (§§ 99-104) the cases cited are in the third person unless the contrary is indicated. In the infinitives given no attempt is made at exhaustiveness of reference, and elision is not indicated.

agylte (A.S. ágyltan, -gylte), 1st pers., -e hym, 3682 (-t CD).

alighte (A.S. alíhtan, -lihte), 7380 f (-t D, -lyjte C) (yf she myghte: bryghte adv.) ; she alighte, 6552 f (shálghte B, sche alýjte C t, she light D) (myghte pret. 3 sg.).

ayled (A.S. egl(i)an, egl(e)de, see Cosijn, Altws. Gr., II, 163, § 120),

ayled the, 4993 B (ailld D, eyleth A, alythy C).

bente (A.S. bendan, bende), -e his, 725 C (bent D, lente AB).

bithoughte, see thoughte.

bledde (A.S. blédan, blédde), 2035 f (bled D) (vnto bedde : he spedde ind.), 7563 f : fledde pret. ind. 3 sg., is fledde t A. [Inf. blède, cf. 4674 f, 7410 f.]

blente (A.S. blendan, blende), 7558 f (-t CD) : wente ind. 3 sg. : wente n.). [Inf. blende, 2581 f, 5310 f (blynde BCD), 6889 f (blynde C) ; blynde, 3049 f (blende BCD).²

blente (A.S. blencan, blente), 4188 (blynte BC, blent[e] E).³

bought[e] (A.S. byeg an, bohte), bought vs, 4007 AB (wrowte C, wrouȝt D).⁴ [Inf. beye, 8206 f.]

bredde (A.S. brédan, bréddde), 465 f (bred CD) : (wren fled, weren fledde B). [Inf. brede, 4388 f.]

brende, see § 100.

broughte (A.S. bringan, bróhtye), 3524 f (-t BCD), 5332 f (-t pl. t D), 7143 f (-t D) ; [-e] there, 3428 (-e C, -t D) ; brought in, 3584 brouȝt C, broght D ; brought || whan, 4521 (-[e] C, -[e] (l) D). [Var. C brouȝte ; CD brouȝt ; D broght.] [Inf. brynge, -en, cf. 623, 3087, 3356, 5937, etc.]

Rhyne words.—hym oughte ind. (3524), roughte ind. 3 sg. (5332), by-
soughte ind. 3 sg. (5332), he oughte ind. (7143).

bysette, see sette.

¹ Cf. ten Brink, §§ 173, 176.
² The rhymes show the correct form to be blende.
³ Supply [ne] in C or read nëuere his. In E (Harl. 1239), read never.
⁴ Supply [that] in C.
⁵ Perhaps subjunctive.
bytydde (A.S. tidan, tidde), 1140 f (-tyd D) (: the thridde); bytydne, 8004 (biten B, betyd C †; betyde D); be-tiddē † ful, 6708 D (by-
tyt pres. 3 sg. A, bitit C, betydyth D).1 [Inf. bytyden, betyde, cf. 1708, 3486 f.]
demede (A.S. déman, démde), demede as, 4569 (-ed B, -yd CD). [Inf. deme, -en, cf. 799, 1457, etc.]
dreynte (A.S. drcan, drencte), 543 f (drenkt C) (: compleynte : pleyne). [Inf. drenche, -en, cf. 4603, 5172 f.]
dwelled (A.S. dwellan, dwealde; but also, later, dwellian, dweled, 
-ode, Siev. § 407, Anm. 1), whil [that] she dwelled yn, 129 (-yd D, was dwellynge BCCp.); she duellid ay, 7074 † D. [Inf. dwelle, 
-en, cf. 144 f, 2699 f, 3489, 6369.]
dyghte (A.S. dihtan, dihte, from Lat. dictare), 2033 f (-t BD, diȝt C) (: they myghte ind.).
fedde (A.S. fédan, fédd), -e hem, 2655 (fed[de] † hem D), 6802 (fed 
BD). [Inf. fede, 5001 f.]
felte (A.S. félçon, féld), 3187 f (-t D) (: swelte inf. : to-melte inf.), 
3833 ([-e] D) (1st. pers.), 4118 ([-e] D), 4285 f (: melte inf.), 5027 f 
(-t C) (: melte inf.), 6354; [-e], 306 B (sholde A †, shold[e] D †), 
5560 (-eth B, -ith CD); -e, 3192 (-t D); -e his, 2389 (-t BD); -e 
he, 3321 (-t D, wiste † C); felt (before vowels), 1143, 2361 (felfte 
the † thorn C, felt the iyn ([i] D),2 7531 (-e CD) (1st pers.); felt 
his, 502 AB (-e D), 4513 (-e C, -t † in D); felt this, 498 (-e Troilus 
D, fel to C3); felt † that, 1146 A (fil B, fil † hym D). feltē † here 
(eam), 4043 A (-e BC, -t D). [Inf. fele, -en, cf. 4539, 5128, 
7627, etc.] 
ferde (A.S. féràn, férde), 739 f (-d D)4, 1238 f (-d D)4, 4371 f (-d D), 
4633 f (feerde B); ferd (before vowels), 225 (-e C), 491 (-e BC),5 
2092 (-e C).6
Rhyme words.—answèrède ind. 3 sg. (739, 4371), herde ind. 3 sg. (4633), 
yerde n. (739, 1238).
grette (A.S. grétan, grètte), 3797 f (-t D) (: sette ind. 3 sg.), 4430 f 
(: sette ind. 3 sg.), 6656 f (grette B, gret D) (: sette inf.). [Inf. 
grette, 4398 f.]
hente (A.S. hentan, hente; cf. gehendan), 2009 f (-t CD), 2863 f (-t 
D), 4029 f (-t CD), 6453 f (hynte B, hent CD); [-e] faste, 1038 
AD (-e B); hent here (eam), 2239 -e C, hynte B), cf. 4388 † D.

1 In B supply [it].
2 In D supply [be]gan.
3 In B read than[ne].
4 Indirect question.
5 Indirect discourse. Dele (al) in C.
6 Indirect discourse. First Person.
Rhyme words.—entente n. (2009, 4029), sente ind. 2 pl. (2863), mente ind. 3 pl. (4029), wente ind. 3 sg. (6453).

herde (A.S. hieran, etc., herde, hyrde, ge-hérde), 1731 [-e] B, -e the C, -d the D), 1984 f, 2185 f (-d D), 3641 f (-d D), 3907 f (-d D), 4458 f, 4634 f, 4838 f, 6541 f, 8086 f; [-e], 544 (-e C, -e D), 1301 (-e C); -e, 106 (-d BD), 1536 (-d BD), 2675 (-d D, -ë † alwoy C); herd (before vowels), 1602 (-e BC), 1643 (-e BC; D (!)), 4501 (-e BC, herd † first (? D); -e his, 2920 (-d D, -ë † preye C); herd hym, 549 (-e B, -ë † hym D, herde C)², 1471 (-e C). [Inf. here, -en, cf. 30, 279 f, 398 (hire A), 2662, 3521, 3598, etc.; yhere, 5975 f (yheere B, [y]here C).]

Rhyme words.—yerde n. (3907), answerede, -swère ind. 3 sg. (1984, 2185, 3641, 4458, 4838, 6541, 8086), ferde ind. or subj. 3 sg. (4634).

kepte (A.S. cépan, cëpte), 5013 f (: wepte ind. 3 sg.) ; kept hire (poss. sg.), 130 AC (-e B). [Inf. kepe, -en, cf. 1553 f, 3136, 3261 f, 7411 B, etc.]

keste, see kyste.

knette (A.S. cnyttan, cnytte), yn knette, 3930 f (inknitt D) (: shette ind. 3 sg.).

kydde (A.S. cyðan, cyðde, cydde), kyd anoon, 208 A (kydde B, ked C).

kyste, keste, cussed (A.S. cyssan, cyste); kyste, 812 f (-t CD), 3971 f (kyssed B, kist D), 4094 f (kist D), 4117 f (kiste CD), 4192 f (-t C), 5823 f (kiste D); keste, 1335 f (kiste B, kyst C, kust D)³, 4361 f (kyste B, kyst C, kist D), 4417 f (kyste B, kyst C, kist D); kyste, 3067 (-t D, kist C), 3814 (kist C, kyssid D), 6440 ⁴; cussed tho, 2175 (kiste B, kyssid D, kyste the C). [Inf. kyssë, cf. 3024 f, 6914 f.]

Rhyme words.—reste n. (3971, 4361), wyste ind. 3 sg. (812, 4094), subj. 1 sg. (4117), ind. 3 pl. (5823), nyste ind. 3 sg. (4192), lyste pres. subj. 3 sg. (liste B, lyt C, lust D) (1335), lyste pret. ind. 3 sg. (leste B, lest C, list D) (3971), truste pres. ind. 1 sg. (-t CD, triste B) (1335), thriste pret. ind. 3 sg. (thrist C, thrist D) (4417).

ladde, ledde (A.S. lédan, lédde); ladde, 4556 (ledde B, led C, byd † D); ladde hem, 184 (-d CD, led B); ladde here (eam), 6455 (-d C, ledde BD); ladde here (poss. sg.), 7077 (ledde B); lad here (eam), 2901 (ledde BC, led D); ledde, 7581 f (: fledde ind. 3 sg.); led here (poss. sg.), 1967 (let BC); ledde, 8027 † C (l. leyde). [Inf. lede, -yn, cf. 2534, 4559 f, etc.]

laste (A.S. læståt, læste), 315 f (-t D) (: caste ind. 3 sg.). [Inf. laste, -en, cf. 2606, 5339 f, 8187 f.]

¹ First Person. Supply [that] in D.
² Supply [in] in B.
³ "Rather late hand."—Furnivall.
⁴ Atenore (Antenor he) C.
Possibly subjunctive.  First person. In D read hand for have. Supply [though] in C. D has lest and, but is quite unmetrical. In B supply [whom]. A has il wyste for twyste.
C † D); -e, 3274 (-t CD), 7210 (-t C)¹; mente harm (?), 1523 (-t (!) B, -ē C, -t D) (1st person). [Inf. mene, cf. 3006, 3098 f CD.]

Rhyme words.—descente (320), entente (1449, 2306, 2436, 2968, 4027, 6080 (entent ABCD), 7231), wente ind. 3 sg. (320, 5095, 6080), hente pret. ind. 3 sg. (4027).

mette (A.S. mētān, métte), 3316 f (-t CD), 4393 f; mette that, 1068 A (met with D, mette a B). [Inf. mete, -en, cf. 4512 f, 6347, 8066.]

Rhyme words.—bysette pret. ind. 3 sg. (3316, 4393), or she lette (3316); shette inf. (4393).

mette (A.S. mētān, métte), 362 f (-t D), 1175 f (1st pers.), 2010 f (-t D); -e he, 6612 † C (mete inf. AB, dreme † inf. D), 7601 (mett D); mette[e] † that, 6614 D (inf. ABC). [Inf. mete, -en, cf. 4401 f, 6612, 6614.]

Rhyme words.—lette n. (362), sette pret. ind. 3 sg. (362, 1175, 2010).

myssed (A.S. missan, miste), m. han, 3287 (mys(e)sic D, myssed have D). [Inf. myssе, 4466 f.]

nedit (A.S. nēdan, nŷdan, nédan, -dde), nedōdě no, 7089 (neded[ē] BD, nedit (?) C).

rādde (A.S. rēdan, rādde (so always in W.S.), but also rōd), -e, 2170 AB. [Inf. rede, -en, cf. 83 f, 668, 1188 f, 1214, 2261 f, 2407 f, etc.]

raughte (A.S. rēcan, rēhte), 1532 f (rāuhte C, raght D); ouer raughte, 7381 f (-t D, rāuhte C); rauhte ful, 6423 C (right A, rit(e) B, ritta(e) D).³

Rhyme words.—caughte ind. 3 sg. (1532), taughte ind. 3 sg. (7381).

rente (A.S. rēndan, rende), 6362 f (-t D) (: wente ind. 3 sg.); -e, 2013 (-t BD), 3941, 5399.⁴

reste (A.S. restan, reste), -e here (eam), 7399 (ref B, reuyth C, rafte (?) D). [Inf. reste, 2411 f.]

reynede (A.S. rignan, rīnan, rīnde), reynede it, 4399 (-ed B, -yd C, -ed † D). But also a strong pret. (A.S. rān), ron, 3482 (ron(e) D, reyne † inf. C), 3519 f (rone D) (: anoon : gon inf.). [Inf. reyne, 3393 f, 4961 f.]

raughte (A.S. rēcan, recan, rōhte), 496 f (roght D),⁵ 5329 f (-t D), 6813 f (-t D); rowhte, 5610 f (raughte B, roughthe C⁶, rought D); raught[e] not, 5093 (rouȝte C, route † he (?) D).⁶ [Inf. recche, cf. 797 f, 1423 f, 1519 f, 2558 f, 6109 f, 6250 f.]

¹ First Person.
² All the cases of mente cited (except 1449, 2306, 4027, 4699) are in indirect questions: some of them may well be subjunctive.
³ The correct reading is rit = rideth.
⁴ Supply [her] in D.
⁵ Supply [that] in Δ.
⁶ Hardly subjunctive.
Rhyme words.—thoughte ind. and subj. (f) 3 sg. (496, 6813), soughte ind. 3 sg. (5610, 6813), by-soughte ind. 3 sg. (5329), broughte ind. 3 sg. (5329). [Var. C route.] semed (A.S. ge-séman, -sémde), s. she, 103 (educt C, -yd D); s. that, 6086 (-yd CD) 1; s. not, 7231 (-educt C f, -yd D); semed (before vowels), 496 (-yd D), 2 2906 (-yd D); ed he, 1721 (-educt C, -yd D); -ed here (dat.), 3307 (-educt C, -yd D). [Inf. seme, cf. 703, 747.]

sente, sende (A.S. sendan, sende); (a) sente, 1421 f (-t CD), 1916 f (-t CD †), 2421 f (-educt C, -t D), 4801 f (-t CD), 5516 f (-t CD), 6650 f (-t CD), 7474 f (-t CD), 7813 f (-t D), 7840 f (-t CD); -e, 4427 (-t D); (b) sende, 2819 f (: amende subj. 3 sg. : defende ind. 1 sg.). 3
[Inf. sende[n], cf. 6047.]

Rhyme words.—entente n. (1916, 5516, 7474), to rente (1916), assente inf. (1421), brente ind. 3 sg. (2421), wente ind. 3 sg. (6650, 7474), ind. 3 pl. (4801), stente inf. (7840), stente pret. ind. 3 sg. (7813).

sette (A.S. settan, sette), 359 f (-t D), 1176 f, 2012 f (-t D), 2172 f, 3078 f (-t D), 3542 f (-t D), 3795 f (-t D), 4431 f, 4896 f (sett ED), 7212 f (sett D); bysette, 3313 f (-set D, beset C), 4394 f (beset C); sette, 4673 (-t D); sett at, 444 (-e C, set D); sette hym, 2548 (sat C, sate D); -e here (eam), 1685 (-t B, sate there D †), 2303 (sat C, sat(e) D), 2313 (-t D); -e here (poss. sg.), 7083 (sett D); 4 set hym, 2149 (sette B, sat C, sete D). [Inf. sette[n], -en, cf. 3742, 5152, 5443.]

Rhyme words.—lette n. (359, 3078, 3542, 7212), mette A.S. mette pret. ind. 1 and 3 sg. (359, 1176, 2012), mette A.S. mette pret. ind. 3 sg. (3313, 3542, 4394), er he lette, or she lette (2172, 3313), shette pret. ind. 3 sg. (2172, 4896), shette inf. (4394), y-shette p.p. pret. pl. (3078), grette pret. ind. 3 sg. (3795, 4431), fette pret. ind. 3 pl. (7212).

shente (A.S. scandan, scende), 7586 f (-t CD) (: wente ind. 3 sg. : potente n.).

shette (A.S. scyttan, scytte), 2175 f (-t D, schette p.p. C), 3568 f (-t D), 3591 f (-t D), 3928 f (swelt † D), 4894 f (shett D); -e, 2311 (-t D, schette C). 5 [Inf. shette, 4391 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—lette n. (3591), sette pret. ind. 3 sg. (2175, 4894), fette pret. ind. 2 sg. (3568), yn knette pret. ind. 3 sg. (3928), er he lette (2175), thow ne lette (3568).

soughte (A.S. sçean, sôhte), 388 f (-t D), 5361 f (-t D, sout C), 5608 f (-t D, southe C ), 6815 f (-t D), 7600 f (-t D), 8120 f (-t D); bi-, bysoughte, 3422 f (-t D, besouthe C), 5331 f (be- C, besouwte D);

1 Supply [him] in D.

2 "He semed it that she of hym roughte." I cannot scan this line.

3 On (of John's) his by-halue (half BDG John's, halue C, halfe CP.) which (-e G, with B, om. C John's) that (om. D) vs alle soule (soule vs alle CGCp. John's, same vs al B, vs soule hath D) sende.—The correct reading is doubtful: On his halue which that soule vs alle sende.

4 Supply [wœ] in A.

5 In D read gan for to.
Observations on the Language

§ 99.

soughte, 7935 (-t B, thouȝt † D); bi-, bysoughte, 2439 (-t D, besouȝt C), 7816 (-t B, besouȝt C, besouȝt D). [Inf. seche, -en, seke, -en, be- (by-) seche (seke),1 cf. 704 f, 707, 763, 886 f, 2919 f, 3424 f, 4349 f, 4630 f, 4793 f, 5605, 6472 f, 7160 f, 7220 f, 7495 f, 7901 f, 8081 f, 8211 f.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte A.S. þohhte (388, 5361, 6815), A.S. þohht (7600), wroughte (5381, 5608, 6815), broughte (5331), oughte (3422), —all ind. 3 sg.; aboughte, ind. 3 pl. (8120). [Var. C souȝt, souȝt, besouȝt, bysouȝt.]

spedde (A.S. ge-spédan, ge-spédde), 482 f (-d D), 2034 f (-d D), 2388 f (-d D), 4365 f (spede C); spede hym, 4882 (spedde BD); speddē he, 1771 ([-de] D). [Inf. spede, 4737 f.]

Rhyme words.—vnto bedde (2034), abedde (2388), bledde ind. (f) 3 sg. (2034), subj. 3 sg. (4365), cledde ind. 3 sg. (4365), dreedde ind. 3 pl. (482).

spradde (A.S. spráedan, spráedde), ouer-spradde here (poss. sg.), 1854 (-d CD); ouer-sprad † the sonne, 1852 D (ouer-sprat pres. 3 sg. ABC). [Inf. sprede, 1139 f.]

stente, stynte (A.S. for-styntan, ge-stentan, *-styte, *-stente); stente, 273 f (-t D), 736 f (styn D),2 1683 f (-t D), 7815 f, 7848 f; stent, 2716 † f D (l. wente); stente, 1492 (styn B, stint CD); stynte, 1554 ([-e] D, stinte C), 1961 f (-t D, stente BC), 4080 f (stint D, stente B); stynte, 2941 (-t D), 7291. [Inf. stynte, -en, cf. 2446, 4732, etc.]

Rhyme words.—entente (736, 1961, 4080), wente ind. 3 sg. (273, 1683, 7848), sente ind. 3 sg. (7815).

taughte (A.S. tæcæn, tæchte), 7379 f (-t D, tæȝte C) (: ouer raughte prei. ind. 3 sg.). [Inf. teche, -en, cf. 2666 f, 4234, 6137 f.]

thoughte (A.S. þencæn, þöhhte), 386 f (-t BD), 497 f (-t BD), 1063 f (-t D), 2000 f (-t CD), 3307 f (-t BCD), 4640 f (-t D), 5385 f (fele † C), 6816 f (-t D), 7141 f (-t D); -e somewhat, 1784 ([-e] BD, thouȝte C); -e she, 3825 ([-e] D, thought[ə] [s]he B); -e thus, 1541 ([-e] BD), 1695 ([-e] BD, seyeȝ † C); -e this, 6868 ([-e] D; B †); -e now, 1364 ([-e C, [-e] not D thought[ə] not D (1st pers.); -[e] best, 2667 ([-e] BC)4; [-e] wel, 1786 ([-e] first D, -e C); -e, 361 (-t D, -e so C), 2381 (-t BD), 3483 (-t BD), 7535 (-t BD); thought (before vowels), 1472 ([-e] B, now † C), 1749 ([-e] C, -t (? D), 2839 ([-e] † a D, seydē † o C), cf. 7935 † D; bithought on, 545 (-t (hym) of D, thouȝte †); thoughte he, 276 (-t D), 380 (-t BD, seyeȝ † C), 1352 (-t BD), 2263 (-t D, thouȝte C), 3918 (-t B, -† it D), 7548

1 Seke, seche, by-seche, by-seke, are all vouched for by the rhyme words, which include speche, eke, meke, etc.
2 In C read with for whyc.
3 Read now.
4 Supply [t] in D.
§ 99.

of Chaucer’s Troilus.

(—t † amys D, seydé † he C); —te, 3539 (—e C), 5026 † D.—thoughte || that, 3310 (tought B, thoght † althogh D); thoughte || ther, 5614 (-ghte B, -tē CD); thought || whan, 3418 (-[e] B, —e C). thoughtė his, 2035 ([ʊ] B, —e C, —t † that (?)) D.1—thoughte || how, 3282 (-t BD). (Cf. also the variants under thoughte=þūhte.)

[Inf. thynke (: drynke), thenke (: synke, swynke), by-thynke, by-thenke (: inke), forthyneke (: I thynke, var. thynke), thenken (not-in rhyme), athynken (not in rhyme), cf. 405 f, 975, 1859, 1868 f, 2340, 2490 f, 4536 f, 6154 f, 6636 f, 7241.]

Rhyme words.—roughte subj. (†) 3 sg. (497), ind. 3 sg. (6816), wroughte ind. 3 sg. (1068, 4640), pl. (3307, 5385), broughte ind. 3 sg. (7141), pl. (2000), soughte ind. 3 sg. (386, 6816), besoughte ind. 3 pl. (5355), oughte ind. 3 pl. (2000). [Var. BCD thouȝt; CD thouȝe; D thouȝt.]

thoughte (A.S. pyyncan, þūhte), 3105 f (-t CD), 7223 f (-t BCD)3, 7597 f (he thought D); -e felen, 4539 (-[e] B, —t † thei D; C †); thoughte by, 3237 (thoughte B, -t[e] C, thought[e] D); thought[e] tho, 3986 (-e C); -e, 6337 (-t BD), 7997 (-t BD), cf. 2683 † D; —e he, 2411 (-t B, -e pers’ l. C, -t pers’ l. D); -e hym, 3909 (-t BD)4; -e his, 6893 (-t BD), 7563 (-t BD); -t he, 502 (-e † his (†) pers’ l. C); -t hym, 294 (-e BC; D †), 5026 (-e BC, thought he pers’ l. D); -t here (poss. sg.), 2193 (-e B, -e pers’ l. C; D †); thoughté † that, 306 (-e he B, -t † he D, -e for C). [Inf. thynke, 405 f.]

Rhyme words.—wroughte ind. 1 sg. (3105), ind. 3 sg. (7597), ind. 3 pl. (7223), soughte ind. 3 sg. (7597), the oughte pres. sense (3105). [Var. CD thouȝt; C thouȝe; D thouȝt.]

thraste (A.S. þræstan, þræste), 2240 f (-t C, cast † D) (: faste adv.); cf. thriste, threste, § 100, p. 241 and note.

tolde (A.S. tellan, tealde), 261 f (-d BD) (1st pers.), 312 f, 2019 f (-d D) (1st pers.), 2051 f (-d D), 2275 f (-d D), 5889 f, 6920 f (-d B), 7012 f, 7569 f (1st pers.), 7616 f, 7875 f; —[e] tales, 3456 (-e C, —d † the tale D); —[e] she, 7854 (-e D); -e, 613 B (C (?), —d D, telle † A); -d ek, 7848 (-e D, -e C †), 7855 (-e CD); -e here (dat.), 7815 (-d B); -e hym, 2580, 3650 (-e BC), 4081 (-e D, tok † C); tolde || who (or tolde who), 1656 ([œ] or -d BCD)5; who told † yow, 3684 (-e hym B, -d him C, D (?). [Inf. telle, -en, cf. 142 f, 260, 794, 3155, etc.]


1 Supply [But] in C.
2 Perhaps -t (-[e]).
3 Perhaps subjunctive: “To asken here yf that here straunge thoughte. Strictly, the verb is plural here.
4 Supply [a] in A.
5 “Or he me tolde (told BCD) who myght (-e BC) ben his leche.”
wende (A.S. wénan, wénde), 447 f, 1497 f (-d D)\(^1\), 2254 (went[e] D), 3644 ([e] D)\(^1\), 4182 CE (-en pl. AB), 4382 f, 7056 f\(^1\), 7974 f (-d D)\(^1\), 8011; -e, 7627 (-d D)\(^1\), 8048 (C \(\uparrow\)) ; -d it, 3918 (-e BC, went D). [Inf. wene, -e, cf. 3333 A, 6775.]

Rhyme words.—brende ind. 3 sg. (447, 4382), defende inf. (1497), amende inf. (7056, 7974).

wente (A.S. wéndan, wénde), 272 f (C \(\uparrow\)), 317 f, 1147 f, 1681 f (went \(\uparrow\) p.p. D), 1898 f (-t C), 2625 f (-t C), 2716 f (-t C), 2810 f (-t C), 3394 f, 3627 f (-t C)\(^1\), 4423 f (-t C), 4749 f\(^1\), 5012 f (-t D \(\uparrow\)), 5096 f (-t C), 5516 f (-t C), 5882 f (-t C), 6363 f, 6454 f (-t C), 6649 f (-t C), 6966 f (-t C), 7384 f (-t C), 7471 f (-t C), 7555 f (-t C), 7583 f, 7666 f (-t C), 7850 f (-t C). In all the above, except 2716, 6454, 7850, D has went ; cf. also 3329 \(\uparrow\) D. Before consonants,—wente, 2487 \(\uparrow\) C (for went he), 2576 \(\uparrow\) C, 2622 (-[e] C, -t \(\uparrow\) to (?) D), 6988 (-[e] D), 8189; -[e], 163 (-e BC, went \(\uparrow\) every D). Before vowels,—ABC have regularly wente, D has regularly went : cf. 1285, 2301, 2576, 2726, 3068; but,—went, 1684 A, 2301 C. Before h (in he, his, here),—e, 2487 (-t D, -e tho C), 7937 (-t D); went, 267 (-e BC), 1055, 1897 (om. \(\uparrow\) B, -e for C)\(^2\), 2264 (-e BC). [Inf. wende, cf. 2578 f, 3458 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—descente (317), wente, went[e] n. (1147, 1898, 3627, 6966, 7555), tente n. (7384), potente n. (7583), entente, [e] (2810, 3394, 4423, 5516, 5882, 7471, 7666), rente n. (4749), stente pret. ind. 3 sg. (272, 1681, 7850), mente pret. ind. (and subj. it) 3 sg. (317, 5012, 5096), rente pret. ind. 3 sg. (6363), hente pret. ind. 3 sg. (6454), sente pret. ind. 3 sg. (6649, 7471), blente occavit (7555), shente pret. ind. 3 sg. (7583), glente pret. ind. 3 pl. (5882), assente inf. (2625, 2716).

wroughte (A.S. wyrcan, worhte), 1064 f (-t D), 3103 f (-t CD, I-wroughte \(\uparrow\) B) (1st pers.), 4641 f (-t CD), 7356 f (-t D), 7599 f (-t D); wroufte, 4007 C (-t D, bought AB). [Inf. werke, -en, -yn, cf. 380, 2486, 4067, 4480 (werychyn C), 4836, 4899, 7356.]

Rhyme words.—thoughte A. S. pôhte ind. 3 sg. (1064, 4641), thoughte A.S. pôhte ind. 3 sg. (3103, 7599), soughte ind. 3 sg. (7599), oughte 3 sg. pres. sense (3103, 7850). [Var. B wroghte; CD wrouȝt; C wrouȝte; D wroght.]

§ 100. A few Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Old Norse verbs of the First Weak Conjugation occur in the Troilus. With these may be associated several other verbs that form their preterites in -te, but are not found in Anglo-Saxon or Old Norse.

\(^1\) First Person.

\(^2\) But in 1897 AD went appears to be pres. 3 sg.
§ 100.]
of Chaucer's Troilus. 241

(a) O.N. first conjugation,—brende (brente), cledde (cladde), hitte, sterte (†), thriste (cf. threste, thraste), trusted (from the noun, cf. O.N. treysta); (b) glente, plighte, swapte, twyste.

Thepreterites in this list are all syncopated (-de, -te), except trusted.

Note.—For caste, shapte, see § 101. For deyde, see § 103.

asterte, see sterte.

brende, brente (O.N. brenna, brende; cf. A.S. bærnan, and see ten Brink, § 141), 448 f, 490 f, 3267 f (-d D) ¹, 4381 f (D †), 5366 f; -e, 4388 (hent † D); brend hym, 440 (brinde B, brende C, brent (†) D).—brente, 2422 f (-de C, -t D). [Inf. brenne, cf. 5907 f, 6666.]

Rhyme words.—wende pret. ind. 3 sg. (448, 4381), 3 pl. (5366), subj. 3 pl. (490), amende inf. (3267), entende inf. (3267), spende inf. (5366).—sente ind. 3 sg. (-de C, -t D) (2422).

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 170) seems to recognize only brente, not brende, though he registers bred (p.p.) among the corrections, etc., at the end of his book (p. 225).

cledde, cladde (O.N. kláða, kláedda; cf. A.S. cláðian, -ode), cledde, 4363 f (cledde C) (: spedde ind. 3 sg. : bledde subj. 3 sg.); cladde, 6352 f (: hadde ind. 3 pl.). [Inf. clothen = A.S. cláðian, cf. 7781.]

Note.—Clothed does not occur in the Troilus. Ten Brink (§ 173) notices cledde, but overlooks cledde, though he registers cled, p.p., B. Duch. 252.

glente (cf. Swed. glänta), 5885 f BD (pl. A, glent pl. C) (: entente n. : wente ind. 3 sg.).

hitte (O.N. hitta, hitta), hit hym, 209 A (hitte B); cf. 1284 C.

plighte (pret. of plichen, quasi A.S. *plycean), 2205 f (-t D, pližte C) (: myghte ind. 3 sg.). [Inf. plukke (A.S. pluccian), cf. 6065.]

sterte (cf. O.N. sterta, sterta), 2179 f, 4755 f (-t D) (1st pers.), 6073 f (sterede † C°), 6563 f (i-stert † p.p. C), 7899 f; -e, 1532 (-t D, stirte C); vp stirte, 4845 (vp sterte C, ster † vp D) ²; asterte, 2939 f (asferte † B, ouersterte C, astert D), 3912 f (-t D), 7855 f (-t C); me asterte, 1043 f (me stert D, may † sterje B). [Inf. sterte, 2719 f, 3791 f.]

Rhyme words.—herete n. (2179, 2939, 3912, 4755, 6073, 6563, 7855, 7899), sherte n. (4755), smerte pres. subj. 3 sg. (2179), inf. (1043), smerte adj. pl. (6563), comerte inf. (6073).

swapte (cf. Eng. swoop, sweep), -e him, 4907 (swappid (?) D, schop C).³

thriste, thraste, threste (O.N. prýstª, -ta); thriste, 4416 f (thyste B, threst C, thrist D) (: keste ind. 3 sg., kyste B, kyst C, kist D); threste, 4916 f (thyst C) (: to reste inf. : breste inf.); threste, 2240 f (-t C, cast † D) (: faste adv.).

1 Line out of order in ABC, but easily emended.
² "The noyse of peple vp stirte thanne at onys."
³ Read him setuen for him self in AD. Then read swappid in D.
The following Indicative Preterites (first and third persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Second Conjugation occur in the *Troilus* (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, §§ 172-3).

**answerde** (-swerde, -swêred), **asked**, brydled, called, cursed, flekered, folwede, gladede (-ed), herkened, hied, huntedè, liked, loked (-ed), lowedè (-ed), made (cf. pl. makkeden), openèd, pleyde, putte, refte (raftè), shewed, thonked, twyghte, welcômed. In the following alphabetical list are included also (a) from the Old Norse second declension,—**caste**, gayned, shapte, wanted, (b) four words of Germanic origin, not found in Anglo-Saxon, that form preterites after the analogy of the second declension,—**bekked** (see the word), howede, lakked, poked (!).

Syncopated preterites in -de, -te, after the analogy of the first conjugation, are **answêrède** (-swêrèd), **caste** (O.N.), made, pleyde, putte, refte (raftè), shapte (O.N.), twyghte. The other preterites of this declension end in -ed, -èd, -ede: no case of -édè occurs.

Several verbs of the first declension form unsyncopated preterites on the analogy of the second. For these, see ayled, demède, cussèd (s.v. kyste), myssed, nedëdè (!), reynede, semèd (§ 99). Cf. also trusted (from the noun, cf. O.N. treysta, pret. -ta) (§ 100).

**Note 1.**—For cledde, cladde, see § 100.

**Note 2.**—For the weak preterite walkèdè from the strong verb walkèn (A.S. *walcan*), see § 103. For quaked, quok (A.S. *cwacian*, -ode), see § 108, note 2.


Rhyme words.—yerde n. (737), ferde ind. 3 sg. (737, 4369), herde pret. ind. 3 sg. (1982, 2187, 3643, 4459, 4840, 6539, 8088), pret. subj. 3 sg. (1030).

asked (A.S. áscian, áxian, -ode), (i.) 3593 (axen † B, seydō ho C, seid[e] ho D), 6471 (aixed B, axede C, axed D); (ii.) asked him, 3411 (axed B, axed † C, axid D), 5888 (axede C (!)); axed hym, 7587 BD (asketh A, axē C). [Inf. aske, -en, axe, -en, cf. 1232, 1979, 3700, 5217, 5334, etc.]

bekked (cf. A.S. blecnan, bécnan, I., later béacnian, -ode, II.), b. on, 2345 (-ede C, -yd D). brydled (A.S. ge-brídlian, -ode), b. youre, 6340 A (bridgeled BD).

called (A.S. ceallian, -ode, from O.N. kalla, kallaða), c. euere, 541 (clepid † D, callyd in C). [Inf. calle, 902 f, etc.]

caste (O.N. kasta, -aða), 314 f (-t D), 1227 f (-t D), 1284 f (-t BC † D), 1733 (-t adoun CD) 3, 2344 f (-t D), 2442 f (-t † inf. D), 3939 f (-t CD), 5184 f (-t C), 8183 f AB 4; cast †, 2240 f D (thraste AB, thrust C); -e, 75 (-t BD), 1492 (-t CD), 4696 (-t BD); cast (before vowels), 1159 (-e B), 7290 (-e BCD); -e he, 726 (-t BD); -e his, 1064 (-t inf. D †), 7292 † D (threw AB, throwe inf. C); -e hym, 4672 (-t BD); -t here (poss. sg.), 7368 (-e B, kiste D) 5; cast || how,

1 In D read whole.[f].
2 Supply [he] in A.
3 AB read caste down.
4 Supply [was] in B.
5 Supply [at] in A, and read ey[en].

4823 (-e B, -e he C, -t he D). 1 [Inf. caste, -en, cf. 1338 f, 1598, etc.]

Rhyme words.—faste adv. (1227, 1284, 2240, 2442, 3939, 5184), at the laste (1227, 3939, 5184, 8183), laste ind. 3 sg. (314), paste ind. 3 sg. (2344).

clepid (A.S. cleopian, -ode). See called.

folwede (A.S. folgian, -ode), fol(e)wede, 7379 (folwed B, folwede C, Mowed D). [Inf. folwe, -en, cf. 614, 3903, 5838, etc.]
gayned (O.N. gagna, (-yd D) (feyned ind. 3 sg. : destrayned ind. 3 pl.).
gladed, -e (A.S. gladian, -ode), -ede, 173 (-yd D, gladde[d] B); gladed her (eam), 116 (-ede C, -id D, gladded B); gladed hym, 7547 (-ede C, -eth D, gladded B). [Inf. glade, -en, cf. 734, 2064, 2630 f, 2659 f, etc.]

hied (A.S. higian, -ode), h. not, 2999 (hyed B, hyed her D ; C †). [Inf. hye, cf. 3463 f.]
houede (cf. M.L.G. hoven), -e here (eam), 6396 (-ed BD). [Inf. houe, 4269 f.]
lakked (cf. M. Dutch laken), l. routhe, 2365 (lak of n. CD); l. alwey, 7108 (-id C); -ede here (=her), 7187 (-ed BD). [Inf. lakke, -en, cf. 189, 5607, 6185.]

liked, lyked (A.S. lícian, -ode), (i.) liked wel, 2129 (-édé C, -yd D); (ii.) -éd, 2351 (-yd D, they likédé † in C), 6994 (-id C); -éd hire (dat.), 1996 (-yd D, -ede C). [Inf. like, lyke, lyken, cf. 431, 1130, 2655 f, 3455, 6496, etc.]

loked (A.S. lócian, -ode), -ede forth, 7507 C (-ed D †), -eth AB); -ed, (ii.) 1071 (-yd † D †), 1359 (-yd CD), 7073 (-ede C), 7092 (-ede C; B †); -ed he, 2833 (-ede C, -yd D); -ed in to, 2312 (-ede C, -yd D). [Inf. loke, -en, cf. 206, 629, 1350.]
lonede (A.S. lufian, -ode), -ede Troylus, 1753 (-yd D, -es B); -ede neuer, 6520 (-ed BD) (1st pers.); -ede so, 7838 (-ed BD); -ed

1 In AB it is possible to read castë (-[ë] A), whether we allow the "extra syllable before the caesura" or not.
so, 2489 (-yd C, -id D) ; louède || that, 1071 (-èd B, -id D (!)); -èd † the, 8109 D (-èth AB) ; -ède hym, 2928 (-èd BC, -id D) \(^1\); -ède ek, 4991 (-èd BC, -yd D) (1st pers.). [Inf. loue, -en, cf. 798, 1944, 2854, 3639, etc. ; vnlouen, cf. 8061.]

made (A.S. macian, -ode), 312 \(^2\), 1137 f, 1585 f (mode † B), 1963 (-è B), 2627 f, 2660 f, 3455 f, 6333, 6440 (-è D), 7415, 7792 (!); [-e], 5898 (-è BCD); -è, cf. 1148, 2160, 3220, 6341, 8203; made his, etc., cf. 479, 1145 (D †), 1153, 1637, 2007, 2253 (-è † her D), 3189, 4070 (-è † D), 6862 (mad(yn) hym C), 6968, 7406 ; -è † suche, 4070 D ; -è this, 5324 (mad C) ; -è the, 7878 ; -è † and (!), 2170 CD. 

Maked seems not to occur, but cf. pl. makheden, 4783 B. [Inf. make, -en, cf. 4177, 6825, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glade adj. pl. (1137, 1585, 3455), glade inf. (2627, 2660), lade inf. (2627).

opened (A.S. openian, -ode), opened here herte, 4081 (opned B, openid C).

pleyde (A.S. plegian, -ode, North. also plægde), 1067 (pleyed D), 6872 † f D (seyde ABC), 7537 f (pleyede C) ; pleyde he, 3456 (-èd C, pleyd D). [Inf. pleye, -en, cf. 671 f, 1206 f, 1902, 2599 f, 5122, etc.]

Rhyme words.—seyde (6872 D, 7537), Cresseide (6872 D).

poked (cf. M.L.G. poken), p. euere, 2958 (-èd C, puked † B, procurid † D).

putte (A.S. potian, -ode), -è, 2264 (put D) ; put al, 4027 (putte BD). (Cf. 1985 D †.) [Inf. putten, puttè, cf. 61170, 6174 (put†en B).]

reffe, rafte (A.S. réafian, -ode), refte hym, 484 AC (-t B) ; rafte hir (eam), 7399 D (reste A, ref[t] B, reuyth C). [Inf. reue, -en. cf. 188, 2744 f.]

shapt[e] (O.N. skapa, skapa*ā ; speþja, skap*í ; cf. A.S. sceppan, sceppan, scóp, O.N. skapa, skóp), shapt her(e) (eam), 2642 (-è B, schop C, schop(e) D (!)). For shop, cf. 207, 1146, 3393, 5617. [Inf. shape, cf. 3038.]

shewed (A.S. scéawian, -ode), (i.) 286 (-èd C, -yd D), 3 7383 (-èth B, -èdè C) ; (ii.) 487 (semede † C). [Inf. shewe, -en, cf. 5943 f, 5953, 6052, 6994 f, 8057.]

thonked (A.S. þancian, -ode), (i.) 124 (thankked B, thankked C, thonkyd † oft D), 3316 (-id D, thanked B, thankdè C), 6546

\(^1\) Supply [and] in D.

\(^2\) "He neither chere (schyr C, cher G) ne (om. BCDG) made ne word (-e BG) tolde." No note in Austin. Are we to read "He neither chere madè ne word ne (or he ?) tolde" ?

\(^3\) 9-syl., except in D, which has an ungrammatical she before the verb.
Observations on the Language

§ 102. The following Indicative Preterites (first and second persons) of Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Weak Conjugation occur in the Troilus,—hadde, leuede, seyde (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 162).

hadde (A.S. habban, hædde), 92 (had[de] BD), 477 f (-d D), 2435 f (-d CD), 3517 (-d † not D), 3712 A (B †; e I C, -d y D),\(^1\) 4231 ABC, 6567 f, 7008 (hade † C, had[de] D), 7389 ([-de] D); cf. 2634 † C, 4424 † D; hadde, 1649 (-d B; D (!)\(^1\)), 3557 (-d D)\(^1\), 4937, 7745, etc.; had (before voweles), 6989 (hadde BCD)\(^2\), 8017 (-de CD, haddē † rent B); hade, 1718 C (hadde AB, had [a] D), 4635 † C (had † D, held AB); hadde (before he, his, hym, here (poss. sg.), here-vp-on), cf. 89, 180, 304, 663, 1992, 2783 (hade A), 3377, 4069, 5335, 7316, 7467; had hym, 2634 (-dē † preiz̄ed C), 6834 (-dē † hym BD, -dē † sent C)\(^3\); hadde herd, 5007 (addé B); had herd, 750 (-dē BC), 1002 (-dē C), 5329 (-dē BC); but,—haddē horn, 1727 (-dē hed C; D †); cf. hadē † it, 5888 C; haddē ay, 7074 ([-dē] B, -e C, om. D); -ē † hym, 4069 A (!),\(^4\) 6834 † B; -ē † his, 6927 C; hauede † in (!), 5155 C.—hadde, 500 (hade C; D †), 1687 (-d BD), 2355 (-dē BC, [-dē] D),\(^5\) 4835 (had BD); cf. 132 † A, 2229 † C, 7317 † C; hade, 89 † C, 1992 † C; had (before consonants), 7102 (-dē C)\(^6\); cf. 663 † (!) D, 6927 † D, 7229 † D. [Inf. haue, hauen, han, cf. 13, 120 f, 122, 4305 f, etc., etc.]

Rhyme words.—gladde adj. pl. (2435), madde adj. pl. (6567), madde inf. (477).

leuede (A.S. libban, lifgan, lifde, L.W.S. lifede, liofode), -ede yn, 5155 (-ed D, lyuede B, hauede † C)\(^7\); lyued in, 5142 B (-ed D (!), leue

---

1 First Person.
2 Supply [seye] in D.
3 9-syl. in C.
4 Read [use] cause and hadde hym.
5 Or (!) ne hadde she AB.
6 First person.
7 First Person. 9-syl., if read as suggested: “I that leuede yn lust and in plesaunce.”
§ 102.

of Chaucer's Troilus. 247


seyde (A.S. seçan, sægede, séde), cf. 457 f, 722 f, 1005 f, 1184 f, 1964 f, 2159 f (seyede C), 2318 f, 2429 f¹, 2500 f, 3894 f, 3972 f, 4016 f², 4263 f, 4313 f, 4814 f, 4841 f, 4885 f, 5007 f, 5039 f, 5489 f, 5536 f, 5622 f, 5810 f, 5915 f, 6315 f, 6580 f, 6869 f, 6872 f, 6885 f, 7052 f, 7097 f, 7233 f, 7295 f (seyde A), 7309 f, 7337 f, 7396 f, 7484 f, 7534 f, 7536 f, 7607 f, 7787 f, 7803 f, 8039 f, 8076 f, 8093 f; seyde, 752 ([e] D),³ 1361 (-[e] D, sayde[e] B),⁴ 2037 (-[e] D), cf. 117, 330, 822, 870, 877, 1039, 1103, 1336, 1340, 1587, 1591, 1695 † C, 170, 2057 CD, 2060, 2176, 2181 † C, 2215, 2228, 2248, 2250, 2267, 2284, 2338, 2362, 2378, 2395, 2404, 2444, 2509, 2586 (seyde A), 2690, 2692, 2713, 2959, 3202, 3413, 3418, 3490, 3510, 4490, 5042, 5097 BCD, 6418 ², 6686; seyde (before th), cf. 1174, 1548, 1998, 2025, 2130, 2205 C, 3065, 3420, 3471, 4498, 5036, 7318; seyde, cf. 397, 507, 583, 873, 1052, 1294, 1412, 1494, 1912 AB, 2057 AB, 2162, 4641, 5097 A, 6421, 7146, 7549, 8087; [-e], 5188 (-e CD); -e he, 491 (-d BD)⁵, cf. 380 C, 561, 1164, 1294 C, 1599, 2130 C, 4429, 7594; -e hym, 7790, cf. 195 C, 1230; -e here (dat.), 2241 (-e B, -e caste C, -[e] cast D)⁶, 3596 (-d D); seyd here (dat.), 2205 (-e thus C, [-e] thus D), cf. 2713 D; -e how, 5419 (-d B, om. † C), 5831. (In almost all the cases so far cited D omits final -e.)

seyde || who, 1736 (-e ho C, -d ho D)⁷; seyde || lord, 2028 (-d D, -e C)⁸; seyde farwel, 4367 (seide CD); -e † furst, 5349 D (quod ABC); -e † to fore, 6418 C (1st pers.); -e || nought, 7146 B (-e AD; C †); -e † to, 7315 C; seid † than, 2710 D; seid † wol, 2713 D; seid † god, 2798 D. The construction of seyd in seyd velawe, 3146 (sayd C) is very curious.

seydē (hstatus),—seydē he, 421 ([-e] D)⁹, cf. 7548 † C; seydē || em, 2244 (-e hym B, -d hym D); seydē † hirē (dat.), 2241 B. [Inf.

seye, seye, sey, seyn, cf. 492 f, 512, 574 f, 672 f, 3095, 3280, 7740, etc., etc., see § 119, XIII.

Rhyme words.—Criseye (457, 1005, 1964, 2318, 2500, 3894, 4016, 4263, 4313, 4814, 4841, 5007, 5039, 5489, 5536, 5622, 5810, 5915, 6315, 6580, 6868, 6872, 6885, 7052, 7097, 7233, 7295, 7309, 7396, 7484, 7607, 7787, 7803, 8040, 8076, 8093), maybe n. (1664), refreyde inf. (2429), breyde,
Observations on the Language

§ 103. Several verbs that are strong in Anglo-Saxon show weak preterites in the Troilus (cf. Child, § 54, a; ten Brink, § 167).

(a) Syncopated preterites in -de, -te: breyde, fledde, highte, lepte, loste, sighte (sighed sighted), slepte, smerte, wepte (to which add drede, sometimes weak in A.S., and deyde, O.N.); (b) unsyncopated preterites in -ed: lyeed (q. v.), walked (q. v.).

Note 1.—For shapte, see § 101. For radde, see § 99. Swett, 3928 f D, is an error for shette.

Note 2.—Quake (inf. quake, cf. 2406 f, 3384 f, 4042 f, 6619 f), A.S. cwcian, -ode, shows a strong preterite quok, 6399 (-oo-B, quok(e) D), 7289 f (-e) D, quook(e) B, quook(e), 2935 (quok B, quok C, quok(e) D)^1, cf. ten Brink, § 152; but the weak preterite quaked does not occur in the Troilus.

Rynge (inf. rynge, cf. 4079 f), A.S. hringan, hringde, has pret. rong, cf. 2700^2, 4567.

abreyde, see breyde.

breyde (A.S. bregdan, bregd, bréd), 7606 f; abreyde, 724 f (vpbrayd D); she abreyde, 5874 f (she braye B, sche brayd C).^3 (For strong pret. abrayd, see B. Duch. 192, Ho. F. 110, and cf. ten Brink, § 140.) [Inf. breyde, cf. 4892 f, 5010 f; abreyde, cf. 3955 f, 6883 f.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (5874, 7606), seyde ind. 3 sg. (724, 7606).

deyde (O.N. deyja, dó, late deyxa), 56 f (deyed B), 875 f (-d D, deyede BC), 1186 f (-ed B, -ede C, -d D), 4013 f (-ede B, deiede C, drede D), 4813 f (deyede B, deyede C, deide D), 5094 f (deyed B, deyede C, deyed D), 7339 f (deyede C, deyd D, seyde B), 8197 f (deyed B). [Inf. deye, dyes, cf. 573 f, 728 f, 758 f, 1027 f, 1257 f, 1524 f, 1526 f^4, 2160 f, etc., etc.; deyen, dyen, cf. 306 f, 1412 f, 8127, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (56, 875, 4013, 4813, 8197), seyde ind. 1, 3 sg. (1186, 4013, 4813, 7339), subj. (l) 3 sg. (5094), deyde subj. (l) 3 sg. (5094).

drede, dradde (A.S. on-drédan, on-dréd, sometimes -dredde), drede, 1959 (dredê I C, dred D),^5 4489 (dred B) ; -e hire (acc.), 2165 (dradde BC, draf D); dradde ay, 7933 (dred inf. BCD); -e hire (acc.), 1540 (dredde B, drede C, drede inf. (l) D). [Inf. drede, -en, cf. 84 f, 252, 6748.]

fledd (A.S. fléon, fléah), 7561 f BCD (fledd p.p. A) (; bledde ind.

1 Supply [ek] in D.

2 Supply [hem] in CD.

3 I breyde, 7625 f, is apparently present.

4 Noteworthy is the occurrence of dyes in 1524 f (: crye ind. 1 sg. : vilonye) followed by dye (: seye ind. 1 sg.) in 1526 f.

5 After al (= although).

6 In an indirect question.
or subj. 3 sg.), 7580 f. (ledde ind. 3 sg.); fledde he, 3192 (thei fled pl. D). (Is fly, 5264 C, meant for a pret.) [Inf. fle, flen, cf. 747 f, 1279 f, 1795 f, 4105, etc.]

highte, byhight[e] (A.S. hátan, heht, hét; cf. ten Brink, § 135); highte promisit, 7999 f (hyzt C, hight D); byhight, byhyght promisit, 6873 f (be-D, bhighte B, behyte C), 7567 f (-highte B, behyzt C, behight D).—highte vocatus est, 69 D (hyghte B, high[te] A), 2701 (-[e] D, hihte C †); so, with ellipsis of the relative,—thei hadde a relik hight (heet B, hyzt C) Palladion, 153. Cf. hight Ellysos, vocatur, 5452 AD (height B), and,—highte vólutiris, vocantur, 788 (-en B, -yn D, hyzt C). Hatte (A.S. hátte, used both as pres. and as pret.) also occurs: The owle ek which that hatte Escaphilo, 6682 (hette B, hihte C, hete D); How that ye louen sholde on that hatte Horaste, 3639 (hat D (?)). For heet, vocatus est, see 153 B (above).


losté (A.S. for-léosan, -léas), [-e] speche, 5813 (-e CD, lefte B); -e his, 441 (-t BD). [Inf. lese, -en, cf. 4850 f, 7161.]

lyed (A.S. lógan, láeh), lyéd † loude, 2162 D (ley ful AC, leigh ful B). 2 [Inf. lye, lyen, cf. 4775 f, 7887 f, 7890.]

sighete, sighed, sikede (A.S. sícán, sác); sighte, syghte, 3922 f (-t CD), 5376 f D, 5879 f (-t D, seytz C), 7996 f (-t CD, sigethe B); sight[e] sore, 5783 (-e B, sighed D, seyde † C); sight and, 4313 (-e B, seytz C, sijdez D), 6421 (-e B, syhede C, sighed B).—sighed lest, 279 (sykyl CD); -ed sore, 3898 (-id D, sight[e] B, sikede C), 5559 (sighte B, -[e] D; C †).—siked sore, 3814 (-yd C, syghid D); 3 syked sore, 5378 (syzedé C, syhed D) 4; syked for, 7078 (sighte B, sihéd eké D). [Inf. syke, cf. 596 f, 751, 827 f, 1513 f, 1969 f, 2658 f, 2900 f, 3654 f, 4012 f, 4202 f.]

slepte (A.S. slápan, slép, North. slépte, W.S. sometimes onsílêt), slehte, 7602 (slept C); cf. pl. slepten al, 3588 (-yn C, slepyn 6 D). But,—slep, (i.) 7803 (slep(e) B (?), sleptè (?) D, no † word C); (ii.) 2010 (-e) BD). [Inf. slepe, -en, cf. 1998, 2183, 3262 f, 3499, 3509, 4378.]

smerte (A.S. smeortan, * smeart), 2015 f (-t D, sinette † C) (: herte n.). [Inf. smerte, cf. 1042 f, 2373 f, 4024 f, 6110 f, 6280 f.]

1 Indirect discourse.
2 In D supply that.
3 After al-though.
4 Indirect discourse, 9-syl. verse.
5 Rhymes with endite, inf., and the white.
6 Perhaps intended by the scribe to be a present.
walkedę (A.S. walcan, wéolc), -edę †, 7585 C (-é D, -eth AB); -ede †, 1908 C (-eth AB, -ith D). But,—welk, (i.) 7598 (welk(e) B, walkedę C, walked D).¹; (ii.) I welk allone, 1602 (-e B, walkyd D).² [Inf. walke, cf. 7029 f.]

Note.—Ten Brink (§ 134) remarks that walken is “ausschliesslich schwach flectiert.”

wepte (A.S. wéapan, wéop), 5015 f (: kepte ind. 3 sg.); wepte sore, 1647 (-e] D)³; -e, 5383 (-e for C †, -e for D); wepte || bothe, 7088 (wepid C); -è she, 7409 (wep C).—But,—weep nought, 5800 (wep(e) B, wepynt † C, -ith † D); wep || ful, 7945 (wepte BCD); wep || as, 2957 (-e) D, wepte C. [Inf. wepe, -en, cf. 5591, 6445, 7598 f, etc.]

§ 104. A few Romance verbs show syncopated preterites in -de, -te, after the analogy of the First Weak Conjugation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 180, 182).

aspýde, 2337 f (-piede BC) (: ryde inf.); aspide, 6902 f (espied B, asspieède C, espide D) (: ryde inf.).—aspiléde wel, 2927 (-plier B, -pyéd D). [Inf. espie, espie, aspye, aspie, aspen, espyn, cf. 1734 f, 2592 f, 3415 f, 3677 f, 3977, 4815 f, 5886 f, 6544 f, 7177 f, etc.]

caughte (O. Fr. cahier), 1533 f (kaughte B, caunte C, caught D) (: he raughte pret. ind.); -e, 280 (caużte C, caght D); caught his, 7917 (-e B, -t D, caużte † C †).—kaught[ę] first, 6930 (caught[e] BD, caużte C). [Inf. keece, 4217 f A.]

cride, 5875 f (cried D, cryede BC), 6568 f (cried BD, cryede C); cryde loude, 7868 (cried BD, cryede C).—cride, 729 (criède B, cryède C, cryèd D), 6579 (crièd BD, cryède C), 7607 (criède BC, cryèd D); crie his, 8036 (cried BD, cryede C); cried a, 5415 (cryèd BD, cryède † C). [Inf. crie, crye, cryen, cf. 806, 1485, 3864 f, 5887 f, etc.]

Rhyme words.—glide inf. (5875), Cupide (5875, 6568), Cipryde (6568), hurte -e, 1284 (-t D, hitte C †).—hurt || a, 6713 (hirt C, hurt || [a] tymè D).

paste, 1483 f (at last † D), 2345 f (passede C : caste C, past D).—passed nought, 456 (-edę C, -yd D); -edę forth, 1639 (-ed BC, -id D). [Inf. passe, pace, passen, cf. 41 f, 371 f, 847, 1165 f, 2931 f, 3062 f, 4114 f, etc.; trespace, cf. 4017.]

Rhyme words.—at the last (1483), caste pret. ind. 3 sg. (2345).

¹ Indirect discourse.
² In D supply [that].
³ Indirect discourse.
preyde, 2687 f (preyde C, prayd D) 1, 4799 f (preyde C), 6100 f (preyde C, preid D); preyede, preyede, prayede, 2157 f (prayde B, preyed C, prayd D), 4876 f (preyde B, praide D) 1; preyede hem, 2786 (-ed B, preyed C, prayd D). 2—preyde here (acc.), 6480 (preyédé || sche C †, preide she (?) D).—praide † god, 5400 D (bad ABC). 3 [Inf. preyed, preyen, preyè, -en, prey, cf. 48, 2521 (?), 2841 f, 2920 f, 2926, 6678, etc.]

Rhyme words.—Criseyde (2687, 4799, 4876, 6100), leyde ind. 3 sg. (4799), seyde ind. 3 sg. (2157), withseyde pret. subj. (?) 3 sg. (4876).

§ 105. Most verbs of Romance derivation make their preterites singular in -ed, -ede, -ede, without syncopation (cf. Child, § 53; ten Brink, § 179).

acceptid it, 6549 C (-eth AB, accepté † hit D).
acused, 2166 f (acuséd C, accusid D) (: excused p.p.).
alteréd his, 4620 (-yd C, -id D).
argumented he, 377 (-tede B, -tid C, -tyd D). 4
assentyd, 1002 (-ed B) (: vntormentid p.p.).
avisid her, 2999 † D.
causede, 7938 (-ed CD).
chaunged al, 2555 (-yd D, chonged C).
compleyned ek, 2661 (-ede C, -id D).
comytted to, 6367 A (committed D, -eth B).
coueited † so, 6001 D (pres. ABC).
couered she, 2412 (-id D). [Perh. subj.]
dampned al, 8186 AB.
declamed this, 2332 A (pl. BC, declarid pl. D).
deferred hem, 4508 (-yd C, -id D).
descended Tydeus 7843 (-ed BD, dessendede C); 6 -ed † doun, 7874 D (pres. ABC), cf. 7222 D †.
desiredé worthinesse, 567 (-ed BD); -ed she, 1229 (-id D); -yred but, 1417 B (pres. ACD).
deynedé sparen, 435 (-ed B, -yd D, -ed to C). 7
dressede hym, 2913 (-ed B, -id D).
entended bet, 6832 B (-it C †, -eth A, -eth D †).
falsedé Troylus, 7416 (-ed BD, -édé † C).
feyled, 354 f (fayned B, -id C, feynid D) (: gayned pret. ind. 3 sg. :

1 First Person. 2 B has hym for hem (as often). 3 Supply [fut] in C.
4 Read (by)gynnyng in D. 5 Supply [she] in C.
6 9-syl. in A only. 7 In D read in for if.
Observations on the Language [§§ 105, 106.

destrayned ind. 3 pl.); -ed herę (acc.), 494 (-ede C, -yd D †) 1; -ed hym, 7209 (fynede † C).
formede, 2138 (-ed B, fourmyd D). 2
graunted the, 3181 (-id D); -ed hym, 3422 (-yd D, -id it C) 3; -ed on, 7312 (-yd C). 4—graunteled || anoon, 2636 (-ed B, C †; -id he D †).
ymagyned he, 6980.
impressid in, 4385 D.
plitede she, 1782 (plyted B, pleytede C, plytid D).
purposed [pes], 6012 D (-en pres. pl. ABC).
pûrueyed † thynge, 5728 A? (-ueieth B, -ueyth D).
receyued † vnto, 6944 D. [Hardly to be scanned.]
reherseide †, 2767 C (inf. ABD).
remembred me, 7109 (-id C).
scorned hem, 303 (-ede C, -yd D).
sorted hym, 8190 AB.
souned into, 6338. [9-syl.]
streynede † him, 3913 C.
tariëd † so, 7225 D (pres. ABC).
tasted, 639 (-id C, -yd D).
torned herę (acc.), 5517 (turnede C, turned D); -ed hym, 7509 (turnede C, -ed D); tornede on, 3286 (-ed B, turned C, -id D);
torned he, 6448 (turned BD, 6 -ede hym † C).
vaylyde † this, 6812 C.
venged † hir (acc.), 7831 D (wrak AB, wrok C).
waytede on, 3376 (-ed B, -id CD).

§ 106. The Indicative Second Person Singular of Weak Preterites ends in -est (Child, § 53, c; ten Brink, § 194).

įapedest, 508 (-yst C, -ist D), 917 (-ist C, iaped[est] B, ympedid † D).

1 In C read [s]he.
3 Supply [that] in D.
5 Supply [al] in B.
2 A is a bad 9-syl. verse.
4 9-syl.
6 Supply [that] in D.
seydest, 909 (-ist CD), 5143 (-ist C); seydestow, seidestow, 912 (-ist thou CD), 917 (-ist thou CD), 918 (-ist thou CD).\(^1\)
preyedest, 910 (-ist C, praydist D, preydest B).\(^2\)
deydest, 3105 (-ist D, dydest B, deydist C).
louedest, 3562 (-ist CD).
bysoughtest, 8097 (be-D).
dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 C.
koudest, 622 (-yst C, -ist D).
woldest, 5103 (-yst C).
myghtestow, 4924 AB.

But,—thow fette, 3565\(^f\) (fet D) (thow ... lette inv. subj. sg.: shette pret. ind. 3 sg.).

myght, 619 AB, seems meant by the scribe for pret. ind. 2 sg., but C has mayst, D mayst.

The indicative preterite form in -est is often used in constructions properly subjunctive, as in late Anglo-Saxon (cf. Sievers, § 365, Anm. 2; ten Brink, § 195). Thus,—

I nolde that thou ... wendest, 1024 (-yst C, -ist D).
ne haddestow, 4938 (-yst thou C, -ist thou D).
wististow, 4486 C. AB (wistow) and D (wist thou) are unmetrical.

Read, perhaps, wist\(\ddot{e}\) thow, and cf. wyse pret. subj. 2 sg., 3211\(^f\) (wiste B, wost C \(\dagger\), wyst D) (triste pres. ind. 1 sg. : lyste pres. subj. 3 sg.).
dortestow, 767 (durstyst thou C, trist \(\dagger\) thou D).\(^4\)
woldest, 4944 (-ist C, wilt \(\dagger\) C); cf. 4487, 5103.
nodestow, 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD).
sholdest, 774 (schuldyst C, sholdist D); cf. 6714, 7651.
myghtest, 7890 (my3tist C, mightest D \(\dagger\)).
Cf. oughtest, 8069; oughtestow, 6908 (aujtist thou C, oughtest thou D).

\(\S\) 107. Second Person Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs (cf. Child, \(\S\) 54 b; ten Brink, \(\S\) 193).

thow founde me, 3204 (fond[e] B, fondist C).
thow me bere on, 5425 AB (bare D).
were, 4160\(^f\) (you were E) (: there : fere timor); -e, 510 (wer \(\dagger\) wont(e)

\(^1\) Supply [that] in A.
\(^2\) Dele (to) in C.
\(^3\) Perh. for subjunctive. Supply [thus] in C.
\(^4\) Supply [hire] in B; 9-syl. in D.
Observations on the Language [§§ 107, 108.]

D), 3559 1, 5424 ABD; were woned, 901 (werë wont(e) B, werë t wonë C, werë wont D) 2. But,—was thaw, 4996 (art(e) t thou D).

§ 108. In the First and Third Persons Singular of the Indicative Preterite of Strong Verbs no MS. is free from occasional forms in -e, which, however, is of course never pronounced (cf. Child, § 54). Thus,—

stod(e) she, 172 (stood(e) B, stod C, stood D).

tok(e) hede, 820 (took B, tok C); -t(e) hire (poss. sg.), 126 (tok C), 3053 (tok C), 3067 (tok C); -(e) his, 2387 (tok C), 2545 (tok C), 3436 (tok(e) B, tok C); -(e) he, 379 (tok C), 6565 (tok B, tok C);
tok(e) and, 3024 (took B, tok C); -(e) it, 3811 (tok C).

com(e), 1640 (cam C), 2024, 2682 (com B) 5; bycom(e), 1072 6; com(e), 1629, 1647, 2647 (com B), 3592, 7515 A; -(e) here (dat.), 1687 (cam to D); -(e) hire (acc.), 2572 (com B; com(e) C (?)).
wrot(e), 2299 (wrot C); wrot(e), 7787 (wrot C).

wax(e), 2341 (wex BC, wax D).
quok(e), 2935 (quok B, quok C, quok(e) D) 9; see § 103, note 2.

shop(e), 4914 (schop C).

Other examples are: (1) in B, -(e), before vowels or h,—1360, 1641, 1724, 1774, 2275, 3593, 3821, 3921, 4419, 6392, 6609, 6890, 7441, etc., etc.; -(e), 826, 1640, 1690, 1787, 2645, 2789, 3207, 3437, 3836, 4725, 6838, 7093, 7534, 7565, 7579, 7803, etc.; (2) in C, -(e), as before, 549, 1677, 2547, 3070, 4563, 6925, etc.; -(e), 141, 2645, 2902, 3612, 7208, 7506, etc.; (3) in D, -(e) and -(e), passim. The phenomenon is commonest in D, and B comes next. For examples of this -(e) in rhyme, cf. 2265 BD, 2410 B, 2413 B, 2689 B, 2691 B, 3519 D, 3803 B, 4677 BD, 6652 B 7289 BD.

For weak preterites from strong verbs, see § 103. For quok and rong from verbs weak in Anglo-Saxon, see § 103, note 2.

1 Protasis. Read were [in] in A. 2 But supply [whi] in B, and read were.
3 9-syl. in AB. Read hed[e] in CD. 4 Perhaps subjunctive.
4 Supply [for] in D. 5 Read frændi[e] in BD.
5 Supply [for] in D. 6 Read Criseid[e] [innocent in D, or supply [a]l.
6 Read [ek] in D.
§ 109. The Plural of the Preterite Indicative of both Strong and Weak Verbs ends in -<i>en</i>, -e, for all persons (Child, § 55; ten Brink, § 194).

In the following list the persons are not distinguished. The examples given are arranged as follows (cf. § 96): I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before <i>h</i>; V. syncope: -en, -<i>n</i>; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -e elided before vowels; IX. -e elided before <i>h</i>; X. apocope of -<i>e</i>.

The examples comprise the following preterites: (a) A.S. First Weak Conjugation (cf. § 99) — alighte (VII.), bente (VI., X.), boughte (I., VII.), broughte (VI., VII., VIII., IX.), felle (I., III.), fette (VII.), herde (III.), kyste (VII.), lafte (VIII.), -<i>lede</i> (II.), mente (VII.), mette (A.S. métton) (VII.), redde (raddæ) (IV., VIII., X.), -<i>rente</i> (VII.), sente (VII.), sette (I., VII., IX.), <i>shette</i> (II.), <i>soughte bysoughte</i> (VII., IX. n.), speide (IV., VII., IX. and n.), <i>stente</i> (III., VII.), thoughte (A.S. pōhton) (VII.), thoughte (A.S. ðuíhton) (VI., VII.), tolde (VII., VIII.), wende (II., IV., VI., VII., VII., VIII., IX. n.), wyngte (III.). (b) Strong Verbs, A.S. and other verbs of Germanic origin (cf. § 101), caste (I.), folwede (V.), lyked (VIII., IX. n.), made (I., III., VI., VII., IX.), pleyde (VII., VIII.), rafte (VIII., IX.), <i>shewed</i> (VIII., IX.), strenede (III.). (c) A.S. Third Weak Conjugation (cf. § 102) — haddæ (I., III., VI., VII., VIII., IX.), seyde (I., III., IV., VI., VII., VIII., IX.); (e) Weak preterites from Strong Verbs (cf. § 103), drede (I., VII.), <i>fledde</i> (II.), <i>highte byhighte</i> (II., IV., VI., IX.), <i>slepte</i> (III.), <i>wepete</i> (I.); (f) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104), — caughte (IX.), cryede (VIII., IX.), <i>paste</i> (VII.), <i>preyde</i> (VII.), <i>guytte</i> (IX.); (g) Romance verbs with unsyncopated preterites (cf. § 105), — apoynteden (I.), <i>assegeden</i> (I.), assembled (VIII.), <i>bisegede</i> (VIII.), caused (VIII.), comeueden (III.), commeneden (III.), declared (X.), destroyed (X.), entrechaungeden (IV.), <i>ionynden</i> (III.), <i>turnede</i> (VII.); (h) Strong Verbs, — braste (VIII.), come (VIII., IX., IX.), drove (VIII.), etc (VII.), <i>felle</i> (I.II., III., VII., VIII., X.), <i>founde</i> (I., VIII.), <i>gonne</i> (gan) (bynonne) (I., III., IV., VI., VII., IX. and n., X.), <i>hange</i> (III.), <i>bihelde</i> (III.), <i>knoue</i> (VII., VIII., IX.), <i>laye</i> (III., VIII.), <i>lete</i> (I.), <i>quod</i> (X.), <i>ride</i> (II.), <i>romne</i> (I.), <i>aryse</i> (IX. n., sete (III., VIII.), <i>seygh</i> (sey, sey) (IX., X.), <i>speke</i> (spoke, speke) (II., III., VI., VIII., IX., X.), <i>sponne</i> (VIII.), <i>stode</i> (I., VII., X.), <i>sy</i> (II.), <i>toke</i> (VIII., IX.), were (I., III., VI., VII., VIII., IX., X.), <i>wessehe</i> (I.), <i>yaf</i> (IX.).

I. -en before consonants:

assègèdèn neigh, 60 (-<i>3e</i>- C, assegid wel D †); bysègèdèn the, 7859 (be- B, besegèdè C, besegèd[ë] D).

casten to, 88 AB (-yn C); -en what, 2570 (-yn CD).
boughten they, 136 (-<i>3te</i> C, boght[e] D); cf. 8164.
founden no, 137 (-yn † the (I) D).
weren to, 283 (where C, weryn D); cf. 463, 3531, 4744 (A †),
7892, 7942.\footnote{Subjunctive †}
hadden prys, 1109 (-yn D).
gonnen, 1184 (gunne C, gun[ne] D); gunnen, 1235 (gon- B, goné C, gun[ne] D); cf. 2668, 2704, 3452, 4541, 4720, 6891.
wesshen they, 2269 (wesche C, wysshyn D).
fillen forth, 2276 (-yn D, fellyn C); cf. 1583.
apoynteden ful, 3296 (-yn D; C t).
felten sith, 4064 (-yn C).
wenden ben, 4182 AB.
setten tyme, 4554 (-e C, -yn D).
dradden to, 4718 (-yn D, drecen B).
makkedden the, 4783 B (made A t, madyn alle CD); maden dye, 8165.
ronnen doun, 4792 (-e C, ran[nen] D).
leyden, 7179 (seyen C) (: espyen inf. (: e)yen).

II. -en in rhyme:
fellen, 3 f (: tellen inf.).
shetten, 148 f (C t; line om. t D) (: letten inf.). [After though.]
wenden, 217 f (-yn C ; D t) (: descenden inf.).
riden, 473 f (-yn D) (: diden 3 pl. ind. : abyden p.p.).
spaken, 565 f (-yn C, -e D) (: maken inf. : awaken inf.).
hygghten, 2708 f (-yn D, hijtyn C) (: myghten 3 pl.).
mysledden, 4710 f (-yn D, -loden B) (: fledgeen, -yn D, 3 pl., 4711).

III. -en before vowels:
Cf. wroughten, 63 ; fellen, 134 ; bihelden, 177 ; herden, 1168 ;
stenten, 1188 ; seten, 2277 ; comèueden, 2859 ; spaken, 3056, 6879, cf. 6795 ; commendeden, 3059 ; slepten, 3588 ; weren, 4632, 5798, cf. 2279 t A ; madyn, 4783 CD ; stremeden, 4909 ; wenten, 5392 ; hangen, 5479 ; hadden, 5912 ; gonnen, 6578 ; ioyneden, 7176 ; seyden, 7479. (Variants not registered.)
In some of these cases hiatus occurs in one or another MS. (not A): as, wenté alle, 5592 B ; speke in, 3056 D ; fenté in, 4158 C ; cf. leyè āt, 3587 C (lay[en] A, layen B, lyen D). See also IX. note.

IV. -en before h (in hym, here acc., hem, here pl.):—
Cf. redden, 2791 ; entrechaungédèn, 4210 ; wenden, 5345, 5363, 5386 ; gonnen, 5384 ; biighten, 6859 ; spedden, 6864. (Vari-
ants not registered.) Hiatus,—spedđé hem, 6864 D (cf. also IX., note). Thus seyden here and howne, 4872 (-e BC, saidē D).

V. -en (sycope):
folōwēdēn yn, 1904 (folōwēn B, folōwēl C, folōwodynam D).
comēn vpwārd, 3047 (-yn C, come D).
(Cf. 3470 † C, and the references under VIII., IX.)

VI. -e before consonants:
were wrothe, 140 (-e B, -yn D); were neuere, 1671 (-[e] D); were they, 1997 (-en B, -in C †); were faste, 3075; were bothe, 5894 (-en B, were we C; D †); were sene, 6637 (waren B, wer ysen D).

broute me, 424 † C.
highte volturis, 788 (-en B, -yn D, -jtte C) (in pres. sense).
gonne fro, 1279 (gunne C, ded[ë] † D); cf. 4238, 5371 C (D †), 5790.1—bygonne we, 1597 (B † C †; bygun † we D).
made loue, 1762 (-e D); m. many, 1900 (-yn CD); m. † swich, 3468 C (-yn D).
bente neuere, 1946 (-en B, -yn C, -t † D).
spoke no, 2204 A.
wroughte me, 4196 (-[e] B, -yn E, -styn C).
hadde worthynesse, 4631 (-yn CD); hadde ye, 8055 (-yn C); cf. hadde neuere 3712 J B.
wende that, 5378 (-en B).2
seyde softe, 6982 (-yn C).3
thoughte (=seemed) tho, 7023 (-[e] B, -ste C, 3t[e] sg. D †).

VII. -e in rhyme:
stenē, 60 f (styn D) (: wente ind. 3 pl., -e B : entente), 5002 f (-t C) (: wente ind. 3 pl. : to-rente pret. ind. 3 pl.).
tolde, 131 f (: holde inf. : olde pl.), 7328 f (: holde p.p.).
felle, 145 f (: telle inf. : dwelle inf.).
dredde, 483 f (-d D) (: spedde ind. 3 sg.).
paste, 1743 f (-t C, past † D) (: faste inf.).
broughte, 1999 f (-3t C, broght D) (: ouched 3 pl. : thoughte pōhte ind. 3 sg.).
ete, 2269 f (inf. † D) (: strete n.).
made, 2859 f (: glade adj. pl.).
sente, 2862 f (-t D) (: hente pret. ind. 3 sg.).
wroughte, 3305 f (-t B, -3t C, wroght D), 3604 f (-3t C, wroghtyn D), 5388 f (-3t C, wrought D), 7224 f (-3t CD).
Rhyme words.—thoughte þóhte ind. 3 sg. (5388), 3 sg. indir. quest. (3305), þóhten ind. 3 pl. (3604), þþhten 3 pl. indir. quest. (7224), bysoughte ind. 3 pl. (5388).

were, 3427 f, 3467 f, 3535 f (ware B), 3931 f, 4237 f, 6584 f (wer D), 7541 f (wer D).

Rhyme words.—fere, feere fear n. (3427, 3467, 3931, 4237), there (3427, 3467, 7541), where (3535, 4237, 6584), tere n. (3931, 7541), cyen clere (6584).

sette, 3450 f (set D) (: fette inf.).

sponne, 3576 f (spunne C) (: bygone p.p.).

thoughte (A.S. þóhten), 3605 f (-t C, thoghtyn D) (: wroughte 3 pl. ind.).

stode, 3765 f (stood D) (: for gode).

wende, 4528 f (-d D) (: compleande inf. A, comprehende BC, comprehend D), 5367 f (: spende inf. : brende pret. ind. 3 sg.).

knewe, 4538 f (knowe † B) (: hewe n. : newe adv.), 6083 f (knowe † B) (: trewe pred. adj. sg.), 6486 f (: newe adj. : trewe adj.).

mente, 4699 f (-t D) (: wente ind. 3 pl. : bente p.p. pl.), 4834 f (-t D), (: wente subj. 3 sg. : entente), 8056 f (-t C †, D) (: entente).

wente, 4701 f (-t D), 4802 f (-t CD), 5000 f (-t C), 6797 f (-t D); went[e], 58 f (-e B), 2751 f (-e B ; C †).

Rhyme words.—entente, -[e] n. (58, 2751), sente ind. 3 sg. (4802), mente ind. 3 pl. (4701), stente pret. ind. 3 pl. (58,5000), to-rente ind. pret. 3 pl. (5000), assente inf. (6797), bente p.p. pl. (4701).

mette (A.S. métton), 4704 f (met D) (: lette n.), 8121 f (: whette p.p. pred. pl.).

preyde, 4858 f (preyede C) (: Criseyde).

stente, 5002 f (stent C) (cf. next word).

to-rente, 5003 f (-t C, turment † D) (: wente ind. 3 pl. : stente pret. ind. 3 pl.).

bysoughte, 5387 f AB (besouzte D) (: thoughte þóhte ind. 3 sg. : wrouhte ind. 3 pl.).

kyste, 5793 f (: twyste inf. : nyste ind. 3 sg.).

glente, 5835 f (-t C, glente sg. BD) (: entente : wente ind. 3 sg.).

hadde, 6336 f (: into badde), 6350 f (: cladde ind. 3 sg.).

fette, 7215 f (fett D) (: sette pret. ind. 3 sg. : lette n.).

thoughte (=seemed), 7223 f (-t B, -t CD) (: wroughte ind. 3 pl.).

[Ind. question.]

pleyde, 7475 f (pleyede C) (: Criseyde).

seyde, 7628 f (sg. † C) (: breyde pres. ind. 1 sg. : Criseyde).

abouhte, 8119 f (aboute D) (: soughte ind. 3 sg.).
Final -e is to be supplied in alight[e], \(6876\) f (-e B, alyȝt ? C, light D) (nyghte inf. : brighte def. adj.).

VIII. -e elided before vowels.

Cf. besegede, 149 ; hadde, 153, 909, 1302, 4528, 5381 ; sayde, 176, 5348 ; fill, felle, 470, 3407, 3894, 5413 ; wente, 473 ; toke, 911, 4252 ; were, 916, 3073, 3265, 4247, 5909, 6875 ; tolde, 1165 ; plyede, 1235 ; cryede, 1697 ; founde, 2023 ; sette, 2336 ; turnede, 2432 ; gonne, 2684, 5364 ; knewe, 2750 ; spake, 3305, 6096, cf. 4208 ; laye, 3591 ; rafte, 4911 ; wroughte, 5789 ; radde, 7100 ; come, 7237 ; latfe, 7689. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -e (elided). In several, D omits -e ; as—had, 153, 909, 4528 ; fill, 470 ; told, 1165 ; crièd, 1697 ; gun, 2684 ; wer, 5909 ; etc. So sometimes B : as—beseged, 149 ; had, 153 ; went, 473 ; took, 911 ; crièd, 1697 ; torned, 2432 ; fel, 3407 ; com, 7237 ; left, 7689 ; cf. caused, 4408 ; and C : as—tok, 911 ; lay, 3591. -yn (syn- copated) is found in C 158, 916, 1302, 1697, 2750, 3073, 3894, and in D 2023, 2432 ; -yn in C 5909, D 176 ; -e in D 3265. —Drowe pret. ind. 3 pl. in 3516 (drew C), should be p.p. (as in AB). —For the omission of elided -e in A, see—shewed, 159 (-eC C, -yd D) ; sped, 1111 (spedde B, did + D) ; brast, 1411 (brust B, brostyn C, brest D) ; lyked, 2351 (-êid in C, -yd D) ; assembled, 2652 (-bledin C, -blid D) ; gone, 2739 (gonnê it B, gan on C, gun on D) ; wrought, 4555 (-te C, wroght D) ; tok, 5793 (tooke B, hent C, toke D) ; went, 7690 (-e BC), cf. 1995 ; cf. ye caused al, 4408 B.

IX. -e elided before h (in he, his, hym, here acc., here pl., here adv., hem).

Cf. made, 472, 6097 ; come, 1704 ; cryède, 1728 ; sette, 2269, 5348 ; were, 2436, 3523, 7564 ; hadde, 3706 ; knewe, 4240 ; gonne, bygonne, 4919, 7590, 7830 ; toke, 6863 ; spedde, 6881. (Variants not registered.)

In all these instances A has -e. Cf. were, 6829 B (wer D, werê there C, were + there A). D omits -e in 1728, 3706, 4240, 5348, 6097, 7564, 7590 ; B, in 4919, 5348, 6683 ; C, in 1728, 7590, 7830. C has -yn in 472, 3706, 4240, 6881, 7564. For the omission of elided -e in A, see—spak hem, 1110 (-e B) ; brought hym, 2023 (-e B, -te C, broghtyn + D) ; gan hym, 2629 ; byhight hem, 3161 (biheighte B, behyȝt C, beheight D) ; shewed his, 4206 (-il is C, sweydw + E) ; yaf hym, 4795 (sac C, B + D) ; cf. 2861 D ; quyt hym, 4887 (-it D, sitte B) ; seygh here (acc.) 5382 (seigh B, saw C, say her [soD] ; tok here (pass, sg.), 5392 (tok B ; toke C, D (+l)) ; caught here (pl.), 6965 (-it C). \(^2\)

Note.—A few cases of hiatus occur in one or another MS., but these are easily corrected. Thus,—wente arm, 2201 (-en B, -yn C, om. + D) ; aysé euerychon, 2653 (-en B, -yn C, risyn D) ; gonne + it, 2793 B ; likèd + in, 2351 C ; sought[ethe] hym, 2622 (-te C, soughten B, soghtyn D) ; speddê hem, 2022 (spede B, sped[ethe] from D) ; werê + here (hie), 6829 C. See also III., IV., above.

X. Apocope. A few genuine cases occur:

\(^1\) Perhaps present tense.  \(^2\) Supply [the] in D.
were born, 4064 (-e BC), 5913 (wer D); were woned, 4553 (be D); war caught(e), 2267 B.\(^1\)
say (vidistis) the, 656 (say CD); sey ye, 1362 (sey[e] \(\uparrow\) 3e D).

gan to, 3957.
quod they, 4856 ABC (D \(?\)).
destrayned, 355 f (-yd D) (\(\uparrow\) gayned: feyned, both pret. ind. 3 sg.).

§ 110. The Singular of the Present Subjunctive of both
strong and weak verbs ends in -e in all persons
(Child, § 56; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188).

I. First Person.

(a) Before consonants:
er that I parte, 5 (or [that] I p. D).
lest thow deme I trust[e] not, 601 (tryste B, truste C).
thow I desir[e], 650 (-e BD, desese \(\uparrow\) C).
as euere I thriue, 1205 (as euere thryue I BC).\(^2\)
if that I breke, 2980.
er that I departe, 6297.\(^3\)

(b) In rhyme:
whil I leue, 931 f (lyue BD) (: foryeue subj. 2 sg., inf. D).
er that I sterue, 1007 f (er than C) (: desarue inf.).
now is tymé (is it tymé CD) I wende, 1305 f (: to an ende).
yf I . . . endite, 1352 f (B \(\uparrow\)) (: lyte, litel \(\uparrow\) A).
wene I lye, 1385 f (ly D) (: eye).
counseylest me . . . that . . . I me feyne, 2613 f (: peyne u. : pleyne inf.).
though I . . . preye, 3127 f (prey D) (: seye ind. 1 sg. : wreye subj. 2 sg.).
til I sterue, 3556 f (sterwe C) (: serue ind. 1 sg.).

\(^1\) In ACD supply [that] and read were.
\(^2\) Supply [this] in AD.
\(^3\) Supply [that] in C.
though I ... compleyne, 3847 f (pleyn † D) (to seyn[e] AD, to seyne BC : peyne n.).
but I retorne, 4325 f (-tourne B, -turne CD) (: soiourne inf.).
yf I ... twynne, 5420 f (: inne : synne n.).
til I ... vnshethe, 5438 f (C t) (: to dethe).
yfl yf I ..., 5440 f (: inne : synne n.).
yf so be that I ... passe, 7059 f (pace BD, pase C) (: grace n.).
yf ... I falle, 7068 f (fa[t] D) (: byfalle subj. 3 sg. : of alle).

(c) Elision:
though I praunce, 221 (how † y p. D).
though I spake, 1104 (yf I † spak D).
yf I lye, 3216.
sor thrue I, 3552.
though that I tarye a yer, 4037.
or I soo wereche, 5013 D (do ABC). 2
al sey I nought, 3098 A (-e B).
yf that I me put in, 7064 (putte C).

II. Second Person.

(a) Before consonants:
but thow it fynde, 831 (fyndē † it C, but if thow fynd it D).
se that thow ... requere, 895.
and thow ... holde, 2610 (-[e] CD).
if thow remembre the, 3203 D (if it r. the B, if it rememberid †
be C, if it remembrith the A).
that ... thow deme, 3236.
though thou sitte, 4472 (sitt[te] D).
that thow retorne, 6215 (C †).
that thow ... sende, 6958 (C ?).

(b) In rhyme:
that thou dwelle, 789 f (: helle n. : telle ind. 3 pl.).
(I) ... pray ... thow foryeue, 930 f (-sine B, -sene C ; inf.
D) (: sene subj. 1 sg.).
that thou me recomaunde, 1049 f (: comaunde inf.).
that thow ... wreye, 3126 f (wrey D) (: seye ind. 1 sg. : preye
subj. 1 sg.).
whider so thow wende, 3233 f (wynde C) (: ende n.).
how thow pleye, 3663 f (pley CD) (: tweye : seye inf.).
that ... thow wynde, 4282 f (wende B) (: kynde n. : bynde
subj. 3 sg.).
or thou olde †, 5079 f C.

1 In C read this for wis.
2 Supply [thus] in C.
what so thou seye, 5104 f (sey D) (: deye subj. 1 sg.).
That prey I the thou take (tak B) and it conserve, 6673 f (: serue
ind. 1 sg. : sterue ind. 1 sg.).
I the beseche ... that thou foryeue, 6750 f (-yiue B, -jif C)
that thou ... write, 7656 f (: lete : endite inf).

(c) Elision:
if thou wene, 575.
lust thou deme, 601 (C †).
if thou ... deye, 800 (dy D).
yf thou late hym, 1408 (lat B, late C, lete D, all three plural).
yf thou write, 2113.
that thou knowe, 3249 (know D).
that thou ... cause, 4466 (causē † it D).
yf thou deye, 5285 (dey D).
my conseyl is ... thou ... go and make, 5777 (mak BC).
if that thou trowe, 6694 (C †).
if thou ... ligge, 6774 (leve C, lye thus D).\(^1\)

III. Third Person.

(a) Before consonants:
touche † loue, 744 C (L toucheth).
god forbede, 1198; cf. 2775, 3603.
cesse cause ay cesseth maladye, 1568 B (-eth ... -eth A, sese ... 

1 In later hand in C. Supply [or] in D.

2 Supply [she] in D.
§ 110.]
of Chaucer's Troilus. 263

so . . . that it cause, 4347 (is † cause CD).
god vs graunte, 4368 (C (?) ; graunt D †).
yif that it lyke yow, 4763 (if it like B, if it likith D) ; cf. 1527 † 
C, 4144 † A.
God loun that, 4987 (len[e] D, leue † ay C).
if Criseyde . . . now loun the, 5274 (-eth BD, -yth C).
but yf . . . remorde yow, 6153 (-moue C †).
god . . . as wysly glade so, 6519.
though he wepe and make, 6779.
er Calkas sende, 6871.
bytyde what bityde, 713 f (: syde).
although she come, 7504.
though . . . commeue, 7749 (re- C, remorde D).
that noon myswryte the, 8158 (miss(e)-write D)
1.

(b) In rhyme:
god me blysse, 436 f (blys C, blesse D) (: prowess : distresse n.);
god vs blesse, 7575 (blisse BD, blys C) (: heynesse).

if Criseyde now loun the, 5274 (-eth BD, -yth C).

1 Dele (to) in BD, or read myswrite.
2 In C, read eche for sche.
3 In A read so[re].
Observations on the Language

§ 110.

god hym brynge, 2891 f (bring D) (: heriyenge).
yf this . . . disples, 2949 f (-plees B) (: ese n. : apese inf.).
how sore that me smerte, 2988 f (-t CD) (: herte n.) ; cf. 3748 f,
3842 f, 6495 f, 7587 f.
god forbade, 3387 f (: nede n.), 4819 f (: drede n.), 6218 f (: nede
n. : hede n.).
til the sonne shyne, 3610 f (: deuyne inf. : myne inf.).
er that . . . breke, 3750 f (to-breke † D) (: wreke : speke infs.).
til . . . sende, 3773 f (: ende n.) ; cf. 6865 f.
Ioue . . . hym race, 3857 f (arace BC) (: place n.).
(god) . . . auounce, 4228 f (avance E) (: myschaunce n.).
god . . . bynde, 4281 f (: kynde n. : wynde subj. pres. 2 sg.).
til that fayle, 4935 f (: bywayle inf.).
though the body sterue, 4984 f (: serue inf.).
rather than my felawe dye, 5186 f (dey D) (: seye inf.).
that . . . wepe, 5253 f (: depe adv.).
the deuel spedë hym (spede hym BD, hanë hym C)¹ that recche,
5292 f (: wrecche n.).
god . . . gyde, 5355 f (guide D) (: side n.).
til deth me mete, 5444 f (: swete adj. : in quiète).
that he . . . fynde, 5578 f (i-fynde C) (: out of his mynde).
yf . . . compleyne, 5917 f (: peyne n. : tweye).²
yf so be that . . . take, 6224 f (: make infs.).
yf that . . . me assayle, 6257 f (messaille B, me asayle C ; D †)
(: fayle n.).
though . . . smerte, 6425 f (-t C) (: herte n.) ; cf. 6495 f, 7587 f.
that . . . he dryue, 7028 f (: on lyue).
yf that it byfalle, 7065 f (so falle C) (: of alle : falle subj. 1 sg.).
bytyde what bityde, 7113 f (: syde n.).
yf . . . masterte, 7706 f (me asterte C, me astert D) (: herte n.).
god encresse, 7722 f (-crese CD) (: cesse subj. 3 sg.).
so that it neuer cesse, 7724 f (sease D, sire † C).
god . . . auounce, 7798 f (-ns D) (: myschaunce n.) ; cf. 4228 f.
though hym greue, 8001 f (: leue inf. leðfan).
or that he dye, 8150 f (: thow nenuye).
liste, lyste, lyst (1843), reste A (liste, lyste, leste B ; liste, lyste,
leste, lest, lyst, lest C ; liste, leste, list, lyst, lest, lust D), 679 f
(as thou lyste C), 693 f (yf thou lyste AC), 1022 f (as thou
lest C), 1334 f, 1843 f, 2030 f (ye lest C), 2195 f, 2268 f (ye
¹ In D read Adieu for And dey.
² Supply [if/] in C.
list D), 2534 f, 3101 f, 3210 f (thou lest C), 3430 f (ye lyst D), 3513 f (ye lyst D), 3688 f (ye lyst D), 3759 f (ye lyst D), 3807 f, 3889 f (ye lest D), 4172 f, 6209 f (thow este AC, ye leste D), 7629 f (sche luste C), 8074 f (thow lyst A), 8140 f.

Rhyme words.—wyste pret. subj. 1, 2 sg. (679, 3210), er ye wiste (2268), tryste, triste inf. (693, 3101, 3759, 7629, 8074), truste, triste pres. ind. 1 sg. (1384, 3210, 3430), geste n. (2195), Alceste (5140), beste def. adj. sg. (1022, 2534, 3133, 3688, 3889, 4172), the worthieste, (1843), ad, to, for reste (1843, 2080, 3807, 3889), keste pret. ind. 3 sg. (1334), brest[e] (-e B) pret. subj. 3 sg. (2195).

(c) Elision.

For examples of elision before a vowel, cf. 31, 44, 597, 1034, 1114, 1472 B, 1673, 1941, 2104, 2337, 2297, 2721, 2798, 3217, 3637, 3768, 3782, 4066, 4360, 4735 (remembre I), 6223, 6779, 6787, 7321 (deliuere it), 7500, 7724, 7797, 8113. For examples of elision before pronouns beginning with h, cf. 45, 558, 695, 1248, 2898, 3387, 4227, 5124, 6703, 7490; happe how happë may, 7159 (happen how happyn may D).

Note 1.—In cases of elision -e is sometimes omitted in writing. Thus,—(a) before vowels,—sey, 1004 f C (seyth A, syth B, seth D); com, 2519 (-e C, -e D (!)); prey, 3388 (-e BC, prayeth † inv. D); set, 3674 (sette B, set [not] D); lat, 4088 (B†, let C); worth, 5409 (wurth D, wurthe‡ C); dryf, 5572 (-e BD); glad, 6217 (-e CD); tak, 7452 (-e CD); —(b) before hym,—war, 1953 (-e D); lat, 2692 (let C, lete D); bryng, 2693 (-e B). There are no good cases of hiatus: who-so axx‡ hym, 7587 C (-eth A, -ed B, -ed him weher[ef] D), and the deuel speel‡ hym, 5292 A (hauë C, spee B; D† should be corrected; so god me sende hele, 3163, is regular.

Note 2.—Before a vowel or h it is not always possible to determine whether lyst (ind.) or lyste (subj.) should be read: cf. e.g., 119, 398, 357, 1379, 2860, 4018, 4589, 8133, where A has lyst, list, with 3523, 4194, 5291, 6092, 6685, 8133, where A has lyste.

IV. Contracted forms (all persons).

Monosyllabic (contracted) forms are seen in se, see, and sle. Thus,—

1st Pers., se ich neu[e[r] Ioues face, 5999, cf. 3652 f, 7748; 2nd Pers., I wol now that thou se, 990 f, cf. 6769; 3rd Pers., god yow see, 1170 f (se CD); though he se a man, 1457 (9-syl. in A); yf this man sle here hym self, 1544 (sla B, here sle hym D).

 Cf. § 111, III, note 2.

§ 111. Exceptions to § 110.

I. First Person.

But if that I consentē that it so be, 413 (consentë that it be BC, if [that] I consent that hit so be D).

II. Second Person.

the best is that thou tellè me, 830 (telle CD).

III. Third Person.

helpē me (in God helpē me so, as helpē me god, and similar phrases),
1449 (-p BC), 1675 (-p D), 2089 (-p D), 2211 (-p D) 2298 (-p CD), 2315 (-p BcD), 2367 (-p BD), 2397 (-p BCD), 4408 (C †),
5275 (-p B), 6194 (-p BC), 6256 (-p B) 1, 6726 (-p BC), 6849 (-p B), 7340 (-p B), 7362 2
help me (in God help me so, etc.), 1218 (-e B, help † y D), 1267 (-e me C †), 3706 (-e C), 4463 (-e CD), 6516 (-e BCD).

help god, 3900 (-e B, om. † D).

God yeldē the, 1048 (geld D).

sende yow, 1489 (-d D; C (?)).

yf the lyke than, 2101 (lestē B, lyste C, if thou list D); cf.
3227 † D.

Ioues . . . yeuē the sorwe, 2694 (gif C); Ioues yeuē the sorwe,
7888; god yeuē youre, 4407 (gif C, yeuē sow † D); I bidde
god so yeuē yow, 4312 ([so] C) 4; preye I god so yeuē yow,
7437 (yeuē you C, to † yeuē you inf. D) 5, 7774 (yeuē sow C);
cf. 33 † D.

yf it come to, 4067 (-eth B). 6

loue . . . bynd this acord, 4592 (line om. E).

ne trust no wyght, 5053 (-e B; C †).

wo worth that day, 5425 AB (-e D); cf. 1429-32 (four cases);
cf. 5409 † C.

Venus lat me, 6323 (let CD).

yf she write thow, 7662 (writē D, 3if † that sche write C). 7

Note 1.—Red seems to be imperative in “Hese worthi dedes who-so list hem here Red Dares,” 8133-4 (rede D).—In several passages it is impossible to determine with certainty whether lestē (lyste), subjunctive, or lest (lyst), indicative, is to be read: cf. for example, 686, 1407, 1820, 2245, 2865, 2978, 3215, 3888, 4104, 5245, 6020, 6295, 7360, 7751, 7780; see § 95, p. 221.

Note 2.—In If harm(e) agree me, 409 (agree CD), agree has of course but two syllables.

§ 112. The Plural of the present Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends in -en, -e for all persons (Child, § 56, c; ten Brink, §§ 184, 188). Thus,—

I. First Person:

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pret. †).

1 D ridiculously reads Ioue heuen quene.
2 In A insert [here].
3 Supply [the] in C.
4 so later hand in D.
5 B has † for if.
6 Read soo[ne] in D.
7 Read soo[ne] in D.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

whil we dwellen there, 6186 (-e CD, dwelten A).
though that we ... apeyre, 1414 f (if that B; C (?) ( : faire adv.).
we our tales holde, 2017 f (-d D) (; tolde ind. 1 sg.).
turne we, 2794 (torne B); torne we, 3061 (torne CD)¹, 4425
(torne CD).
lest we ... reue, 2807 (byeuee BD, be- C) (: leue n.).
it is tyme that we wende, 3050 f (: ende n. : blynde, blende cœcare).
yf we ... hye, 6852 f (: vilonye).
er that we ... wende, 7254 f (wynde C) (: shende inf. : ende n.);
cf. 2961 † f D.
but that we shape vs, 5935 (D †).

II. Second Person:
though ... by-hete, 539 f (be- CD) (: swete voc.).
but ... telle what, 1216 (-e vs BC; D (?)).
though that ye sterue, 1572.²
so ye endite, 2247 f (: write inf.).
that ye ... honge, 2327 f (-g D) (: longe adv.).
he wolé ... that ye brynge, 2728 f (bring CD) (: rekenynge :
taryinge).
er that ye wende, 2961 f (winde C, wende † 1 pl. D) (: ende n.);
yf that ye wende, 6157 f (: rende inf. : shende inf.).
digne me, 2981 (deigne (?) B,igne (?) C, deigne D †).
whil that ye me serue, 3016 f (: deserue 2 pl. subj. or ind.). [Ind. ?]
so that ... greue, 3846 f (: at preue).
what so ye me comaunde, 5956 f (: demaunde n.).
yf that ye drecche, 6108 f (: wrecche n. : recche inf.).
er that ... cause, 6110 (-yn D ; n. † C).
er ye ... fynde, 6313 f (: vnkynde pred. adj.).³
tyme is that ye ryse, 6349 (C †) (: suffice inf.).
yf ye vouche sauf, 7285 (line om. C).
lest [that] ye ... breke, 7395 f (om. † B; C †; lest that, etc.,
D) (: speke inf.).
that ... ye not holde, 7702 f (-d B, vnfolde C⁶ †) (: byholde inf. :
colde adj. pl.).
graunte it that ye ... rewe, 7727 f (: trewe pred. adj. sg.).
that ... ye ... recomforte, 7758 f (-con- C) (: comporte inf. :
desporte inf.).
that ye ne take, 7988 f (B †) (: make inf.).

¹ Supply [to] in B.
² Supply [that] in CD.
³ C has 3if † for er.
Observations on the Language

III. Third person:

though wrecches on it crien, 1950 f (cry3en C) (: eyen n. pl. : dryen inf.).

though wommen drenen with, 3164 B (-in C, -e AD).

how-so it be that . . . delite, 1341 f (: a lyte : endite inf.).

though . . . to-rende, 1875 f (vnrende † D) (: ende n.).

lest more folk aryse, 4032 f (: wyse pred. adj. pl.).

who wot . . . what they signifie, 6734 f (: glotonye).

er that thei fynde, 7496 (ffynden D).

but men lye, 7891 f (: iupartie : dye inf.).

although they holde hem, 4235 AC (hold B).

that they ne fynde in, 4861 (-yn C).

IV. Contracted forms:

fle we, 2649 (flee B, fle [we] D).

whan ye . . . se, 7765 f (see D).

V. Apocope of -e:

And coyë (inf.) (koy D) hem they (that they D) sey noon harm of me, 1886 (seye B, seyn † ind. 3 pl. C).

Cf. lete † we her, 2017 D (inv. ABC); lete † we, 3060 D (inv. ABC); ne stond † we, 3405 f D (inv. ABC).

§ 113. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Strong Verbs ends in -e for all persons. The Preterite Subjunctive Singular of Weak Verbs shows in the first and third persons the endings -de, -te, -edë, -ed (cf. Child, § 56; ten Brink, § 195). For the indicative form -est in subjunctive constructions in the second person singular of weak preterites, see § 106, above.

I. Strong Verbs.

(a) First Person:

1 A erroneously reads womman for wommen.
§ 113. of Chaucer's Troilus. 269

yf that I so withstode, 5214 f (: for the townes gode).

were, 4053, 4991 f (wer D) (: there); -e, 526, 529, etc.; -e here (poss. pl.), 51 (è ‡ their D); nere I, 1494 (ner D).

(b) Second Person:

er thow me slowe, 5168 (slewe B, slouj D, slow ‡ 3 sg. C).

wolde neuer gode but thow were, 936; cf. 521.

(c) Third Person:

were, 226 f, 723 f (where C), 765 f, 2098 f, 3302 f, 3367 f, 3409 f (there ‡ D), 3413 f (there ‡ D), 3949 f, 3984 f, 4181 f, 5357 f (wer D), 6022 f (–ee- B, wer D), 7240 f (wer D), 7720 f (wer D), 7944 f (–ee- B), 7965 f; were (before consonants), 528 (–e BCD), 1027 (ware B, were (?) D), 1749 ‡ D (were C, was a A, as ‡ a B), 2715 (D ‡), 3379 (–e CD), 3416 (B ‡), 4011 ‡ A (–e BCD), 4332, 4359 (–e ‡ D), cf. 7847 BCD; –e, 608 (C ‡), 836 (–e C), 860 (wer D), 3359 (wer B), 3433 (–e C (!)), 6236 (–e ‡ C), etc.; –e he, 2705 (–e it C) 3 : –e hym, 3433 (wer D, –e ‡ he C); –e here (poss. sg.), 1777 (–e D) 4; –e here (hic), 143 C (–e a D; A? B?); –e honour, 1790; were ‡ and, 5070 A (–e BCD).—nere, 4184 f (were BC; D ‡), 6011 (ner D ‡); –e, 2128 (were A), 2495, 2559 (ne were C, ner D), 6285 ner D); –e he, 2929 (ner B); –e his, 6437 (ner D).

Rhyme words.—a-fere (226), fere, feere n. fear (723, 765, 3302, 3413, 3984 4181, 6022, 7965), ere, eere (723, 765, 3302, 3409, 3949), gere n. (2098), tere n. (7240, 7944), nere subj. 3 sg. (4181), there (2098, 3367, 3413, 5357, 6022, 7240, 7720), where (5357), stere inf. (226, dere ‡ A).

me we were neuer dye Than she . . . vnderstode, 1028 f (: sownen ynto gode); though that she stode, 1032 (stod C). 6

it sat[e] me, 1202 (–e BD); 7 although . . . sat among, 5359 (–e BD).

who so that me yane, 2062 f (: haue ind. 1 sg. : saue subj. 3 sg.).

spake, 2204 B (ind. pl. A, his wordis ‡ CD).

al-though he lay[e] softe, 3284 (!); as thow he lie, 6575 ‡ C; as though . . . lay on, 772 (–e C); lay in (apodosis), 6222 (leye C, were ‡ D).

al come it, 3310 (–e late D ‡).

lest . . . fille, 320 (fel C, fil D). 8

yf she toke it, 3811 (that . . . toke B, that . . . tok C, ellis ‡ she toke D). 8

1 9-syl. verse in ABC (unless one reads were it) ; wer it in D = wer't.
2 In D read were at [the] ful.
3 In D read [an]hangid.
4 But read were her em(e) n[e w]old(e) in D. 5 In C supply [with].
Observations on the Language

§ 113.

yf that loue . . . late his, 4604 (lete B, let C ; D †).
er that . . . spak out, 3385 (-e B, speke † pres. C, spakë † out D).
or . . . slow I, 5168 † C (2 sg. ABC).

(d) Exceptions:
First Person: nere but (apodosis), 6313 (were C, ner D).
Third Person: were sent, 105 (war B, was D); were wyst, 321, 615, 6222 (wer D); were there, 1223 A (is BCD), 3411 (wer B, was C); were leuere, leuest, 1274, 1437, 5227 (C (†), wer D); were to, 1440, 3479 (-e D).

II. Weak Verbs.

(a) First Conjugation (cf. § 99):
as his herte bledde, 4366 f (bledde C) (: cledde vestivit : spedde ind. 3 sp.).

whom he brought[e] there, 3428 (-e C, broght D).
bysought on, 1st pers., 769 (besouthe C).
al dredde I, 1959 (drede BC, dred D).2

as . . . dwelled here (hic), 3rd pers., 121 (-ede C, -yd[e] al † D);

duelled † ther, 3rd pers., 7242 D (-eth AB, -yn † C).
til that he herde, 2036 [-e] D.3

though that she . . . herde, 1032 f (-d D) (: answered ind. 3 sg., -swerde BC, -swerd D).4

lyste, see § 99.
yf that he mente, 1750 (-† but D, myzte † C) ; cf. 5011 f (!).

vs neded for, 6006 (-ed BD, -ith † not C).

I roUGHT[e] not, 1032 (-e BC),5 2513 (-t C, roght[e] D); nought rought[e] ‡ I, 4944 (-e C, -t D). Cf. § 145, III.
yf I . . . sente, 2532 f (-t CD) (: consente inf. : entente n.).

that . . . shente, 3rd pers., 1442 f (-t CD) (: assente inf.); yf herè whiel styltynte, 848 (-t D, styntyn † C).

were it thyng that me thoughte vnsittynte, 1392 (-t B, -ë † C, thinkith † D).

if I it tolde, 1314 (-d D) ; cf. 767 BCD; who-so tales tolde,

1 Dele (be) in D. 2 In C supply [to].
3 In D supply [that]. 4 In C supply [that].
5 In C supply [that].
Chaucer's Troilus.

3644 f BC (-d D, tolle † A) (: colde inf. : holde inf.); she told here-self, 2716 (-e C, told ‡ hym D).

wolde I that he twyste, 4611 f (-t C) (: lyste pret. subj. 3 sg.: wyste pret. subj. 3 sg.).

yf that ych . . . wende, 6312 f (: defende subj. 3 sg.: entende ind. 1 sg.); yf I wende[e], 5581 f (-e BCD) (: despende inf.: pretende inf.); though . . . wende, 3rd pers., 227 (-[e] ind. ‡ D).

er she wente, 2716 f (-t C, stent ‡ D) (: assente inf.); that . . . ne wente, 2739 (wende[e] D ‡); cf. 4832 f (-t D).

(b) Second Conjugation (cf. § 101):

al lakkede here, 522 (-ed B, -id D).

al . . . made it, 3rd pers., 2929.

although . . . pleyde, 3rd pers., 1006 f (-d D, -ede C) (: Criseyde: seyde ind. 3 sg.).

put out, 3rd pers., 3810 (putte BC).

(c) Third Conjugation (cf. § 102):

hadde, 1st and 3rd pers., 3770 (-[de] D, had for B; C †), 4998 BC (-[de] D, -de A), 7296 (-[de] D), 7900 (hadd ymade B, had ymade D); cf. 6590 ‡ D, 8047 ‡ C; hadde, 1628 (had D), 2594 (had D), cf. 3117, 5145, 5245, 6419, 6590, 6646 A, 7296, 8047, 8128 A; had I, 7101 (-de B, -dē ‡ I C); hadde his, 3496 (had ‡ myght D), 7548 (had D); had herd, 7086 (-de B, hade C (!)); hadde had, 227 (-[dē] had (!) BD, -de had C).—yf I ne hadde spoken, 5895 (nadde i-spoken B, ne had[de] spoken D); I ne hadde trowed, 7099 (madde ytrowed B, that I ne hadde trowid C, I me hadde trowed D); I ne hadde y-brought, 4758 (ne hadde brought B, ne had ‡ her brought D); ne hadde I, 4052 (nad I CD), 4161 (nade I BE, naddi C).

though I lyuede, 6242 (-êd BD, leuëde C).

what wyght that it with-seyde, 4877 f (: Criseyde: preyede ind. or subj. 3 sg.); lest I seyde, 2133 (seyd D); yf he seyde, 3420 (-[e] D).

(d) Strong verbs with weak preterites (cf. § 103):

er that I deyede, 460 f (dyede B, deyd D) (: seyde ind. 3 sg.: Criseyde); lest he . . . deyde, 5091 f (dyed B, died D, deyde

1 A has it wyste † for twyste.
2 Doubtful case. Impossible to decide between hadde mad and hadde ymad. Similar cases are 6646, 8128; cf. also 4758, 5895, 7099.
3 In C supply [my].
4 In A read there[œf].
Observations on the Language [§§ 113, 114.

C) (: seyde subj. 3 sg. : deyde (dyed B, deyede C, deyed D) ind. 3 sg.) ; whanne he deyde, 5330 f (deyed BD, deyede C) (: Criseyde).

how sore that hym smerte, 5848 f (-t C) (: herte). it semed as he wepte, 2906 (-t CD, vepte B).

(e) Romance verbs with syncopated preterites (cf. § 104) :
al cost it, 6801 (-e CD).

Other Romance verbs:

cessede she (apodosis), 849 (cessed B, sesed C, sesid D f) ; cesid { the, 3rd pers., 2473 D.

lest any wight devynid † or, 3300 D (inf. ABC).

I pose a woman graunte me, 3152 C (graunte AB, -ith D).

but yf . . . passed oure, 3rd pers., 4109 A (-id C, passe † D).

(g) Exceptions:

and (=if) it hadde ben, 125 (had D).

though he . . . hadde poured, 299 (hade C, had D) ; hadde nedé, 886 (had D).

who-so hadde with hym ben, 1276 (had D).2

(yf that I) . . . had loued, 1501 (haddé BC).

(wolde . . . Ioue) . . . That I the hadde where, 4998 (hadde BC, [-dë] D) ; and (=if) ich hadde swych, 5727 (had D).

lest . . . seyde, 3rd pers., 4829 † B. Cf. nededé (a, above).

For lyste, see § 99.

§ 114. The Plural of the Preterite Subjunctive of both strong and weak verbs ends, like that of the present, in, -en, -e for all persons (cf. Child, § 56, c ; ten Brink, § 195).

that ye dredden this, 1452 (-yn D ; dremen B, drede C).

though we comen in, 6184 (-yn C) (pres. ?).

while we dwelten there, 6186 (dwellen B, dwelle C, duelle D).

lest . . . men wende, 489 f (: brende pret. ind. 3 sg.).

though al the town behelde, 1463 f (-d D) (: selde adv.).

though alle heré foos it herde, 2513 f (-d D) (: with yerde).

(god forbede) . . . that ye . . . wroughte, 3604 f (-t C, -tyn D) (: thoughte ind. 3 pl.).

to aske . . . yf that they blythe were, 4524 f (: enquire inf. : fere

1 Perhaps indicative.
2 In C hadde or 9- syl. ; but read this day for yesterday and addé is preserved.
§ 114, 115.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 273

n.); lest this tales . . . were, 5333 f (fere n.); assayinge how here spere were whette, 8123 (en B, [e] D); Were hisse nayles poynted nuerre so sharpe, 2119.1

though 3e . . . dreynte, 5592 f B (t D, drenche † A, drenk † C) (pleynte n. AB, pleynt CD).

he dorste not ye dwelte lengerę, 7273 ([e] B, duelle no C, dwelle † there inf. C).

(if thei) . . . seyde hire (poss. pl.), 1126 (seying † D).

if [that] thei ferd in, 1124 (e B, fer † with D).2

if . . . ye it toke, 1314 (told † B).

were hanged, 1 pl., 1438; were (before vowels), 2 pl., 4011 (-e bete C), 6309 (wer D).

hadde, 3 pl., 4230, 4232, 5638 (had D).4

wyst he that ye ferde, 5580. [Indic. ?]

though al this town criede, 5247 (cryed BCD).

that we tok oure leue, 6843 (-e BCD).

who that ther come, 7478.

Exceptions:

al seyde men soth, 3143 (seyd B, seid as D, seidyn as C).

Note.—In lest it folk espied, 6050 f (espied D, aspie † A, aspiede † sg. C), we should read aspyde (bytyde pres. subj. 3 sg. : syde n.). In 1438 (see above), were honged may be regarded as a case either of apocope or of elision. In 4065 D were should be be (so AB, ben C); in 4358 † C, after 3e were go should be after that 3e go.

§ 115. The Imperative second person Singular of Weak Verbs in the Troilus usually follows the Anglo-Saxon inflections: that is, it shows -e (A.S. -a) in the Second and Third Conjugations, and in the First Conjugation either ends in -e (A.S. -e) or has no ending, according as the stem-syllable was originally short or long (cf. Child, § 58; ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists the examples given occur before consonants in the places cited, unless the contrary is indicated. An accompanying thou, so, or as is noted. As to the possibility that the construction with a preceding thou is subjunctive, see below, V, note, and § 117, II.

1 Either Were his or 9-syl.
2 Supply [that] in A, as indicated. BD have that. C is cut out here.
3 Read a[f]e[x] in C.
4 Read swe[rn] in A.
I. First Conjugation,—(a) verbs with stem originally short:

leye (A.S. lege), 2079 f (lay C, ley D) (: seye inf.), 2602 f (ley D) (: pleye inf. : to seye).

telle (A.S. tele), tell[le] which, 3254 (tel me CD) ; telle, 595. But,—
telle, 681 (tel? D), 693 (tel BC, om. † D), 862 (tel C, tellē † me D), 864 (tel C, tell H D), 2479 (tel B, tellē † D), 3210 (tel C, tellē † if D); cf. 765, 1010, 2514, 5146, 6693 ; tel me, 721, 5055 (telle C, tell H[ɛ] † D), 5301 (-H D); tel thi, 696; tel thou, 2696 CD (telle † yow A, tel † how B).

lette (A.S. lete), thow me nought ne lette, 3567 (that † thou ne lette subj. D) (: fette pret. ind. 2 sg. : shette pret. ind. 3 sg.).

selle (A.S. sele), -e, 4304 (so † selle C).

Note.—For the imperatives of hidden, lyen, see V. Hene (A. S. hene) occurs only with elided -e (7522).

II. First Conjugation,—(b) verbs with stem originally long:

bryng (A.S. bring), 5744 (-e) BD).

hyd (A. S. hyd), h. not, 595 (-e) BD); so hyd it, 613 (-e) BCD).

But,—Be diligent and trewe and ay wel hide, 950 f (: tyde n. : abyde inf.).

kyp (A.S. cép), 3174 (-e) BD); k. hire (eam), 3107 (-e) BC, so † help D) ; so kyp alwey, 3108 C (saue ABD).

kys (A.S. cys), 8154 (-se) BD).

kyth (A.S. cýS), 5200 (-e) CD, right † B); kygh now, 5281 (right † B, kith D, kith (k)now(e) C).

lef, leef (A. S. lef); leef, 7881 (lef C, lef(e) BD); lef al, 5514 (leef B, leu(e) C, beleue pl. D †). But,—lev(e), 5194 (lef C), 2585 † D (lat AB, let C); leu(e), 2093.

lef (A. S. lyf, lef), 6741 (leu(e) BCD). But,—bileu(e), 2587 (beleue † and C); so leu(e) it, 7322 (len(e) † B).

red (A.S. ríd), 8134 (-e) D).

send (A.S. send), send(e) me, 1614 (-d B, send[ɛ] me D). But,—

thow me grace sende, 3547 (synde C) (: ende n. : wende inf.).

thynk, thenk (A.S. þenc); thynk, 937 (-e) BC, thenk D); thenk, (i.) 1436 (thynk(e) B, thynkyth † C), 3130 (thynk B, think C), 5128

1 Tel (Telle G) which (-e G) thou wylt of everychone AB (the Cp. collation has no note on this line); Tel me, etc. CD. If we read tell[le] in ABG and tel in CD, all five MSS. have 9-syl. verses. Tel is unmetrical in AB; tell[le] in CD would make a full verse.

2 No so in AB.

3 Might be construed as subjunctive. If imperative, the verb may be either singular or plural.

4 In A read vof[r]k.

5 But insert [swēt] in D and read send(e).

6 Supply [what] in D.
of Chaucer's Troilus. 275

(-e) D, thynk(e) BC, cf. 2595, 3568, 4128, 5279, 5759, 7518 (thynkith † C); thenk, (ii.) 890 (thynk B, thynge C), 1053, cf. 5079, 5262, 5270; thenk here (hic), 2465 (thynk(e) C).

wark (A.S. wyre), (i.) 2078 (work D). 1

trow (A.S. tréow), trow(e), 6209 (-e pl. B, -eth pl. D). 2

Note.—For dred(e), imperative of dreden (weak in Chaucer), see 3550 (dred C), 6719 (dred C).

III. Second Conjugation:

bridle (A.S. ge-brídla), bridle alwey, 4477 (brydele C, bridel D).
calle (A.S. cealla), -e, 3244 (cal CD); 3 -e hym, 3243 (cal CD, cal hem B).

glade (A.S. glada), 870 (-dde BC).

herkene, herke (A.S. hercna, hercna); herkené (or herkenë) for, 5691 (-enyth † pl. D); herkené it, 658 (-en B, herkenyt it pl. C, herkenith it pl. D); herkené of, 5515 (-yn † with D, werkene † C).

herke, 602 (-[e] D, herkene or -ene C), 624 (-[e] D, -ene or -ene C), 1023 ([e] BD).

loke (A.S. lóca), 946 (-oo B, loken D †); -e, 862, 2405 (se † thes D).

loue (A.S. lufa), -e, 807; -e hire (eam), 679, 5278; loué || for, 1481; -e me, 6935.

make (A.S. maca), 2102 (-e thow B, thow make D); so make vs, 8231 (mak B, or take † D); make the, 3545 (mak C); -e no, 5112 (mak C); -e redy thou, 5870 AD (mak B). 4

pulle (A.S. pulla), -e, 958 (pul D, fellé † it C).

Note.—For the imperative of rewen (a weak verb in Chaucer), see § 117, II.

IV. Third Conjugation:

fecche (A.S. feta, see Siev., § 416, n. 9), 6685 f (feche CD) (= wreche n.).

folèwe (A.S. folga), -ewe me, 3581 (-owe B, -ow D, folwe C); folwe alwey, 4969 (-ow B, -owe D).

V. Exceptions:

To I. See under telle, above, and compare,—

byd (A.S. bide), byd for, 3184; but,—bidde hym, 5571 (bid BC).

ly (A.S. lige), ly stille, 2038 (li BC); but,—lye right, 2604 (ly C, be † D).

set (A.S. sete), set the, 5284 (sett D); set a cas (=put case, Suppose), 1814 (sette C, set y ind. D †). 5

1 In C read for-thy for for thyn; in D supply [shal].
2 In AC change ow (ow) to yow and trowe becomes pl.
3 Supply [that] in D.
4 In D read my ber[e] for me her † ber,
5 In A read y[wys].
Observations on the Language [§§ 115, 116.]

To II. See under hyd, send, trow(e), above, and compare,—
quenche (A.S. á-cwenc), thou ... quenche, 5173 f (-ch D) (: drenche inf.)
so spede it, 2147 (-é ‡ it C, -é D ‡).
wende (A. S. wend), thow wende, 5308 (: blende cæcare : sende inf.).

To III. See under loue, make, above, and compare,
put (from A.S. potian?) not, 783; put thy, 5781 (C ‡).

To IV. haue (A.S. hafa), 831, 1608 ¹, 3183, 3262, 5282 (D ‡);
-e al, 3173 (-é ‡ al D); -é here (hic), 1054 (D ‡, 1409 ‡ A, 2405,
3953 (l), 7521.

seye (A.S. saga), 925 (sey BCD); sey, 928 (-é B), 2496, 2603 (-é B),
2605 (-[é] ‡ C). [Var. C say, sei.]

Note.—With regard to the exceptions above noticed, it should be observed
that forms like déme, háyre, telle, cwell occur in Late West Saxon, and
forms like ner, sel, etc., in Northumbrian (Sievers, § 410, n. 3). In
phrases like thou sende, thou wende, one is tempted to regard the verb as
subjunctive (cf. § 117, II). Fellt it, 958 C, is an error for pulle it.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin, but not found in Anglo-Saxon:
beblotte, 2112.²
iompre ek, 2122 (iumpere C).
trust (O.N. treysta, inv. treyst), ne trust no, 5053 (-é B)³; thow
trust to, 6773 (-é me CD).⁴

vnneste, 4967 f (-t D, wonest ‡ C) (: the wofulleste : breste inf.).

§ 116. The Imperative second person Singular of Verbs
of Latin or Romance derivation ends in the Troilus
in -e (cf. ten Brink, § 189).

In the following lists an accompanying thou, so, or as is noted
(cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Before consonants or in rhyme:
sorne, 576 (-é me CD).
repreue, 669 (reprove ‡ thou D).
assure, 680 f (-eure B; assure ‡ ind. 1 sg. D) (: endure ind. 2 pl.).
delit, 704 (A ‡).
suffre, 755 (-ère C, lete ‡ D), cf. 947.

thow hym gyde, 1162 f (: by syde).
thow ... purueye, 1511 f (-vey D) (: deye ind. 1 sg.).
eschuwe, 2103 f (-ne B; that thou eschewy subj. CD) (: saluwe inf.).

¹ In A read [vpl]on, thus avoiding hiatus. ² Supply [ek] in C, [thy] in D.
³ Perhaps 3 sg. subj. ⁴ No thou in BCD.
But,—eschewè thou, 634 (eshew B, -chew D, excuse † C).
compleyne, 2584 f (: peyne n.).
thow me enspire, 3554 f (thou me en- D, thou me this nyȝt enspire C)
(: desire inf. : in the fyre).
delyuere, 5177 (-er D ; C?).
deuyne, 5251.
receyue, 5872.
thow dispone, 6663 f (: to done).
offe, 6669 (-fere C).
thou nenuye, 8152 f (thou † enuye D) (: dye subj. 3 sg. : poesye).

II. Before vowels:
persèuere in, 951.
plaunte, 957.
accepte, 1614 (D?).
reherse, 2114.

sau, 3108 (so save D, so kep † C).
departe, 3246 (-ë † it D).1
parforme, 3259 (-forne BC, -fourme D).2
prey, 3560 (prey [al] C).
gide, 6685 (guide D, gyde † pl. C).
defende, 8230.

III. Before h :
pray hym, 2543 (prey C, preye B).
distreyne here (poss. sg.), 6959.
delyuere here (acc.), 8106 (-er BD).

IV. Apocope :
prey || now, 2584 (-ë B, pray D, preye C) ; cf. II., III.

§ 117. The Imperative second person Singular of Strong Verbs has in the Troilus, as in Anglo-Saxon, no -e (Child, § 18, b ; ten Brink, § 189).

An accompanying thou, so, or as is noted (cf. § 118, p. 280).

I. Regular:
abyd, (i.) 2070 (-e D ; quod † C), 2075 (-e D, abit C), 2604 † C.
(ii.) 2070 AB (-e) C, (-e) D) (Cf. byd(e), under II, below.)
beet, (i.) 925 (bet(e) CD).
com, (i.) 5164 (-e) CD. But,—com(e), 7501.
dryf, (ii.) 6722 (-u(e) BD).

1 But supply [so] in D, and read departe.
2 Read most[e] nede in ABCD.
farwel; 1053 (-e D); farwel, 1033, 2609 (far C), 3703 (far C), 4367 (pl. ?) (far BCD), 6916 (far C), cf. 6390, 7539; far(e) now wel, 5320 (far C); far(e), 3878, 2084 (do † A).

gnaw, (i.) 509 (-e B, gnow(e) D).

help, (i.) 10 (-e D), 2093 (-e B), 5252 (-e BD); so help † her, 3107 D (kep A, kepe BC); thow help(e) me, 6 (thow help B); helpe me god, 2211 (perh. subj. 3 sg.) (help D, helpē god subj. C).

Note.—The imperative help has in some cases become almost a mere interjection (see 533, 1007, 3566, 3573, 5812); but lines like 1047, 3570, 3573, allow us to see the original construction (cf. helpe, sbst., p. 17, note). In 3800 we perhaps have a subj. 3 sg.

hold, (i.) 2105 (D †), 4311 (-e D, -e gow(?) C), 5782 (-e D); so hold, 5117 (-e BD, held C). (ii.) 2124; hold here (acc.), 5194 (-e D).

But, — hold(e), 2619 (-d CD), 4474 (-d BC).

lat, (i.) 616 (-e D), 701, 760, 2038 (-e D, -e A), 2585 (levc † D), 5199 (lett D), 5759 AB (let D) 2; cf. 856, 1021, 2137, 2141, 2486, 2515, 2607, 5061, 5112, 5283, 5313, 7644. [Var. CD let; D let(e).] (ii.) 702 (let(e) D; C †); cf. 4968, 6752, 6756, 6844, 6845, 7492; lat here (acc.), 5193 (let(e) D) 3 (cf. 5249 C, 5500, 6722).

But,— lat(e), 3255 (lat B, let CD), 3582 (lat BC, let(e) D); cf. 2038 A, 3262; lat(e) hym, 2562 (?) (lat B, let C, let(e) D).

Note.—How completely the adhortative first person plural and the periphrasis with lat had become synonymous may be seen from such passages as the following:

But fle we now prolixite best is
For loue of God and lat vs faste go. . .

And late vs of here saluynges pace, 2649-50, 2653, (lat . . . let C, let(e) . . . let D).

So go we seen the paleys of Criscyde
For syn we yet may hane nomore feste
So lat vs seen here paleys at the leste, 6886-88 (As go B, As goo D, Go C; Yett let(e) vs goo se D). Compare also,—

Now late here slepe and we oure tales holde, 2107 (lat BC; Now lete we her slepe & forth our talis hold D).

Now late hem rede and turne we a-noon, 2794 (lat B, let(e) D).

Now late here vende vn to here owne place
And turne we to Troylus a-yen, 3060-1 (lat B, let C, Now let(e) we her wendo to, etc. D); cf. 1772-3.

In all these cases, as well as those in which Chaucer addresses his audience, we should probably regard the lat as imperative plural (see 1079, 4515).

ren, (i.) 7019 (ren(ne) BD).

dyd, (i.) 2098 (-e BD); rid(e), 2105 (ryd C, ride D †).

1 The variations noted concern merely far; the second part of this quasi-compound is written wel, weff, or wele (never dissyllabic). The accent is on far in 1033, 3703, 4367 CD, 6916, 6390 BD, 7539; on wel in 1053, 2609, 4367 AB, 6390 A.

2 Supply [thi] in A.

3 Supply [of] in B.
ryn, (i.) 6756 (-e) D, 6770 (r. † vp C, ris(e) D). (ii.) 5199 (-e) BD; cf. 5255, 5307, 6751 A. But,— rys(e), 6751 B (rys C, aris(e) † D). se, (i.) 894, 1697 ABC (perh. pl.), 2405 † D, 7659. spek, (i.) 2542 (-e) D, 2584 (-e) BCD, 3954 (-e) CD (perh. pl.).

stond, (i.) 962 (-e) B.

thowbreste, 6208 f (to-breste pres. sulj. 3 sg. BCG Cp. John's, which is no doubt the correct reading) (: leste subj. pres. 2 sg. AC, 3 sg. B, 2 pl. D).

thow. . . . rewe, 7070 f (: trewe pred. adj. sg.). thow write, 2111 f (: endite inf. : a lyte).

In these instances it will be observed that *thow* precedes the verb, and we are perhaps justified in regarding the forms as jussive subjunctives (cf. § 115, V, note). *Thow helpe me*, 6 (thow help B) cannot well be used as an argument against this view, for apocope is frequent in the subjunctive mood (see § 111). The imperatives *rewen* (rew C), 5838 (rew BD), and *writ(e) here* (dat.), 7671 (writ(e) (to) hire C), are indecisive, since they stand before a vowel or h. It should be remembered, however, that *rewen* is a weak verb in Chaucer. There are many other cases in which -e is written in the imperative singular of strong verbs, even in MS. A, but in none of these instances is the -e pronounced: see above (I.) under *com, far, help, hold, lat, ryd, rys, tak, yef*, and *add,— awak(e), 729; awak(e) he, 751 (awak B, -e † he D).* ber(e), 6212 (ber B). byd(e), 2604 (-d B, abyd † C, tabide † inf. D); byd(e), 3582 (bid B, byd C). ches(e), 2040 (ches C).2 writ(e) here (dat.), 7671 (-e) (to) hire C).

1 In C read wit for wilt. 2 Supply [And] in A.
wyt(e), 2085.

Note.—For the imperatives of *bidden, lynen*, see § 115, V. For the imperative of *heuen*, see § 115, I, note. For the imperative of *dreden*, see § 115, II, note. *Flen* (cf. §§ 96, 103) has *fle* (4968).

§ 118. The Imperative second person Plural of verbs, strong or weak, native or naturalized, ends in the *Troilus* in *-eth, -eth, -th*; but forms in *-e* and forms without any termination are very common (cf. Child, § 59; ten Brink, § 189). 1

Commands in the second person plural are expressed in Anglo-Saxon in three ways: (1) by the regular imperative plural in *-æ*, (2) by the regular subjunctive plural in *-en*, and (3) by a form in *-e*. This last form is used only when the subject *ge* immediately follows the verb and is especially common in prohibitions, but in no construction or situation is it employed to the exclusion of the forms in *-æ* and *-en*. It was doubtless originally a subjunctive, but in West Saxon it became indistinguishable from the imperative and indeed it is sometimes co-ordinated with *-æ* in the same sentence (as,— *niæ ge . . . ond setlaæ*, *Cura Past.*, 345, 15; *ne fare ge né ne fyliaæ*, Luc. 17, 23). 2 See Sievers, § 360, Anm.; Cosijn, *Alerts Gr.*, II, §§ 75, 77; Mätzner, *Engl. Gr.*, II, i, p. 138, ed. 1864; Hennicke, *Der Conjunctiv im Alldeutschen*, Göttingen, 1878, pp. 11, 12; Hotz, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Anglo-Saxon and its Further History in Old English*, Zürich, 1882, pp. 13-15; Fleischauer, *Ueber den Gebrauch des Conjunctivs in Alfred's altengl. Uebersetzung von Gregor's Cura Past.*, Erlangen, 1885, pp. 4, 5, 87; Wohlfahrt, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Aelfric's Uebersetzung des Heptateuch und des Buches Hob*, München, 1885, pp. 2, 3; Prollius, *Ueber den syntact. Gebrauch des Conj. in den Cyneguilfschen Dichtungen Elene, Juliana u. Crist*, Marburg, 1888, p. 5; P. T. Kühn, *Die Syntax des Verbums in Aelfries Heiligenleben*, Leipzig-Rudnitz, 1889, p. 10.

In the *Troilus* the form in *-eth* and the form in *-e* are both common, and they are often joined in the same sentence. The form in *-e* is usually felt as an imperative; but when *ye* precedes (as in *ye me love*, 1182) the construction may have retained some of its original subjunctive force (cf. in the singular, *thon quench*, etc.; see §§ 115, V, and note, 116, 117, II). Forms in *-e* (apocopated) or without ending also occur, and some of these may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrifaction of a singular in an idiomatic use. Cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with inf. (*lateth* is altogether unknown to Chaucer).

In the examples that follow (I.—IV.) an accompanying *so* or *ye* is noted.

I. *-eth* (var. CD *-ith, -yth*) 3:


*biddeth*, 40 (*-ith † D*), 43. *douteth*, 683 (*-eth B*).

*ye . . . dwelleth*, 119 (*yt B; disblameth*, 1102 (des-* B).

---

1 *Reves*, 6163 A, is a scribe's error.

2 So also the imperative and the subjunctive in *-e* may be co-ordinated in the same sentence. Thus,— *ne ondridææ eon né ge ne onforhion*, *Ælfric*, Deuter. 31, 6.

3 Before consonants unless the contrary is noted. Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.
§ 118. of Chaucer’s Troilus.

sitteth, 1298 (sitheth B).
quaketh, 1387.¹
herkeneth, 1400² (cf. 52, 2195, 5958, 6034 (bef. how), 8148).
loketh, 2220.
letteth, 2221 (-e[t]h B).
thanketh hym, 2293 (thonk[i]th D).
abydeth, 2800.
so techeth, 2883, 4135.
draweth, 3019 (-et B).
careth, 3512.
wyrcheth, 3785 (werk- B, wurch- C, wurkith D).
liggeth, 3790 (lith C).
liggeth, 3785 (werk- B, grucchith not D).
sitteth, 4032.
iuggeth ye, 4154.
helpeth, 4688.
swowneth, 4688.
so . . . shappeth, 5587; so s.
how, 5596 (-eth ? D).
suffreth, 5866 (-feryth C).
taketh, 5955 (B ?), cf. 3790.
so reweth, 6163 BD (-ith C, rewes A).
thenketh, 6238 (thynk- B, thynk- C, thinketh D).
maketh, 6248.
rewes, 6252.
reweth, 6163 BD (-ith C, reweth C).
thenketh, 6238.
reweth, 6252.
reweth, 6252.
so thenketh, 6238.
thynketh, 6238.
thynketh, 6238.
thynketh, 6238.
thynketh, 6238.
loueth hym, 8205.³

kneleth, 3807.

Comparo also 232, 259 D (bef. him), 538, 687, 1388, 2511, 2737 C, 3790 (bef. hym), 4050, 4990, 6182, 6221 (bef. hede), 6252, 6525, 6668 C (bef. hede), 7250, 7266 (bef. heed), 7281, 7749, 7762, 8200 (bef. hom), 8203, and the examples cited under II.—IV.

Note.—Observe the variations of ending in B 119, B 683, and cf.,—takyt, 232 C; herkenyt, 658 C; trusteht, 2330 B; herknet, 8148 B; herkenet, 2195 B; douteht, 683 B.

II. Syncopated forms ¹:

refuseth, 255 C (-et not AB, gruccith not D).
aryseth, 1306 (-e D, -eth lat B).
castith, 1307 D (cast ABC).
biddeth, 1650 C (byd AB, bid D).
takyth hede, 1666 C (tak A, take BD), cf. 1376 D; -eth, 2801 C (take AD, tak B); -yth, 3051 C (tak AB, -e D).
tellith, 2190 C (tel AB, tel D ?).
bryngyth, 2217 C (bryng A, -e B, bring D).
spekith, 2372 D (spek AB, speke C).
sleth, 2821 C (sle ABD).
comith, 3511 D (-e ABC).
haueth, 3595 (-yth C, haue BD); -yth, 2218 C (haue ABD); havith
here (hic), 3727 D (-e ABC).
seth, 3805 (se B, sey C, y-sey D).

¹ Supply [not] in B.
² In A cut out (yow).
³ Supply [that] in B, [the] in D.
⁴ Old-style figures indicate that a vowel follows.
seith, 4018 C (do AB, doth D).
so shapeth you, 5596 D (-eth how AB, -yth to C).
duelleth, 6111 D (dwell ABC).
troweth, 6209 D.
thynkith, 6249 C (thenk A, thynk B, thinke D); cf. 1436 C, 5979 C, 7518 C.
dryueth, 6277 C (dryf A, dryfe B, dryue D).
fareth now wel, 6349 AD (B?), 7784 C (faré AD), 7994 (farth B, farth C); -eth wel, 7775 AD (farwel C). But cf. 5869.
comaundith, 6495 C (-eth me ABD).
meruelleth, 6525 D (wondreth AB, -derith C).
Note.—It will be observed that syncopated forms are not common in A.
III. Forms in -e:
ye me lere, 1182 (leere B, lere inf. D).
loke ye, 2733 (-eth B, -ith C, -ith [ye] D), 2737 (-ith CD, lakketh † B);
loke that, 2804 (-ith D); loke thanne, 3158, 3718; lookë || alwey, 2194 B (lokë D, look that C, lok [that] A).
avise yow, 2815 (-eth BC, -ith D).
so helpe to, 3577 (-eth B, now helpyth C, now helpith D).
thenk[é] though, 4128 (thynk that B, -eth thou D; C †).
smyte of, 4415.
take not, 6498 (-eth B, -yth C)²; cf. 3704.
hèrkene it, 658 (-en B, herkenyt C, herkenith D).
telle it, 1181 (tele BD).
cache, 1376 (tache C, takith D).
late, 2029 (lat BC, lete D); cf. 4148 (?), 5905.
refuse, 2239 (refuse ye it = je't D); cf., however, 2296.
aquyte hym, 2285 (aquit it C).
ye . . . inhelde, 2886 (in hielde B, inheld D).
rewen, 4766 (-ieth D, rew? B).
so yeue hym, 4772 (jif B, graunth † me D); foryeue, 5948 (-yeue BC, -yeveth me D), 7707 (-yeue BC, -yef D).
receyue, 4983.
so loue here (acc.), 5278.
IV. Forms in -e or without ending:
(a) Before consonants:
help me, 535 (-e D).
yif me, 1378 (jif BC, yeve D); yeue me, 6515 (yeue C, zif C, yef D).
¹ Supply [that] in BD.
² In 6498 A take might easily be construed as infinitive.
vnderstonde for, 1443 (−e B, -d CD)¹; stond not, 3405 (stant B, stond we subj. 1 pl. D).²
tel me, 1586, 1589 (B †); tellè me, 1395 (tel BC), 2363 (tel CD).³
lat youre, 1469 (C †, letè ? D); lat this, 1482 (letè D); so lat me, 1522 (letè D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letè D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letè D); lat sle, 4143 (let C); cf. 117, 1194, 1204, 1399, 1635, 3040, 3598, 3602, 4855, 5586 ‡ C.
awake || ye slepen, 1630.
byd me, 1659 (biddeth C, bid ʒe D).
lokè that, 2194 C (lok [that] A, lookè || alwey D).
ne bryng me, 2217 (−e B, −yth C).
yif me, 2289 (jif BC, −ef D).
lat youre, 1469 (C †, letè ? D); lat this, 1482 (letè D); so lat me, 1522 (letè D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letè D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letè D); lat sle, 4143 (let C);
so lat me, 1522 (letè D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letè D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat
sle, 4143 (let C).
lat now, 3981 (lete D);
lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letè D); lat sle, 4143 (let C);
cf. 117, 1194, 1204, 1399, 1635, 3040, 3598, 3602, 4855, 5586 ‡ C.
laue || ye slepen, 1630.
byd me, 1659 (biddeth C, bid ʒe D).
lokè that, 2194 C (lok [that] A, lookè || alwey D).
ne bryng me, 2217 (−e B, −yth C).
yif me, 2289 (jif BC, −ef D).
lat youre, 1469 (C †, letè ? D); lat this, 1482 (letè D); so lat me, 1522 (letè D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letè D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letè D); lat sle, 4143 (let C);
so lat me, 1522 (letè D); lat be, 2229 (let C, letè D), 3405 (let CD)⁴; lat
sle, 4143 (let C).
lat now, 3981 (lete D);
lat preue, 3890 (let CD); lat now, 3981 (letè D); lat sle, 4143 (let C);
cf. 117, 1194, 1204, 1399, 1635, 3040, 3598, 3602, 4855, 5586 ‡ C.
Observations on the Language

284

tak hede, 1666 (-e BD, -yth C); tak it, 1337 (-e CD).
ber, 2226 (-e CD).
cast, 2241 (-e C, -e [it] B), cf. 1700.
se how, 3804 1, 6594 ABD.
sey, 3948 (sei C, seie D).
lat, 4346 (let C); cf. 5906, 5963, 5964, 6263, 6858, 6860; lat hem, 4164 (let D).

Further examples of the imperative plural in -e or without an ending may be seen in,—

But lat be this and telle me how ye fare
Do way youre barbe and shewe youre face bare
Do way youre look ryse vp and late vs daunce
And lat vs don to may som observaunce, 1194-7 (tel ... swow † ... ryse ... late ... lat B; tel ... schew ... lat ... lat C, let ...
shew ... risë vp ... let ... late D).

Lat be [to me] 2 youre frendly 3 maner speche
And sey to me, etc., 1333-4 (lat ... say B, let ... sey CD).

... em I preye

Swych answere as yow lyst yow self purueye, 2244-5 (D †).

Lat be youre nice shame and youre felye
And spek with hym in esyng of his herte
Lat nicete not do yow bothe smerte, 2371-3 (let ... speke ... let C, let ... spekith ... letë D).

For lone of god make of this thyng an ende
Or sle vs bothe, 2960-1 (mak ... slo C; D †).

Loke al be wel and do now as yow lyste, 3430 (look ... [and] do B, loke ... y do ind. D).

Lat Troye an Troian fro youre herte pace
Dryf out that bittre hope and make good chere
And clepe ayen the beaute of youre face, 7275-7 (late ... dryue ... make ... clepe B; let ... dryue ... make ... clepe D).

The freedom with which imperatives in -eth are co-ordinated with these truncated forms is shown by the following passages,—

remembre yow ... and thenketh, 24-26 A (-breth ... thenketh B, remembre ... thynke D †).

... arysteth and lat vs daunce
And cast youre wydves habit to myschaunce, 1306-7 (ariseth lat ... cast B, arise and letë ... castith D).

Sey on lat me not yn this fere dwelle
So wol I don now herkeneth I shal yow (om. BCD) telle, 1399-1400 (let ... herkenyth C, let ... herkenith D).

Aviseth you on it whan ye han space
And of som goodly answerë yow purchace, 2209-10 (avise 3ow ... purchase C, avisith ... purchace D) ; cf. 2815.

1 Supply [can] in B.
2 to me om. in A, but found in BCD.
3 frende B, frendly C, frend[e] D. Read fremde.
Nay nece quod Pandare sey not so
Yet at the leste thanketh hym I preye
Of his good wil and doth hym not to deye
Now for the lour of me my nece dere
Refuseth not at this tymé my preyer, 2292-6 (thonketh B, thankith ... refus Æ it C, thonk[ë] ... refusith D).

Now stynte that ye . . .
... But hasteth yow to don hym ioye hane
For trusteth wel to longe don hardnesse, etc., 2327-9-30 (trusteht B, hastyth ... trosteth C, stynt ... hastith ... trustith D).

Rys takeþ with yow yowre nece Antigone

The lass pres the bet come forth with me
And lokith that ye thonkë humbely
Hem alle thre and whan ye may goodly
Youre tymé y-so taketh of hem youre lene, 2801-3-4-5-6 (ris tak ... com ... lokith ... taketh B, rys taketh ... come ... lokith ... taketh C, rys taketh ... com ... lokith ... taketh D).

Stynteth right here and softly yow pleye, 2814 (stynteth ... om. † B, styntith ... 3e pleye C, styntith ... soft[e]ly zow play D) (: I preye ind.).

Com of therfore and bryngeth hym to hele, 2835 (bryngeth B, come ... bring 3e hym D).

Now beth al hol no lengerë ye ne pleyne, 3010 (peyne C, no lenger that 3e pleyn D) (: feyne inf., feyn D).

And eseth there youre hertes right y-nough
And lat se which, etc., 3039-40 (ese † ... lat C, esith ... let D).

Tak nece myn youre leue at alle thre
And late hem speke and cometh forth with me, 3051-2 (lat B, takyth ... comyth C, taketh ... let ... comith D).

And yf ye lyggen wel to nyght come ofte
And careth not what weder is on lofte, 3511-12 (carith C, comith ... carith D).

Ne wondreth not ne haugeth of it no fere

Lat no wight ryseen, 3595-8 (-dëreth ... hane ... lat B, -dëryth ... hauyth ... let hem C, -drith ... have ... let no (!) D).

Hauë here and bereth hym this blewe rynge

And sey my, etc., 3727-30 (hane ... berë ... sey C, havith ... berith ... sey [my] D).

For trusteth wel ... So (To † A) speke youre self, 3748-51 (spek B, trostyth ... speketh C, trustith ... speketh D).

... se how this lord kan knele
Now for youre trouthe seth this gentil man

And seyde kneleth now, 3804-5-7 (se ... so ... kneleth B, how wel ... sey 3one ... kneleth C, how wel ... y sey (=y-se ?) ... kneleth D).

And euerë more on this nyght yow recorder
And beth wel war ...

For yewe it me, etc., 4021-2-5 (ffor-zif C, 3e Æ recorder D) (: myserieorde n.).
Beth glad forthis and lyne in sykernesse, 4355 (leuyth C, be . . . lyueth D).
And shappeth yow his sorwe for to a-bregge
And nought encresse leue nece swete
Buth rather to hym [cause] of flat than egge
And with som wysdom ye his sorwes bete, 5587-90 (shapeth . . . beth . . .
beete B, schapyth . . . be . . . bete C, shapeth . . . beth . . . bete D).

So shappeth how distourbe this goynge
And lat sen now, etc., 5596-9 (shapeth B, schapyth to . . . let C, shapeth you . . . lett D).

1 And thynk right thus, 5978-9 (thynk B, thynkith C, thenkë D).2
So reves on myn aspre peynes smerte
And doth somwhat . .
And lat vs stele away by-twext vs tweye
And thenk that folye is, etc., 6163-6 (reweth . . . thynke B, rewith . .
thyng C, reweth . . . lete . . . thinkë D).

And forthis sle with reson al this hete
Thys maketh vertue of necessite
By pacient and thenk that lord is he, 6245-8-9 (by paciens . . . thynke B, this makythe . . . beth pacient . . . thynkith C, be pacient . .
thinkë D).

And thynketh wel . .
Dryf out the fantasies yow with-inne
And trusteth me and leueth ek yourë sorwe
Or her my trouthe I wol not lyne til morwe, 6273-7-8-9 (thynketh . .
dryte . . . here C, thynkyth . . . dryueth . . . trostythe . . . leuyth . .
here D, me thinketh + ind. . . . dryne D).

Now hold yowre day and doth me not to deye, 6447 (do B, help † this day and
do C, holdeþ . . . letë † D).
Now writeth swete and lat me thus not pleyne, 7762 (-yth . . . let C,
-eth . . . letë D).

§ 119. The Infinitive ends in the Troilus in -en, -en, -e, -e (cf. Child, § 60; ten Brink, § 190). In to seyne, to sene, to done, the -ne of the A.S. gerund or dative-infinitive is preserved.

Variants in -yn, -in are found; -yn is particularly common in C.

The spelling -ene in for to trosstene, 690 C, to chaunget . .
and . . . zeuene, 4721-2 B, is rather a scribë's eccentricity than a
reminiscence of the gerundial ending.

Note.—The prefix y- (very common with the p. p., see §§ 121-2 passim) is
occasionally found with the infinitive: y-se, see § 119, XII.; y-the, 1756
f (the ACD); i-the, 5101 f B (the A, le ë C, thee D) (cf. § 119, XI.); y-herë, 5975 f (ytheere B, [ytheere C, here D). But in 1349, 5500 (y-se), the -e of
the preceding word may have been carried over, and in 1755, 5101, we
may choose between neuer the and neuer y-the.

1 Here begins a new stanza, but the construction continues. 2 D omits And.
The examples are arranged as follows,—I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before h; V. syncope, -en; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -e (elided) before vowels; IX. -e (elided) before h; X. apocope of -e; XI. hiatus; XII. contracted forms,—fle, sle, the, vre; XIII. gerundial infinitives,—to seyne, to sene, to done (with the other infinitive forms of these three verbs).

I. -en before consonants (of all kinds, except h):

seken bote, 763 (sycen C, seche D).
suffren loues, 97 (soueren B, soffere (?) C, suffre D).
helen the, 2400 (-e CD).

II. -en in rhyme:
tellen, 1 (: tellen pret. ind. 3 pl.).
wayten, 190 (-e D) : beyten inf., 192 (-yn C, -e D, baten B).

Note.—The spelling -yn is rare in A: see she may ledyn Paris, 2534 (-en B, -e C).


1 In D supply [For].
Observations on the Language [§ 119.

cryen, 1731 : aspien inf., 1734 (-yen BCD) (: eyen n. pl.). Cf. 3977, etc., below.
dryen pati, 1951 (: eyen n. pl. : crien 3 pl.).
waryen, 2704 (-ye C, -ien D) : varyen inf., 2706 (-ie C, tarien † D) :
taryen inf., 2707 (-ien D, l. om. C).
excusen, 3867 (-yn C, -e D) (: vsen ind. 3 pl., -yn CD).
espyen, 3977 (aspien BD) (: eyen n. pl., igen D) ; espyen, 7177 (asspyen C) (: syen viderunt, seyen C : eyen n. pl., yen BD). Cf. 1731, above, 4296, below.
flowen, 4600 (-yn CE, flewen B) (: growen ind. 3 pl., -yn C, grevyn † D).
wryten, 8128 f (-e BD) : endite inf., 8130.

Note.—The commoner infinitive ending in rhyme is -e (see VII., below). The ending -en is often used to give variety to stanzas which also contain the infinitive in -e at the end of one or more verses. Thus the rhymes in 5293 ff. are,—quyken inf., asente 1 sg., pryken inf., tormente inf., entente, sholde, wolde (cf. also 1 ff., 190 ff., 295 ff., 561 ff., 1408 ff., 1730 ff., 3093 ff., 4082 ff., 4600 ff., 5293 ff.).

III. -en before vowels:

drawen, 1347 (-e? C, [i?] D).
lyuen, 1635 (-e D, leuin C).
taryen (dissyl.), 2104 (-ye C).
quenchen, 3900 (-in C, -yn D †).
yndern, 5053 (-yn C, -e D).
asken, 5334 (axen BC, askè † hem D).
distorben, 5765 (-in C, -yn D).
bryngen, 5937 (-yn C, [-e] † D).
causen, 5971 (-yn C, -e D).
congeyen, 6842 (chngè † vs C, cunueien † D).
bifallen, 7325 (-e D, -yn that C).
Cf. also 194, 620, 836, 1029, 1595, 2242, 2476, 2724, 5191, 5768, 7444, etc., etc.

Note.—The ending -yn is rare in A: see werkyn in, 4899 (-en B, wirkē D).

IV. -en before h:
fynden here (hīc), 399 (-e BC, -yn D)
byholden here (eam), 1350 (-yn D, -heldyn C).
dissimulen he, 3276 (-yn CD).
esen hem, 4632 (-yn D).
distorben hym, 6065 (-e CD).
beren hym, 6066 (-yn C, [-ē] D).
rennen hom, 6848 (-ē CD).
Cf. also 370, 388, 1238, 2377, 2926, 4609, 5100, 6052, 6551, 7677, 8069, etc.

V. Syncope,— -en.

Note.—In most of the cases cited under A, and in some of those under B and C, the caesura falls immediately after the infinitive.

A. Before vowels:
spekēn, 387 (-e BD, spek C).
seruēn, 817 (-e BD, -yn C †) cf. 2986.
hereūn, 1013 (-e BD, -yn C).
estēn, 1744 (-e B, -yn C, cast D).
louēn, 1843 (-yn C, -e BD).\(^1\)
tellēn, 2578 (-e BC, tel D).
rysēn, 3598 (-e B, -yn † C, arise † D).
lokēn, 3822 (-e CD, -e vp[on] B).
to amendēn, 6501 (-e D, tamende B, to amendyn C).
syngēn, 7000 (-e BC, syng D).\(^2\)
stelēn, 7115 (-e B, -ē D; C †).\(^3\)
laughēn, 7144 (-e B, laugh D, laughē ne? C).
holdēn, 7554 (-e BD, -ē al C).
trowēn, 7626 (-e BC, truste † D).

B. Before h:
plesēn hym, 1562 (-e CD).
helēn hym, 4794 (-e BC, help † D); cf. 7412.
clawēn hym, 5390 (-e CD, clawēn B).
preyēn here (eam), 6678 (prey CD).\(^4\)

\(^1\) Supply [\textit{[f]}] in D. \(^2\) Dele (to) in A. In C read gan for may. \(^3\) C reads ostel for ost stele. \(^4\) Dele (to) in A.
To rauysshen here syn thow hast not ben there, 5305 (-asche C, -issh D); cf. the same phrase in 5299, and see 7258 BC.

lyuen haue (1 sg.), 7305 (lyue BD; C f).


C. Before consonants:

hopen the, 865 AB (-e D, -ē ratherē C).

louen sholde, 3639 (-en || oon ? B, -yn || on C, shold love || on D).

trowen that, 7661 A (B †, -ē sche C, -e that D).

Cf. also 1453 AC, 1563 C, 2606 C, 2950 C, 3817 D, 5520 C, 6174 B, 6588 B, 7700 C.

VI. -ē before consonants (of all kinds except h):

mûlteplié that, 486.

hide fro, 587 (-en B, -yn C).

loke wyde, 629 (-en B).

seme lesse, 703.

loue such, 798.

fare wel, 1177 (-en B).

syngre clere, 1910 (-en B, -in C, -yn D).

thanke but, 1933 (-en B, -[e] D).

slepe neuere, 2183.1

iaperaste, 2249 (C †).

desire freshly, 2985 (-en B, -yn CD).2

make resistence, 3832 (-en B, -in C).

deye mot, 4083 (-en B, dien D).

fele noon, 5128.

handle for, 5434 (-dle(e) B, -delyn C, -dH D).

come by, 5628 (-en BD).

fynde bote, 5921.

oblige me, 6076.

stele pruyel, 6263 (-yn C).

clayme kyngdom, 7850 (-en B, -yn C).

1 Supply [not] in D.

2 Dele (to) in C.
Cf. also 734, 747, 1339, 1773, 2204, 3356, 4337, 4378, 5574, 6369, 8131, etc., etc.

VII. -e in rhyme:
endite, 6 (: write ind. 1 sg.).
pleyne, 11 (: peyne n. : to seyne).
sterue, 17 (: serue ind. 1 sg.).
auayle, 20 (: trauayle n.).
falle, 290 (: with-alle).
wyte (= blame), 825 (: lyte); cf. 1470 f, 7698 f.
neuene, 876 (nemene C) (: yn heuene).
keuere, 910 (: feuere).
comaunde, 1050 (: recomaunde subj. 2 sg.).
wade, 1235 (: wordes glade).
salùwe, 2101 (salue BC, -ewe D) (: eschuwe inv. sg., -ue B, -ewe CD).
here, 2199 (: yfere adv.).
vnfettre, 2301 (onfetere C) (: lettre : bettre adv.).
bygynne, 2459 (be- CD) (: wynne inf. : with-inne).
denye, 2574 (-y CD) (: curtasye : companye).
declare, 2765 (: Pandare).
forbede, 3309 (: hede heed n. : nede n.).
pace, 3312 (pase C, passe D) (: grace).
wende, 3458 (wynde C) (: ende n.).
delyuere, 3854 (-er D, del[y]uere B) (: wyuere n. : slyuere n.).
adawe, 3962 ([a]- B, to da we C) (: drawe inf.).
fonde, 3997 (: on honde).
fyssh, 4004 (: rysche n.).
syke, 4014 (sike C, sijke D) (: syke adj. pl.).
hone, 4269 (: Ioue).
melte, 4287 (mette † B) (: felte ind. 3 sg.).
selle, 4303 (: helle : dwelle inf.).
rewere, 4612 (: trewe adj. pl.).
trete, 4720 (: grete adj. pl. : strete).
werne, 4773 (: yerne adv.).
lythe, 5416 (: swythe adv. : a thousand sithe).
to abregge, 5587 (tabrigge B) (: egge n.); cf. 3137 f.
leue (credere), 5629 (: preue ind. 3 pl.).
sorwe, 5971 (: morwe).
glose, 6072 (: suppose ind. 1 sg.).
fere, 6145 (: there).
gnawe, 6399 (: sawe n.).
Observations on the Language

glaze, 6832 (-se CD) (: maze n.);
borwe, 7089 (: sorwe n.: morwe);
wreke, 7323 (: speke ind. pres. 2 pl.);
loue, 7365 (: aboue);
seche, 7495 (: bysche ind. 1 sg.: speche n.);
honge, 7562 (: stronge adj. pl.: lange adv.);
vnbōdye, 7913 (on C, vnbodie D) (: parōdye n.).
ryue, 7923 (: of lyue).
restore, 8036 (: more).
laste, 8187 (: faste adv.: caste inf.). Etc., etc., etc.

Note.—For forms without -e in rhyme, see below, X., note 2.

VIII. -e (elided) before vowels (variants not registered).

Cf. 49 (lyue), 123 (enquere), 194 (smyle), 224 (endure), 347 (deme),
392 (loue), 616 (sterue), 699 (walwe and wepe), 806 (wepe and crie),
1203 (bydde and rede), 1204 (daunce), 1256 (mene), 1456 (deme),
1868 (wepe and sitte), 2256 (dyne), 2284 (humme), 2406 (glade),
2840 (dye), 4091 (stroke), 4541 (dispise), 4956 (suffre), 4962 (ende),
5426 (lyue), 5844 (dresse), 7154 (wowe), 7577 (crepe), 7820 (smyle),
etc., etc.

Note.—The elided -e of the infinitive is sometimes omitted in writing.
Thus, in A see 204 (cast), 560 (bryng), 818 (thenk), 1493 (brest), 1857 (put),
2215 (chaung), 2554 (bryng), 2734 (bryng), 4899 (brest), 6588 (com), 6794
(pley), 6818 (glad), 6948 (mak). See also 33 B, 192 BC, 275 D, 370 D,
387 C, 460 B, 476 D, 522 B, 714 D, 883 D, 1040 BD, 1057 D, 1079 D,
1184 B, 1203 D, 1347 D, 1427 B, 1540 B, 1732 D, 1744 D, 1772 D, 1797
BD, 1812 B, 1817 B, 1979 D, 2040 D, 2156 D, 2289 BD, etc., etc.

IX. -e (elided) before h:

bygone he, 6610 (by-gynne B, be-gynne C, begynt † for D); mete
he, 6612 (dreme D; mette he pret. ind. † C).
let his, 192 (let C); kepe his, 627; loue his, 817 (C †); saue his,
1660. Cf. 1468 (stynte), 2121 (here), 2167 (telle), 3328 (ese), 3957
(wete), 5726 (cause), 6624 (here), 7047 (make).
dresse hym, 1156 (-yn D); make h., 1407 (mak B; inv. † D); lyke
h., 1760; graunte h., 1789 (-t B); drawe h., 2271 (-w D); bidde
h., 3309 (bid BCD); telle h., 4488, 7221. Cf. 1460 (gouerne),
2379 (loue), 2380 (guerdon), 3428 (auyse), 3743 (feffe), 3759
(fecoche), 3913 (streyne), 4396 (make), 6065 (plukke), etc.
rerreche here (gen. sg.), 2741. Cf. 289 (lyke), 1150 (make), 2743 (take).
loue here (acc. sg.), 4494 (-yn C). Cf. 2300 (auyse), 7460 (excuse),
7462 (excuse), 7489 (make), 8096 (hate).
lese here (gen. pl.), 6744; vp frete here, 7833. Cf. 151 (honoûre), 907
(mucche).
come here (adv.), 1462, 5582 (com BD, -yn C); dwelle here, 3476 (-yn C, dweH D).

lyue hane (1 sg.), 7305 BD (lyuen A). But,—comé hath, 6717 (-en B, -é H C, -e ayen † D).

constreue how, 2875 (strie BD); caste how, 6752 (-t BC, [us] caste D); trowe how, 7265 (-w B). But,—rehercé how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E).

take hede, 7120 (tak B). But, take hede, 8069 D (-en AB).

com horn, 4871 (-e in C).


come hastely, 5980 (-[e] B, -yn C).

Note.—For hiatus before h, see XI., below.

X. Apocope of -e (before consonants).
There are several genuine instances of apocope. Old-style figures indicate that a caesura follows the infinitive ending, so that the -e may be pronounced if one cares to admit the “extra syllable before a pause.”

loué for, 16 (prob. noun); 1. be, 46 (prob. noun) (D is different); 1. swych, 369; 1. yow, 537 (D †); 1. til, 686; 1. the, 2043. But,—loué, 798, 2854.

hope the, 865 D (hopen AB, hopé rathere C).

lat Criseyde, 5119 (lete C, let D).

telle yow, 2198 AB (telle CD).

speke for, 2511 ABG (of this CD). (No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.)

beré the, 2583.

come soupen, 3402 (cum C); -e but, 5661; c. therfore, 5662; c. sholde, 5726; c. for, 6023 (com C); c. that, 7021; c. ye, 7791; com speke, 5316 (-e CD). Cf. 5717 (!).
maké desseuerance, 4266 (C †); maké the, 7515 CD (-en peple ABG) (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation).

lyuë to, 4759; 1. til, 6279 (lesu to C; D †).

putte that, 6174 (-en B, put D).

wenë that, 5730, 6775 AB (seyn C, sey D).

holdë forth, 6858 A (-en B, -e ouë CD).

1 No note in Mr. Austin’s collation. G reads: Thanne wolde I hopen rather for to spede.

2 For which (whiche G) I am come (I come BGCp., come I C, come y D) to (om. B Cp.) telle yow newe (new B, om. CDG) tidynges. No variants are noted for John’s MS.

3 In C it is possible to read cum[e] suppe; in D, comé soupe; but the line would then be intolerably harsh.

4 CD and John’s give a 9-syl. line: Lat vs holde ouë purpos fermely (frendely † C). AB read forth after holde. Cp. also has forth, but reads holden. G has: Lette vs holde forthe purpos fermely.
trowe that, 7661 D (\text{-en A, \text{-e sche C;} B \dagger}).
prey for, 48 (pray D); prey yow, 2521 (\text{-e? B, \text{-e C, pray as D, prey as G}).}^{1}
seye, see XII., below.

Note 1.—For wode, dorrę, see § 123; for hauę, see § 124. In many cases the apocope disappears on comparison of MSS. Thus,—
wend to, 3060 D (?).
kepę wele, 3136 D.
yevę no, 3607 D.
tornę to, 4781 B (?) (turnę tył C ?).

Note 2.—In 3817 the readings of ABCEGCp. John’s are: Now doth (do G) hym sitte (syttyng D, sitten John’s) now (om. BCCp. John’s) gode (good BD) nece dere. The weight of MS. authority seems to be in favour of omitting the second now and reading sittę.—In 1226 B, we may perhaps read wonderen more for wonder more (wondryn C, wondryn D, iapę \text{f A}); cf. 1453 D, 5309 C (wondere; wondren AB, mervaile D). In 6118 the question is really between at-renne but not at-rede and at-renne and not at-rede; cf. C.T. 2451 T.

Note 3.—Occasionally -e in the infinitive is not written at the end of the line, but the rhyme always indicates that it should be restored. Instances are rare in A and B, but in C and D they abound. For A, see 462 (rew), 4260 (throw), 4975 (lyght); for B, see 313 (hold), 392 (repent), 1388 (cast), 2956 (rew), 4017 (trespäs), 4402 (wak), 6994 (shew), 8021 (bihold); for C, see 73, 193, 389, 492, 750, 908, 1420, 1441, 1524, 1775, 1958, 1986, 2078, 2252, 2529, 2556, 2558, 2574, 2624, 2639, 2715, 2757-8, 2795, 2841-2, 2919, 2997, 3100, 3200, 3284, 3500, 3681, 3758, 3924, 4069, 4339, 4418, 4447, 4500, 4530, 4619, 5029, 5154, 5459-60, 5519, 5543-4, 5769, 5833, 5850, 5858-9, 5952, 6043, 6076, 6188, 6243, 6274, 6280, 6446-7, 6720, 6752-3, 6822, 6867, 6878, 6914, 6932, 6984, 6997, 7029, 7349, 7574, 7590, 7593, 7595, 7667, 7771, 7839, 7931, 7983. In 4973 f, C needs correction. For D, see 256, 665, 2599, 2639, 3043, 3699, 4276, 4536, 5272, 8133, and passim.

1 No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.  
2 I. e. when not another inf.
XI. Hiatus:

deyë in, 674 (dyen B, deyen CD).
demë other, 799 (-en B, -yn CD).¹
folwë if, 1134 (-en B, -yn C).
stoppë euery, 1889 (-en B).
fyndë in, 4140 (-en B); fyndë at, 6866 (-en B); fynd[ë]|| out, 7453
(-en B, -ë CD).
endurë al, 4333 (-en B, -yn C).²
bryngë vs, 5354 (-yn C); bryngë it, 7657 (-en B, -yn C).
compleyne in, 7086 (B †).
write yf, 8140 (-ë yif D).
Cf. also 360, 979, 1184, 1350, 2120, 2793, 2898, 2923, 3079, 3154,
3304, 3742, 3946, 4166, 4238, 4504, 5314, 5420, 6047, 7049, 7122,³
7178, 7503, 7629.

Note.—In all the cases cited above A has -ë (with hiatus), but in all of them
the hiatus may be removed by reading -en, except in 360, 1184, 5314,
5420; in these four lines a word has dropped out of A, the restoration
of which reduces the -e to -ë (elided).⁵ None of the four MSS. is free from
hiatus in the infinitive form, but it is rarest in B.⁶ Other examples (not
in A) may be seen in the variants under III. (above); cf. also 796 D, 1843
D, 2886 D, 3317 D, 3822 B, 4524 D, 4835 C, 6233 D, 7538 CD, 7554 C,
etc.

hidë his, 381 (-en B, -yn C, -ë his† D).⁷
endurë he, 2730 (-en BC, -ë he D).
suffë hym, 2996 B (-en A, sufferyn C, suffryn D).⁸
likë here (dat.), 3455 (-en B, -yn C; D †).
dwellë here (hie), 3483 (-yn D); cf. dwellen here, 3489 (-en D, -ë C).
Cf. also 292 C, 481 C, 504 C, 542 D, 1885 C, 4038 D, 5149 D, 5334
D, 6052 D, 6065 C, 6136 D, 6534 D, 6987 C, 7121 C, 7201 D,
7480 D, 7816 D.
tellë how, 2091 (-en B, -ë her D); cf. 7869 D.
rehercë how, 4239 (-en B, -yn C, -on E). But,—constreue how, 2875
A (-strëe BD); caste how, 6752 (-ë BC, [us] caste D); trowe how,
7265 (-w B).
comë hath, 6717 (-en B, -ë? C, -ë ayen † D).
takë hede, 8069 D (-en AB). But,—take hede, 7120 (tak B).
tellë half, 3186 (-en B, -yn C, -ë? D).

¹ In C read other for ougt.
² Dele (the) in D.
³ Supply [Ne] in A (?).
⁴ Furnivall prints speke[n] in A.
⁵ In 5420, it is possible to explain the hiatus in A on the ground of the causura
(tyuë|| yf), but BCDECP. John's have if (3if, yif) that, which makes the verse regular.
⁶ In the majority of the lines just cited Cp. has the form in -en.
⁷ 9-syl., except in D.
⁸ Dele (to) before serue in C.
bryngē hom, 4800 B ([-e] hem A, -yn hem C, [-e] home D); com hom, 4871 (e in C).

XII. *Fle, sle, the, wre:*

fle, (i.) 747 f (flee B, sle † D) (: secre : be sit), 1795 f (flee B) (: he), 3386 f (: be inf. : tre), 3670 f (: he : be inf.), 4105 (flen C, flie monosyl. D), 5422 † D (sleen A, slen B, sle C). (ii.) 4648 (before caesura).—flen, 1279 f (fleen B, flen(e) D) (: ben p. p. : ben sbst. pl.).

sle, (i.) 747 † f D (fle AC, flee B), 4143 (sla B), 7834 (slee D), 8049 (slee D). (ii.) 6108 (sla B, sle 3if C, sle yif D), 7635 † C.—slen, sleen, (i.) 1750 (slan(e) B, sle CD), 5422 (slen B, sle C, fle † D), 5929 (sle D), 6409 (sle CD). (ii.) 2443 (sle D), 3850 (sle D); slen hym, 815 (sleen B, sle D), 823 (sle D)¹; slen how, 5848 (slan(e) B, sle D).

the, 341 f (: be sit : ye), 1755 f (ythe B) (: be inf. : parde), 5101 f (ithe B, be † C, thee D) (: to be : me), 7523 f (: me : se inf.).

wre; Hymself to wre at hem he(r) gan to smyle, 329 (wrie monosyl. B, wrythe † C, were † D); byhoueth . . . vnwre his wounde, 858 (onwrye monosyl. C, vnwry D).

XIII. *Seyn, to seyne ; sen, to sene ; don, to done.*

The Anglo-Saxon Gerundial (or Dative) Infinitive is preserved in the *Troilus* in to seyne, to sene, and to done. The only sure case of final -e pronounced in the interior of the verse is in 7487 (to done, see below).

*to seyne, 12 f, 591 f,² 712 f,³ 1605 f, 1706 f, 2071 f, 2211 f, 2441 f, 2644 f, 3272 f, 3390 f, 3835 f, 3959 f, 3998 f, 4372 f (seite D), 5165 f (seyn C), 7398 f (seyn C), 7712 f. All these are cases of soth for to seyne and similar phrases. In 7531 f, soth to seyne (: I durste leyne = wager) is the reading of C, soth(e) to seyne (: durste I leyne) that of D; G has soth(e) to saye (: durste I lay); AB read dar I seye (: dorste I leye, laye); Mr. Austin's collation has no note on these two lines. In 3845 f, what al this is to seyn (seyne BC), to seyne is the correct reading, as is shown by the rhymes, compleyne (ind. 1 sg.) and peyne (noun).* ¹ In C read hym[sel].

Rhyme words.—peyne n. (12, 591, 712, 1605, 2071, 2211, 2441, 3835, 3959, 4372, 5165, 7398), cheyne n. (1706), Eleyne (2644), twayne (1706, 3390, 3959, 7712), pleyne inf. (12, 1605, 2441), 1 pl. ind. (712), feyne inf. (2644, 3998), restreyne inf. (3272), reyne inf. (3390), destroyne inf. (4372), compleyne inf. (7712).

But seyn, seye, seye, and sey, are found in the gerundial construction with to, as well as seyne.

² Supply [soth] in D. ³ Old-style figures indicate that D has seyn.
seyn, (i) soth to seyn, 1769 (say C, seyne[9]) D ǂ; platly for to seyn, 3628 f (seyne C) (: seyn n. : ceretyn adv.); vsen . . . to seyn, 3866 2; that (this) is to seyn, 4020 (say C, seie D), 6037 (seyne C), 7261 (seyne C); now is this abusion to seyn, 5722 f (seyne B) (: ceretyn adv.); the sothe for to seyn, 7375 f (seyne BD) (: seyn AD, ayein B, azen C : fayn pred. adj. sg. AC, fayne BD); what al this is to seyn, 3845 f (seyne BC), should be seyne, as the rhymes (compleyne pres. 1 sg., peyne n.) show. (ii) this is to seyn, 3280; soth to seyn he, 4635.

seye, (i) ther is no more to seye, 574 f 2; soth (for) to seye, 2601 f, 3197 f; sothly for to seye, 5459 f (sey C, certeinly to sey D); shortly al the sothe for to seye, 5615 f (seyne ǂ B); shortly for to seye, 7372 f (seyne ǂ B, seyen C); what is this to seye, 2916 f (saye C); shame it is to seye, 3091 f; I it forbar to seye, 3207 f; were impossible . . . to seye, 4153 f (say E); which chargeth nought to seye, 4418 f (sey C, seie D); no litel thyng of for to seye, 4530 f (sey C); he nyst[ę] what to seye, 5018 f; sayd(e) that was to seye, 5833 f (sey C); haue I for to seye, 7771 f (sey C); I began yow for to seye, 8163 f.

Rhyme words.—in the weye (3091), awye (5018), dreye adj. pl. (3197), dreye adj. pl. (hardly adv.) (5833), tweye (2916, 4153), deye inf. (574, 5459, 5615, 7771, 8163), pleye inf. (2601, 3091, 3197, 4153), leye inf. (2916), tane sg. (2601), bywreye inf. (3207), obeye inf. (4530), preye inf. (5833, 7372).

seye, that is to seye || for, 3095 (seyne C, sey D); that is to seye || that, 3126 (seyn B, seinę C, se ? D).

sey, to sey a soth, 2222 (seyne B, seyn C ǂ).

seyn, seyen, seye, seye, sey, are also used in infinitive constructions without to. Thus,—

seyn,3 (i.) 514, 4 1839 (sey C), 2539 (sey B), 52825 (seyne B), 3707 (sey ? D), 3809, 4464 (seyne B, seie D), 4829 (seyde ǂ B), 5520 (seyne B, sendyn ǂ C) 6, 5699 (seyne B), 5862, 5982 f (seyne BD) (: aye AD, ayein B, ageyn C : we ben so fayn AC, fayne BD), 6050 (C ǂ), 6141, 6775 C, 6850 f (: aye AD, ayein B, azen C : fayn adj. sg. AC, feyn B, fayne D), 7239 (sen C), 7642, 7659 f (seyn C) (: ayein, ayein, azen, ageyn). (ii.) 396 (sayn A, say C), 398 (sayn C), 512, 804 (say C), 1011, 2532 (seyne D), 5515 (seyne B), 1 In 1769, 3280, 4020, 4635, 6037, 7261, seyn comes before the caesura.
2 Old-style figures indicate that D has sey or say.
3 In all cases cited except 512, 1839(?), 2539, 4829(?), 5520, 6626(?) seyn comes before the caesura (when not in rhyme).
4 Old-style figures indicate that D has sey or say.
5 Dele (That he) in B.
6 Supply [hertc] in A.
Observations on the Language [§ 119.]

6071 (C †), 6414 (say C), 7428¹, 8905; seyn he, 3923 (seie D), 7157.

seyen sholde, 6989 A (seynē B, saye[ë]n C, om. † D).

seye, (i.) 492 f (saye C), 672 f, 924 f, 1044 f, 1258 f, 1396 f, 1406 f, 1546 f, 2078 f (saye C, y sey dico † D), 2219 f, 2291 f, 2741 f, 2842 f (saye C), 2922 f, 2953 f, 2963 f (seye pres. subj. 1 sg. BC, sey pres. subj. 1 sg. D), 3398 f, 3503 f, 3666 f (seyen B)², 3892 f (seye B), 4033 f (seite D), 4450 f (saye B, say C, seye D), 4501 f (saye C), 4818 f, 4911 f, 5033 f (seye D), 5187 f, 5431 f, 5543 f (saye C), 5769 f (saye C), 5872 f (seye C), 5952 f (saye C), 6043 f (saye C), 6164 f, 6446 f (saye C), 6458 f, 6934 f (saye C), 7349 f (saye C), 7531 f (to seyne CD),³ 7669 f (sey C), 8092 f, 8106 f, 8208 f. (ii.) seye,⁴ 2084 (seye B, seyn C),⁵ 6233 (seyen C). [In all these instances D has sey, unless the contrary is noted.]

Rhyne words.—weye n. (492, 4818, 5952, 6458), aweise (6458), awey (aweye) (5543 : to dey C), tweye (492, 1258, 2741, 3666, 4033, 4818, 4911, 5033, 5769, 6043, 6164, 6728, 8092), pleye inf. (672, 1546, 3398, 6934, 7349), subj. 2 sg. (5872), deye inf. (924, 1258, 1406, 2291, 2963, 3892, 4911, 5431, 6446, 7531), subj. 1 sg. (2953, 4550), subj. 3 sg. (5187), leye inf. 1 sg. (1044), tewe sg. (2078), inf. (3503, 4450, 4501, 7531, 7669, 8208), pleye inf. 1 sg. (1396, 2219, 2991, 5033, 6164, 6934, 8106), inf. (2741, 2842, 2922, 2963), pres. ind. 8 pl. (6043), byye inf. (8208).

seye⁶ 451 (saye C), 1337 (say B, seyn C), 3120 (seyn BC), 4108 (seyn BC, seie D), 4139 (seyen CE), 4777 (seyen C), 5493 (sey D). [D has sey, unless the contrary is noted.]

sey, (i.) sey yis (l. this with C †), 4222 (seyen BC)⁷; sey yow, 7740. (ii.) 1316 (seye B, seyn C); sey hym, 195 (seye B, seye † C).

seyne in the form seyne occurs in 6626 without to,—sholde . . . seine it was folye (sey CD)—cf. also variants under some of the forms above registered,—but it will be observed that the full gerundial form is found only in rhyne.

to sene,—fairest (er) was to sene, 454 f (: Polixe-ne); fairest was to sene, 5817 f (: grene adj. pl.); it ioye was to sene, 4070 f (to seene B) (: tene n.).

But to sen and to se also occur: to se, indeed, is by far the commonest form.

to sen, to seen, (i.) so lyk a man of armes . . . He was to sen, 1717

¹ Dele (me) in D. ² In B, rhymes with pleye and twoyene.
³ In CD the rhyme is leyne inf. (= wager); in AB the rhyme is leye (laye), which is clearly right.
⁴ In 2084, 6233, seye may be read (with hiatus) if one admits the "extra syllable before the cæsura."
⁵ In B supply [f].
⁶ In 3120(1), 4139, 4777, it is possible to read seye if one admits the "extra syllable before the cæsura."
⁷ Supply [that] in BD.
(senē || D); first to sen (purpose), 3384 (se CD); it thoughte hym no strokes To here or sen Crisyde . . . wepe, 3910 (se his D); youre desport Was al to seen Crisydes eyen, 4972 (sen BC, se D); it hardere is To sen that sorwe, 5568 (to sen him C, to se the sorwe D);
It was his sorwe vpon hem for to sen, 6821 f (sene D) (ben sunt bene D). (ii.) she was right swych to sen, 5524 (seen B, se CD); to seen here (gen. sg.), purpose, 446 (sene B, sen C, se D); to sen here (acc.), purpose, 7941 (see D); cf. 5568 C.
to se, (i.) hath gided the to se my, 569 (sen B); ye ben faire to se, 1669 f; It was an heune vpon hym for to se, 1722 f; he hath to se me swych delit, 1794; it ioye was to se, 1902 f; sobrely and frendly for to se, 3201 f; This was no litel sorwe for to se, 3935 f; ycomen hym to se, 5028 f (see D); it a deth was for to se, 5518 f (see D); Which that I drede neuere mo to se, 5521 f (see D); I nolde leuen for to se, 5997 f (see D); coueyteth . . . to se me, 6001; the pure spirit wepeth To se yow wepen, 6283 (see D); comen Troylus to se, 6645 f (see BD); to longen herē to se, 6960 f (see B); thei stoden for to se, 7477 f; ther com this bor to se, 7835 f (see D). (ii.) to se † his, 3910 D.

sen, seen, inf., without to, (i.) 293 (seth † D), 1386 (se CD), 6886 (senē B, see D)1; cf. 5599, 6133, 6147, 6258, 6299, 7112, 7238, 7446, 7573. (ii.) 2242 (seyne B, se CD), 4961 (D †), 7264 (syn B, se D); cf. 6512, 6691, 6972, 7371, 7476; sen here (acc.), 6391 (se BD), 7144 (sene D, so lauzhe ? C); seen here (gen. sg.), 6888 (sen C, se BD); sen how, 5999 BC.

se, see, inf., without to, (i.) 1659 BD (sen C, do A), 1673 (sen C; B †), 1700 (sen C, senē D), 4124 (sen BC), 8074 (sen B, see D); cf. 245 f, 1365 f, 1530 f, 1879 f, 2067 f, 2177 f, 2398 f, 2416 f, 2515 f, 2972 f, 3442 f, 4056 f, 4187 f, 4321 f, 4446 f, 4853 f, 5350 f, 5947 f, 6700 f, 7030 f, 7522 f, 7662 f, 7751 f, 8003 f, 8139 f. (ii.) 644 (sen C; D †), se here (acc.), 6979 (seen B, sen C).
y-se, inf., without to, (i.) alle y-se, 1439 f (allē se C; D †); tyme y-se, 2806 (is[e] D, tymē se BC); wreche y-se, 5500 f (wreche se C, wrecohē see D); wel y-se, 5710 f, 7110 f ([y]se C, [y]see D). [Var. B y-se; D i-see.]
to done,—that thow hast to done, 1019 f; I hauē to done, 1298 f; hadde nought to done, 3517 f; his erand was to done, 1157 f; were it nought to done, 1788 f; theron was to heuen and to done, 2374 f; what was best to done, 2570 f; now is there (but) litel more for to

1 Supply [As] in C.
Observations on the Language [§ 119.

done, 3389 f.; how yow was best to done, 4746 f.; what thenkestow to done, 5750 f (doon B); it was ek to done, 6433 f.; as the semeth best is for to done, 6664 f.; it is nought to done, 6741 f.; the beste is thus to done, 6755 f (doon B); it is for to done, 7266 f; yet was there mœre to done, 7455 f; there is no mœre to done, 7672 f (doon B); as he was woned to done, 4378 f (doon B) (similarly 4553 f (don D), 4729 f, 5788 f (doon B)); it wonted is to done, 6640 f; as was his wonège to done, 7010 f. [Var. BD doone.] feyned hym with Calkas han to doon[e], 7209 f (done CD) ; to bidde hym ought to done, 3309 (don BC, do ne D); to have ynowgh to done, 6407. (don C, doone D); what to done he ynest, 356 (don B, do D).

to done,—what to done || best were, 1781 (to do D), what to done best † and C; what to done || for ioye vnmethe he ywste, 4095 (don B, do D).

Rhyme words.—mone, moone, n. (1019, 1157, 3389, 6640, 6741), bone n. (1019), some, soone adv. (1157, 1298, 2374, 3517, 4378, 4553, 4729, 5788, 6433, 6640, 6755, 7010, 7209, 7266, 7455, 7672), persone (1788, 2570, 4746), trone n. (5750), thow dispone invm. subj. (6664).

to don,—(i.) a thyng to don yow pleye, 1206 (do D); a body and a myght To don that thyng, 1719 (do D); is he . . . aboute me to dreche And don me wrong, 2557 (do D); I may ben he . . . to don yow my seruyse, 2975 (do D); prey [I] yow To don myn herte . . . an ese, 3475 (do D); bad a boone . . . to don that reuerence, 4731 B (do D, to don hym † that reuerence A); the enspire This womman thus to shilde and don vs lese Daun Antenor, 4850 (doun C, done D); be suffred me to erre . . . ne don so gret vnright, 5212 (do (me) D); what frendes ich have . . . to don the wrathe pace Of Priamus and don hym stonde in grace, 6054-5 (doo . . . make D); make hym . . . to conuertere And don my red, 6074-5 (doo D). (ii.) what for to done, 887 (don BC, done D); what to don is, 2737 (doun B, done CD); comytted to don execution, 6367 (done D); comauandeth me . . . To don al, 6496 (doo D); she wolde fayn(e) to don his herte an ese (syntaxe ambiguous), 2310 (do D; C †); hasteth yow to don hym ioyse haue, 2329 (do D); gon to don his sacrifice, 3381 (done D); al prest to don hire byde, 4824 (do D); to don his sorw[e] to falle He rought[e] not what vnthryf[t] [that] he seyde, 5092 (to make his CD); glad to don hym that service, 5471 (doo D); to the . . . goddes . . . He preyde . . .

1 No note in the Cp. collation.
To do hym, 5613 (doon B, doone D); That he noldë don his peyne and al his myght To do it for to don here herte an ese, 6078-9 (done . . . to done it for to doo D).

to do,—what is me best to do, 828 f (: wo : so); a kynges sone yn armes wel to do, 1250 f (: two : therto); for to do wel is his wone, 1403 (don BC, [for] to do D); yourë beste is to do so, 1467 (don C); to wys is he to do so gret a nyse, 1810 (don BC); vouche saf for to do so, 2776 (don C, [for] to do D); ryse To knele and do yow honour, 2912 (don C); to wys to do so gret folye, 3709 (don BC); grace for to do so, 3770 (hadde to don so C †); what thenkestow to do, 5511 f (doon BD) (: for-do inf., -do D, 5513 : to prep.).

don, inf. without to, (i.) 19 (doon B, do D), 852 (do D), 1496 f (done D) (: anoon : agon p.p.); do yow don by force, 6137 (don . . . don C, doo . . . doone D); cf. 120, 600, 1197, 1400, 1553, 1560, 1842, 2330, 2951, 4230, 4973, 5957, 6327, 6413, 6762, 7200, 7203, 7631, etc. (ii.) 2591 (do CD); cf. 1474, 3725 (done D), 4952, 4957, 5245, 5456, 5602, 5604, 6150, 6295, 6475, 6604, 8071, 8097, etc.;
doon, 824 (don C, done D); for forms before he, his, hym, here, hem, how (don is usual in ABC; D has don, doone, done, do, doo), cf. 563, 2066, 2459, 3008, 3400, 4550, 5365, 6478, 7284, 7503, 7828; don hardnesse, 2330 (but it is perhaps better to take don as p. p., as the reading of B, ydon, indicates). In 2734 AB, don harm should be don him harm, as in C (do hym harme D). In 7349 A, done should be don (don B, doon C, doo can D).

do, inf., without to, (i.) 795 (don BC), 1848 (don C), 6345 f (: for-do inf., -do D, 6343 f); cf. 692, 1232, 1659, 2042, 2373, 2699, 3022, 3690, 3708, 3769, 3969, 4230, 4912, 5121, 5439, 5688, etc.; for-do, 238 (-don B, vndo D), 5513 f (-do D) (: to do : to prep.). (ii.) 2503 (don BC, done D), 2557 (don B), 3892 (don BC, done D), 5419 (doon B, doo D, don † what C); vndo, 3583 (vndon B, ondo C, vndo † the D).

§ 120. The Present Participle ends in the Troilus in -yne, -yn (Cf. Child, § 64; ten Brink, § 191.)

The form -yne is regular in rhyme (see, however, II., last example), but the -e is never sounded in the interior of the verse (except for syntactic reasons, see II., note 2). D almost always has -yn, both in and out of rhyme, but I have not taken the superfluous trouble to register this lack of -e in that MS. Minute variations in spelling are also sometimes disregarded in the following lists.
The participle in *-ende* occurs only twice,—*ryndende*, 2334 C (corrupt), 2338 f C° (where it spoils the rhyme).

Note.—I have registered "gerunds" with nouns in *-ynge* (§ 10) in preference to confusing them with participles.

I. The following list includes such present participles as rhyme with an infinitive in the *Troilus*. All the rhyme-words are recorded in each case.

lyuynge, 1320 f (leuenge C) (: rynge inf. : wytyng n.).
vnsittynge, 1392 f (: brynge).
sterynge, 4078 f (: synge : rynge).
durynge, 4596 f (-g C (!), doyng † D) (: concordynge ptc., -ynge CD : brynge).
makynge, 5517 f (: brynge).
portrayynge, 7079 f (-treynge B, portering † D) (: recordynge ptc., according † D : sprynge).
arguynge, 7135 f (: taryinge n. : brynge).

II. Here follow all other cases of the present participle (or participial adjective) in rhyme. An asterisk indicates that the rhyme-word is a noun (or "gerund") in *-ynge* (see § 10).
wepynge, 111 f (: excusynge ptc.).
pleynge, 267 f (pleyinge BC, pleying D) (: lokynge ptc.).
answerynge,* 282 f.
konnynge, * 302 f (kun- C, cunnyng D).
comyng,* 378 f, * 1644 f, * 5649 f (D †), * 5676 f.
sittynge, 2099 f (: lokynge ptc.).
ymagnynynge, 6817 f (-g C, -genynge D) (: festenynge n., thing † D).
excusynge,* 7937 f.

But,—comyng, 5737 f (-ynge D) : thing n. : byfallyng n.

III. Present participles before consonants. (D has almost always -ylng.)
toucyng, 265 (-e BC); towchynge, 2108 (-e BC; D †), 3274 (-e BC).
plèynge, 280 (pleyng- C).
lykynge, 309 (lokynge † C).
ymagnynge, 372 (-ing (!) D, -enyng (!) C).
bewaillyng, 547 † D.
kéuryng, 632 (-e B).\(^1\)
rydyng, 2334 (-e B †, ryndende † C).
fallyng,—the happy fallyng strok, 2467 (-e BC; D †).
hélpynge, 2635 (-e BC).

\(^1\) Supply [yet] in D.
lāngwysshỳng, 3083 (-synge B, -syng C).
herỳng, 3188.1
thònkyng 4394 (D †).
wèpyng, 5237 (-ing sbst. † D).
dispùtyng, 5746.
schaùngyng †, 6918 C (changed p. p. ABD).

Note 1.—In 309 the accent is perhaps on the first syllable; in 2108, perhaps on the second.

Note 2.—In *this fôrknowyng[ë] wyse, 79 A (-e BC), the sounding of -ë is
due to the definite construction (see § 59). This is the only case in the
*Troilus in which -ë is sounded in the present participle in the interior of
the verse (cf. 7804 † C, 7951 † A, 8098 (read hauynge [vn]to; G, Cp., and
Harl. 2392 have *ve[nto]. Cf. IV, V, notes, below.

V. Before vowels.

For -ỳnge, cf. 1705, 4691, 4747, 4755, 5404, 5502, 5951, 7075, 7804, 7975.
For -ỳng, cf. 65, 908, 1055, 4542, 4750, 5099, 5116.
For -ỳnge, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, flëtyng), cf.
1138, 1640, 2789, 3534, 3982, 4210, 4624, 4967, 5491, 5913, 6387, 6430, 6758, 7188, 7975, 7502, 7571, 7697, 8033, 8135, 8173, 8175
(hërkënyng).
For -ỳng, with the accent on the preceding syllable (as, byhòldyng), cf.
9, 101, 186, 547, 631, 2024, 3348, 4395, 4693, 7386, 7604, 7719, 8020.

Note.—In 7333, and (after konnyng) restores the metre: ACDG omit and, 
BCp John's have it. 7804 C is to be corrected by the insertion of ay.

V. Before h (in his, hym, here (acc., poss. sg., poss. pl.), how, 
hound).

For -ỳnge, cf. 2900, 4381, 5819, 6066, 6836, 7048.
For -ỳng, cf. 3359, 4789, 4905, 5025, 5764.
For -ỳnge, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 318, 1157, 1738, 2893, 5374 C, 5377, 8123.
For -ỳng, with the accent on preceding syllable, cf. 384, 3004, 3606.

Note.—In 5951 C, makynge here (hic) should be corrected.

§ 121. The Perfect Participle of Weak Verbs ends in the
*Troilus in -ëd, -ëd, -d, -t. (Cf. Child, § 62; ten
Brink, §§ 163, 166-9, 176, 180-3.)

Instead of -ëd, C and D often have -id or -yd, and so occasionally B, 
For -id, -yd in A, see, for example, 182, 308, 1004, 6894. B has

1 In A read theffect for the feyth.
2 Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.
3 In A, supply [make] before hem.
4 9-syl. verse.
5 Old-style figures indicate that the accent may stand on the preceding syllable.
wounded in 1618 f. C sometimes shows -it: as, gydit, 569 (cf. 558, 987, 1438, 1707, 2705, 4075, 6707 f, 6709 f, 7548); cf. wounded, 1618 f C. For -ede, -de, -te, see notes 1, 2, below.

Perfect participles rhyme usually with each other or with words that have no -e. Very rarely a perfect participle is found rhyming with the preterite of a verb: the only examples in the Troilus are,—
excused p. p., 2164 f, rh. accused pret. ind. 3 sg.
vntormentid, 1004 f, rh. assentyd pret. ind. 3 sg. (or possibly p. p. ?)
y-shette p. p., 3075 f, rh. lette n., rh. sette ind. 3 sg.
spradde p. p., 6084 f, rh. he hadde.
whette p. p., 8123 f, rh. mette 3 pl.

In the last four cases the participles are in the plural (see §§ 67. e, 68).

In 1123 B, 2175 C, 7561 A, the reading should be corrected (see notes 1, 2 below).

Note 1.—C, which is especially fond of the ending -ede in the preterite, not infrequently extends this termination erroneously to the participle: cf., for examples, -ed(e) in C 1509, 1907, 2119, 3467, 3931, 4111, 5407, 5878, 5900, 5945, 6528, 8062; -id(e), 4237 C; -ed(e), C 299, 1907, 6894; -ed(e), C 648 f, 3285 f; -id(e), 316 f C. Cf. also rowed(e), 962 f B; diosed(e), 3285 f B. Even A is not free from this spurious -e: thus,—pronounced(e), 4875 A; formed(e), 7180 A; falsely(e), 7419 A; cf. 1906 A, 7458 A. In all cases this -e is of course purely a scribe’s caprice and never pronounced. Similarly -de is occasionally written for -ed (as, arayed(e), 1285 B, l. arayèd; cf. 646 B, 3388 B, 4062 B, 4289 D, 7612 f B), or for -al (as, adradde, 1200 f, l. adrad; ferde, 1209 B, l. ferd, etc.). In a few cases, however, the plural of a monosyllabic participle in -al ends in -dd(e) (see §§ 67, e, 68). Fledd(e), 7581 f A (; bledde ind. 3 sg.) should be preterite indicative.

Note 2.—The ending -te instead of -it is found again and again in one MS. or another, as a comparison of MSS. in the places cited below (I.-VIII.) will show (see, e. g., 1237, 1670, 6051, 6909). Even A is not free from this spurious -e: thus,—hath sent(e) after, 6643 AB (-t CD). In all cases, however, the -e is clearly a scribe’s fashion or whim, except in a few instances where it is used to denote the plural of a monosyllabic participle (see the cases under §§ 67. e, 68, above). Bad readings are,—shente p. p. (: wente pret. 3 sg.), 1123 B (should be shent: went pres. 3 sg.), and schette p. p. (: sette pret. 3 sg. : lette pret. 3 sg.), 2175 C (should be pret. 3 sg.).

Examples.

In the following lists (I.-X.) variants are seldom registered; and, except in a few instances, no record is made of the initial letter of the word that follows the participle.

I. Anglo-Saxon verb of the First Conjugation (cf. § 99).
afered, 967 f, 3324 f (aferd D); -[e]d, 1691 (-[e]d(e) B, -ed? C, aferd D); aférjd, 1209 f C (ferd A, ferd(e) B; D f).
agast, 715, 1396, 3579 (agarst A), 3938, 6306, 7256. (Inf. agaste, 1986 f.)
agilt, 4299 f, 4923 f; agylt, 8047.
beleued,—cf. mysbeleuëd, adj., 3680 AB.
bente, pl., 4702 f AB (-t D) (mente 3 pl. : wente 3 pl.).
blent, 2828.
bought, 4953 f, 7328 (bout(e) D); ybought, 810 f, 4161 f (bought D).
brought, 424, 915, 1303, 3088, 3149, 3611, 3980 f, 4465, 4954 f,
7924; brough[t], 7279 (-t BCD); ybrough[t], 6466 f (-t B, brought
D ; C †); ybrought, 4441, 6374.
yburyed (trisyL), 2396.
dight, 4615 f.
dreynt, 7866.
dwelt, 7074 (dwellyd C, duellid † ind. D).
edched, 4171.
felt, 25, 27, 2851, 2884, 4125; feled, 5646 AB (-id D).
ferd, see ofered, forfered.
for-fered. This may be the right reading in 6073 (so Cp. ; for fered A,
for ferdë || out B, for fer C †, for dredë || out D). [§ 135, III. 1, n 1.]
fulfild, 1717 ; fulfilled, 5853 (-filld B, -fyld C).
heled, 1082, 4054, 5098.
hent, 509.
herd, 197, 750, 754, 969, 1002, 1186, 2051, 2537, 2632, 2953, 3340,
3395, 5007 (hard(e) B), 5329, 6113, 6809, 6931, 6992, 7086, 7343,
7974.
hérièd,1 4098; heryed (dissyl.), 4599 (y-herid(e) D), 4655; yhered,
2058 (yhered BD, i-heried C); iheried, 2849; yheried, 4646.
hid, 618, 5158, 5972 (hidd(e) B, hed C, hiddë † in D).
yknet, 4576 f.
kyst,—vnkyst, 809.
lad, 872, 6757 ; led, 1638.
laft, 4180 f (left(e) E, last † C), 4943 f (left C, laffe D), 6123 f (left
C, laft(e) D) ; ylaff, 4889 f (ilefthe D, ilaste † C).
lered, 3248 f (lernyd † C); ylered, 969 f.
let, 1179 f, 3559, 7665 (lettid C).
leyd, 2048, 2630, 3529 f, 5845 (berid † D).
met, 1237, 4523 f ; imet, 1671 f.
myssted, 3379.
plyght, 3624 f, 6272 ; plught, 5107 † f D.
queynt, 4975, 6092, 6906.

1 Heryed is dissyllabic in all the examples except the first.
red, 8160; yred, 5461.
yrent, 8017.
reyned,—byreyned, 5834 f (be-reigned D).
sent, 105, 2399, 2783, 3329 f, 6051, 7785; ysent, 6834.
set, 643, 1670 f, 2878, 3182, 3328, 4213, 4330 (i-set B, schet C), 4788,
4986, 5837, 6040, 6103; yset, 4573 f, 4846, 5336. beset, 521,
879, 1919 f (y-sette D); byset, 4255; biset, 898. But,—sette,
pl., 1166 A (sete B, sate pret. 3 pl. D).
shent, 1123 f (y- D), 4301 A, 4741 † D.
shet, 2000 † D (hust ABC), 6897 (shitt D); schett(e), 2175 f C;
schitt, 3936 D (hust ABC); byshet, 3444 (beshit D). But,—y-
shette, pred. pl., 3075 f (y-chette B, schette C, y-shet D) (: lette n. :
sette pret. ind. 3 sg.).
ysought, 4159 f (isout C). vnsought, 809 f.
sped[de], pl., 2039 (spedde BC ; D ?).
splitt, 4925 f.
spradde, pl., 6084 f (: he hadde).
stynt, 3948.
taried (dissyl.), 2824, 7499, 7712.
thought, 5204, 5216. bithought, 1310.
told, 197 † A, 1381, 1760, 1780 f, 2370, 3350, 3638, 3846, 4039,
4592, 6159, 6687, 7806; told(e), 913 f AB (-d CD), 1220 A (-d
BCD), cf. 7463. ytold, 4803.
tyd, 900, 1309, 1549.
wend, 5046 (went C), 8045.
went, 1681 † f D, 5597 f, 6909, 7100 A, 8171 f A (-e B); ywent,
6807 f (wente B, went CD); myswent, 633 f.
whette, pl., 8123 f AB (whett D) (: mette 3 pl.).
wrought, 578 f (y-wrogth B), 1662 f, 1757 f, 4132, 4345 f, 5758,
7530 f.
II. Old Norse verbs of the First Declension (cf. § 100).
brent, 7873 (brend C); ybrend, 4739 (brent D †, brent(e) B), 6672
(brent CD).
flittid, 7907 f (kyttid † C 1, flitted D).
hit, 867. (hurt † C).
reysed, 7834 f.
bright, 6683 (schriht C).
trusted, 1499 (tristed B, trustid C, trustyd D); mytrusted, cf.
1516.

1 flittid in the next line in C.
III. Anglo-Saxon and Old Norse verbs of the Second Conjugation (cf. § 101).

answered, 4807 (-swerd(e) B, -swerid C, -swerd D);¹ answéréd, 3383 (-id CD, -swered † B).

y bathed, 5477.

y bedded, 6709 f.

blyssyd, 308 (blissed B, blessed C, blessid D).

vn br ydled, 3271 (-délled B, -délid CD).

called, 394, 548, 874, 1093, 2502, 3775, 7814.

cast, 2474 f, 2938, 8059; outcast, 6978; forn-cast, 3363.

cleped, 66, 5424; -id, 548 † D; ycleped, 5166.

clothed, 156.

cursed, 4996; acursed, 4913, 4294.

fet ered, 4768 AB (fetrid D).

fy ss hed, 1413 (fichid C).

gl aded, 987.

hamled, 2019 (-id C, lessid † D).

[h]alwed, 3110 (halowed B, halwid C, halowid D).

hanged, 1438; an-honged, 2705.

lerny d †, 3248 f C (l. leryd).

lo ked, 4002.

lost, see V., below.

 lou ed, 500, 1501; ilou ed, 594 (-id D, louéd † C); belou ed, 131 (-id C, -yd D).

ilyssed, 1082.

maked, (i.) 1193 (-yd C, made D). (ii.) y maked †, 4576 (ymasked BCp., -id CD); in 2567, And shortly made eche of hem his fo (makes B, mad C), we should clearly read maked (with Cp. and John's).

mad, maad, (i.) 251, 553, 904, 3100, 3681, 7926; mad(e), 3145 (mad C), 3377 (mad his C †, mad(e) his D). mad, (ii.) 2956 (maad B), 5139, 5540 (mad the C); mad(e), 7900 ( y-mad(e) BD, mad C);² mad(e) haluendel, 6698. In most of the cases cited B and D read mad(e).

op ned, 3311 (openyd CD).

played, 2325 (pleyed C, pleyd D).

put, 1698, 1851, 2191, 3363.

ra ft, 7621 (reft(e) D); reft, 7623 (raft C, raft(e) D). byraft, 4182 f

¹ In D, read ben for hem. ² In B y madě leche = ymad a leche.
Observations on the Language

(-reft(e) D), 4887 f, 4890, 4945 f (bereft C, beraff(e) D), 6122 f (beraff(e) D).

shadwed, 1906 (-wed(e) [wel] A).

shamed, 8090; ashamed, 2132.

shewed, 4690, 7810; -ed, 7812 (-id D, -id C); yshewed, 7614.

sorwed, 5545.

spared, 6567.

sperid, 6894 (-ed BD, -ed(e) C).

thonked, 1935, 4451; -ed, 517 (-ed B, -yd C, -id D); ythonked, 4664.

trowed, 5045, 8041.

twyght, 5234 f.

warned, 4511.

wedded, 6707 f, 7338.

wondred, 1277 (-id D, -derd C).

wont, won(e), woned. (a) wont, (i.) 183, 2605 (C(!)), 4975 (om. † B; C(!)), 5443 (woned C), 5788, 6909, 7023, 7025; men was wont, 5528 (were woned C). (ii.) 510 (-yd C), 6982, 8073; wont here (poss. sg.), 5416 (-yt † was C).—(b) woned, (i.) 901 (wone (?) C), 1485, 4378, 4553, 4697, 4729. (ii.) 3397 (-t BCD).—(e) as it wonted is to done, 6640 (wonte ? B, won ? C, wont ? D). For woned = dwelt, see 276 f (-yd CD) (: astoned p.p.).—In most of the cases above cited (a—b) C has won(e) (monosyllabic), B wont(e), and D wont(e) or wont.

wounded, 1618 f, 1711.

IV. Anglo-Saxon verbs of the Third Conjugation (cf. § 102).

had, 1503, 1504, 2943, 5057 f, 5153, 6493, 7119, 7691.

lyued, 5755; ilyued, 7296.

seyd, 611, 740, 905, 935, 969, 1129, 1131, 1467, 1475, 1509, 1687, 1955, 2768, 3173, 3531 f, 3778, 3788, 4054, 4459, 4656, 5573, 6078, 7102, 7639, 8132; seyd(e), 5833.

V. Verbs originally strong (cf. § 103).

adrad, 1200 f (adradde C) (: be ye mad); ydrad, 4617.

fled, 87, 3933, 5530; yfled, 5323. In 463 fled[de], pl., rhymes with breddde, pret.; fleddde, 7561 A, should be preterite.

hight, 1577, 5107 f (be- C, plight D), 6289 f; yhight, 6904 f; byhight, -hyght, 6717 f (hight D), 7467 f.

lost (cf. A.S. gelosod), (i.) 462 (D †), 1 809, 3140 (C †), 3937, 4108 (lore C), 4268, 4606, 4949, 5068 (-t(e) D), 5230 (-t(e) D), 6129 (-t(e) D), 6783, 8008 (-t(e) D); ylost, 5945 (-t(e) BD); förlost,

1 Supply [wol] in C.
5418 (soore ‡ lorn(e) D). (ii.) lost, 2824, 5040 (-t(e) B), 1 6244, 7069; forlóst, 3122 (-t(e) B, fordon(e) ‡ D). 2 lost haue, 7001 (-t(e) D), 7766 (-t(e) D); lost held, 4635 (lorn hade C, lorn had D).

lorn, (i.) 373 f (-n(e) B, borne ‡ D). cf. 3918 f, 3943 f, 4065 f, 4483 f, 6141 f, 7808 f; ylorn, 5912 f (ilorne D, boref D). (ii.) 5621 (-n(e) B), cf. 6275; lorn hade, 4635 C (lorn had D, lost held AB). He wend it lost he thoughte he nas but lorn, 3918 (lost . . . lorn(e) BD, lost . . . forlorn(e) C). He seyde (seid D) he nas but lor[e]n (lorne G) waylawey, 5619 ABD Cp. (not in C; He seide I am but lorn so weylaway John's).

lore, 4108 C (lost ABD); forlore, 6386 f (lore ‡ B).


rewed, 5303.

rowed, 962 f.

siked, 7101.

VI. Verbs of Germanic origin not found in Anglo-Saxon.

awhaped, 316 f.
bystowed, 960 f.
bywared, 636 f.
gert, 7408 C (hurt A, hirt(e) B, hurt(e) D); thourgh girt, 5289 (thourgh gird(e) D).
grounded, 6334.
hust, 2000 (shet D), 3936 (schitt D).
smytted, 7908 f.
stokked, 3222.
twyuned, 5138, 5450, 7042.
vntyld, 1837 (-teyd B, onteyed C).

VII. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -t (cf. § 104).

abast, 2936 (abassèd C, abasshîd D), 3964 (baist(e) B, abasschîd D).

Cf. abaysshed, 4075 (abaysed B, abasschit C; D ‡).
cought, 214 (caut C), 557, 2027, 2267, 2357, 7066; kaught, 4049, 4768; ycaught, 1668 (caght D, lauêt C), 3 cf. 534.
hurt, 1080, 7408 (gert C).
quit, 334, 529, 1327 f, 3861, 4068.

combēst, 3559 (-bust B, cumbrîd ‡ CD).

enhabyt, 5105 (-it B, enabit(id) C, an habit(e) D). 4

1 Supply [how] in D. 2 Read [y]wonne in A. 3 Supply [y-] in CD. 4 Read her[te] in A.
Observations on the Language

III. Romance and Latin verbs with participle in -ed (cf. § 105).

recoueréd, 37; coueréd, 2873 A
deliberéd, 4873 B (-ueryd C, -uerid D; A †).

aperyred, 38 f.
medélíd, 5001 C (medled B, medlid D; A †); cf. ymedled, 3657.

pleesed, 247 f.
suffred, 5211 (-ferid C).

by-apied, 531; cf. 318 f.
aschewed, 5740.

astonyed (trisyl.), astoned, 1512, 1688, 3931, 8091.
suffred, 5211 (-ferid C).

dispersed, 1767.

assembled, 5920 (-belyd C).

considered, 2375, 3765, 3827, 5933 (-sidred D), 7711.
ypreysed, 7836 f.

delyuered, 3065.
depynted, 7962 f.

delyuered, 3065.

dejected, 3065.

Cf. also 85 f, 87 f, 249, 274 f, 1274, 1447, 1690, 1710, 1765 f, 1872, 1924 f, 1925 f, 2164 f, 2166 f, 2262, 2272, 2467, 2477, 2588, 2811, 3170 f, 3171 f, 3247 f, 3263 f, 3265 f, 3287 f, 3288 f, 3366, 3622, 3875, 4026 f, 4028 f, 4376, 4653, 4700, 4892, 4929, 4937, 4955 f, 4956 f, 5215, 5221 f, 5222 f, 5301 f, 5303 f, 5304 f, 5455, 5470, 5487, 5637, 5670, 5715, 5766, 5832 f, 5924, 5959, 6186, 6310, 6514, 6540, 7076, 7123, 7191, 7270, 7347, 7482, 7610 f, 7612 f, 7698, 7702, 7741, 7877, 7905 f, 7960 f, 8046, 8073, 8084 f, 8085 f, 8143, 8179, etc., etc.

Note.—Passen, pret. paste, passed (§ 102), has p.p. passed, ypased; see 24, 2180, 4241, 4249, 4470, 6838, 7044, 7109.

IX. Roman participles in -ed (syncopated).

turnéd, 4242 C (turned B, tournéd AE).

cried, 5249 (cryéd B, cryêd C).

purueyéd, 5668 (-uyeD D); pûrueyéd (or purueyéd ?), cf. 5717.

But,—puruey[e]d, 5718 (-ed B); purueyêd, 5670, 5714 (-[e]d D).
enlûmyned, 6911 (-yd C, -êd BD).

Cf. also 992 C, 997 C, 2082 C, 2634 C, 6952 D, 7673 C, etc.

X. Adjectives in -ed.

Of adjectives formed from nouns by means of the participial termination -ed, the following will serve as examples:—

feythed, 1000 (fichid † C). benched, 1907.
sucred, 1469.
sonded, 1907.

helmed, 1678.
fethered, 2011.
rayled, 1905.

Cf. also §§ 57. b, 71.

Note 1.—It is of course impossible to draw a hard and fast line between such adjectives and genuine participles: ytressed, 7175; ypleynted, 7960 f.

Instead of -en C usually has -yn: so often D, and occasionally B. -in is also now and then found. Variants of this kind are commonly disregarded in lists I.-IV., below. Examples are,—ybetyn, 741 f D; holdyn, 1326 D, 4516 CD, 8043 C; brostyn, 2061 CD; comyn, 2528 CD, 2904 D, 3599 CD, 4397 BC; foldyn, 5021 f CD; brokyn, 5809 BCD, 7567 C; cf. 86 f CD, 205 f CD, 1151 D, 1661 f D, 1680 CD, 2020 f CD, 2068 f C, 2177 CD, 2938 CD, 3095 f CD, 3292 CD, 3298 C, 3533 CD, 3576 CD, 3732 f D, 4060 C, 4739 D, 4777 D, 5375 C, 5606 C, 5918 C, 6032 C, 6077 CD, 7234 C, etc. For -in, see dryvin, 2068 D; holpin, 2404 C, 2526 C, 4112 C. Writon occurs once, 7666 B.

Note.—Instead of -n, -n(e) occurs now and then (see especially V., below), but this is very rarely the case in A.

The examples are arranged as follows,—I. -en before consonants; II. -en in rhyme; III. -en before vowels; IV. -en before h; V. syncope, -en or -n; VI. -e before consonants; VII. -e in rhyme; VIII. -e (elided) before vowels; IX. -e (elided) before h; X. apocope of -e; XI. hiatus; XII. the perfect participles of sleen; XIII. the perfect participles of seen (including the adjectives sene, ysene).

I. -en before consonants:

holden trewely, 1326 (holde C)\(^1\); h. was, 4516; h. me, 8043. foryeuen be, 1680 (-jouyn C)\(^2\).
brosten ben, 2061\(^3\).
holpen what, 2526 (-[e] D)\(^4\); h. there, 4112 (-en \(\uparrow\) hem D); h. for, 5918 (helplyn C, helped D).
comen was, 2528\(^5\), 4397; c. to, 2904 (-e C); c. benedicte, 3599; c. Troylus, 6645 (-e CD); icomen was, 4510 (comyn D \(\uparrow\)).
yolden chere, 2938 (i-jolden B).
boden go, 3533 (bedyn C).

---

\(^1\) In B supply [no].
\(^2\) In AB read vel for wole (wol) I.
\(^3\) In D supply [am].
\(^4\) D is 9-syl.
\(^5\) In C read which for with.
shapen was, 3576; forshapen was, 1151.
founden by, 4777 (-e B, -e C); f. salue, 5606; f. were, 7965 (-e D, fonde C).¹
fallen was, 5375 D (-yn C) (stanzanotin AB).
broken (adj.) voys, 5809; b. that, 7567.
wretentwel, 6077 (wreten B, writyn C); ywriten nor, 7422 (wretyn † C, ywretyn D).
faren syn, 6829 (-e C, farne l. -en B).
woxen lesse, 6981 (waxen B, waxe CD)²; w. was, 7190 (waxen C, waxe D); w. wellys, 7737 (waxen C, waxen D); ywoxen was, 6638 (ywaxen D, waxen † inf. C), 7071 (iwaxen C, waxen D).
wopen for, 7087 (wepid C, wepte † D); bywopen thus, 5578 (-wepen B, -wepyn CD).³
knowen were, 7944 (-e C).
ytaken for, 8128 (taken B, had[de] taken D).
II. -en in rhyme:
spoken, 86 f (C †), 205 f.
wroken, 88 f, 207 f (ywrokyu D).
broken, 89 f (-e C), 208 f (ybrokyn D).
ybeten, 741 f (beten A, ibete C).
dreuen, 1661 f (dryuen B, dryvyn D); dryuen, 2068 f B (dreuyn C, dryvin D, (y)dreuen A).
schryuen, 1664 f (screuyn B).
ryden, 2018 f (redyn C).
abyden, 2020 f.
becomen, 3095 f.
shaken, 3732 f (-e C).
shapen, 4082 f (y- BD, [i]schape C).
ywryen, 4293 f.
folden, 5021 f.
ycomen, 6875 f (come C).
nomen, 6877 f (-e C).

Rhyphenwords.—Other participles in -en, and I. Infinitives: lyuen (1661, 1664, 2068), comen (3095), maken (3732), escapen (4082), byholden (5021), colde[n] (5021), spyen (4293); II. treten ind. 3 pl. (741), yeden ind. 3 pl. (2018, 2020); III. eyen n. pl. (4293). Observe the rhyme yeden: ryden:
abyden.

III. -en before vowels:
clomben, 215 (clumbyn D).

¹ Supply [that] in AC, [why] in D; otherwise the line is a disagreeable 9-syl. verse.
² In BCD perhaps infinitive.
³ In D read ne for you.
thurgh shoten, 325.¹
yolden, 801 (guldyng C); ² cf. 5455 § C.
shapen, 2177, 4272.
comen, cf. 2255, 7286.
holpen, 2404 (-en D).
wreten, 3292 (witen C, writyn D) ³; cf. 4198.
spoken, 3298 (-ē D).
taken, 4712 (D §), 7234.
Cf. also 3683, 3853 (cropen), 4734, 5074, 5280, 5616, 6431, 7268, 7377, etc.
IV. -ēn before h:
taken hede, 501.⁴
dronken hadde, 4232 (drenken A).
holden haue, 4762 (-d | my D).
ycomen hym, 5028 (comyn C, icommyn D).
yeuen here (l. hire A.S. hýr, with B), 5168 (yoven D).
ykownen here (acc.), 5381 (knowyn C, knowen D).
vnbroyden hangen, 5479.⁵
a swollen herte, 6564 (sorweful C).
comen heder, 6847 (C §).
songen hadde, 7008 (sungen had[de] D, songē § also C).
wonnen han, 7353 (-en § the D).
wreten here (dat.), 7666 (-en B, -e to C, -yn § to D).
woxen helle, 7739 (waxen C, waxē D).
shapen hadde, 7914 (-ē C, -en § D).
V. Syncope:
shorn, 222 f (-ne B, yshorn D) (: corn n. : byforn).
born, (i.) 375 f (in vp born) (-ne BD), 897 f (-ne B), 1228 f (bor D), 1653 f (-ne BC); cf. 2354 f, 3146 f, 3915 f, 3945 f, 4064 f, 4438, 4994, 4996, 5913 f, 7053, 7063 (-yn C), 8062; born(e), 6518 f
ABD (born C).  (ii.) cf. 4265, 4960, 5407, 7074 (-yn C), 7320; born haue, 7639 (-n(e) D).—yborn, 1383 f (-ne B, ibore C); yborn al, 382 (-n(e) B, iborn C, [y]born D).
Rhyme words.—lorn, yborn p.p. (375, 3915, 3945, 4064, 5913), sworn, isworn, sworn(e) p.p. (897, 1383, 1653), byforn (375, 1228, 2354, 3146, 3915, 4064, 5913, 6518), toforn (1383), thorn n. (2354, 3945).
sworn, (i.) 899 f (-ne B), 3154, 6143 f (-ne B, isworn C, isworne D);
sworn(e), 1384 f AB (swore C, sworn D); sworn[m], 5638 f (sworne B, sworn D); isworn, 1655 f (sworne B, isworne C, sworn D), 6646 f (sworne BD, sworyn C).


fallen yn, 555 (falle BC).
growen vnder, 1488 (grow B, wox † D).
founden alwey, 3837 (found D).
yolden ywys, 4053 (zolde BC, zolden D).
yeuken vs, 5633 (yene D).
spoken as, 5895 (i-B, speke C).
comen and, 6867 (-yn C); cf. 6560 C (?).

Note 1.—C is fond of -yn when ABC have -e (elided) : see VIII., below.
Note 2.—For lorn, ylorn, see § 121, V.; for slayn, see XII., below; for soyn, see XIII., below.

VI. -e before consonants (not h):
come was, 155 (-en B, -yn CD).
to-hewe was, 1723 (-en B, -yn CD).
knowe be, 1877 A (yknownen B).
smet[e] be, 2230 (-e C, smyt B, smytyn D).¹
holde fully, 2383 (-en B, -[e] D).
vnbor dar, 3111 A (-e BD).
ywrete ben, 4535 (wryten B, wretyn C, writyn D).
bete doun, 4739 (beten B, drawyn † D).
vnderstonde god, 8161 (-e B, -en D †).

VII. -e in rhyme:
ybete, 2025 f ([i]bette B, i-betyn C), 2314 f (-tte B), 4011 f (-bette B, bete C).
blowe, 4829 f (i- BC, yblow D); yblowe, 384 f (-w D).
bonde, 255 f (-d D), 2308 f; bounde, 859 f (-d D); vp bounde, 3359 f (-d D).
hore, 2497 f. (Cf. also VI., above).
i-, ycome, 3446 f (come BCD), 6434 f; ouercome, 243 f (ouer- C), 5731 f (-com D, ouerecome B). For welcome, see § 2.
idrawe, 3695 f (ydrowe B); out drawe, 5888 f (drawe † CD); with-drawe, 5548 f (-drare † C).

¹ A has be smet for smet[e] be.
§ 122. of Chaucer's Troilus.

dreue, 6752 f (dryne B, dryf inf. † D).
bygete, 970 f (be- C).
be-, bygonne, 1133 f, 1864 f, 2045 f, 2319 f, 2669 f, 3577 f; bygon[n]e, 3121 f (-nne B). [Var. CD -gunne; C -gune; D -gun.]
falle, 3701 f (yfah D), 4933 f (-H D), 6615 f, 6912 f (-H D).
yfare, 3419 f, 5831 f (fare C).
folde, 5909 f (-yn CD), 6351 f, 7603 f.
founde, 3360 f (-d D), 5290 f, 6327 f, 7197 f (y- B); y-founde, 5256 f (stound † n. D).
graue, 2945 f, 4341 f.
ygrounde, 4705 f (-d D).
holde, 4101 f (y- D †), 5079 f (-en B; C †), 6937 f, 7329 f (D †);
byholde, 7615 f (be- CD).
knowe, 638 f (-w D), 5145 f (y- B, i- CD); vnknowe, 4830 f (-w D).
nome, 3448 f, 6553 f (y- B, i- D); ynome, 242 f (nome C).
ronge, 7425 f (runge D); runge(n), 1890 f (ronge B, (i)runge C, yrun D).
ronne, 2549 f; yronne, 1992 f, 2926 f ([y]- C, yrun D).
ishape, 3253 f (schape C).
yshore, 5658 f (yshoor D).
shoue, 3868 f (sowe † D).
songe, 8160 f (surge D); y-, isonge, 5461 f, 7422 f (ysong B).
sowe, 385 f (-w D, sawe B).
ystonde, 7975 f (istounde C); withstonde, 253 f (-d D), 5960 f (-stande D); vnderstonde, 5958 f (-stande inf. † D), 6067 f, 7977 f.
itake, 4040 f.
ythrowe, 4668 f (-w D), 5144 f; ouerthrowe, 5047 f (-w B), 7823 f.
wonne, 777 f (won D), 2047 f, 2583 f, 2828 f (won D); ywonne, 2321 f, 3122 f ([y]- A, ywunne D), 5977 f (Antenore wonne = Antenor i-wonne C).

wrie, 3462 f (i- C, ywrye D); ywrye, 6316 f (-wrey D).
yyeue, 4453 f (iyeue BC, [i]jene D).

Rhyme words.—Other perfect participles in -en, and the following, I. nouns: to the grounde, to gronde (859, 4705), wonde (859, 5256, 5290), hete (970, 2025), sonne (1864, 1992, 2319, 2321, 2669), tounge(n), tounge (1890, 5461, 7422, 7425, 8160), in, en honde (2308, 6067, 7975, 7977), strete (2914), iape (3253), fraye (3253), hawe (3885), loue (3885), halle (3701), mowe (4668), throwe (5047, 7823), stofundhe (5290), eye (6316), cf. welcome (6434, 6553); II. adjectives: bare indef. sg. (5831), seconde indef. sg. (7197), the grete (2914), the olde (5079), donne pl. (1992), hye pl. (9462), colde pl. (4101, 6351), some pl. (242, 243, 3446, 3448, 5731), alle pl. (3701, 4983, 6615, 6912); III. adverbs: fawe (5548), to-fore, toform (2497), byfore (6658), wherfore (2497), therfore (5658), abone (3886); IV. infinitives: 970, 2308, 2926, 3419, 3462, 4011, 4040, 4933, 5079,
Observations on the Language

5731, 5909, 6067, 6327, 6351, 6752, 6937, 7603, 7823; V. other verb-forms: pres. ind. 1 sg., —trowe (638), haue (2945), leue vino (4453); 1 pl. konne (1864); 2 pl. konne (777), swete (2025); 3 pl. konne (2669); pres. subj. 1 sg. konne (1133), dye (6316); 2 sg. konne (2549, 2583), foryeue (6752); 3 sg. saue (2945, 4341); 2 pl. ye ye konne (2828, 5977); prot. ind. 3 sg. tolde (7615); 2 pl. tolde (7329), sponne (3577).

VIII. -e (elided) before vowels (variants not registered). 
Cf. 474 (founde), 530 (iblowe), 616 (vnknowe), 809 (vnknowe), 1163 (come), 1260 (yknowe), 1367 (shape), 2917 (come), 3092 (bigonne; -e A), 3111 BD (ynbore), 3630 (come), 3634 (come), 3844 (founde), 3948 (foryeue), 4293 (stole), 4719 (yeue), 5207 (yeue), 6321 (found*), 6373 (molte), 6952 (ywroke), 7254 (take), 7394 (come).

Note. — In some of these cases syncopated forms occur in B, C, or D: as, —yeuen, 5207 B; foryeuen, 3948 B; comen, 2917 B (-yn C); comyn, 3630 C, 3634 C; founden, 6321 D; molten, 6373 D; etc. Sometimes, too, the ending is omitted altogether: thus,—com, 1163 B, 3630 B, 7394 B; found, 3844 D; vnknow, 616 BD, 809 BD; etc. (cf. growe, 1488 B; wox, 1488 D). Even A occasionally omits the ending before a vowel: thus,—wrong, 5839 ACD (-e B); hold, 7066 AB (-e C, -en D).

IX. -e (elided) before h: 
wonne hym, 28 (D †).
founde his, 3378 (-d D, fonde B, fond C).
come he, 3396.
take here (dat.), 3986.
y-yeue hym, 4218 (i-yeue BC, yeue D †).

X. Apocope of -e (before consonants):
Genuine cases are rare. Such are perhaps,—
fond no, 2263 (-e B).
come this, 6560 (-yn C, -en D).

Apparent cases occur now and then, but usually disappear on comparison of MSS. Examples are,—
come to, 2198 A. hold my, 4762 D.
spoke with, 2565 D. wretë to, 7666 C.
bygonne to, 3092 A. ybore was, 8013 A.

vnderstonde god, 8161 B.

XI. Hiatus.
Hiatus very rarely occurs, and is of course always easily corrected by adding -n. Examples are,—
boundë in, 663 A (-en B, -yn CD).³
spokë in, 3298 D (-en AB, -yn C).
iboundë in, 4891 A (-yn CD, ybounden B).
broke alday, 5280 C (-en ABD).

1 In A read hem[ne]s. 2 In A supply [I]. ³ Supply [hym] in C.
songé also, 7008 C (-en hadde AB, sungen had[de] D).

XII. Perfect-participle of seyen.

The perfect participle of *seyn* has various forms. The usual form before vowels and consonants is *slayn* (var. D sleyn, slayn(e) ; BD slayn(e) ; B sleyn(e) ; C slain) : cf. 608, 1420, 4301 BCD, 4940, 5860, 6144, 6417, 7299, 7864, 7867 C, 7868, 8170, 8183. For *slay* (p. p.) *youre self*, 5896 A, read *slayn* (so BC, slayn(e) anon D).

In rhyme we find,—*slayn*, 5855 f (slayne D) (: desdayn n.), and *sleyn*, 6590 f (-ne B, slayn CD) (: ayen AD, a(ein B, a(ein C) ; but also *slawe*, 3563 f (-w D) (: shawe n.), 5546 f (: withdrawe p.p.), 5890 f (: drawe p.p.). In 5903 either *slay[e]n* (cf. ten Brink, § 196 : "wohl niemals *slayen" or *sleyen* must be read in the interior of the verse, —My (Myn C) selue (self B, seluyn C, siff D, selfe G) I wolde (wolde I C) haue (han B, a C) *slayn* (slawe C, slayne DG) quod she tho (too D). Mr. Austin's collation of Cp. and the John's MS. has no note on this line.

XIII. Perfect-participle of *seen*.

seyn, (i.) 174 (seýn C)¹, 3063 f (: ayen : frayn), 7962 (sen C, seyn [with] B). (ii.) 3902 (sen C)², 5624³.—*yseyn* with, 6811 (sen C, sené D) ; *beseyn* that, 2347 (by- BD).

seighen byfore, 5639 A (seyn BD) ; seyghen byfore, 5660 A (seyn(e) B, seyn D).

yseye, 1253 (yseyn B, seyn CD).

sen at, 6804 C (wyst A, wist(e) BD).

sene, 3713 f (seene B) (: I wene *ind.*), 6637 f (-ee- B, ysen D) (: shene adj. *postpos.*), 7259 f (-ee- B) (: queene), 8078 f (-ee- B) (: tene n.) ; sene his, 8117 (seen B, sen D †) ; sene, 3731 ( ee- B, seyn D), 6394 (sen D).

yscene, 700 f ([y]sene C, ysene D) (: queene) ; isene, 6269 f (i-seene B, [i]sene D) (: tene n. : shene adj. *def.*).

Note.—The forms in -ne represent the A.S. adjectives gesene (gesýne) : cf. ten Brink, § 148.

§ 123. Præterito-present verbs.

(i.) *wot*, *not*, *oughte* ; (ii.) *kan*, *dar*, *thar* ; (iii.) *shal* ; (iv.) *may* ; (v.) *not*.

I. *wot*.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *wot*, *woot*, (i.) 670 (-e BD)⁴, 2087 (-e BD)⁵, 2109 (-e D † ; C †), etc. ; (ii.) 1829 (-e BD), 2525 (-e D)⁶,

¹ In B read *jot* for *pat*. ² In A supply *[a]*. ³ In D dele *(for)*. ⁴ Supply *[for]* in D. ⁵ Supply *[wot]* in A. Cf. 1621. ⁶ Supply *[woot]* in D.
Observations on the Language

2785 (not(e) D, wot [I] C; B †), 5044 (what D, wote pl. C), etc.; wot(e), 1960 ABD (wot C)\(^1\).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. wost, (i.) (ii.) 633 (wyst C)\(^2\), 717 (-e) B, 721 f (-e B, wyst C), 882 (wyst C), 2451 f (-e B)\(^3\), 2493 f (wist C), 2514 (wot D; D (?)}, 2908 f, 3088 f, 3098, 3141 f, 3181, 4930 (wotist D), 5262 f (-e D, wooste B), 5742 (-e) D, 6281 f (wooste B, wist C, woste D), 6705 (-e) D, wist C), etc. [Var. BD wost; B (633) whost.]-wostow, 588, 775, 781, 851 (wastow B, wyst thou C, wost thou D), 901, 3091. [Var. CD wost thou; D wost thou.]

Rhyme words.—most adv. (721, 2451, 2493, 5262, 6281), almost (2908, 3141), best n. (3088, 3141), ost n. (5262, 6281).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. wot, woot, (i.) (ii.) 1975 f (wote C) (wot pred. adj. sg.) cf. 826 (A f), 2080, 2711, etc. B shows less liking for wot(e) and more for woot than in the 1 pers.; C has wot(e) in 807.—for-wot, 5733 A (for-woot B, forexwitt D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. we wote alle, 5044 C † (should be singular).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. wetǝ wel, 1323 AC (-en B, wite D); witǝ † what, 2737 D.—wotǝ ye, 3686 (-oo B, wot C †); wot ye, 3501 (-oo B, what C, wytǝ D), 3739 (-e D, woot B), 5916 (-oo B, wotǝ CD); wot your, 3621 (-e D, wetǝ C); wot that, 1665 (-oo B, wetyun C, wytǝ D), 5974\(^4\); wot the, 2731 (-e D, wetǝ C), 5576 (woote B); wot, 2281 f (woote B, he wrote † D) (not nescio), 5923 f (woote B, wote D) (hot pred. adj. sg.).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. weten folk, 4860 (witen B, wetyn C, know[e] D); wotyn † that, 7179 C (witen ABD); wot no, 1978 (-e B; D †).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. wyste, 3682 f (wist CD) (vnriste)\(^5\); wyst I, 1644 (-e B, wiste C, wist D)\(^6\); 2968 (wiste B, woste C), 3210 (wiste B, wost C, wist D).\(^7\)

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. wisteth thou, 4486 C (but see under subj. 2 sg.).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. wiste, wyste, 811 f (-t D; C †), 3112 (-[e] † D)\(^8\), 4071 f (-t C), 4095 f, 8028 f (wist D);-[e] what, 7231 (-e B, om. † C);-[e] wel, 8087 (-e D); -e, 565 (-t he D, wote he C)\(^9\), 4634 (-t D); -t he, 76 (west B, woste C), 301 (-e B, wostǝ he C)\(^10\), 3367

---

\(^1\) BD regularly add -e, which is never sounded, however, though false readings sometimes force one either to pronounce it or to emend the verse by a comparison of MSS. (thus, 670 D).

\(^2\) Wyst might be called pret. subj. in this line.\(^3\) Protasis.

\(^3\) Supply [that] in C; [a] in D.

\(^4\) "Whi hastow mad Troylus to me vnriste That neucre yet agylte hym that I wyate."

\(^5\) Supply [as] in D.

\(^6\) Supply [that] in A.

\(^7\) Read tellè [me] in D.

\(^8\) Supply [as] in D.

\(^9\) But supply [how] in C, and read woste he.
(-e B, -t D); 1 -e he, 3321 † C; woste † alle, 3538 C (wiste[e] † D); wist † non, 2646 D.


Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. wyste, 5824 f (wiste BCD) (: kyste pret. ind. 3 sg.); wyst[e] neuer, 6383 (wiste B); wyst what, 2646 (wiste B, woste al C, wist † non sg. D).

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. wiste, wyste, 678 f (wist D), 4119 f (woste C), 4350 (-[e] D, woste C); -[e], 765 (-e BC), 6285 (-e BD, nyste C); -e how, 3944 (-[e] D); wist I, 8104 (-e B, wist † hou D); wist[e] outrely, 4328 (-e B, woste C, wist D).

Rhyme words.—liste pres. subj. 3 sg. (678), kyste pret. ind. 3 sg. (4119).

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. Sith I so loth was that thi selfe it wyste, 3211 f (wiste B, wost C †, wyst D) (: triste pres. ind. 1 sg.: lyste pres. subj. 3 sg.).

Note.—In 4486 C wistist thou is used in a subjunctive construction (= if thou didst know). Cpr. and John’s have wystistow; wistow ABG, wist thou D, which make a disagreeable 9-syl. line and are not grammatical, should be emended (see § 107).

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. wiste, wyste, 3307 (-[e] D, woste[e] B, woste C), 4610 f (-t C) 2 (: liste pret. subj. 3 sg.: twyste same 3), 7269 (woste C); -e, 6005 (-t D); wist he, 5580 (-e BCD); wystö of, 1830 (woste C, wist D). 4

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl. wyste, 2267 f (wiste BC, wyst D) (: lyste pres. subj. 3 sg.); -e, 1224 (wiste C, wist BD); wiste how, 6280 (wist D).

Inf. wyte, wite, 1397 (wyten C, wytyn † D), 3991 (wete C); wete, 6468 (wit as B, wete as D).

Perf. Part. wist, wyst, (i.) 513 (-e B), 615 (-e B), 3116 (wost C), 3246 f (-e B) (: lyst pres. ind. 3 sg.: tryst n.), etc., etc. For vnwist, vnwyist, vnwist, (i.) (ii.) cf. 2594, 3445, 3612, etc.

II. not.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. not, (i.) (ii.) 410 (wot(e) † D), 1626, 2282 f (note D) (: wot pres. ind. 2 pl.), 3851, 4320, 5463 (nott D), 6500 (knowe † D), 7530 (knowe † D); cf. 426, 1120, 2291, 2451, 2551, 2963, 4495, 4698, 4842, 6589. [Var. B not; D not(e).]

1 Supply [wel] in D.  2 3 pl. in E †.  3 it wyste † A.  4 All (As D) wolde (wold CD) I that noon (so ABG, no man CD) wyste (woste C, wist DG) of this thought (-e B). No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.
Observations on the Language

§ 123.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing.  nöst, (i.) 5304 (wöst C, knowest D) 1, 5763 (wöst C 2, knowest D).
Pres. Ind. 3 Sing.  not, 800 (noot B, not(e) D). 3

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing.  nyiste, 356 f (-t CD), 4193 f (-t C), 5011, 5341, 4 5794 f (I nyiste D); nyiste[e], 6381 (-e B), 7566 (-e B, nist 5 what D; C ŧ); nyiste how, 7145 (-t B ŧ). 5

Rhyme words.—lyste pret. subj. 3 sg. (356), kyste ind. 3 sg. (4193), ind. 3 pl. (5794), twyste inf. (5794).

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing.  nyste, 6285 C (wist[e] A, wiste BD).
Pret. Subj. 3 Sing.  nyiste[e], 7791 (-e ŧ C, nist[e] D); nyiste, 494 (om. ŧ D). 6

Note.—The forms nyist thou in 4269 C and nyiste thou in 4965 D are blunders for nylt thou.

III. oughte.

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing.  ought[e] konne, 647 (ouȝte C, me ȝghte to ŧ D) 7; ought[e] be, 7710 (auȝte C); I ne ought[e] not, 1805 (ne auȝt[e] B, ne auȝte C, I ouȝt[e] not D); oughte, 7002 (auȝte C, ought D); ought half, 5927 (auȝte C). 9

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing.  oughtest, 8069; oughtestow, 6908 (auȝtisthough C, oughtest thou D); ouȝtist, 649 D. (But see § 107.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing.  oughte, 649 (om. ŧ C, ouȝtist D), 3106 f (-t D; 3e ouȝt pl. C) 10, 3325 ([e] B, auȝte ŧ to C, ouȝt ŧ be D), 3423 f (-t D), 3522 f (-t CD), 5805 ([e] D, hem owen ŧ to B, auȝte ŧ to C), 7357 f (-t D, nouȝt adv. ŧ C), 7919 ([e] B, auȝte C ŧ, auȝt[e] D), 8006 ([e] D, auȝte ŧ to C) 11; cf. 5971. [Var. B auȝhte; C auȝte, ouȝt; D ouȝht.—ouȝt[e], 710 (auȝte ŧ C, ouȝt[e] D), 744 (ouȝhte B, auȝte ŧ C, ouȝt ŧ D); auȝt[e], 423 (auȝt[e] B, auȝte C, ouȝt ŧ euere D).—ouȝte, 2683 (thouȝt ŧ C, ouȝt ŧ thei D), 3832 (-t BD), 5058 (-t BD), 5233 (-t D; auȝt 3 pl. B) 12 [Var. B auȝhte, auȝht; C auȝte, ouȝte; D ouȝht.—ouȝte, he, 2322 (-t B, auȝte C, ouȝt ŧ 3e 2 pl. D).—ouȝt (bef. vowel), 1691 (auȝht B, auȝte C, ouȝt D) 13—ouȝte, 3871 ŧ A ([e] B, auȝte ŧ C, ouȝt[e] D); ought ŧ the, 5971 (auȝt[e] lasse B, auȝte lasse C, ought ŧ the D).—out, 14 7459 (ouȝt BD, auȝte C).

1 Dele the second (nat) in D.
2 9-syl. in C.
3 "If thou thus deye and she not whi it is." The distinction in sense between the subjunctive deye and the indicative not in this verse is marked.
4 Supply [So] in A.
6 Read [she] in C.
7 Read conne for comne in C.
8 Supply [to] in D.
9 Supply [that] in D.
10 Supply [de] in D.
11 Impersonal. Supply [thatis] in D.
12 In C dele (Hadde).
13 C is too long.
14 "It out i-now suffise."
Note.—In 1691, 2683, 5805, 8006, oughte is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense. In 649, 2683, 3106, 3423, 3522, 5805, 8006, the construction is impersonal with the dative (the, hym, here, hem oughte); cf. 647 D (me ough te to?). Rhyme words.—wroughte ind. 1 sg. (3106, 7357), me thoughte ind. (3106), bisoughte ind. 3 sg. (3423), broughte ind. 3 sg. (3522).

Pret. Ind. 2 pl. oght † 3e, 2322 D; 3e † ouzt, 3106 f C. (See under pret. ind. 3 sg.). (In sense of present tense.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. oughte, 1997 f A (aughte B) (: broughte ind. 3 pl. : thoughte ind. 3 sg.), 4275 (aughten B, ough C, ouzt D)¹; oughte, 4637 (t B, ouzt C, oght D); aught of, 5233 B †; oght † thei, 2683 D.

Note.—In 1997 and 2683 oughte is past in sense; in the rest of the cases above cited it is present in sense.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing. oughte, 7708 (auhte C, ough D).

IV. kan.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. kan, (i.) (ii.) 11, 459, 492, 718, 1044, 2243, 2530, 2890, 7731; cf. 1635 f, 7304 f, 8132 f. [Var. CD can; B kann(e); D cann(e).]

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. kannst, (i.) (ii.) 511 (can C), 2607,² 2697, 3141, 5154 (ka[n]st B), 7644; cf. 1045 D, 5759 C. [Var. CD canst; D cans(e).]—canstow, 757 (kanstow B, c. thou CD)³; kannstow, 5122 (canstu C, cans(e) thou D).—thow kan wel endite, 7655 (kanst B, canst C, cans(e) D)⁴.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. kan, can, (i.) (ii.) 147, 203, 234 f, 259 (may † D), 3002 (gan † B, 3e can C), 5774, 6120, 6134, 7136 f, 7573; cf. 1291 f, 1459 f, 6357 f. [Var. D cann(e).]—kan(e), 4666 A (kan B, can D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. konne, 1867 f (cunne C, kun D †) (: bygonne p.p. : sonne); kon haue, 6481 (kan B, can CD).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. konne, 776 f (cunne C, conne D) (: wonne p.p.), 2551 f (cunne C, conne D)⁵ (: ronne p.p.), 2827 f (kanne B, cunne C, kun D) (: wonne p.p.); konne, 985 (kun D, cunne † conseyl C), 1374⁶ (kanne B, cunne C, kun D); can † now, 3002 C; can † don, 5856 C; kan ye, 4405 (can C, kunne † D); kan recorde, 6180 (can C †, kann C).  


¹ Supply [pleyne] in B, [the] in C.
² Supply [wel] in C.
³ Supply [non] in D.
⁴ Supply [this] in C.
⁵ Indirect question.
⁶ Conditional; perhaps subjunctive.
1001 (kun D, cunnyn an C); conne how, 1921 C (pret. subj. ? ABD); konne telle, 1980 (kan B, can CD); kan leye, 559 (cunne C, can D); kan not, 1357 (can CD), 2875 (may † D); kan sen, 7476 (can D, c. ouxt sg. C)1; kan a, 6712 (can CD).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. koude, kowde, coude, 629 (-e] D), 798 BC (-[e] D, wolde A), 2163 f (-d D) (loude adv.), 2263 (-[e] D), 2758 (coute D, koude she BCp.), 3276 f (cloude), 3454 (coute D), 3521 f (-d D) (loude adv.), 3800 (B † D †), 3802 (coute D), 4110 (coute C), 4564 (myght[e] D), 5237 (C † (?)), 6452 (coute B), 6651, 7139; koude, kowde, 193 (coute C, couth D), 367 (kouth B, coude C, couth wel D),2 660 (coude B, curere † Cc, couth D), 3054 (coude C, couth D), 3480 (om. † B; coude CD),3 3536 (coude C, cowd † wel D), 7110 (coude CD),4 7991 (couthē † wel C; D †); koude he, 1144 (cowd D; A †),5 3317 (coude C, couth D), 4638 (coude C, coute D), 8092 (coude D, koude † not B); koude his, 665 B (coude C, cowd D, koude (al) his A); koude here (gen. sg.), 5337 (myghte B, myzte C, myght D); koudē he, 4207 (coudē he C, cowdē he D; B †).

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. koudest neuere, 622 (coudest B, coudyst C, coudist D).

Pret. Ind. 2, 3 Pl. koude, 7480 (coude CD); -ë ye, 4200 (coude C; cowde † D); kowde how, 1921 (koude B, coute D, cunne C) (subj.?).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. if I konne, 1134 f (kun D) (: begunne p.p.).

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. if that thow konne, 2582 f (cunne C, kunne D) (: wonne p.p.).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. I not whether ye ... konne, 2551 f (cunne C, conné D) (: ronne p.p.); ye ye konne, 5978 f (cunne C) (: ywonne p.p.).6

Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. if they kan sen, 7476 (can D, can † ouxt sg. C).6

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. koude, kowde, 3342 (coute D, thow I coude † C), 4344 (coude C †, coute D); koude, kowde, 1206 (coude C, cowd † D), 2667 (cow(e)de A, coude C, cowd [1] D), 3138 (coude C, coute D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. who koude telle, 6630 (coude D, wil C †).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. koude, 7335 (coute C, coude D); koude han, 8046 (coude haue D, wolde † a C).

1 Perhaps subjunctive. Supply [of?] in A. 2 Read wel couth in D. 3 Read mich[e] in D. 4 Read ye[e] in CD. 5 In this line koude he is concessive (= though he could). 6 Perhaps indicative. In 7476 A supply [of].
Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. koude, 7700 (couth † pleyne C, coude † p. D);
kowde how, 1921 (koude B, couth D, cunne ind. † C) (ind. ?).
Note.—Of the above cited subjunctives, the following are in apodosis, and
therefore perhaps doubtful: 1206, 1921, 2667, 3133, 3342, 4344, 6630,
7335, 8046. The rest are in protasis, except as indicated in the citation.
Inf. konne, 2925 f (cunne C, kun D) (: y-ronne p.p.), 3219 f (cunne
C, kun D) (: sonne), 7767 (cunne C, kenne D); konne, 647 (come †
C; know[e] † D (?)).
Perf. Part. kouth in, 4723 A (B † D †); vnkouth, (i.) 1236 (-e)
AD), 4639 (-e BD, vnkow A).

V. dar
Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. dar, (i.) (ii.) 396, 451, 1258, 1622,² 2834, 2946,
3180 (dare ? CD),³ 3503, 4108, 5272, 5434, 7659, 7990 (D †), etc.
[Var. CD dar(e).]
Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. darst not, 768 (C ?); dar not, 6776 (darst BC,
darst(e) D)³; dastow, 7642 (dastow B, durstist † thou C, darst(e)
thou D).
Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. dar, 5863 (-e CD),⁴ 6130 (-e CD),⁵ 6566
(durste D).
Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. dar ye, 2832 (-e C, dore † D (?)).
Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. dorste, 1859 (durste C, durst D).
Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. dorstepow, 767 (durstepow thou C, trist † thou D).⁶
(Perhaps subjunctive, see § 106.)
Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. dorste, 1287 (durste C, durste[e] D), 7243 (-e B,
durste † 3ow C, durste D); dorste[e] yow, 27 (-e B, durste[e] D);⁷
dorste, 3294 (-e B, durste C, durst D) (cf. 5334, 7073); dorste hire
(acc.), 7091 (-e B, durste C, durst † compleine D)⁸; dorste he, 503
(durste C, durst D); durste hire (acc.), 98 B (durste C, durste mone
D, dorste (make) hire A).
Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. So as they dorste (dorsten G, dorste B, durste C,
durst D) how (hough G, so as C, how ferre D) they woldeu (wolde
C Cp., wold D) proce, 3297.
Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. dorste, 7667 [-e B]; dorste, 3219 (-e BD), 7532
(-e leyne † C)⁹; dorste I, 924 (-e seye BD, -e seye C), 3212 (-e C),
6720 (-e CD), 6915 (-e CD); dorste have, 899 (durste a C †); dorste,

¹ Supply [be-] in B. ² CD should be emended by means of AB.
³ Read [rise] in D. ⁴ Supply [fere] in B. ⁵ C is defective.
⁸ Read pleyne for compleyne in C. ⁹ Supply [that] in D.
2521 (-t B, -e C, [-e] D)\.  [CD have -u- in all these cases, AB -o-.]

Pret. Subj. 2 Sing.  See Pret. Ind. 2 Sing.

Pret. Subj. 3 Sing.  desiring . . . to have here herte dere In swych a plyt she dorste\[e\] make hym chere, 4396 (durste C, that sche durst \(\dagger\) him make D).

Note.—Of these instances of the subjunctive preterite (1, 3. person), the following, being in protasis, may be regarded as certain: 2521, 3219, 6915, 7708. The following are in apodosis (as, \(\textit{a dorste leye} \ i. \ e. \ \textit{wager}\): 599, 924, 6720, 7532, 7667; cf. \textit{how dorst} I), 3212.

Pret. Subj. 2 Pl.  And yf so be that pes her-after take . . . Why lord the sorwe and wo ye wolden make That ye ne dorste come ayen for shame, 6227 (dorste\[e\] B, durstyn C, durste D) (= because you would not, or did not, dare).

Infin. to dorste don, 7203 (durste (to) do B, to dore. den C\(\ddagger\), to doo \(\dagger\) D).

VI. \textit{thar}.


Pret. Subj. 3 Sing.  thurst, 3414, in which the correct reading seems to be: \textit{Yow thurst} neuer han the more fere. The variants are curious: Yow dorste (so A, Thow thurst B, He thourste C, Yow durst D, 3ou thurst G, 3ow thurst Cpg., Ye thorst John's, Yow thurst Harl. 2392) haue neuer (so AD John's, neure han BCG Cpg.).

VII. \textit{shal}.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing.  shal, (i.) 398 (sal B), 922 f (shalle B)\(\ddagger\), 1047 f, 1912 f, 2094 CD (wil A, wol B), 3633 (ow \(\dagger\) D)\(\ddagger\), 4168 f, 4806 f, 7210, 7680 f, etc.  [Var. C schal; D shalH.]

Rhyme words.—general (922, 4806), special (1047), fyndal (4806), al (922, 1047, 1912, 4168, 7680).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing.  shalt, (i.) (ii.) 349 (shal thow B, that \(\dagger\) C), 808, 2041 (shal trow[e] B, schal trostyn C), 2598 (schat C)\(\ddagger\), 3546 (xat C)\(\ddagger\), 5206 (schat C)\(\ddagger\), 5266 (schat C, shalt[e] D), 5315 (shalt\(\ddagger\) this D), 6767 (shalt[e] D), 7657 (schat C, shalt[e] D), 7662 (shal B, schat C, shalt[e] D)\(\ddagger\), 7671 (shal B, schat C), 7825 (-\(\ddagger\) D)\(\ddagger\), etc.  [Var. C schalt.]—shaltow, 803 (schuldyst \(\dagger\) thou C, thou shalt \(\dagger\) have D), 5271 (shaltow(e) B; \(\textit{pret.} \ C \; ; \ F D\)\(\dagger\), 6391 (shalH thou D).

1 Scansion doubtful.  2 "Now may I iape of the if that I shal."  3 "And by that feith I shal (= owe) Pryam of Troye."  4 9-syl. in D.

5 Supply \(\textit{[for]} \) in A, \(\textit{[in]} \) in D.  6 Supply \(\textit{[this]} \) in A.  7 Read \(\textit{see[ne]} \) in D.
§ 123.

of Chaucer's Troilus.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. shal, (i.) 236, 651, 1131 f (schalle B †) (: al : wal), 2358, 3640 (shalt † A, wol D), 5255, etc. [Var. BC schal; D shall, shaH, shat.]

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 2106, 3503 (shullen not B)¹, 5068, 5452, 5983 (schal † 3e C), 6178, 6761 (cf. 804 † D, 5456 D, 6185 † C); (ii.) shul here (adu.), 6841. —shulle, 3794 (shul BD, schuln C), 5984 (shal B, shaH D, schal † eueremore C); we schul[le]n twynne, 5932 C (pret. ABD). [Var. C schal, schul; D shaH, shat.]

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 1177, 6151, 7127, etc., etc.; (ii.) shal ek, 6133; shul ek, 6147; shul han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. shal, shul, (i.) 5449, 7256, 7257, etc. etc. (ii.) shal it, 1365; shal han, 122. [Var. BC schal; C schul; D shaH.]

Pret.³ I Sing. solde, 923 ([e] D)⁴, 1025 f (D †) (: nold 1 sg.), 1257 ([e] D), 1438 ([e] BD), 3219 ([e] D), 3239 ([e] BD), 3335 f (-d D) (: wolde 3 sg.), 5118, 5298 f (-d B) (: wolde 3 sg.), 6241 ([e] B); shold[e] don, 1474 (-e C; A †). [Var. B solde; C schulde; D shulde.—shold[e] to, 2291 (-d B, -[e] hym D, schuldë him C); cf. 5271 D †, 6850 † C.—sholde, 17 (-e sterve † D), 1410, 2349, 3435, 6023, etc., etc. [Var. B shold, schold; C schulde; D shold, should, shulde.—shuld I, 8095 (shold B, shulde D).—sholde han, 5213 (shulde haue D, schulde also C); sholdë haue, 5228 (-[e] B, schulde C, shulde D).

Pret. 2 Sing. sholdest, 774 (schuldyst C, sholdist D); sholdestow, 6714 (schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D); shuldestow, 7651 (shold’estow B, schuldist thow C, shuldest thou D). Cf. 803 † C, 3124 † D, 5271 † C.

Note.—Of these 774, 6714, 7651, may perhaps be regarded as subjunctives see § 107).

Pret. 3 Sing. solde, shulde, 76 f (-d D), 521 f, 728, 2120 (B †), 3374 f (-d D), 3603, 4511 f, 4878 f, 5852 f, 6185 (we † shul[le] C),⁵ 6474 f, 6610 (-e † D), 6621 (-e C), 6825 (solde B), 7269 f, 7364 (D †), 8127 f, etc., etc. [Var. BD shold[e]; C scholde, schulde.—sholde,

¹ In C read ly[ge]n.
² "Intendestow that we shul here bleue" (var. be-leue).
³ In the case of solde, -en, wold, -en, and nold, -en no attempt is made to distinguish between the indicative and the subjunctive.
⁴ In C supply [that].
⁵ "Vs solde neyther lakke gold(e) ne gere" (impersonal).
Observations on the Language

shold, 1498, 3826 (D?), 7913. [Var. C schulde; D shulde.] Before he, his, hym, here (acc.), han (inf.), have (inf.),—sholde, shulde, shold, shuld, 228, 813, ([-e] † he D), 1638, 2841, 3399, 3856, 3924, 6417, 7636 ABD. [Var. B shold, scholde; CD shulde.]—sholde holde, 4726 ([-e] BD).—sholde destroyed, 68 (shulde † be D); sholde cause, 5726 (shulde D); cf. sholde, shold, schulde, shulde, 306 † A, 2381 CD, 7427 CD, 7767 † C.

Rhyme words.—Only wold and nolde.

Pret. 1 Pl. sholden, (i.) 5932 (schul[le]n C, shulde D); shuld[en] al, 8188 A (sholden B); schulde, 5288 † C.

Pret. 2 Pl. I. sholden, (i.) 4737 ([-e] B, -yn D)1, 6027 (-e CD), 6219 (-e BD, -yn C); sholdyn, 3503 † D. II. sholde, 2993 (-en B, [-e] B), 3626 f (d D) (: nolde pl.), 6171 (-on B, -en D, -yn C †), 7243 (-en B)2. —shulde, 6488 (shold B, schulde C, shulden D); sholde, 3719 † C; shulde † ye, 4973 C6. —louen sholde on, 3639 (sholden louen oon B, schulde louyn on C, shold love on D). [Var. to I., C schulde, schuldy; D shulde. Var. to II., C scholde; D shulde, shulden.]

Pret. 3 Pl. sholten, (i.) 73 (-e C, [-e] D), 3386 ([e] B, xulde C, shold † fle D),3 3799 (-e B, -d anon sg. † D; line om. † C), 4798 (-e C, [-e] D); cf. schuldyn, 6171 C †. [Var. C schulde.]—sholden, 2923 ([-e] B, -en D, schulden C), 6989 f (schold B, schulde C, shulde D †) (: wolde ind. 3 sg.); shulde, 1496 (schulde C, shold B, shold[e] D); shulde, 4681 (sholde B, shold cause D); sholde han (inf.), 872 (schulde C, shold D),4 3273 (shold D, schulde a C); sholde his, 4815 (-d D, schulde C)—sholde hire (gen. pl.), 4848 (-en B, -yn D, schulde C).

Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. shulle, 5288 (shul B, shaff D, schulde † C).5

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. shul putte, 3719 (sholde † C, shal † he ind. D).

Note.—5288 is after though (hypothetical future case); 3719 is in protasis.

VIII. may.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. may, (i.) (ii.) 922 6, 1008 (mow B, mow D), 1563 f (3 sg. CD), 2183 7, 7435 f, 7772 f, 7984 f, 8059 f.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. (i.) (ii.) In A,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 2070, 2450, etc., etc.; maist, 5699. In B,—mayst, 600, 806, 1045, 5244; maist, 2070, 2450, and usually. In C,—mayst, 2450, 3027,

1 Supply [that] in D.
2 9-syl.
3 Dele (the) in C.
4 Insert [led] in C; [in in D.
5 9-syl. in C; but supply [a].
6 Supply [I] in B.
7 Supply [not] in D.
§ 123.]  

of Chaucer's Troilus.

etc.; mayst, 619, 806, 2070, etc.; may3 thyn, 6633; mayt, 600, 7795. In D,—mayst, 619, 806, 1045, etc., etc.; maist, 5208, 5244, etc.; maist(e), 5295; may, 600.

maytow, 623 (mayst thou CD), 673 (mayst thou C, mayst thou D), 2101 (mayst thou CD), 3738 (mayst thou C, mayst thou D), 4927 (mayst thou C, maist thou D), 7522 (mayst thou C, maist(e) thou D), 8074 (maist(e) thou D); cf. 5208 B, 7493 B. [Var. B maistow.]

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. may, (i.) 147, 253, 3831 f, 3901 f, 4428 f, 5826 f, 6512 f, 7354 f, etc.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. may, (i.) 987, 1663, 6176, 6179 C, 6191, 6752 C, 6753, 6792 (That we may). (ii.) 2416, 6179 ABC; may have, 6887 (D t)—mow, 6168 (mow B, now C, may D (i)).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. may (i.) 54 (shall D), 1490, 3688, 4124 D, 4843 D, 4956, 5519, 5555 (C D t)7, 5856 (can C), 5990 (D t)8, 6013, 6299, 6320, 7360, 7698, 7744. (ii.) 30, 4843 ABC, 7987; may his, 3752; may here (acc.), 3528 (C t); may here (gen. sg.), 8139 (B t); may here (inf.), 5747 BC (A D t), 7000 (A t), 7315 (mow B, schul C), 7679 (schul C), 7952.—mowen ellys, 5992 (-e B, moun dissyll. C, mow[e] D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. may, (i.) 120, 644, 756 (moun monosyll. C), 2242 (may it? C)11, 2732, 4124 (may t ye 2 pl. D), 4307 (C t, mowen D t), 4853, 4932, 5710, 6118, 6706, 7495 (mough D). (ii.) 839 (C t), 4056, 8116 (om. B t (i)), 8213.—mowé not, 5740 ABD (the passage is not in C). [In several of the instances cited the subject is men.]

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. may, (i.) 863, 1530, 2486 f, 3561, 6324, 6785 f, 6979, 7551 f, 8080 f.15

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. may, (i.) 1017 BCD (wol A), 1616, 1949, 2875, 5941 (schal C), 6262 f, 7159 f. (ii.) 3819 (may t the C).17—mowé

neure, 959 A (may BCD).

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 1 Sing. myghte, 4120 [-e] B, myȝte C, myȝte D); mygh[te], 1797 (myght[e] BD, myȝte C); myghte, 3230 (myȝte C, might D); myght 18 (bec. vowels), 19 D, 1651, 3473, 3892, 7460; myght hym, 3744 (myȝte C); _e herë (acc.), 6972 (-t B,

1 Supply [But] in D.
2 Read de[ue]l in C.
3 9-syl. in CD.
4 Indirect question.
5 9-syl. Perhaps subjunctive.
6 Supply [that] in D.
7 Dele (as) in A.
9 Supply [an]l in D.
10 Purpose-clause. C reads: what may me now the calle. Supply [now] in D.
11 C reads: what may I now the calle.
12 C reads: what may I now the calle. Supply [now] in D.
13 9-syl. But read mowen or which[e]? D has whiche. Read [rejurne] in D.
14 Several of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.
15 Supply [that] in D.
16 Some of these are hardly to be distinguished from indicatives.
17 Var. C myȝte (all), D might.

Pret. 2 Sing. myȝtest, 7890 (myȝtist C, mightest D †); myȝtestow, 4924 AB.

Note.—7890 is perhaps subjunctive (see § 107).—In 619, readings vary: Parauer thou myght (so ABG, mayt C, mayt D) after swych on longe. (No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.)

Pret. Ind. and Subj. 3 Sing. myȝthe, 373 (myȝt[e] B), 1075 AB, 2204 f, 2379 f (-t C), 26553, 2838 (-t † the D), 3186, 3925 f (-t B, myȝt C, miȝt D),4 4697 f (-t B), 4822 (-[e] B),5 4823 (-[e] B), 5647 (-[e] B), 5849 f (myȝt C), 5880 f (myȝt C), 6551 f (myȝt C), 6874 f, 6995 f (myȝt C), 7155 (-[e] B), 7157 (-[e] B), 7192 f (-t B, myȝt C), 7382 f, 7998 f. [Var. D myȝt[e] or myȝt[e] in most of the verses above-cited; C myȝte.—myȝth[e], 1029 (-e C), 1536 (-e C), 2064 (-e BC) 6, 2499 (-e C, myȝth[e] B), 2525 (-e C) 7, 3282, 3734 (myȝte ? A) 8, 4351 (-e BC, miȝt † not D), 4445 (-e CD), 5792 (-e C, -e † other B), 6535 (-e C), 7171 (-e C), 7566 f (-e B), 7583 B (miȝt[e] D, see below), 8100; cf. 1656, 4564 D. [Var. BD myȝt[e]; C myȝte, myȝt[e]; D miȝte.—myȝhte, 2660 (myȝth B; D(?)), 2941, 3362, 5485, 6923 (myȝt C); cf. 1539, 5033. [Var. B myȝth (in all except 2660); C myȝte; D myȝht, might (in all).]—myȝht (bef. vowels), 638 (-e C), 2135 (myȝtē † no C, might † no D), 3442, 4002 (-e C), 7788 (-e C); cf. 2922, 4033. [Var. C myȝte, myȝt; D miȝt.]—myȝhte his, 2411 (-t BD); myȝhte him, 562 (-t BD); myȝhte he, 370 (-e C), 3923 (-e C); -t haue (inf.), 1277 (-e han B, miȝtē † han C, might[e] haue D), 1796 (-t han C), 7102 (-t han B, -e a C); might he, 1519 (myȝht B, miȝt C); cf. 823, 2956, 3728, 3955, 4911, 6645, 7583. [Var. BC myȝt; C myȝte; D might, miȝt.]—myȝht holden, 5260 (may C); myȝht neuere, 5644 AB (might D; not in C); myȝht to, 8151 AB (miȝt D); myȝt non, 7317 C (might D, may A, may it B); cf. 1539 † D, 2135 † D, 3264 † D, 4351 † D, 5033 † D; myȝte, 1739 † C, 5370 † C (myȝht D).—myȝhtē here (inf.), 3586 ([e] BD, myȝtē C); myȝhtē † other, 5792 B; myȝhtē † here (acc.), 1056 A (myȝte B, might D).

1 Supply [to] in A.
2 How myȝht (myȝte C, myȝt D) I (om. B) than (than C) do (don BC Cp. John’s, doo D) quod Troylius.
3 Supply [wel] in D.
4 Supply [that] in C
5 CD are too short, even if -e be read.
6 Supply [me] in C.
7 Supply [wel] in D.
8 For myȝte a dedē man in A, read myȝhtē dedē men.
9 Read her[te] in A.
Rhyme words.—with sighte (2379), from sighte (6995), in highte (7192), bryghte adj. pl. or adv. (7382), plighte pret. ind. 3 sg. (2204), sighte, syghte, pret. ind. 3 sg. (3925, 6880, 7998), twyghte pret. ind. 3 sg. (5849), alighte pret. ind. 3 sg. (6551, 7382), highte pret. ind. 3 sg. (7998), byhyght[e] pret. ind. 3 sg. (byhighte B, behyȝt[e] C, behight[e] D) (7566), byhight[e] pret. subj. 3 sg. (bhighte B, behyte C, behight[e] D) (6374), lyghte inf. (3925, 6995), fighte inf. (4697), dyghte inf. (5849).

Pret. 1 Pl. myghte, 1596 (-en B, -yn D, myȝtyn C †); myghten, (i.) 6830 (-e B, myȝtyn C, might[e] D).

Pret. 2 Pl. myghte, 6172 (-en B, myȝtyn C, myght[e] D).

Pret. 3 Pl. myȝhten, (i.) 1815 (myȝte C, myȝht[e] D), 2524 (-[e] B, myȝtyn in C, might[en] in D), 2709 f (myȝtyn C, mightyn D).—myȝhten, 614 (-[e] BD, myȝtyn C), 1726 (-[e] BD), 1751 (-[e] D) ¹, 2031 f (myȝt C, myȝht D), 2734 (-en B, -[e] D, myȝte † C) ², 3609 (myȝtyn C, myȝht † this D) ³, 6612 (-[e] B) ⁴. [Var. C myȝte; D mighte, -[e].]—myȝht[e], 3351 (-e B, myȝte C †; D †), 3605 (-e B, myȝte C, might[e] D).—myȝhtye, 1439 (om. † B, -t D †), 2702 (-t D), ⁵ 7324 (-t BD). [Var. C myȝte; D miȝt, might.].—myȝht (bef. vowels), 286 (myȝtyn in C) ⁶, 3264 (-e B, might † not D), 3318 (-e C), 6948 (-e C; D †). [Var. C miȝt, -e; D miȝt.].—myȝhtye hym, 279 (-t BD); -e hire (poss. sg.), 5337 (-t D, koude A); myȝhtye hym, ⁷ 3415 (-e C). [Var. C myȝte.] ¹

Note.—Of these examples of the pret. 3 pl., men is the subject in 279, 286, 1439, 1726, 1815, 2702, 3415, 3609, 6948; all the world is the subject in 3264, 3318, 5337.

Rhyme words.—hyȝhten pret. ind. 3 pl. (2709), dyȝhtе pret. ind. 3 sg. (2031).

Infin. mowen.—To mowen (so ABG Cp. John’s, moun C, wyn D) swych a knyghton don (so BC Cp., om. A, doon G, to D John’s) lyue (leuyn C) or dye (deiȝ C), 2679.—to mowe † dwelle, 7213 C (maken AB, make D).

IX. mot.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. (i.) (ii.) mot, mooth, 224 (-e BD), is † ffor C †, 573 (-e BCD), 1621 (-e B, must D, me muste C), 4037 f (-e BCD) (: in his fote; foot B, foote D: set sbst. (=soot), soot B, sote CD), 4129 (-e BD), 5408, 6284 (-e C); cf. 2889, 3429 C, 4676, 6681, 6784, 7692.

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. most, (i.) (ii.) 520 (must(e) C, must D), 5129

¹ Or singular: Now myȝhtе som eenyous iangle thus.
² Supply [hym] in AB. ACD may be singular. ³ Supply [for] in B.
⁴ Dele (as) in A. C is out of order.
⁵ "So heyous that men myȝhtе on it speto" (hêynous or myȝhtе om).
⁶ "Shewed wel that men myȝht yn here gesse" (9-syl., but D supplies She †).
⁷ A has hem †.
Observations on the Language [§ 123.]

(moost B, must(e) C, muste D†), 5310 (mayst † C, must(e) D), 7822 (must D, om. † C).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. mot, (i.) 2456 (moot B, mot(e) D); cf. 1524, 1701, 3406, 3636, etc., etc.—mot(e), 6247 A (moot B, mot(e) (?) C; D †). (Cf. pret. 3 sg.)

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. mote, 2754 C (moste A, most B, must D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. moten ouer, 846 (-yn CD)¹; mote hire (poss. sg.), 847 (-yn C); mote spenden, 6038 (moot B, mot C †, must D).²

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. mote I, 1220, 7270 (moot B); mot I, 341 (-e BD)³, 1210 (-e BCD), 2230 (-e BCD)⁴, 4048 (-e C), 7347 (-e CD), 7523 (moot B, mote C; D †). (All these in wishes: as, so mote I gyan, as mot I the.) I bidde god I neuer mot haue ioye, 3717 A (-e BG, I preye to god neueremore haue I ioye C, I pray to god y neuer more have ioy D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. to good[e]⁵ mot it turne, 1175 (-e BCD); so mot he neuer the, 1755 (-e BC); sory mot he ben, 2141 (-e BCD); longe mot your lyf in ioye endure, 4988 (-e BD, motè † 3e 2 pl. C).

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. mot ye lyue, 1487 (-e BCD); motè † 3e, 4988 C (3 sg. ABD).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. most (bef. vowels), 3429 (mot C, must D), 4676 B (must D, mot A)⁶; moste here (poss. sg.), 5232 (-t B, must D; C †); y mot † nedis, 1621 D; I must[e] nedis, 6681 D † (mot AB, mot C †). (In all these cases with the force of the present tense and with the meaning of modern must.)

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. moste, 74 (-[e] BD), 3401 (-[e] BD), 3465 (-[e] B; D †)⁷, 4000 (-[e] BD), 4878 (-[e] BD), 5373 C (-[e] D), 8025 (-[e] B). [Var. C muste; D must[e], muste.]⁸—most[e], 4551 B (muste C, must[e] D).⁹—moste, 2385 (-t BD), 3999 (-t B), 4004 (-t BD, mot † C), 6368 (-t B), 6433 (-t D).¹⁰ [Var. C muste; D must, -e].—most at, 3382 (-e B, muste C, moost D).—moste his, 6441 (-t BD); -e hem, 4551. [Var. C muste; D must.]

Note 1.—In all these cases of the pret. ind. 3 sg. the verb has its proper preterite function. The modern sense (in which must is equivalent to a present tense) is seen in moste, 216 A (schall B, moost, must D). C shows four instances of this latter use: mustè † ben, 6261 C (muste D, mot AB; muste † for, 6428 C (mot AB, mot(e) D); me † mustè nedis, 1621 C, 7715 C. D several times substitutes must (in a present sense) for mot (etc.) of

¹ Read ioye[e] in C.
² In 6038 the subject is men.
³ Supply [that] in C.
⁴ In A read to deth[e] and smet[e].
⁵ goode BC.
⁶ Supply [I] in B.
⁷ Dele (At) in AB (?). In D read must[e] b(y)l(e)ue.
⁸ In 4000 D has most[e]; the usual vowel in this word, however, is u for CD, o for AB.
⁹ In D supply [day].
¹⁰ Read (re)orne he in D.
the other MSS., cf. 1701, 2586, 3406, 3670: in these four cases a con-
sonant follows, but in none of them (except perhaps in 2586, which is
otherwise unsatisfactory) are we to read must[e]. Cf. also 4266 ± E.

Note 2.—Must is used impersonally in me muste nedis deyen (pres. sense),
1621 C (I mot A, I moot(e) B, y must D)¹; hym most obeye (pret. sense),
3999 B (he moste A, he muste CD); muste † hem bleue, 7543 C (they
moste b[le]uen A, they most[e] bleuen B, thei muste b(e)leue D), which is
probably subjunctive. In none of these lines is the impersonal con-
struction apparently the genuine reading. (See Child, § 67, and cf.
Englische Studien, XIV, 391.)

Pret. Ind. 2 Pl. moste, 2754 (-t B, mot[e] C, must D), 3758 (-t B,
muste C, must D). (Both in present sense.)²

Pret. Ind. 3 Pl. men moste, 4056 (-[e] B, mustyn C, must[e] D);
mest moste axe, 1979 (miste † C, must[e] D)³; men mose, 6016
(most B, moste nedis C †, musten † entercomen D); men ... most
spenden, 6038 D (moste A, moot B, mot C). (All in present sense.)

Pret. Subj. 1 Sing. ... most I, 1884 (I muste be C, y must[e] be † D);
I moste come, 6023 (-[e] B, muste C, must[e] D). (In both cases =
I should have to.)⁴

muste; D must[e].]—most[e], 5226 (moost[e] B, mot † C, must[e]
D).—moste, 3758 (-t B, muste C, must D); -e he, 2160 (moost B,
muste C, must D); -e han, 3733 (-t B, muste C, must D). (In all
these cases = would have to.) Cf. muste † hem, impersonal, 7543 C.

Pret. Subj. 3 Pl. mosten folk, 2592 (mustyn CD); they most[e]
b[le]uen, 7543 (muste b(e)leue D, muste † hem impers. sg. C). (In
these = would have to.)

§ 124. Other irregular verbs.
This list includes be, vol, nyl, do, go, and haue.

I. to be.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. am, (i.) (ii.) 10, 223, 6160 (nam BD, may † C),
6782 (nam B), 7069 (nam BD).—nam, 7609 (am C, nam[e] D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. art, (i.) (ii.) 277, 555 (ert[e] D), 648, 1045 (D † ?),
5163 (-[e] D), etc. [Var. B ert (usually).]—artow, 509 (art thou C,
art[e] thou D), 731 (art thou C, art[e] thou D); art thou, 507
(artow B, art thou C, art[e] thou D), 3579 (art tow B; C (?)).

¹ Supply [that] in B.
² 3758 may be construed as subjunctive.
³ If moste be read, the verse becomes 9-syl.
⁴ But in 1884 perhaps rather in a present (future) sense "How bysy if I loue ek
most I be."
Note.—In "Al wrong by god what seystow man wher art," 7524 f (arte ABCG, arte D; no note in Mr. Austin's collation) (: carte n.), art is plainly a colloquial form of artow: perhaps it represents the ordinary pronunciation of that contraction. Cf. fro ye (: Troye), 5, in which ye may be regarded as a similarly weakened form of you.

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. is, 3622 f (: this), and passim; helle ys, 7739 f (is C) (: wellys pl. : ellys); his, 1943 C, 7150 B; ysse, 1013 f A (is BCD) (: thisse : iwyssse).—nys, 203 AC (is B)², 574 C (is ABD), 684 (ne is C, nis D), 697 (nis B, is D),³ 2824 f (is CD) (: is), 4570 (ne is C, ther is † (= ther's) D), 7085, etc.; nys monosyl., 7451 C (is ABD).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 3937 (ben C, beath D), 7346 (ben B, ben(e) D; C †); be we, 5920, 6847 (C †), 7042 (cf. 5138); ben now, 5986 (ben(e) B, be D); been so, 6511 (ben BC, be D); ben † we, 4049 C. (ii.) ben, 5930 (be D)⁴; be, 5921 (ben BC).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1320 (ben BC), 3881, 3980 (ben BCD), 7721 (ben CD)⁵; be ye, 202 ABC, 2191, 2552, 3599, 4049 (ben C); ben, 1201 (be D), 1669 (be D), 3709 (ben(e) D), 4407, etc.; beth bothe, 984 (ben BC, be D). (ii.) ben, 1433 (be BD), 2825 (ben(e) D), etc.; be ywonne, 2321 (ben BC, be ye D)⁷; ben he, 1332 (be D); ben his, 3718 (D †)⁸; ben here (adv.), 2836 (ben(e) D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (i.) Before consonants ben and be are both found in A, but ben (the regular form in BC) is the commoner. D usually has be or ben(e), but ben occurs in D (e.g., 3134). Cf. 1137, 3134, 3696, 4887, etc. Cf. been, 4205 E; byn, 4595 E. In rhyme,—be, 48 f, 2039 f, 2858 f, 2879 f, 5709 f, 5718 f 7033 f (bee B), 8143 f; ben, 6819 f (bene D) (: to sen). Other forms are,—they beth with, 6020 C †, and arn (are) : arn thei, 999 A (are BC, they are the D); arn clerkes, 5634 A (ern B, were D)⁹; arn woxen, 7737 A (aryn C, are D)¹⁰; arn, 996 C (are D), is an error for eren ABG; no note in Mr. Austin's collation. (ii.) Before vowels ben is the usual form, except in D, which commonly (though not always) has ben(e): thus,—1000 (be D), 1973 (ben(e) D), 4180 (been E), etc. Before h,—ben his, 2560 (ben(e) D); ben here (gen. sg.), 6582 (D †); ben here (adv.), 2815 (be D)¹¹; ben hertes, 2959 (ben(e) D).

1 This monstrous form serves at least to emphasize the fact that the s is unvoiced.
2 Dele (that) in C.
3 Dele (yn) in A.
4 Supply [that] in D.
5 Dele or slur (that) in D.
6 Supply [ye] in AB.
7 Read [ywonne] in D.
8 Supply [that] in B.
9 Not in C.
10 Leaf cut out of B.
11 Read her[with]yn in D.
§ 124.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 333

Rhyme words.—charite (48), aduerte (2858), benigne (2879), necessite (5718), subtiletie (8143), me (2039, 5709, 8143), the (2039, 2879), ye (2858), fre (7033), se, ye-se inf. (5709, 7033).—to sen (sene D) (6819).

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 832, 859, 2945, 3240 f, 4128 f, 6213 f, etc.
Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. be, (i.) (ii.) 3663, 4473, etc.
Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. be, (i.) 23 f, 308, 349, 1036, 2418 f, 5994 f, etc.
Pres. Subj. 1 Pl. (i.) be, 5450 (ben ind. C †) 1, 6144. (ii.) ben, 6276.
Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. (i.) be, 1365 (ben C ; B †), 1385 (ben C), 1422 f (: se
ind. 2 pl.), 1426 (ben C), 1935 (sg. CD) 2, 2491 f (: me), 5597 (ben
CD); And be ye wys as ye ben faire, 1669 (be . . . be D); ye
heryd ben for, 4655 AB (be D). (ii.) be, 3012 (ben C), 6102 (ben
C, be sit † D); whanne ye ben his, 1672 (be D).
Pres. Subj. 3 Pl. (i.) ben, 1488 (be BD, hem † C); be, 2243 (ben
C), 3158 3, 4769 f † B (sg. A ; D (?)). (ii.) be his, 4599 (sg. B †).

Pret. Ind. 1 Sing. was, (i.) 2497 4, 4733 f (y-wis † D) (: Calkas);
cf. 4733 f, 4756 f, 7338 f.—nas, (i.) 2498 BCD (na[s] A). 5
Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. were, 4160 f (you were E) (: there: fere timor);
were, 510 (wer † wont D), 3559 6, 5424 ABD; were woned, 901
(were B, were won C (?)) 7.—was thou, 4996 (art(e) † thou D).

Pret. Ind. 3 Sing. was, (i.) 2, 64 f (: Calkas), 4397 f, 5895 f, etc. In
4438, D has the ridiculous form weese (: blesse inf.).—nas, (i.) 101
(was BCD), 208 (was D), 1281 (was B), 1769 8; cf. 281, 6477,
6809, 6831, 6985, 7142, 7177, 8006, 8029. (ii.) nas have, 6826
(nas oure C, om. † D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 2, 3 Pl. were. See § 109.

Pret. Subj. Sing. were. See § 113.

Pret. Subj. Pl. were. See § 114.

Imv. 2 Sing. be, 950, 951 (fe † C), 4472, etc. Once in rhyme,—

thow ne be, 6962 f.

Imv. 2 Pl. beth, 431, 1679 9, 2755 (both B, be C), 3010, 3019
beth B), 4355, 6508 10, 6522, 7977 (be C), 8148 (be B), etc.; buth,
3938 (beth B, be C, beeth D), 5589 (beth BD, be C) 11. [Cf. 6249.]

Infinitive. A shows: ben, before vowels, 2642, 3323, 3794, and
usually; ben, before h, 1823, 2973, and usually; ben, before con-
sonants, 1921, 5446, etc.; be, before vowels, 938, 981, 1536, 4322,

1 Dele (with) in D.
2 "thouked be ye."
3 In C read be noust for ben ous; in D read be [x]ought.
4 In C read for sith for forsothe.
5 Supply [more] in D.
6 Protagon. Read were [in] in A.
7 But supply [wha] in B, and read were.
8 Supply [ad] in D.
9 Old-style figures indicate that D has be (pl.).
10 Supply [as] in D.
11 Supply [cause] in A; [of] in C.
5197; be, before h, 468, 1438, 2383, 2526, 7023; be, before consonants, 255, 760, etc., etc.

B shows: ben, before vowels, 938, 981, and usually; ben, before h, 1438, and usually; ben, before consonants, 758, 1921, 4739, etc.; be, before vowels, 350, 609, 1536, 5759; be, before h, 7023, 7066; be, before consonants, 4414, 6178, etc., etc.

C shows: ben, before vowels, 938, 2642, and usually; ben, before h, 468, and usually; ben, before consonants, 373, 7491, etc.; be, before vowels, 1536, 5461, etc.; be, before h, 7023, 7066; be, before consonants, 74, 7644, etc.

D shows: ben, before vowels, 649, 5740, etc. (ben, before h, seems not to occur); ben, before consonants, 3507, 5621, etc.; ben(e), before vowels, 2986, 3142, 3794, etc.; be, before vowels, 938, and very commonly; be, before h, 1438, and always; be, before consonants, 255, 1921, and commonly.

At the end of the verse all four MSS. have regularly be (see 37 f, 849 f, 1482 f, etc., etc.); ben, inf., does not occur in rhyme in the Troilus.

Perfect Part. A shows: ben, before vowels, 585, 2488, etc., etc.; ben, before h, 125, 2356, 7680; ben, before consonants, 247, 249, 1609, 2081, etc.; be, before vowels, 4469, 6505; be, before consonants, 242, 638, 1878, 5900, 6590.

B shows: ben, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; ben, before h, 125, 2356, 7680; ben, before consonants, 242, 247, etc.

C shows: ben, before vowels, 585, etc., etc.; ben, before h, 2356; ben, before consonants, 247, 249, etc., etc.; be, before h, 125; be, before consonants, 638, 1878.

D shows: ben, before vowels, 2488, 7296, 7680, 8008; ben, before consonants, 5305, 5756; ben(e), before vowels, 585, 6913; ben(e), before h, 2356; ben(e), before consonants, 249; be, before vowels, 4469, and usually; bee, before vowel, 6129; be, before h, 125; be, before consonants, 247, 638, etc., etc.

At the end of the verse: ben, 1276 f (bene D) (: ben bees : flen ind. 3 pl.); be, 1877 f (se inf. CD) (: se inf.), 5352 f (bee D) (: se inf. : she), 5899 f (: she : me); y-be, 5770 f (i-be BD, be C †) (: she : preute).

Note.—Infinitive and perfect participle coalesce in: I haue and shal Ben humble (be D), 1913; cf. 7680.
II. Will.  

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. A has usually wul or wole (wole). Thus,—wol, (i.) 990, 1294, 1560, 1955, 2512, 3001, 6255, 6846; (ii.) 53, 1330, 1538, 1400, 1564.—wole, 981, 1033, 2077, 2665, 2719, 2770, 2851, 2933, 3226; wole, 427, 599, 1222, 1363, 2247, 2894.—wol han (inf.), 3581; wole haue (inf.), 2733.—A also has wil : thus,—(i.) 266, 2094, 5121; (ii.) 2144. 

B almost always has wul. Thus,—(i.) 266, 981, 990, 1033, 1294, 1531, 1955, etc., etc.; (ii.) 53; 427, 1330, 2247, 2894, etc.; before h, 2733, 3581. Other forms in B are : wol, 1053; wil, (i.) 589 \(^2\), 3226; wil, (ii.) 1222, 2144; will, (ii.) 599; wel, (i.) 1560. 

C has usually wole (wele). Thus,—wole, 758, 981, 990, 1033, 1531, 2446, 549, 1222, 1330, 1363, etc.; wele han, 3581. But wil also occurs : thus,—(i.) 2719, 2933, 3001; (ii.) 1400, 1564; wil han, 2733. 

D has : wole, 1231, 1560, 2077, 2512, etc.; wole, 1222 (i.) \(^3\); 1363, 2144; wol, (i.) 1955 \(^4\), 2665, 3001 (?) wol, (ii.) 1400, 1564, 2247; wol haue, 3581; wul, (ii.) 2894; wil, (i.) 266, 990, 1033, 1409, etc.; wil, (ii.) 427, 1358; wyl, (i.) 1294; wilh, (i.) 7445 \(^\dagger\); wilh, (ii.) 1330.—In 2733 D, wole have (inf.) should be wole have (supply [ye]). In 3137 D, wole abregge should be wilne as now tubregge.

Note.—589 appears to be a 9-syl. verse: “I wole (wil BD, wele C) parten with the al thyn pyne.” Mr. Austin makes no note. G agrees with A. 

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. wilt, wylt, (i.) (ii.) 3254,\(^5\) 3551 (wolt B), 4301 f (whi \(\dagger\) B) (agilt p.p.), 4926 f (-e) D (agilt p.p. : spilt p.p.); cf. 719 \(\dagger\) C, 2109 \(\dagger\) D, 2148 \(\dagger\) C, 3045 \(\dagger\) C, 4944 \(\dagger\) C.—wolt, (i.) (ii.) 2040 (wilt(e) B)\(^6\), 2514 \(\dagger\) C, 3178, 7669 (woldest \(\dagger\) D), 7881. [Var. CD wilt, wylt. —wyltow, wiltow, 1011 (woltow B, wilt thou CD), 4931 (wilt thou C; D \(\dagger\)); wiltow, 2446 (wiltow B, wilt thou (thow) CD), 7520 (wilt thou C, wilh thou D);\(^7\) wiltow, 2532 (wiltow B, wilt thou C). 

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. Not different from 1 Sing. (cf. 1456, 1481, 2042,

---

1 For scribe's confusion between willan and wilnian, see 2963 A, 3137 D, 5277 C.  
2 9-syl. verse.  
3 Line too long.  
4 Supply [\textit{send}].  
5 AB are short by two syllables; CD are 9-syl. : Tel (Telle G) (CD insert me) which (-e G) thou wylt (wilt BCDG) of euerychone. No note in Mr. Austin's collation.  
6 Supply [\textit{And}] in A.  
7 Supply [\textit{now}] in CD.
Observations on the Language

6290, etc., etc.). The following forms may be noted,—wyl be, 1545
A; wy1 no, 1015 C; wyll how, 4133† E; wylle, 537 C; welē†
nedis, 5277 C¹; wolē† ben, 6265 A; welē† wondere, 6857 C (l.
wolde); welē† away, 6290 C.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. wolē go, 2256 (wol BD, welē C); wol the, 4305
(nilē: D, welē† no C); wole hym, 2541 (wol B, welyn C); wil
haue, 2717† C; welē† no, 4305 C (wol the AB, nilē the D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. A has usually wol or wolē (wole). Thus—wol, (i.)
1297, 3774, 3816, 3969, 4010, 4654, 5865; (ii.) 1578; wol han
(inf.), 5579.—wolē, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3708, 3725, 4133, 7274,
7345; wole, 6034, 6188 (subj.†).—Wille occurs once (2963).²
In
1473, wole should be wolde, and in 2713 wole should be wolē (supply
[me]). In 3946, read pulle[n] and wolē.

B has usually wol : thus,—(i.) 1297, 2825, 2866, etc.; (ii.) 1578,
6034; wol haue (inf.), 2831 (subj.†), 5579.—But,—wolē, 2713;
welē, 3725; wel, (i.) 3774; wil, (i.) 1396 (subj.†), 4010.—In 3946,
read pulle[n] and wilē ye.

C has wil or welē (wole). Thus,—wil (i.), 2686, 3708, 3816,
3946, 4010, 4133, 5865; welē, 1297, 2713, 2825, 3774, 7274,
7345; wele, 1578 ³, 6034; cf. 6188 (subj.†); wele haue (inf.), 5579.

D has : wil, (i.) 1297, 2686, 2825, 2866, 3725, 5865; wol, (i.)
2713, 3774, 3816, 4654; wol, (ii.) 1578; wolē, 4010, 4760†
(subj.†); wiH, (i.) 7242, 7345; wiH, (ii.) 6034 (cf. 2715†) (subj.†),
6188 (?)(ye wiH = ye'll); wiH have (inf.), 5579.—wolyn† dweH,
3493; wele 3e, 3946.⁴

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. wolē, 3033, 4222 (wyl E)⁵, 4785. [Var. BD wol;
C wele. ]—wol, (i.) 3776 AB, 5249 AB (wul D), 7423 (C †), 7428.
[Var. C wele; D wil, wiH.]—wol hem, 7256 (wil C, wiH D)⁶; wol
hate, 7426 (wele C, wiH D).—wolēn til, 3610 (wollen B, welyn C,
wilyn D).—wolē mucche, 907 A (but read wolde with CG Cp.;
wol[e] BD).

Pres. Subj.¹ 1 Sing. lest I wol † of, 716 B (wold A, wolde C, wold †
the D).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. wolē (in protasis), 715 (wil BC; D †); wol haue
(in protasis), 5968 (wele C, wiH D); wol don (with if⁸ = whether),

¹ The correct reading is wilneth fro.
² The correct reading is wilnē that.
³ Dele (d). ⁴ But read pulle[n] and wolē.
⁵ Supply [that] in E.
⁶ Subjunctive (†).
⁷ Subjunctive constructions cannot always be distinguished with certainty from
indicative.
⁸ A has of for if.
852 (welē C, wil D); lest that the cherl wolē falle, 1017 A (may
BCD). 1 Cf. welē † nedis, 5277 C. Er I wol forther go, 3123 B
(welē C, wolē D, om. † A) is perhaps indicative.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. wolē (ind. quest.), 1396 (wil BC, wol D); -e (with
but yf), 4760 † D; wolē (with but = unless), 462 (wol B; om. C †
D †); -e (with if that in ind. quest.), 6034 (wol B, wele C, wiH D);
-e (in protasis), 6188 (wol B, wele C, wiH D †); wol, (i.) 1659
(welē D) (in protasis with but), 7704 (wele C, wiH D) (with that,
ojective clause of purpose); wille (ind. quest.), 2963 (wilne B,
wlne C †, wolde D †); wol † have (with though), 2831 (pret. BCD).

Pret. 1 Sing. wolde, 2919, 3490 (wold † go D), 3854, etc. [Var. BD
wold[e].]—wolde, 865, 3769 2, 7462 (wilde † C, wolde † D).
[Var. BD wold.]—wold I, 2232 (e C, walde B), 3342 (e B, -e †
not C).—wolde here (dat.), 2091 (e C, telle D); -e hym, 2966 (D †),
3715 (-d B; D †); -e haue (ind.), 5168 (e a CD), 8041 (-d B,
-e a C); wold han (inf.), 1499 (e a C, -d have D).—wolde, 2512 †
C, 2770 † C, 8140 † D (?)

Note.—In 5903 the correct reading is perhaps wolde han slave (see § 122,
XII); Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG read,—My (Myn C)
selue (self B, seluy C, selfe D, selve G) I wolde (wolde I) hane (han B,
a C) slayn (slave C, slayne DG) quod she tho (too D).—In 3864 A woldes
on should be wolde vpon (so BC, vpon D).

Pret. 2 Sing. woldest, 4487 (-ist C, -ist † thou D), 5103 (-yst C). 3

Note.—In 4944 we should perhaps read: Nought roughte I whider that
thou woldest me stere. Mr. Austin's collation has no note; ABCDG
have: Nought (Nouyte G) rought (rouȝte C) I wheder (-yr C, whider
B, whedirwardes D, whider G) thou (that thou C) woldest (-ist C,
wil D) me (om. D) stere. Woldest may be regarded as a subjunctive
(see § 106).

Pret. 3 Sing. wolde, 77 ([e] BD), 2957 f (-d BD), 3064 ([e] D) 4,
3333 f (-d pl. D), 3458 ([e] D, walde[e] B), 4509 f, 4828 ([e] D),
4833, 4885, 6475 f, 6553 ([e] B), 6874 ([e] B), 6987 f, 7267 f,
7595 (-e † he D), 8126 f (-d B), etc.; wold[e], 7578 (-e C; D †);
wolde, 1776 (-d BD), 3287 (-d D, walde B) 5, 3301 (-d BD), 3344
(-d D, walde B), 4276, 7241 (-e D, woolde B); wolde he, 6901; -e
hem, 3303 (-d BD); wold of, 716 (-e C, wol † B, wol † the D);
wold he, 4621 B (-e C, -e † ryde A; -d he D (?)); wold hire (acc.),
1355 (-e BC), 2678 (nulde C, nold D) (for other cases of wold or
wold before h in hym, haue, han, cf. 501, 2164, 3497, 5405, 7999,
etc.).—wolde come, 7949 ACD (wol B); wold † do, 6550 A (wol
B, wiH D, line om. † C); cf. 527 † C, 1294 † C, 2459 † C, 2745 †

4 Dele (deippedbus) in B. 5 In C read mys(e)sid.
C, 5890 † C, 7241 † D, 7789 † D.—woldē † on, 3539 A (e vpon BC, -d vpon D); -e I (!), 1830 A (-d BD, -de C); -ē † he, 6839 C; -ē † holde, 7999 C.

Rhyme words,—byholde inf. (2957), sholde, shulde sing. (3333, 4509, 6475, 7267, 8126), sholde pl. (6987).

Note 1.—In 6510 we may read wrathē and woldē or woldē and wrathe:
That half (-e D) so loth (-e G, soth C) yowre (soure BC, your DG) wrathe (wreth BD, wrethe C, wreth G) wolde (-d B) deserve. Mr. Austin's collation has no note.—In 3880 wolde (-d BD) the excellence admits either woldē or -e.

Note 2.—The following cases, in which wolde appears in wishes (as wolde god, and the like), may be put together as indubitably subjunctive,—wolde, 459 (-[e] D), 519 f (sholde 3 sg.) 936 (-[e] D), 4119, 4229, 4607 (B t), 4997, 6487 2, 6590, 6971 (B has wold[e] in all but 519); -e, 526 (-d B).

Pret. 1 Pl. wolde, 3373 f (-d D) (sholde 3 sg.); wold[e], 6854 (-e b(e)leue CD). 3

Pret. 2 Pl. wolden, (i.) 6226 (-e C, -ē † D), 7754 (-e C); (ii.) 343 (-ē C, -[e] D); wolden han (inf.), 2831 (-yn C, wol B, wold D), 5896 (wold B, -e a CD); woldyn † assent, 2715 C; woldyn † in, 7713 C (nolde AD).—wolde, 2328 (-[e] D, walde B), 2972 (-yn C, -[e] D), 6281, 6536 (-[e] B); -e, 2715 (-yn C, with D) 4, 6497 (-yn me C, -ē † as D), 8046 † C; -e han (inf.), 4348 (-d B, -ē † han C, -ē † me D); wolde † be, 3888 C.

Pret. 3 Pl. wolden, (i.) 919 (-e C, -[e] D), 1453 ? (-[e] B, -[e] D) 5, 2503 (-[e] D), 3297 ? (-ē C, -d D) 6, 6233 (-en it † D); (ii.) 2517. [Var. C in, -yn; D -yn.] wolden han (inf.), 915 (-e B, -e a C, om. † D) 7; wooldyn † ouzt, 1997 C.—wolde, 150 (-[e] B, nolde C, nold † they D), 3119 (-e on C, would vpon D), 4819 (-[e] D), 4832 (-[e] D, -e [that] B), 4837 (-[e] BD) 8, 4879 f (sholde 3 sg.) 9, 7700 (-en BD, -yn C), 7828 † C; wold[e], 907 BD (C †); wolde, 2520 (-d B, -yn D, -d sg. C), 3867 (-d BD, -yn C †); -e hym, 2630 (-d D) ; -e han (inf.), 4839 (-d D); -e here (gen. pl.), 7323; wold afferme, 2673 BD (-yn C, -e sg. A) 10.—wolde † deme, 1546 A (-e BC, -d of D); wold[e], 3333 f D (wolde sg. ABC).

1 But read then[ne]s and wolde he.
2 Supply [i?] in AC.
3 Supply [that] in CD.
4 If we read it we'r e good.
5 Men wolden (-yn C, -e Cp., wold BD, wole G) wondren (wonderyn C, wondur D) to (om. B Cp. John's, that G) se (sen BC Cp., seen G) hym come (-yn CG) or (and CD) gen (gone D, goon G).
6 So as they dorste (-en G, dorst B, durste C, durst D) how (hough G, so as C, haw ferre D) they wolden (wolde CCP., wold D) procede.
7 Supply [they] in C.
8 The subject is at the world.
9 The subject is substance (i.e. majority) of the parlament.
10 In C read of for oftein.
III. **nyl.**

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. *nyl,* (i.) 758 (welē C)\(^1\), 1231 (wolē D), 1562, 2246 (wolē A), 3009 (wolē D), 6846 BC (wol A, wil D). [Var. C nil; D nel.] *nyl,* (ii.) 2897 (wolē D), 3284 (nel D), 6406, etc.—nel not, 1409 (nyl B, nil C, wil D); nel haue, 1100 (nyl B, nel t neither D).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. *nylt,* (i.) (ii.) 2085 (nelt D), 2109 (C t; wilt t D), 2140 (nelt D)\(^2\), 5190 (nylt thy B, nelt D t)—nyltow, 792 (nylt thou C, nelt thou D), 4912 (nyltow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D), 8071 (nyl to B, nil thou C); cf. 4269, 4965, 5151; neltow, 5150 (nyltow B, nylt thou C, nylt(e) thou D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sings. *nyl,* nil, (i.) 2474 (welē C, nel D), 6538 (nīl H D), 6719 (sche nē wil C, nīl H D); cf. 777, 1015, 5275, 6478 t C; (ii.) nyl he, 6704 (nīl H D).\(^3\)—nel t be, 1545 D.

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. we nil(e thee, 4305 (wol AB, we well(e) t no C).

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. *nyl* me, 6594 AB (nīl H D); nyl not, 7265 (nil D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. *nyl,* (i.) 37 (*perh. sg.*) (nyl H D); nil it, 3776 C (wol not AB, nel hit D).

Pret. 1 Sing. *nolde,* 1023 f (I nē wolde C°, nold D) (: sholde 1 sg.), 5997\(^4\); nold[e], 5248 (nylde C, nold(e) t D); nolde, 5899 (-d B, I nē wolde C); nold I, 1118 (-ε t nat B), 1393 (-d BD, wolde C), 1566 (-ε C)\(^5\); I nold t not (?), 3742 (nold[e] setten B, -ε settē C, -[e] set D).

Note.—In 2558 the correct reading seems to be *ne wolde I* (so B Cp.): A has *nolde I,* which is unmetrical; D has *wolde y,* but improperly omits *ne;* C reads *sholde I,* but has *syl* for *ne.*

Pret. 2 Sing. *noldestow,* 4106 (noldestow B, noldist thou CD). (For subjunctive, see § 106.)

Pret. 3 Sing. *nolde,* 77 f (-d D) (: sholde 3 sg.), 2134 (-ε B, -d hit D), 2308 (-[ε] D, wolde A), 3409 (wolde C, wold[ε] D t), 4787 (-[ε] B, nulde C; D t), 5299 f (: sholde 1 sg.), 7314 (-[ε] B); nulde, 2574 C (nold[e] D, wolde A, wold[e] B), cf. 1777 D; as nold[e] god, 5228 (-ε CD); nolde hān, 5803 (nulde an C), 7087 (nold B, wolde t a C; D t); -ε here\(^6\) (*gen. sg.*), 7572 (-d B); -ε his, 7593 (-d B); nulde hire (acc.), 2678 C (nold D, ne wold AB).—nolde don, 6478 (nyl C, wil t D); nold, (i.) 2643 A (-ε BC, wold D).\(^7\)

Pret. 2 Pl. *nolde,* 3625 f (-d D) (: sholde 2 pl.); nolde, 7713

---

1 Supply [*not*] in D.
2 Supply [*that*] in D.
3 Supply [*thus*] in D; dele the first (*thus*) in B.
4 Supply [*Whom*] in C; [*for*] in D.
5 Supply [*has*] in B. Read *s[e]* in C.
6 A has *he t.*
7 Supply [*to*] in D.
(woldyn C)\(^1\), 8042 (-d B, nolden \(\dagger\) D); -e han, 8043 (-d B); nold han, 1503 (nylde an C).

Pret. 3 Pl. nolde, 150 C (wolde A, wold[e] B, nold \(\dagger\) they D), 5851 f (: sholde 3 sg.)\(^2\), 7828 (-[e] B, -en D, wolde C).

IV. do.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. do, 719 (C \(\dagger\)).
Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. dost, (i.) (ii.) 2595, 3238 (-e) B, doost D), 3244, 4278 (D \(\dagger\), 6960 (doost B, dedyst C, hast D); dostow, 7097 B (dost thou C, dost(e) thou D, dost[ow] A).
Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. doth, (i.) (ii.) 626, 671, 1270 f (-e D; B \(\dagger\)), 2369 f (-e D), etc. B and D sometimes add an irrational -é, which of course is never pronounced (see 1031, 3876, 5542); so also in 7757 A.

Pres. Ind. Pl. (1) Before consonants,—don, 1237 (doon B, om. \(\dagger\) D), 2471 (do D), 3647 (don(e) D); cf. 2669, 3724, 6707, 7978; doon, 705 (don C, done D \(\dagger\)); do, 426 (don C \(\dagger\), 3143 \(\dagger\) D, 3967 (B \(\dagger\), 5575 (do D), 8063 (doth(e) B, don C, don(e) D); doth, 2391 A (dos(e) B, don C, don(e) D), 2469 (don BC\(^e\), don(e) D).\(^3\) (2) In rhyme,—do, 1111 f (: tho : so). (3) Before vowels,—don, 134 (-e D); cf. 345, 1526, 5086, 7217, 8085. (4) Before he, hem, her\(\dagger\) (adv.),—don, 1124 (doon B, do D), 5845 (-e D, don folk C), 7935; do, 2868.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. dide, 3653 (dide C, did? D \(\dagger\)); dude \(\dagger\) dye, 7845 C; did[e] \(\dagger\) byshec\(\dagger\)l), 3424 D; did\(\dagger\) || for, 4233 (dide C) (cf. 699 \(\dagger\) D, 1064 \(\dagger\) D, 7292 \(\dagger\) C); dide, dede, 2316 (did C, dyd D), 2430, 2788 (dide D), 3766 (did D) (cf. 3121 4, 4497, 8099, 8100); Than he dede erst thurgh hope and dide his myght, 2425 (dide \ldots om. \(\dagger\) B, dede \ldots dide C, om. \(\dagger\) \ldots dide D \(\dagger\)). For elision before his, hym, hem, cf. 2014, 2654, 3354, 3813.

Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. dedest, 3205 (-ist CD, didest B); dedyst, 6960 \(\dagger\) C.

Pret. Ind. Pl. deden, (i.) 82 (-yn C, dede him D \(\dagger\)); diden, 471 f (deden C, dedyn D) (: riden ind. pret. 3 pl. : abyden n.p.); deden hardly, 3055 (-yn D \(\dagger\), diden B, dudyn C); ded\(\dagger\) al, 4247 (diden BE, dedyn C); ded[e] \(\dagger\) flene, 1279 D.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 590, 4142, 5103 (werche D), 5224.

[Var. D doo.]

1 In A read dayes ten for ten dayes.
2 Double subject.
3 In 7221 al that doth it care appears to be singular in A (alle that doth B, alle that don C, att that doth D, alle that doth(e) G). (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)
4 Perhaps subjunctive.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

§ 124.

Pres. Subj. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 636, 2401 (9-syl. in CD), 5131, 5276.
[Var. D doo.]

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. do, (i.) (ii.) 980, 2903, 6201 (put † D), 6305.

Pres. Subj. Pl. do we, 2030; do no, 4022 (don C); do me, 7773;
doon vs, 1412 (don BC, do D); don amys, 3015 (do D).

Pret. Subj. Sing. dede his, 369 (dydde B); dide hym, 3764 (dede C, did † D).

Inv. 2 Sing. do, (i.) 833, 1022, 2886, 5176 (doon D), etc.; ne do thou, 586.—do on, 2039 C (don AB; D †), 3589 (don B, do this C).¹

Inv.² 2 Pl. doth, (i.) 1407 (do CD), 1663 (donth(e) D), etc.; doth hym, 2294; doth herof, 3781 (C †).—do, (i.) 2268 (doth D), 3430 (y † do ind. D), 3891, 4018 (doth D, seith † C); do ye, 2915.

Inf. do, don, to done, etc. See § 119, XIII.

Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—don, 63 A (doun B), 2366 (do D),
3044, 3228 (ido B, ydo D), 5148 A (doon B, doon(e) D), 6419 (don(e) B, do C, doon(e) D); cf. 2544, 2577, 3256, 3917, 4460, 4552, 4923, 4939, 6470, 7429, 7721; harm idon is don who-so, etc.,
1874 (ydon . . . don D); do, 3086 (D (?); don † euere C; B †),
4024 (don BC, don(e) D), 4402 (don C).³
(2) In rhyme,—do, 1095 f (: Cleo n. pr.), 1389 f (: wherto), 1878 f (done D) (: go p.p. : so); fordo, 74 f (: Appollo : to go). (3) Before vowels,—don, 1129 (-e) BD), 1446 (do D), 3703; cf. 1010, 2083, 2530, 3340, 3997,
7102, 8047, 8090; fordon, 525 (-doon B, don(e) D †), 8050 (-e) D); vndon, 4577 (-e) D; ondon C).

V. go.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. go, (i.) 5502 (goo D), 5869 f (goo D) (: wo n.),
5938 f (goo D) (: two : so).⁴

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. goth, gooth, (i.) (ii.) 514, 1084, 1418, 3242, 5355,
etc.; 3950 f (: wroth pred. adj. sg. : oth). B and D sometimes have
an irrational -e, which is of course never pronounced.—fargoth hers
(gen. sg.), 6426 (-e) B.

Pres. Ind. 2, 3 Plur. gon, (i.) 5761 (-e) D, goth sg. C), 6740 C (goth
sg. ABD); (ii.) 6159 (-e) D).⁴ go, (i.) 7494 (gon C, -n(e) D).

Pres. Subj. 1, 2, 3 Sing. go, (i.) (ii.) 1363 f (: so : no), 2774 f (: so :
two), 3123 † A, 3125, 3155, 5777, 6407 f (: also : two), 7490. [Var. D goo.]—for-go, (i.) 4933.


¹ In D slur do on and read [vp]on. ² All the cases cited refer to a single person.
Observations on the Language

§ 124.

1299 f, 4358 f; go we, 1700 (gow we B), 2199, 2248, 2690, 2809, 3514, 6187 (goo D), 6765 (goo D), 6886 (goo D); gon, (i.) 7361 (goo D).

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. wente, (see § 99).—yede, 3 sg., 7206 f (3ode B, 3ede C); yede, 3 sg., 3548 † C; foryede he, 3 sg., 2415 (3ede BC).


Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. yedene. See § 113.

Inv. 2 Sing. go, (i.) 574, 1481, 2609 (so ‡ C), 5285 (goo D), 8149 (go . . . goo D); go hens, 572.

Inv. 2 Pl. gothi, (ii.) 3513 ‡ D; go, (i.) 5601 (goth(e) D).1

Inf. gon, (1) Before consonants,—gon, forgon, 53 (-e B, go D), 3572 (C); go D, 1996 (go BD), 4623 (go CD), 5141 (-goo D), 5624; cf. 1204, 4857, 5417, 5946, 6284, 6432, 6649.—go, forgo, 2256, 3533 (gon C, gen(e) D), 4226 (-gon B, -goo E), 5246 (gon C, goo D), 7116 (gon BC, goo D); cf. 1458, 2029, 3582, 5136, 5261, 5989, 7805. (2) In rhyme,—gon, 117 f (gone BD), 1453 f (goon B, gone D), 1627 f (-e BD), 2094 f (-e BCD), 2137 f (-e CD), 2258 f, 2311 f (-e B; D †); cf. 2769 f, 2796 f, 3036 f, 3404 f, 3518 f, 3543 f, 4048 f, 5017 f, 5255 f (goone D), 6023 f, 7270 f; goon, 133 f (gone BD, gon C), 2014 f (gon BC, gone D); gone, 846 f (gon C) (: everychone), 2686 f (gon C) (: everychon : anoon).


Note.—The rhymes show that in gone the -e is merely parasitic. The only ambiguous rhyme is everychon, -e.

go, 75 f2 (: Appollo : fordo p.p.), 628 f (: so : therfro); cf. 838 f, 1033 f, 2650 f, 3291 f, 3421 f, 3490 f, 4267 f, 4316 f, 4422 f, 4519 f, 4604 f, 4798 f, 4825 f (gon † A), 4884 f, 4966 f, 5086 f (D †), 5119 f, 5150 f, 5786 f, 5905 f, 6087 f, 6171 f, 6217 f, 6580 f, 6890 f, 7025 f, 7347 f, 7501 f, 7624 f.—(3) Before vowels,—gon, goon, 517, 863, 3425, 3486, 5408, 6017, 7058; cf. 2598, 6850, 7151, 7173. [Var. BD gon(e); D goo, go.] (4) go henne, 1294 (gon BC), 3472 (gon C, gette B).

Note.—In 4181 A has the reading go-ne (printed with hyphen): So loth to hem a sondry (asonder B, a sundir C, a sonder E) go-ne (gon it BCCp., gone it E); leaf wanting in D; stanza wanting in G. Of course gon it is right.

1 Addressed to a single person (perhaps singular).
2 Old-style figures indicate that to precedes the infinitive.
of Chaucer's Troilus.

§ 124.

Perf. Part. (1) Before consonants,—gon, goon, agon, forgon, 718 (gone \(\ddagger\) D (?)), 2107 (go D), 3381 (gon(e) D), 4284, 4527 (ago B, gon(e) D), 4547 (go D), 6598 (gon(e) D \(\ddagger\)); wo bygon, 2959 (bi-B, be- C); go, 1592 (gon BC, gon(e) D). (2) In rhyme,—gon, 2243 f (-e BD), 3736 f (-e D), 4336 f (-e D), 5309 f (goone D); agon, 1495 f (-e D), 1807 f (-e D), 4244 f (ygonne \(\ddagger\) E), 5442 f (gou (B), igone C, gone (? D), 5842 f (-e BD, igon C), 5979 f (-e D), 7688 f (-e D); bigon, bygon, begon,—with wo, wel, wors, sorrowfully,—114 f (-e BD), 1379 f (-e BD), 1682 f (-e D), 5126 f (-goon D), 5484 f (-e D), 6310 f (-goon D), 7691 f (-goon D); ago, 5752 f (agoo D, line om. \(\ddagger\) C), 6680 f (ago(n) C, agoo D), 7417 f (ago D); [a]go (l), 1880 f (ago B, go C, gone D); go, cf. 4358 f C. (3) Before vowels,—gon, 8008 (ben BCD); wo-by-gon, 4372 (gan B, woo-be-gon C, woo-bigon(e) D) (cf. 6397).—For went, see § 121. I.

Rhyme words.—stn n. (3736, 5126), won n. (5842), onn num. adj. (4244), noon, non num. adj. (1379, 1807, 3736, 5126, 5842, 6310, 7688, 7691), enerychon(e) (5442), anoon (114, 1495, 4244, 4336, 5309, 5484, 5979, cf. 2243), gon inf. (114), don inf. (1495)—do pp. (1850), so (1880, 5752), fo (5752), two (6680), Escaphilo nom. pr. (6680), wo (7417), mo (7417).

VI. hauë.

Pres. Ind. 1 Sing. hauë is the regular form before consonants: cf. 611, 628, 670, 988, 1133, 1298, 1327, 1467, 1760, 1780, 1955, 2370, 2565, 3173, 3251, 3340, 3350, 3531, 3902 BCD, 4024, 4039, 4349, 4460, 4592, 4691, 4953, 5770, 6032, 6159, 6183, 6272, 6327, 6687, 6783, 7234, 7343, 7419, 7463, 7752, 8197.
—haue, 2060 f (: yauë pret. subj. 3 sq. : saue pres. subj. 3 sq.), 2942 f (: saue pres. subj. 3 sq. : graue p.p.), 4319 f (: saue inf.).—haue herd, 2537; haue hight, 6289,—and so of course before a vowel or weak h.—For hauë before consonants, (not h) see 197 \(\ddagger\) C, 1179 \(\ddagger\) A, 1381 \(\ddagger\) D, 2596 \(\ddagger\) D, 3902 \(\ddagger\) A, 7752 \(\ddagger\) C. Cf. also,—hauë \(\ddagger\) honour, 5232 C; hauë \(\ddagger\) in, 6042 D, 6946 \(\ddagger\) A (B ?).

Pres. Ind. 2 Sing. hast, (i.) (ii.) 557, 696, 845, etc.—hastow, 276 (hast thou CD), 4297 (hast thou CD), etc.; ne hastow, 5512 (ne hast thou C, ne have ye \(\ddagger\) D).

Pres. Ind. 3 Sing. hath, (i.) (ii.) 1255, 1952 (hauyth C), 3457 (has B), etc., etc.—nath, (i.) 1862 AB (ne hath C), 7562 (ne hath C, ne \(\ddagger\) hath D).

Pres. Ind. 1 Pl. han, (i.) 4853 (hauë D), 5545 (hauë D), 5654 (hañ D), 5904 (hauë CD), 6757 (hauë D), 7519 (hauë CD); \(^1\) (ii.) 3779

\(^1\) Supply [for] in AD (or, in D, read hauë).
Observations on the Language

(have D, 3e † han B); han herd, 1186 (have D).—hauę, 5642 (han D).\(^1\)—hauę † nat, 7519 D.

Pres. Ind. 2 Pl. (1) Before consonants han is the regular form in ABC, have in D:\(^2\) cf. 25, 27, 28, 1446, 1668, 2209, 2325, 2878, 3305, 4102, 4154, 4401, 4954, 5860, 6505, 7353, 7712, 7721, 8059. But hauę is found in all four MSS.: thus,—3735 AB, 4768 AB, 5860 B, 7353 C; and when ye follows (have ye) hauę is the regular form in all four: cf. 1373, 1413, 3042, 5855 (han 3e C),\(^3\) 5977, 6829, 7619, 8040.\(^4\) (2) Before vowels,—han, 2964 (have D, han † routhe C\(^6\)), 3779 † C, 4742 (have D). (3) Before h, han herd, 2051 (have D), 2632, 2953 (have D), 5469 (have D, 3e han † B), 5538 (C ?); haue D); han hight, 1577 (have D); haue herd, 6992 (han B; C †).

Pres. Ind. 3 Pl. (1) Before consonants han is the regular form in ABC, have in D: cf. 241, 247, 553, 706, 802, 913, 999, 2478, 3034, 4293, 4299, 4547, 5249, 6877, 7119, 7123 A. But have occurs in 6877 C, han in D 241, 247, 2669; and hath is found in 242 † BC, 2467 (?) † D, 4299 † B, 4547 † D. Cf. also,—hauę † suffred, 6778 D (read haue [y]suffred). (2) Before vowels,—han, 199 (have D), 1129 (have D), 1973 (have D), 3135, 3194 (han(e) D), 6143 (hauyn C, haue D), 6632 (haue D), 7614 (haue D), 7975 (have D); cf. 6778. (3) han here (gen. pl.), 5658 ABD.

Pret. Ind. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 102.
Pret. Ind. 2 Sing. haddest. See § 106.

Pres. Subj. 1 Sing. haue, 33 AB, 1095, 1740, 3717 † D; haue, cf. 1225, 1609 (or indic.), 3632, 3717 † C, 4752; hauę myght(e), 8067 † BD (read trew[e]ly and haue).

Pres. Subj. 3 Sing. haue, 955, 1834, 2723, 2771, 7750 † C (hath AD), 7994; haue † spase, 7305 C; haue, cf. 220, 6465; haue he, 21,\(^5\) 1932 (e † he A)\(^6\); haue his, 805; haue † in, 6465 D; haue † hym, 5292 C.

Pres. Subj. 2 Pl. haue ye, 1667, 2772.\(^7\)
Pret. Subj. 1, 3 Sing. hadde. See § 113.
Pret. Subj. 2 Sing. See § 106.

\(^1\) Supply [as] in D. \(^2\) D has han in 4653. \(^3\) haue [ye] A.
\(^4\) haue [3e] BC. \(^5\) Supply [my] in D, or read haue † he.
\(^6\) Supply [so] and read have he in A.
\(^7\) Transpose eyle and the queene in C.
Inv. Sing. Hauę now good nyght, 3183, 3262; hauę here my trouthę, 3953.

Inv. Pl. Ne wondreth not ne haueth of it no fere, 3595 (haue BD, hauyth C); hauę, 2218 (-yth C), 3908, 4015; haue here (adv.), 1409, 3727 (havith D), 6028.

Inf. (1) Before consonants both han and have are common in A, B, and C; but have is the regular form in D. For han, see 467 AB, 638 B, 769 ABC, 872 AB, 900 BC, 915 AB, etc., etc.; for have, see 467 C, 501 AB, 638 A, 899 AB, etc., etc. Cf. 1100, 1277, 1354, 1499, 1566, 1680, 1796, 2522, 2523, 2717, 2733, 2956, 3255, 3273, 3287, 3581, 4002, 4057, 4683, 4764, 4770, 4774, 4839, 5045, 5046, 5106, 5168, 5232, 5522, 5582, 5653, 5803, 5890, 5896, 5899, 5900, 5968, 6019, 6138, 6247, 6383, 6417, 6431, 6481, 6645, 6887, 7102, 7209, 7268, 7344, 8041, 8046. For an = han, see 5803 C. In—To (om. C) slepe and after tales haue (han BG Cp., hauny C, have D, han a E) reste, 3066, han is unmetrical; cf. Ye shal (schal C, shal GCp. John's) nomore haue (han BC Cp. John's) soueraynte (-eynte BDG, -eignete Cp. John's, -aniteit E, seurete of me C), 3013; cf. also 2717 † D, 3414 † D, 3799 † D, 5968 † C, 6138 † C. (2) In rhyme,—haue, 120 f, 1821 f, 2329 f, 2541 f, 4221 f, 5228 f, 6036 f, 7779 f; hauen, 4305 f (haue BCD) (': grauen indu. 3 pl., -e BCD).

Rhyme words,—sane inf. (120, 2329, 5228, 6036, 7779), subj. 3 sg. (1821, 4221), graue inf. (2329, 6036), graue indu. (2541), graue n. (7779).

(3) Before vowels han is the commonest form in ABC, have in D: cf. 13, 122, 349, 803, 1574, 2224, 2460, 2587, 2831, 2840, 3733, 4348, 5047, 5213, 5967, 7443, 7636. But have is found in all four MSS.: thus,—50 AB, 122 C, 349 B, 709 AB, 2454 AB, 2562 A, 2831 B, 3485 AB, 3786 ABC, 5047 B, 5271 AB, 6407 ABC, 7443 C, 7636 B. In 2224 D hauyn of is found (han ABC). (4) Before h (hym, his, here (hire), had), both han and have are found in A, D, and C: cf. 1503, 2164, 2504, 3352, 3856, 4395, 5579, 7747; for cases before other h's, cf. 857, 3497, 6104, 8043. C has an for han in two instances: an had, 1503 C; an hyzed, 3947 C.

Note.—The clipped form a for the infinitive occurs several times in C (rarely in A and D). Thus,—in C 501, 638, 899, 915, 1499, 1638, 2556, 3273, 4002, 5045, 5046, 5106, 5390, 5896, 5900, 5903, 5906, 6417, 6645, 7087, 7192, 8041, 8046; in A 900; in D 5168, 5596. The form ha is rare,—see 5106 C, 5909 D, 6417 D. In all the citations in this note a consonant follows the infinitive.
§ 125. Weak -e is elided before a vowel and often before h (see Child, §§ 74—76; ten Brink, § 269); but final -e in the definite article may be preserved (see § 128).\(^1\)

Elision of weak -e takes place before he, his, him, hire (gen. dat. acc. sg., gen. pl.), hem; before haue (pres. ind. or subj., inf.), hast, hath, han (ind. pl., inf.), halde; before how and here (adv.); before French “h mute” in honour, horrible; before irrational h in Horaste.

Examples of elision before h in pronouns are unnecessary (for possible exceptions to the rule, see § 126). Examples before h in the other words mentioned follow: variants are for the most part left unregistered; the occurrence of a caesura after the elided -e is indicated.

dere (adv.) haue (ind. 1 sg.), 4953; blame haue (ind. or subj. 1 sg.), 1295; Diomede || haue (ind. 2 pl.), 8040.

wratthe || hast, 933; cause hast, 6913; ioye hastow, 6951.

moue hath, 4598; herte hath, 6501; loue hath, 879 AB; loue || hath, 960; nece (||?) hath, 8090; purueyatnees (||?) hath, 5639; sore hath, 1618; Troye hath, 6220; Criseyde || hath, 7610.

a lawe (||?) han (2 pl.), 2878.

loue hadde (3 sg.), 304, 663; ioye || hadde, 3311; cause || hadde, 4069; Criseyde || hadde, 5487; longe || hadde, 5832.

on lyue han be, 5899; ye koude han, 8046; moste (sg.) han, 3733; men sholde (||?) han, 872; sholde (3 pl.) han, 3273; I wold han, 1499; she wold (||?) han, 2164; he wolde han, 3497; ye me wolde han, 4348; they wolde han 4839; holde (sg.) han, 5803, 7087; ye holde han, 1503; ye holde (||?) han, 8043; som tyme (||?) han, 5967 (see note 2, below); cf. also, wolde (2 pl.) han, 2831.

I dorste haue, 899; he myght haue, 1277; who myght haue, 7102; I wolde haue, 5168, cf. 8041; she wolde haue, 501; who wolde haue, 5045.

In all the following cases of elision before how, except 6005, 7145, how is preceded by the caesura: loue, 1752; nece, 4405; Troy, 6005; swete, 4120; at the lest, 4678; thoughte (ind. 3 sg.),

\(^1\) With reference to the treatment of the final vowel in elision, the following readings are not without interest, though some of them can hardly be called evidence: tellit (= telle it), 580 C; myghty (= myghte), 7444 A (myghty C); drie (= dreie), 6659 C; pose (= pose a), 3152 B; excusor (= excuse her inf.), 7462 D, see 7160 D (cf. dethes = deth his, 469 C); leue = leef he, 6247 C.
§ 125, 126.] of Chaucer’s Troilus. 347

3282; cast (pret. ind. 3 sg.), 4823; kowde (3 sg.), 1921; he nyste (ind.), 7145; if ye wiste (subj.), 6280; happe how happe may, 7159.

allone here (hic), 806; hadde here-vpon, 3377.

Ne shal I neuere haue hele || honour ne ioye, 6104 (neuere haue || honour C, Shal I neuer haue hele h. ne ioye D). Cf. And that ye d[e]igne me so muche honoureu (inf.), 2981 (muchel B, mechil C, And yow deigne me so honoure D j).

In place horrible makyng[e] ay his moone, 6613.

How that ye louen sholde (sholden louen B Cp., schuld[e] louyn C, shold love D, shulde louen G, shulden loue John’s) on that hatte Horaste (horast G, on hat h. D, oon atte h. E), 3639. That Horaste = Orestes (cf. § 139) is evident from Gower’s Confessio Amantis, bk. iii. (I, 352), where the forms Horastes and Horest (elided) occur: Chaucer merely uses the name without intending an allusion to the classical Orestes.

Note 1.—In some of the examples just given, the word affected by elision is one that loses its -e rather readily before a consonant: so especially of the “auxiliary verbs,” and of the nouns loue, ncc. — It should be observed that in phrases in which an auxiliary verb precedes the infinitives han or haue, we have often to do with the infinitive itself, and not with an auxiliary verb in the infinitive form of the infinitive han (or haue) is the unaccented part (or scarcely more than a suffix). In such cases the infinitive had of course no full pronunciation, and in some instances we actually find it written an or a (§ 124, VI., note at end). Elision before such a form as this has really little in common with elision before a fully sounded h, of whatever origin.

Note 2.—Proparoxytone words ending in -e apocopate -e before consonants (ten Brink, § 257): sweetnesse haue (638), Pandare || here (adv.) (868), Pandare herde (876), and the like, have therefore no significance as examples of elision (cf. also som tymne han, 5967, where som-tyme is practically a compound, and see § 2, p. 3).

Note 3.—For the treatment of words like chaumbre, lettre, temple, name, before h, see § 136, f, g. Cf. heuene (dissyl.) hye 4587 (§ 14). For euer[e], neuere before h, see the details in § 90.

§ 126. Hiatus, whether before a vowel or before h in the words mentioned in § 125, is very rare.

In a few instances, the evidence for hiatus is either conclusive or, at any rate, considerable. Thus,—

Al this Pandáre || yn his herte thoughte, 1063 (C cut out). Pandare is the reading of ABDEGCp. John’s Phillipps; Durham has Pandarj; Hl. 2392 has Al this tho Pandaráre in herte thoht. Shall we read Pandárus (see § 139) ?

Now good[e] um for goddes loue I prey, 1394 (goode BG, Now my good eem D John’s Hl. 2392, Now myn em C, And good[e] em
Observations on the Language

Cp.). C has but nine syllables, and, unless goodē be read (cf. p. 128), the same is true of ABCp.

Al woldē I (wold I B, wold y D) that noon (no man CD) wyste (woste C, wist DG) of this thought, 1830. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Read either woldē I or wyste of.

But hasteth yow to don hym ioyē hawe, 2329 (ioy[ë] D; no note in Austin, except doon Cp.).

Iwys so wolde I (wold I B) and I wistē how, 3944 (wist[ë] D; no note in Austin). Rather wistē how than woldē I.

Were it so that I wist[ë] outrely, 4328 (wistē B, 3[i]t were it so that I woste outrely C, 3it were it so that I wist vttirly D, Were it so that I wiste entirely G; no note in Austin).

As nold[e] god but yf I sholdē hawe, 5228 (nold[e] ... shold[ë] B, nolde ... schulde C, nolde ... shulde D, nolde ... schuldē G; no note in Austin.)

And stod forth mewet (meyth † D) mylde (-[ë] D) and mansuete, 6557 (line om. C, And stode forthe full mylde and manswete G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Trewē as stel in ech condicion, 7194 (Trew B; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Either hiatus or 9-syl.

I fyndē ek (ekte G) in storyes (stories DG, storyes C, the stories B) ellys (eH C) where, 7407. The reading of B avoids hiatus; no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

The same hele I shal noon helē hawe, 7779 (no note in Austin).

Of the examples just given the surest are the three before hawe (inf.) (2329, 5228, 7779), that before how (3944), and that before and (6557). Reasonably sure is 4328 (before outrely), and so, perhaps, is 1830 (before I). 1394 may be a verse of nine syllables, but hiatus makes a much smoother line; 7194, however, will run very well as a nine-syllable verse.—Here perhaps should be considered haddē had in 227, though had (p.p.) is a part of the verb have not mentioned in § 125:

And wende no thing haddē had swych myght, 227 (no thing(e) had had swiche myȝt B, hadde had swych amyȝt C, he (no and) wend no thing had had such myght D; Cp. agrees with A except that it has swiche; And wend no thyng hade had sueche myght G; no note as to John's). Possibly swiche in BCp. is for swich a¹:

Cp. is a good MS. is all respects, but B is not to be trusted as

¹ Cf. 4581 B.
§ 126.] of Chaucer’s Troilus, 349

to its -e’s. However, ĥadde ĥad is surely more euphonious than ĥad had ( _ x ).

The following two lines may perhaps be more safely regarded as nine-syllable verses than as verses with hiatus, for loue almost always loses its -e in the Troilus, whether a vowel or a consonant follows (§ 8, p. 14). In both verses the reading is quite secure (no note in Austin).

Loue ayens the (om. C) which who-so defendeth, 603.

Loue hym made al prest to don hire byde, 4824.

In 421, it is perhaps safer to read louë thus than to allow the hiatus seyd he (but cf. ten Brink, § 270. 2):

And to the god of loue || thus seyde he, 421 (seyd he D).

In the following two lines the reading comynge must be looked at with suspicion (see § 10). In the first it may be avoided by hiatus (cause of); in the second, it causes hiatus, which, however, may be avoided by inserting ek (with CD). - Apart from these two lines, there are no instances of -ynge in the Troilus, whether before a vowel or a consonant, except this forknowynge ye se || ye se (§ 59, b).

The cause of his comynge (-ynge D) || thus answered he, 2187.

Of here comynge || and of his also, 4517 AB (comynge and ek C, comynge and eke D; no note in Austin).

Other lines in which hiatus, though possible, is on the whole unlikely, are:

Quod Pandarus now is tyme I wende, 1305 (so ABG, now is it tyme C. Now quod Pandarus is it tyme y wende D; no var. in Cp. noted).

I am on(e) (oon B Cp., on G, on of C) the fairest (fayrest BC) || out of drede (withoutyn drede D), 1831 (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation except on oon). The choice lies between the fairest[ǐ] || out and a 9-syl. verse.

Hym to reuoken she dide (did B, dede C) al hire (hir D) peyne, 3960. Mr. Austin’s collation shows no variants. Reuoke and dide al certainly give a more agreeable line than reuoken and dide al; but it is unsafe to assume hiatus. Hirë is improbable. G has Hym to reuoke she dide her bysy peyne, the last word in a later hand.

Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedyr that C, whedirwandes D) thow woldest (wilt D) me (om. D) sterve, 4944 (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation).

The choice lies between roughtë I and woldest (cf. § 136, b).

She told ek (tolde ek CD) how Tydeus (Cithideus† C) er she
stente, 7848 (no note in Austin). The choice lies between tolde \textit{ek} and Tydæus: cf. Tydeus sonç that dun descended is, 7877, and see § 141.

In a considerable number of verses the reading of one or another MS., necessitating hiatus, is easily corrected by comparison of MSS., so that the hiatus disappears. Examples are:

Now Pandare (so ABDCp., Pandar G, Pandarus E John's) \| I kan (kanne B) no more (mor G) seye, 1044 (cut out of C). Here Pàndarè, with its impossible accentuation, should without doubt be rejected in favour of Pandarus (§ 139). Cf. Pàndarè \| and, 5747 (Pandarus C, Pàndare \| in BCp. John's).

And how he myght[e] here (acc.) beseche of grace, 1056 (BCp. John's have lest after he).

I loue (leue C) oon (om. G) which (which that BE Cp., wich that C, wheche that G) is most (moost is B Cp., most is G) ententyf, 1923. Read which that.

But Troilus thoughte his herte bledde, 2035 (thought[e] his B, Troylis that thouȝte his h. b. C, Troylus that thought that his herht bled D, But Troylus thought his herte bledd G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). Clearly we should read But Troilus that thoughte his herte bledde. That is almost necessary for the construction.

And gan to smyle and seyde (seyde hym BDG) \| Em I preye, 2244 (no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

Ye shul (schal G, shal Cp. John's) nomore (namore Cp., no moore John's) \| haue (han BCp. John's) souereynte, 3013, (souereignete Cp. John's, seurete of me C). Read han (or haue) souereynete (cf. § 137).

And what myschaunce \| in this world yet is, 3132 (myschauns[e] C, meschaunce in this world set ther is B, what mischef yet in this world ther is D; Cp. John's insert ther before is).

If that ich grace had (so BG, ich a grace hadde Cp., I hadde grace A, y had grace D, I hadde C omitting grace) for (om. CD) to do so, 3770. The choice lies between grace hadde and hadde grace.

Of swiche (swwhich B, whiche C, wych D) sikes haule he (om. B) nought blynne (blynne B), 4207. (No note in Mr. Austin's collation.) Cf. § 138, 1.

That pride enuyȝ ire and auaryce, 4647 ACDE Phill. 8252 Harl. 2392 (That pride and ire enuy[e] and auaryce BCp.; That pride enuye and ire and auarice G John's Selden B 24; That ire enuy
§ 126. ]  

and auerice Durham II 13). Hiatus is doubly suspicious on account of the unusual treatment of -ye (as -ỳe) in the interior of the verse (see p. 84).

And though I myght[ë] || I wol not do so, 5121 (myghté B, myyte || I nuldé not C, myght || I woldé nat D, myyte || I woldé not G).  

(No note in Austin's collation.)

A (And D) dieu (dey D) the deuel spede (haue C) hym that (that it BD, at hit G) recche, 5292. The insertion of it restores the verse.  

(No note in Austin.)

Whanne I (om. B) the (thy C) processe (próces C, procès D) haue 
in memorie, 6946 (haue in myn C, I haue in my D; no note as to Cp. John's; whan wil ye this processe haue in memory Hl.  

2392; When I the processe haue in memorie G).

The[r] (Ther BD, There CG, Wher John's) she (he † G) was born  
(borne BDG, boryn C) and (and there C, and ther D John's) she dwelt (dwellyd CG, duellid D) hadde (had BG, om. D) ay, 7074.  

And that to late is now me to rewe, 7433 (to late is now for me to rewe B, to late it is now for to rewe C, And to late it is now for to rewe D).  

(No note in Mr. Austin's collation.)

And graunte it that ye soone || on me rewe, 7727 (sone vpon CDG;  

Cp. John's also have vpon).

Other examples1 are: (a) before vowels,—1099 D, 1277 C, 1305 AB, 1405 C, 1608 A, 1956 B, 1957 A, 2287 A (hondé acc., see § 13), 2386 D, 2744 C, 2807 A, 3495 C, 3611 D, 4970 C, 5070 A, 5258 C, 5401 C, 5436 C, 5885 C, 6073 D, 7110 CD, 7917 D; (b) before h,—herdé (pret. sg.) hym (549 D), tymé || hath (1577 A), spede (pret. pl.) hem (2032 AB), hesté hath (1587 A), demauwde he (7222 D), sayldé (pret. sg.) he (7548 C), willé hath (7905 C).—In 6605 A,  

tendresse how (with impossible accentuation) read tendernessse how. In 5747 A, for Com Pandaré || and (with impossible accentuation) read Com Pandere in || and, with BCP. (Com(e) Pandare in and John's, Com pandarius and C, Com(e) Pandaré and D). In 7652, read than[ñe] don rather than  

myght[ë] I : C has the -es right.

Instances of consonant+re, le not slurred before a vowel are perhaps not strictly cases of hiatus, for it is by no means certain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation was lettre, temple rather than letter, tempel, or lett, templ.

But wel ye wot the chaumbre (-er B, -ir C) is but lite, 2731.

And of myn ordre (ordere C) ay (om. C) til (til that C) deth (they C) me mete, 5444.

I think (thyneke C) ek how he able is (abele he is C, able he is D)  
to (for to BCCp.) haue, 1821. Read, however, with BCP.  

Humble (-bele C, -blely † D) in (his D, in his BCECp.) speche and

1 Cf. also note 3 at the end of § 92, V.
yn his lokynge (tellynge C) eke, 4790. Read, however, with B etc., humble in his.

A considerable number of instances of apparent hiatus are due to the reading -e instead of -en in forms in which both endings are known to Chaucer's language. Thus rather often in the infinitive (§ 119, XI.) and in strong perfect participles (§ 122, XI.), and occasionally in other verb-forms, as dede (pret. pl. al, 4247 (read diden with BE Cp.; dedyn C) and they sholdē hire (gen. sg.), 4848 (read sholden with BCp. John's; -yn D): cf. the variants in § 96, III. (pres. ind. pl., § 109, IX., note (pret. ind. pl.). Similarly, for here seluen excusynge, 112, read here seluen (hirē seluen B, hirē seluē C, herself[ê] D); for abouē every, 6517 (§ 88), read abouen with B (yn C, -ê D †); for oftē hastow, 904, read often with B (oftē C, oft[ê]D).

Note 1.—No doubt unelided -ê before a vowel is to be changed to -en whenever such a change is possible, even if the cæsura might protect hiatus. Thus,— But if thou late (3e lat B, 3e late CG, 3e lete D) hym deyđ (dyĕ D, deyen G; no note in Austin) || I wote sterwe, 1408; God lote hym werke (-en BCp. John's, -yn G, werk[ê] D) as he can denyse, 2898.—With regard to erroneously substituting -ê for -en and thereby necessitating hiatus, B is the least culpable of the four MSS. and Cp. appears to be almost exemplary (cf. § 119, XI., note).

§ 127. Before h in words other than those mentioned in § 125, there seems to be no special inclination to elide -e: the -e is sometimes preserved (see list I.) and sometimes lost (see list II.).

In the examples that follow (lists I. and II.) variants are for the most part left unmarked; the occurrence of a cæsura after the elided or unelided -e is indicated.

I. -ê retained:

leuē (sbst.) hom(e), 126 A (read leue and hom).

Pandarē || herkene, 658 (Pandâris C).

nomorē hardē grace, 713.

haddē || hōrn, 1727 (or,—haddē horn || )

here seuenethē hows, 1766 (or,—here seunethē hows).

the best[ê] harpour, 2115.

that ye thonkē (subj.) || humbely, 2804.

Note.—No importance attaches to vncē (dissyl.) herde, 2185.
II. -e lost:

had, hadde (ind. 3 sg., see § 102)  
herd, 750, 5007, 5329;  
(subj. 3 sg., see § 113) herd, 7086.  

abedde | half, 1152 (§ 14); ought  
(sg.) half, 5927 (§ 123, III).  

were hanged, 1438.  

faste || homward, 2388.  

soone hope (ind. 1 sg.), 3794  

ioye || halt, 4478 (§ 21); loue  
halt, 4606 (§ 8); myght (3 sg.)  

(lit.) holden, 5260 (§ 123, VIII); hope || halt, 6711 (§ 2).  

bothe heroner, 5075 (§ 88).  

the more harm is, 7299; cf. 1523  

Note.—Some of the examples in list II. have no significance, since the word affected is one that loses its -e freely even before a consonant: so especially of the "auxiliary verbs" (including were), of the noun loue, of more, and of the phrase no fors (which, besides, is, in the instance in question, accented on the no).

§ 128. Elision of weak -e in monosyllables.

The cases that come under consideration are the (definite article) and ne (simple negative, 'non'). The before a vowel or weak h may suffer elision or preserve its -e at the will of the poet. Ne is regularly elided. Whether elision in these cases amounts to full elthlipsis may be doubted. Ten Brink decides for elthlipsis (§ 269), but the metre is quite as well satisfied by reducing the -e to a consonant i (y). The spelling nyis for nis (ne is) in 7451 C seems to be significant in this regard.

On the other side we have the evidence of toon and tother, and the testimony of Hart (1569): see Jespersen, *Studier over engelske Kasus*, Første Række, Copenh., 1891, p. 154.

I. Elision of the.

the aduersite, 25 (D om. the).  
theeffect, 212 (the effecte B; D Đ); the effect, 2651 (theffect B);  
cf. 2305, 3188, 4422, 4519, 4657, 4806, 6740.  

the assege, 464 (thassege B, the sege D); thassege, 4724 (thessage  
B, the sege D (f)); cf. 1192, 1208, 6142, 7220.  

at the ende, 1876 (at ende BD, an ende C); cf. thende, 1345 B.  
the aleyes, 1905 (thaleyes B, thé a. D).  
the alderfirste[e], 2939 (the aldir firste C; D † om. the); cf. 4439.  

the experience, 4125; cf. 3830.  
the affeccion, 4432 (thaffeccion B; C † om. the).

1 Supply [which] in A.  
2 See exception at end of IV., below.  
3 Supply [was] in C.
Observations on the Language [§ 128.

the ambassiatours, 4802 (thembassadours B, theem-bassatourys C);¹
thembassadours, 4807 (the embassadourys C, thambassiatours D).
theschaunge, 4808 (the chaunge CD); cf. 4820, 4822, 5540 C.
at the other, 5096 (attother B, at other D).
the ymage, 5526 (C †); cf. 1458.
the ordre of causes, 5679.
thaqueyntaunce, 6485 (the acqueynta[n]se C, the acquentauns ? D).²
thencheson, 6995 (then(e)cheson B, the encheson C, the entencioun † D); cf. 681 † B.
the est seë, 7472 (thè † C, thè est see D).
thanentaylle, 7921 (thauentaille B, the auentayle CD).
thentent, 7993 (the ent. BD, the † centence ? C).³
th erratyk, 8175 A (the erratyk B).

Compare also 1696 C, 2361 D, 2663 D, 3378 CD, 4827 D(†), 7829 C, and the variants under thilke (p. 160).

Similarly before h :
thonour, 120 (the honour BCD).

Note 1.—For it shal of, 5768 C has the hëd shal of, clearly the “correction” of a scribe.

Note 2.—Before h in the following words the of course suffers no elision:
harpe, 731; harm, 839, 1539, 3167; haste, 2031; hit[ke], 943; hardest, 1814; heuënes, 1939; hood, 2266; happy, 2467; hond, 2689; holy, 3384; herte, 3913, 5808; halle, halles, 5394, 7092; hons, 5485; hote, 490. So also the (A.S. ðy) in the hotter, cf. 1623.

Note 3.—Sometimes one or another MS. has a reading which seems to require or suggest the (definite article) before a consonant (not h) : thus,—
200 C, 2052 A (†), 2341 A (†), 3191 D (†), 3345 D, 3386 C, 3567 B, 3597 C, 4333 D, 4845 D, 6926 BD, 7392 B, 7993 C, 8232 D. The cases cited may all be corrected by comparison of MSS. But in 4906, ABCD agree in reading: His hëd to the wal his body to the grounde (no note in Austin).

II. But e in the may remain unelided. Thus,—

By alle (al B, aH D) the (tho Cp.) othes that I haue to (om. BCD) yow sworn(e), 1384. Probably we should read: By alle the othes that I haue yow sworn. Alle the othes or allê the othes is hardly to be thought of.

The olde (The old D, Wolde † for polde C) daunce and euer poyn
therinne, 3537.

The cause ytold (tolde John’s) of here comyng(e) (yng D) the (om. C) olde (old D, om. B), 4803. Comyng(e) the olde is unlikely.

The newe (new BD) loue out (e BD) cacheth (chaceth B, schakythy C, chasithe D) ofte (oft B) the olde, 5077 (no note in Austin).

¹ Supply [thet] in B.
² Thaqueyntaunce (The acqueynta[n]se C, The acquentauns D, The acquentaunce G) of these (this BC, thees D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus C, Troïannes D) to (for to C) chaunge. (No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.)
³ Supply [the] in B.
Here oft the olde is perhaps preferable to ofté the olde.

The observaunce (-ns D) euere yn youre absence, 5445 (C inserts I before in).

And whiten gan the (echе † C) orisonte (orisoune B, ory3onte C, orisent D) shene, 6639.

III. Some lines may be read in two ways, one of which preserves the -e in the, the other of which elides it.

And sith (sithen B, sythe C, seth Cp.) the ende (thende B Cp. John's) is of (om. BCDCp. John's) euery tales strengthe, 1345.

Lo herte (hert D) myn as wolde (wold BD) the excellence, 3830 (no note in Austin).

Bygan (Bygunne C, Began D) for ioye the amorouse (thamarouse B, the amerous CD, thamorouse Cp. John's) daunce (dauns D), 6093.

IV. In nė the Troilus regularly elides -e before a vowel. There is but one exception: 649 (see end of list).

ne acheueth, 1893 (nacheueth B; CD om. ne; escheweth † D).

ne enforce I, 5678 (nen-force B).

naxe in guerdon, 6957 (ne axe CD).

For he that nough[†] nassayeth nought ne cheuyth, 7147 (noujt assaieth noujt acheueth D).

He ne eet ne drouk for his malencolye, 7579 (ne et(e) BD, he nother † et C).

He ne eet ne dronk ne slep ne word [ne] seyde, 7803 (ne word(e) seyde BD, He net ne drank ne no word he ne seyde C).

But litel bok no makyng thow nenuye, 8152 (D om. ne).

So nam, nys (§ 124). Particularly interesting is nyis for nis (7541 C). For nere, noot, niste, nyl, nylt, nolle, noldest, see §§ 124, 125.

A single exception is:

Ek the ne oughte (aught B) not ben yuel apayed, 649 (And ek thou not to ben euele payede C, And eke thow oghtist not ben evil apayed D; no variants in Austin, except nat Cp. for not).

The reading seems to be well established. In: I ne (om. D) ought (aught B, aught C, oght D) not for that thyng hym despise, 1805, read ne ought[ε] not.

§ 129. Elision of close -e.

I. Of the elision of (close) -e in me, we, he, she, ne (neque), there are several examples. Ten Brink (§ 269) is inclined to regard such instances as full elision (ecthlipeis), but this seems doubtful, except perhaps when the vowel which follows is itself an e.
And yet me of-thynketh that this aunant me asterte, 1043 A
(mathynketh . . . may † sterte B, me athinkith . . . me stert D †).

me offendenth, 605 (me off. C †; D †).
me assaylleth, 607 (massaileth D †; me ass. C †).
me allone, 1021 (malon B, me a. D †); so 2486.
mauyse, 1361 B (me auyse C, me a. D †; A †).
me enspire, 3554 AB (me enspire D, nyjt ens. C).
me anon, 5172 BCD (A?).

And go we anoon for as yn mynt entente, 6187 (C †).
In to the gardeyn go we and ye shal here, 2199.
he answèred, 5097 (B om. he; he answerde C, he answerd D).
she abod, 127 (D om. she; sche bod C); cf. 2736 † C.
she abreyde, 5874 (she braye B, sche brayd C).
she alighte, 6552 (shalighte B, she light D; C †).
Ne yn hym desir doon (l. noon) 2 otherë fownes bredde, 465 (Nyn hym C).
Ne auunter certeyn seyth men is he non, 1809 (Navauntour B; D †).
Nen-tendement considere ne tonge telle, 6358 (Ne † mendement B).
Ne of ladyes ek so fayr a companye, 6810 (Nof B).
Ne encens vp on here auter sette a fyre, 7829 (Nencens B, The ensens † C, Ne encense D).
Ne (Ny B, Ne y D) neuere (G inserts man) saw (saugh BCP., ne say C) a more bounteous
Of here estat (-e B, astate D) ne (non C) a (om. BCDG John’s; nagladder Cp.) gladder (-ere John’s) ne (om. D, nor B) of speche A frendliour (frendelyere C) na (ne a DE, ne non C, ne G) more gracious, 883-5.

Examples of hiatus are:

Whi hastow (D inserts thus) mad (-e B) Troylus (Tr. made Cp., tr. mad C, tr. me made D) to (om. D) me (om. D) vntriste (-truste B, -trust CD), 3681 (no var. noted for Jn’s.). But the reading in Cp. is perhaps to be preferred.

As for a frend ye may in me assure, 7987.
And after this (om. C) with sikynge he abreyde (vpbrayd D), 724.

1 In D read of swogh for A swogh.
2 none B, non CD. For desir C has desyred †; for hym BD John’s have his; for fownes D has fantasye. Cp. reads: Nyn him desire noon other fewnes bredde.
§ 129.]
of Chaucer's Troilus.

I think ek how he able is (able he is C, able he is D) to (for to BC) haue, 1821.
That sorwest thus and he answered (answerede C, answerde hym B, answerd him D) nay, 5302.
That yf that he encrese myghte or eche, 6473 (C † D †).
In furye as doth he (the D) Ixion in helle, 6575 (In furie as 'thow he leye in helle e C').
To which (-e D) no word (-e B) for sorwe (sorw B) (for sorwe no word D) she answerede (-swerde BC, -swerd D), 4369; cf. 5897.
Cf. also: mè also, 5978; gò we 'vlce, 2809; hè || allàs, 3919; he into, 3939 BC (he hym into A; D †); hè iwys, 4023 f; hè || aboûte, 4904; he ôfte, 6980 f; he òûys, 7402; shè || allàs, 3945; shè alsô, 4419; that shè vntrwè be, 7660 f.
In 1097: For-whi to every louere (louer BDGJn's.) I me excuse ABDG Cp. Jn's. (C cut out), e in me may or may not be eliced.

Note 1.—There are no instances of elided the (pron. 2 pers.) or ye (pron. 2 pers.). For instances of hiatus with these words, see, for the, 3139 (thè allège), 4100 A (the Ixionus), 4299 (thè apîlt), 4454 (thè || obligây); for ye, 682 (yè endûvè), 6598 (ye audiânce). Cf. also the oughte, 3106 f; the ôfè, 3127, and see note 2, below.

Note 2.—When the word that follows is a monosyllable, elision of me (etc.) is not to be expected, whichever of the two words has the iictus. See 523 (mè || it), 1011 (mè || and), 1102 (mè || ye), 3768 (mè is), 4265 (mè is), 5176 (mè âl), 5411 (mè || and), 5671 (mè iù), 6278 (mè || and), 6607 (mè || o); 2017 (wè ouerç), 2030 (dè wè âs); 90 (hè || and), 228 (hè o), 299 (hè ârêt), 326 (hè || yè; cf. 358, 377, 543, 720 † A), 1165 (hè yu), 1210 (hè || as), 1368 (hè || and), 1663 (hè and I; cf. 5545 f), 1743 (hè and), 2158 (hè of), 2166 (hè aîj), 2281 (hè I), 3855 (hè ât hovèl), 5185 (hè || âl), 4633 (hè || of); cf. 1441, 4634 (hè âî); cf. 2693, 6418 (hè àl), 6646 (hè òn), 6999 (hè òf), 7108 (hè is), 7802 (hè yu), 8198 (hè or shè); 407 (shè ou), 660 (shè || and; cf. 2274, 2341, 5879, 6552), 937 (shè || of; cf. 1028, 1288), 1091 (shè oughte), 1808 (shè is), 3829 (shè || of), 5072 (shè is), 5573 (shè âl); 1811 (ne âls), 5926 AD (yè ne I); for the (2 pers.) see 585, 648, 766, 922, 2485, 2619, 5149, 7667; for ye see 1314, 2885, 3042, 4215, 4331, 4359, 7237, 7352, 7436.

Note 3.—In 98 A: Of ony fred to whom shè dorst make hire mone, we should omit make (with BCDEGCp.).

II. Ne I is several times reduced to a single syllable (sometimes written Ny). Thus,—
Ne I nyl forbere yf that ye don amys, 3015 (Ny nyl B Cp. John's, Ne y wil D †).
Ne I welè not sertyen breke 30rè defence, 4141 CE (Ne I wolè certeyn A, Ny wol certein B).1 Cp. reads Ny, but otherwise appears to agree with A.

1 B is unmetrical; supply [not].
Observations on the Language

§ 129.

Ne I nyl not rakte as for to greuen here, 4484 (Ne I wil C, Ny nyl BCp., Ne rakyl nel y be for to grevyn here D).

Ny say not nay but in conclusion, 7366 B (Ne I sey C, Ne sey AD). (No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.)

Ne I sey not this al only for these men, 8142 (Ny sey B Cp. John’s). See also 883, just quoted.

III. Ten Brink (§ 269) remarks that the elision of close -e occurs “nur vor vocalischem Anlaut, nicht vor h;” but there seems to be no good reason why weak h should have interfered with the operation of this elision, and in one verse of the Troilus one is tempted to follow B in reading maddē for me hadde: Allas I madde ytrowed on 3oure lore, 7099 B. The other MSS., however, except D, read differently: I ne hadde trowed AG; that I ne hadde trowid C; me hadde trowed D; no note in Mr. Austin’s collation. Both me hadde and ne hadde make sense. If the former reading be adopted, the line means, “Would I that I had trusted myself to your counsel!” If the latter, “Alas! to think that I should not have trusted your counsel!” But ne hadde is ambiguous: it could mean, “Would that I had not trusted!” which is contrary to the obvious purport of the passage. Perhaps this explains the reading me hadde as a scribe’s purblind attempt to correct what he did not understand.

—In 2017, D has: Now lete we her slepe and forth our talis hold, but ABCG omit we (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation) before her and insert it before oure, having no forth.—Similarly in 3939 A reads: For this or that he hym into bedde caste, where the correct reading is undoubtedly he into bed hym caste (so BCp.; he into bedde him cast C; For this or for that he into the bedde him cast D); and in 2413 D reads Thus to the more worthi part(e) he hym held, where ABC have no hym.

Note 1.—For hiatus before h see, e. g., 4135 (mè || how), 5207 (mè || hast), 5222 (mè || his), 5563 (mè || hath), 6947 (me hást), 7323 (mè hath); 3779 (we hàn), 6757 (we han); 83 (hè hath; cf. 3667, 3917, 4402, 7464), 301 (hè how), 318 (hè hadde; cf. 750, 6986), 491 (hè hadde; cf. 1718, 2453f, 6086f, 7508), 695 (he hath; cf. 1794, 2870), 2051 (kè hym; cf. 3542), 3907 (hè here poss. sg.), 4029 (he hère acc.), 4459 (hè hym), 7455 (hè here acc.; cf. 2157, 7143); 124 (shè hym), 1823 (shè here poss. sg.), 3424 (shè hym; cf. 7567), 4835 (shè || hadde), 7467 (shè hadde); 3851 (ne hoî). Cf. also the hadde (4998), yè han (25, 28, 1446, 1577, etc.), ye his (5590), etc. Elision is of course out of the question in such cases as me hêté (1798), me hêteth (4688), me hôtly (5106), he hêt (1288), he hérde (2036), he hênte (2963f), he hêng (3921), the hêrêy (3793f), the hêrme (4473), ye hêlpe (4405), ye hêre inf. (3774f, 7217f), ye hâte (6508).

Note 2.—In 7910, the reading of C: from day to day til they be in were of teye, makes sense, but is certainly to be rejected in favour of ben bere of ABD.—In 1972 read ye veyis A instead of 3e i wis CD (B has 3o yis). In 4979 C ye ilê is to be corrected.
IV. A remarkable case of the elision of close -e, and one which seems to indicate that the phenomenon in question is not full elision, is 2199:

Into the gardyn go we || and ye shal here. So ABCDG; no note as to Cp. John's.

V. Instances of the elision (syneelisis) of close -e in other words than the monosyllables just discussed are very rare (cf. § 33).

As he that feltē pyte on every syde, 5486 (pitie Cp., pitē hadde B, pitē felte D). Here the caesura comes after pyte. Perhaps we should scan feltē pythē, but that seems not so likely. C lacks the stanza. Cf. also 2662 † C, 7462 † D.

On euery nymphe and deltē infernal, 6205 (dye BD, deth † C). Possibly deltē, with synæresis.

Note.—The -e in Diana (= Daphne) seems to have been weak (cf. the rhyme Diane : Dane, K.T. 1205-6): hence we have ordinary elision in O Phæbus thank whan Dane here seluen shette, 3568 (diane her self shet D).1 No doubt the -e in Tarbe is of the same kind: Flexippe she Tharbe and Antigone, 1901 (flexippe & Schetarbe & Antigone C, Flexipe & she tarke and Anteigne D); Antigone hire sister Tarbe also, 2648 (Tharbe B, Tarb C, Marbe D). So Alētē (= Allecto) in Megera Alēte and ek Thesyphon, 4686 (Megera aliete thow theisphere D). On the other hand, we have final close -e slurred in Flexippe in the (doubtless erroneous) reading of D in 1901 (just quoted). As to these -e's cf. ten Brink, § 94.

§ 130. Elision (or slurring) of final o and final a.

I. Final o in the proposition to is treated like final -e in the definite article. It is safer to regard the elision in this case, too, as not complete elipsis. The elision is commonest with the infinitive.

to auance, 518 (tauance B, to a. D).
tassayen, 921 B (to assay[en] A, to asayen C, for cesyng † D);
tassaye, 7146 (tasaie B, to asaye C †, to assaie D).
to arede, 1217 (thede † B; C † D †).
to endite, 1342 (to en. CD), 1785 (tendite B; C † D †).
to entende, 1938 (tentende B; D †).
to appere, 1994 (tapere B, to apere CD).
to anyse, 2300 (tauys B, to † yse D).
tonfolde, 2787 B (to vnfolde AD, to onfolde C).
to abrygge, 3104 (tabregge B, to abregge CD); tabregge, 3137 f (to a. C, abregge D †); cf. also 5088, 5587.
to encree, 4177 (tencrese BC, ten(en)crece E); cf. 5588 C.
to aproche, 4538 (taproche B, ta-proche C).

1 The reading of D shows that Chaucer's caution in distinguishing Diana and Daphne in the passage cited from The Knight's Tale is evidence that he "knew his public."
to abide, 4652 (tabide B, to † abide D); tabyde, 6396 (to a. I D); cf. also 6716, 6859 C (?), 7133, 7518, 7546.
to acheue, 4741 (tacheue B, shal † cheue D).\(^1\)
to enqueren, 5672; cf. 4526 C.
to arede, 6232 (tarede B, torede C).
to amenden, 6501 (tamende B, to amendyn C, to amend D).
tenbrace, 6587 (to embrase C, to enbrace D). (9-syl. verse.)
tabreyde, 6883 (to a. CD, to breyde B).
tacoye, 7145 (ta-coye C, to acoy D).
tovnlouen, 8061 (to vnloue CD).
Cf. also 1781 D (teschewe), 1986 (?) B, 2682 C, 6796 B, 7816 C.
But instances of this slur also occur when the word that follows to is not an infinitive:
Vn to ony loue and his cause auayle, 20 (D †).
For to euery wight som goodly auenture, 1366 (to euerycê B, for euery D); And his comyng vnwyst is to euery wyght, 3754 (teuery B, vnwist to euery C).
And into a closet for to anyse here bettre, 2300 (tauyse B, in a closet for to vysse D †).
Out wente anoon to Elyne and Deiphesus, 2726.
That passed was and thus he drof to an ende, 6838 (tanende B).
Examples of hiatus with to are:
to arten hire, 388 (for to artyn C; B †).
to èntrepàrten wò, 592 (intyrpartyn C).
to èche, 887 f.
to ñse, 1096 f.
to ëuery lòuere, 1097; to ëuery wight, 1273.
to arghe, 1779 f (BCD om. to).
tò agâte, 1986 f, is doubtful.
tò ñsen, 2123 (to ñse D).
tò erre, 5211 f.

Note 1.—For examples with monosyllables, see 14 (tò a), 1057 (þer to ænd), 2529 (to âl [alle BC] honoure), 3328 (to ñse inf.), 3360 (tò ñl), 3462 tò vn, 4814 (tò ñl), 4818 (vntò it; cf. 5187), 5779 (vntò vs).

In a few instances to suffers elision before h:
As for to honoure hire godde full deoute, 151 AB (CD seem wrong).
To honouren hem that hadde worthynesse, 4631.

\(^1\) Read [to] shende in B.
\(^2\) Read (be)gan in D.
\(^3\) Supply [herte] in B, [for] in C.
\(^4\) Dele one (hirê) in A.
To **hounoure** yow as wel as folk of Troye, 6482 (To honouré CD).\(^1\)

Cf. also 4104 D.

I think ek how he ablé is for to haue, 1821 B Cp. (I thynde ek howe abele he is for to haue C, I think ek how he able is to haue A, I thank eke how able he is to have D, I thyng eke howe able he is to haue G, Ek wot I wel he worthy is to haue John's, Yit wot I weel he worthi is to haue Harl. 2392). Perhaps able is.

Cf. also,—to his (?), 2546 C; to hir, 7666 CD;\(^2\) to hire, 7671 C; vnto her, 3762 D; into harm, 7739 C.

**But to** is the usual form before h. Thus,—to han, cf. 13, 769, 2224, etc.; to haue, cf. 50, 709, etc.; to here (**dat.**), cf. 443, 2094, etc.; to her (**poss. sg.**), cf. 5226, etc.; to hym, cf. 858, 998, etc.; to his, cf. 2179, 2219; vnto his, cf. 2627; etc. For cases before strong h, cf. e.g., to holde (128 f, 161 f, etc.), to herkenen (164), to helpen (836), into helle (872 f), into halle (2255 f), to hyde, (6393 f), to haten (7442), etc.

**Note.**—Sometimes a similar slur seems to take place in to, into, vnto, before a consonant; but most of the cases noticed are aberrations of the scribe, easily cured by a comparison of MSS. Thus,—to secke, 704 A; to ledc, 6379 A; cf. also 1318 C, 1327 C, 2196 D, 2519 D, 2956 A, 3699 D, 3939 D, 4356 D, 6178 D, 6355 B, 6678 A, 7000 A, 7218 B, 7850 A, 7406 C, 7518 A, 7740 C, 8158 B.

Men wolden (wold BD) wondren (-deryn C, wondur D) to se (B Cp. John's om. to; to seu C; to se D) hym come or gon, 1453.

To late here go thus vnto the Grekes ost, 5261 AB (into C; C om. thus; thus to D). No note in Austin.

**II. Elision of final -o** is rare except in to:

He cursed Ioue Appollo and ek Cupide, 6570 (C om. ek).

Of Ioue appollo of mars of swych rascaylle, 8216.

**Note.**—The following cases disappear on comparison of MSS.: go away, 574 C (go wey AB, go hens D); do away, 1195 C (do wey ABD), cf. 1196 C; do on, 2039 C (don ABD), 3580 A (don B); tho and, 834 C (ABD om. and). In 1559, AD have No wyse, but we may read No wyse (with B 3 C Cp. John's).\(^4\) In 5027, C reads: O immortal god quod he that mayst not dyzen; ABD have no O; cf. 7424 D, where for O yrolled we should read O rolled.

**III. The Troilus affords one good instance of elision (slurring) of final -a:**

_Megera._ Alete. and ek Thesiphone, 4686 (Megera alicete thow thesiphone D).

---

\(^1\) In B supply the second [as].

\(^2\) In C, however, perhaps _wrote_ (p.p.) to hire.

\(^3\) In B supply [he].

\(^4\) Cf. 2196, where A has now yeome, but now come (BC) is the correct reading. Cf. also 7070 D.
§ 131. Slurring of final *y*.

Final -*y* is sometimes united with the initial vowel of the following word (synclisis).

Obviously, in the case of adjectives accented on the penult, this slur can take place only when the word that follows either has no ictus or is accented on the second syllable. Thus we have: "How bysy *if I* lone ek most *I* be," 1884; and so in the case of most adjectives in -*y* there is no slur before an initial vowel: as,—*gredy*, 4600; *hasty*, 6229 (hastif B, hastyth † C); *redy*, 3372, 7327, 7733; *sondry*, 1112; *sory*, 2436, 8089; *sturdy*, 2465; *very*, 5369, 6636 (slur in D); *runvery*, 1924; *worthi*, 1243, 1424. See also *lady* (§ 5), *ruby* (p. 94), *every* (§ 79), *mony* (§ 79), adjectives in -*ly* (§ 72), adverbs in -*ly* (§ 84).

The commonest instance of the slur is in the phrase *many a*, *mony an*: as,—This knoweth *many a* wys and *worthi* wyght, 1265 (meny a D). So also 163, 165, 166, 540, 810, 934, 1148, 1236, 1726, 1900, 3145, 3147, 3657, 3953, 3989, 4072, 4301, 4555, 4701, 5289, 5753, 6147, 6505, 6527, 6585, 6696, 6968, 7301, 7409, 7424, 7557, 7640, 7945, 8124. Variants have not been registered, for in none of the cases cited is there any doubt as to the true reading, so far as this phrase is concerned. The *Troilus* knows only the slurred *many a*; no unslurred example occurs which a comparison of MSS. does not correct (thus, e.g., 4695).

Other instances are:

And I with *body* and *solue* synke in (into CD) helle, 6216.

Charitable estatlyche *lusty* and *fre*, 7186 (D Cp. John’s *om.* and; Scharite abe *le* statlyche ly3t lusti & *fre* C; G agrees with A, except for the spelling *estateliche*).

I shal therof as *fully* excuse me, 3652 (ful BC; *but* Cp. John’s *seem to have fully*).

Note 1.—Here and there one or another MS. has a slurred -*y*, which comparison of MSS. causes to disappear. Thus,—*lady unto*, 1164 A (§ 5); *hardy(e) as*, 7193 D; *savery and*, 942 C; *worthy and*, 2163 C (cf. 1951 C, 4382 CD, 5160 B); *wery on*, 6636 D; *certaynyly I*, 1531 A (cf. 3938 C); *glydy as*, 592 D; *hardily and (?)*, 2097 C; *nedfully as*, 5668 D; *wise as*, 7728 C. In 5427 A: *How sholde I a fyssh withoute water dure*, omit I.

Note 2.—In 4873 C: *for wick delicynyed* (I. delibered) was by a parlement, omit a (with ABD Cp. John’s).

A similar slur of final -*ey* is found in 3287 A: *But yn swych cas men is nought alwey yplesed*; but the correct reading is *alwey plesed* (so BCp.; alwey plesid D; man is not † wel plesed C). In 2986, however, the preponderance of MS. authority is in favour of *ay i-lyke*:
To seruen (-yn CG, serve D) and ben (bene D) ay (so ABG; om. DE; C has ay ben for ben ay) I-lye (ylike B, I-lik C, y-lyke D, I-lyke G) diligent (Cp. John’s appear to agree with A).

An effect precisely similar to the slur of final -y takes place when a word in -ye (unaccented) suffers elision before a word the first syllable of which has no ictus. The instances of this phenomenon are in the Troilus confined to words in -rye like contrarye, and to the word remedye (the forms of which may be seen in full at p. 86, cf. ten Brink, § 87, Anm.).

By sort and by augúrye ek trewély, 4778 (trew[e]ly B, By sort and augury eke truly D). By eche (l. his) contrarié is every thing declared, 637 (-rye is BC). Retorneth in his part contrarié agayn, 5665 (-rye agayn B). But the form contràrie also occurs: see § 51, p. 120.

Be necessarie al seme it not therby, 5682 (necessarye al(le) D). But necessaire occurs: see § 51, p. 120.

And som(e) so ful of furye is and despit, 3879 (furie is BCD). Anoy smert (-e D) drede (dred[e] C) fury and ek (ek[e] D) siknesse (seknesse C), 5507 (furie and BD, furie and C). For which the grete (gret[e] D) furye of his penaunce, 6091 (furie of C).

In furye as doth he Ixion in helle, 6575 (-rie as B, -ry as D; In furie as thow he leye in helle C). And God Mercúrye of me now woful wreche, 6684 (-rie of B, -rye on C; D om. now).

Into myséríe yn which I wol bywayle, 4934 (Into myn deth † C). And certeiny in story it is yfounde, 7197 B (stori as it is founde C, story as it is founde D, storye it is yfounde Cp., storye it is founde A).

Though that I tarye a yer som tyme I mot, 4037 (tarie a BCD). For that I tarye is al for wykked speche, 7973 (tarie is CD). When the word that follows has the ictus, there is of course no synclisis. See examples in § 30 under copye, folye, partie, and in § 31 under augúrye, furye. In 4915 furye and, BC have the slur, but AD have none. Of merye, merye (§ 46, p. 113) the Troilus affords no example before a vowel.

1 In 6240 C, read fillthe it for folye it.
§ 132. Weak e in two successive syllables (syncope or apocope).

Ten Brink's rule: "Enthalten zwei aufeinander folgende Silben je ein schwaches e, so verliert eines von diesen nothwendig seinen Silbenwerth, sei es durch Syncope oder Apocope durchaus, sei es annähernd, jedoch für das Bedürfniss der Betonung und des Verses vollkommen ausreichend durch Verschleifung" (§ 256), has been abundantly illustrated in the preceding chapter.

In the case of -ede in the preterite singular (§§ 99-105) the Troilus shows not a single exception to the rule, except perhaps in 7089: Here (Hir BC, Hir DG) nédédéd (neded BDG, nedit C) no (non B John's, none CG Cp.) teris for to borwe (see 146, I, b). In 129 A, dwellded[e] yn should be was dwellýng yn. In the case of -eden in the preterite plural (§ 109), there are several exceptions (cf. ten Brink, §§ 194, 256), màkhèdèn (apparently the correct reading in 4783, see § 109, I), strèmedèn (§ 109, III), iùynèdèn (§ 109, III), assègedèn, bysègedèn (§ 109, I), comènedèn, comènedèn (§ 109, III), àntere-chàùngèdèn (§ 109, IV.).

For the application of this rule in the inflection of nouns see the genitives fadères, fadres (§ 36), heuènes (§ 36, n. 1), somères, widëwes, wydëwes (§ 35, I), the plurals arwes (§ 38, IV.), candëles, heuènes (§ 38, V.), and maydëns (§ 39, III); and the numerals seuëne (§ 67, d);¹ cf. oveýne (§ 53, V.), plural otheør ², otheòres gen. sg. pl. (§ 79).


The weak -e- (either not found or usually syncipated in A.S.) which, according to ten Brink (§ 61, III.), is inserted "zwischen v und Dauerlaut," and sometimes after th, is, of course, syncipated or slurred like the e's just discussed: seuënes pl. (§§ 38, V., 44), eure, neure (§ 90), bròtheres gen. (§ 36), bròtheren (§ 41), and fètheres pl. (§ 38, V.). The morphological value of this -e-, however, is rendered dubious by the occurrence of such spellings as fyngères pl. (§ 38, V. : fyngres A), monethes (as well as monthèes : § 38, I.) pl., taken in connection with the tendency of some Middle English scribes to use ene (ele, ere) indiscriminately for ne and en (or n ?), etc.: see heuene, with variants, § 14, p. 42, cf. p. 38, and the C spellings chaumbere, lettere, letteris,

¹ Cf. the ordinal seuënethe, seuënte (§ 53, I.). ² Cf. ten Brink, § 272.
§ 132, 133. [of Chaucer's Troilus. 365
coupels, etc., (§§ 29, 38, V.), -bele for -ble in Romance adjectives (§ 51, II.), susterin, scilderyn (§ 41), angrily for angry (562), sundry for sundry (440, 742, 957, 5174). Cf. also the next paragraph.

In native verb-forms, too, an -e is sometimes written where it has no etymological status: as, — herkenen inf. (164, cf. 1180), fortheren inf. (8070, forthren B), herkened pret. sg. (§ 101), herkeneth 3 sg. (1116), herkeneth inv. pl. (§ 118, I.); but cf. wondren (A.S. wundrian) inf. (1453, 5309, 6857), handle (A.S. handlian) inf. (5434), wondred p.p. (§ 121, III.), vnbyrdled (A.S. brildian) p.p. (3271, vnbrided B), bytokneth 3 sg. (7876), wondreth inv. pl. (6525).1 A similarly intrusive -e shows itself in some Romance and Latin verbs: as, — the infinitives coueren (2597), discoueren (675), recoueren (4248), delyueren (3958), and delibere (4831), couered pret. (§ 105), the participles considered, couered, recouered, delibered, delyuered, (§ 121, VIII.); but cf. the infinitives remembren (4470) and suffren (971, 2996, 5865), the inv. pl. suffreth (5866), the pret. remembred (§ 105), the participles assembled, meilded (§ 121, VIII.), and the adj. sucred (§ 121, X.), though in these instances, too, C usually interpolates the irrational -e.

§ 133. Apocope or syncope of weak e after an unaccented syllable which is capable of bearing an accent.

The metrical fact conveniently expressed by ten Brink (§ 257) in the rule: "Nach unbetonter, jedoch tonfähiger Silbe muss ein schwaches e verstummen," has been abundantly illustrated in the grammatical chapter.

For apocope see housbonde, sœm tyme, oft tyme, welcome (or welcome?) (§ 2), louver, lyere, mûtere, mûrter, viderer (§ 7), friendshyp, lordship (§ 7), aansuerè (§ 8), syknessè (§ 9), felawe, wyn dowé (§ 15), fortune, pursuyte (§ 21), sœruese (§ 26), mûner, mûner, preyere (§ 28), gôter (§ 28, note at end) Éleyne (2532), Pándar (§ 139); cf. also ângwyssh, ângel,2 concord, curtyne, râket, rëlyk, skûrmyssh, trauers, âssué (§ 22).3 This principle may, of course, also prevent the addition of an inorganic -e: see -yngé, -yng in substantives (§ 10, III.) and participles (§ 120, III.), and cf. forward (A.S. foreward, § 11), and the spelling excessése (§ 32).

For syncope see the plurals sèrnauunts (§ 39, I.), rësonez, Trûians (§ 39, III.), louver, mûneres, pôtéryz, preyers (§ 39, IV.), the subjunctive

1 C, however, shows wondersyn, wondere, onbrydelid, handelyn, betokenyth, wonderith.
2 Cf. ten Brink, § 221.
3 Refuyt (§ 22) can appeal to O. Fr. refuit.
laboried (§ 113), and the participles answered (§ 121, III.), entumbered, parayed (l) (§ 121, IX.).

Doubtful lines\(^1\) are the following:

Ymagynynge that travaile nor grame, 372 ABG (-ing . . . travaile & game † D, neyther travayle nor † gaine C).

Ne remuable (renuable B, resonable D, remeaveable G) fortune deface (to deface D), 6344 (cut out C).

Than wold (-e D) I of hise (his BD) battaylles endite, 8130 (leaf cut out C).

§ 134. Apocope of weak -e after a syllable having a secondary accent (ten Brink, § 258).

Apocope of weak -e after a syllable which has a secondary accent is on the whole not common. Examples are: haselwode || there, 7537 (but, haselwode || thoughte, 6868, see § 6), prescience, 5683 (§ 24). For preservation of the -e, see secrenesse, selynesse, worthynesse (§ 9), sauegard[e] (§ 21), charitabile, coudenable, discordable, excusable, honouorable, remuabile, resonable (§ 51, II.) Cf. also, in the “definite” inflection, wommenlyche, forknowynge, amorouse, disputouse (§ 59, b), and superlatives like goodlyeste (§ 59, a),—but, of course, the têmpesstoûs matere, his excellent prowess (§ 60).

In several Romance words in which the -e is not apocopated in the interior of the verse it makes little difference whether the syllable that precedes is regarded as bearing the main or the secondary accent: infortune, orisonte (§ 21), gentilisse (§ 25), covenstise (§ 26), creatiture (§ 27), impossible (§§ 21, 51, II.), inuyssible (§ 51, II.). For the treatment of final -es after the secondarily accented syllable, see §§ 37—39.

Note.—Ten Brink’s remark that weak -e “in Wortauslaut” “nach nebentoniger Silbe” “zählt im Vers wohl in der Mehrzahl der Fälle nicht als Silbe mit; wie es scheint sogar nach Muta cum Liquida, wo Verschleifung eintreten kann” (§ 258), does not hold true of the Troilus unless elided -e be included in the reckoning.

§ 135. Apocope of weak -e immediately after the syllable bearing the main accent.

I. Ten Brink (§ 260) holds that -e never counts as a syllable (except in rhyme) in certain words and forms which he enumerates (§ 260, (a—η)). His list, however, requires modification.

(a) The accusative heré must be read as a disyllable in 7948: Biseching heré (hiré B) syn that he was true, That she woldē come, etc.,

\(^1\) Cp. John’s throw no light on the scansion. In 372 Cp. has grace †; in 6344 Cp. John’s agree with A letter for letter; in 8130 Mr. Austin notes no variation from A.
unless we accept hire that C (hir that D); the repetition of that is ungrammatical, however, and there seems to be no good reason for rejecting the reading of the best MSS. (Mr. Austin’s collation makes no note.) In 973, Forthi some grace I hope yn herë fynde (hyrë C, hirë Cp., in her y D, in hyrë to B, in hir to G), the dissyllabic form has pretty good MS. authority; besides, the word is emphatic in sense besides having an ictus.—The singular possessive hire, here, is probably never dissyllabic in the Troilus, though one or two lines are doubtful (see § 74). The plural possessive, however, seems to be fairly entitled to two syllables in: Of here teris and the herte vnswelle, 5808 (hirë B, om. † D; no note in Austin; G, which is beneath contempt in this stanza, reads: Of hir teres and the herte gan vnswelle). As a verse of nine syllables the line would certainly be no credit to its author (cf. § 146).—In 423: Mi spirit which that aught[e] yourë be (jourë C, joures G Cp., youres John’s HL. 2392, joure[e]s B), yourës is doubtless right.—In 4173: For myne wordes here and euery part (so ABC, my E; no note in Austin), we have our choice between mynë and an unpleasant nine-syllable verse. Allë before myne would be an easy insertion.

(β) Somë (pl.) is found once, if And somë wolde muche herë mete alone, is, as it seems to be, the correct reading of 907 (see the variants, § 78).—The Troilus gives no support to the hypothesis of a “dative ecche” (see § 78).

(ε) Final -e never counts as a syllable, according to ten Brink, “in den Formen were und made nicht nur im Sg., sondern auch im Pl. bei apocopirtem -n.” But the Troilus affords several examples of werë in the subjunctive singular (see 1027, 2715, 3379, 3416, 4359: § 113), and several of werë in the indicative and subjunctive plural (see 140, 1671, 1997, 3075, 5894, 6637, 8123: §§ 109, VII., 114). For dissyllabic made ten Brink would substitute always maked in the singular, maden in the plural. The substitution of maden for made depends upon the general principle that in the plural -en rather than -e shall stand before consonants,—a principle which, however probable, can hardly be regarded as well established; the substitution of maked for dissyllabic made in the Troilus would necessitate considerable tampering with good MSS. (see § 101).

(ζ) That some may retain its -e as a syllable is certain (§ 6, p. 10); for wone, however, see § 2. The Troilus affords no certain example of -e pronounced in Romance words in -le in the interior of the verse (§§ 30, 126).
 Observations on the Language

§ 135.

(7) In 5681 before or beforen seems necessary: Of things wyst (wiste BG Cp. Durh.) byform ( bifor B, before DG, byfor Cp., biform John's, om. Durh.) certeynly (full certeinye Durh.).1 There appears to be necessary in; And ther (there CG) lat (lete D, lett G) vs spoken (-e D) of oure wo, 5906 (no note in Austin). In 3915, however,—That he cam there (ther BG) and (or CD) that (that that Cp.) he was born,—the reading of Cp. that that is clearly right. In 6841 we should doubtless read here beleue rather than herë bleue (see p. 204).

II. Other special instances of apocope deserve notice.

(1) The form loue, whatever its construction, shows a marked tendency to apocopate -e. Thus,—the noun (§ 8), the pres. ind. 1 sg. (§ 92, V.), the inv. sg. (§ 115, III.), the inf. (§ 119, X.).

(2) Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that -e is "stets silbenbildend im Plural des attributiven Adjektivs, wenn dieses vor seinem Substantiv steht." (cf. his § 236) is contradicted by one line in the Troilus (1251, § 69). In this passage good condicion occurs (notice the accent, and see § 54). Cf. also, wysé men 3166 (man CD), which perhaps may be regarded as a sort of compound (the singular is written wysman in 5749 AC, wys man in C, wise man in D). Lordes oldë occurs in 7824. Cf. also 4, below.

(3) When a monosyllabic adjective in the definite construction immediately precedes a substantive accent on the second syllable, the inflectional -e of the adjective is necessarily lost (see § 54). Thus,—this heigh matère (3358), yowre heyghe seruyce (4130), here heyghe compleynte (5467), thy' wrong conceyte (692), my loue confessioun (1613), the pleyn felicitè (8181). A plural -e must also disappear under similar circumstances: of good condition, 1251 (§ 69).

(4) In a very few phrases the constant association of an adjective with a noun seems to have resulted in the formation of a sort of compound, freed from the necessity of the "definite" inflection of the first part (see § 54). Such are good wil (his good wil, 2294), good wórld in the sense of commendation (my, youre good word, 7444, 7985). Less certainly of this sort is this good plit, 3981. Meanwhile might be thought to belong here, but this mëné while occurs (2892) as well as in this mëné while (see § 52). Cf. also 2, above.

(5) Monosyllabic adjectives standing in the predicate do not always take -e in the plural (§ 69). Monosyllabic participles standing in the predicate seldom take -e in the plural (§ 68).

(6) For the use of allë, allë as the plural of al, see § 80.

1 The passage is not in CE.
(7) The comparative *more*, adj. (§ 64), subst. (§ 64), or adv. (§ 86), often loses -*e*.

(8) In the case of certain adverbs in -*e*, the possibility of a confusion with some adjectival construction makes suspicious what might otherwise be regarded as good examples of apocope; see *longe*, *low*, and cf. the Romance words *cler*, *pleyn* (§ 82).

Note.—*Lyke* (cf. A.S. gelice) may be due to adjective influence (§ 83): *dyke* also occurs (§ 82). For *rught*, see § 88; for *lest*, see § 88, n. 2; for *down*, *adown*, see § 88, n. 1; for *graf*, see § 88, n. 2: all these words have lost their -*e* for good and all.

(9) Verb forms in -*eye* lose -*e* more or less freely. Thus,—inf. *seye* (§ 119, XIII.), *preye* (§ 119, X.); pres. ind. 1 sg., *deye*, *seye*, *preye* (§ 92, V.); pres. ind. pl. *sey* (§ 96, X.); subj. pl. *sey* (§ 112, V.); pret. ind. pl. *say the*, 656, *sey ye*, 1362 (§ 109, X.). Note also that in the inv. sg. of A.S. *liegan* (A.S. *lige*) we have *ly* and *lye* (§ 115, V.), and in the inv. sg. of the Romance verb *preyen*, *prey* (§ 116, IV.).

(10) In *as helpe me God* and other idiomatic invocatory or optative phrases containing a subjunctive, the arrangement of the accents, fixed by sense and usage, brings together the subjunctive -*e* and another unstressed syllable after the accented root-syllable of the verb. Since the accentuation of phrases of this kind cannot be interfered with, the -*e* of the subjunctive disappears in Chaucer's verse. Thus,—*help me God*, as *help* (helpe) *me God* (*Iuno, Pallas, hère Pallas*), as wysly *helpe* me God, *God help* (helpe) *me so*, *helpe me so the mone*, And *helpe me god so at my most[e] nede, God yeue your herte care, Iones yeue the (me) sorwe, I bidde god so yeue yow bothe sorwe*, *Yet preye I God so yeue you right good day*. So wo worth that day, etc. The aggregate of instances of apocope that come under this head is not far from thirty (see § 111, III.).

(11) In a considerable number of instances the curtailed form of the Imperative Plural loses its -*e* entirely (§ 118, IV.). Some of the cases may be due to an extension of the singular form to the plural or to the petrifaction of the singular in an idiomatic use (cf. especially *lat* in the periphrasis *lat us* with the infinitive).

(12) The form *haue* (§ 124, VI.) has always apocope before a consonant. Thus,—pres. ind. 1 sg., pres. ind. pl. (also *hun*), pres. subj. sg., pres. subj. pl., inv. sg. and pl., inf. (*hauen* occurs once in rhyme, 4305, *rh. grauen* ind. 3 pl.). In the pret. ind. and subj. sg., both *hadd* and *hadd* occur (§§ 102, 113).

(13) In the imperative singular of *tellen*, *telle* or *tel* is the usual form (see many examples in § 115, I.): there is no certain instance of *telle*. 

† B Ž
(14) The praeterito-praesentia and the verb *will* show considerable confusion, the singular form having sometimes intruded into the plural or even ousted the historically correct form. In the preterite, however, the *Troilus* shows no very striking proportion of forms with apocope of *-e*. See the paradigms, §§ 123, 124.

III. When the special cases discussed in I and II are provided for, a considerable number of examples of apocope are left. For obvious reasons the following words are not here considered: the nouns *ville, *will* (§ 2), *sight, sighte* (§ 9), *flyght, flyghete* (§ 14), *wey, weye* (§ 14), *tryst, tryste, trust* (§ 15); the nouns already treated in §§ 7, 11, 22; nouns in *-ynge, -ynge* (§ 10); the adjectives already treated in § 49; *cler, clere* (§ 52); the adverbs *oute, out, sith, thanne, than, whanne, whan* (§ 88), *awe, awey* (§ 89), and adjectives and adverbs in -lich, -liche, -liche (§§ 72, 84); participles in *ynge, -ynge* (§ 120). There remain the following instances:

(1) In nouns: (a) Germanic, — *hope* † (§ 2), *wel-come* * (§ 2), *wone* * (§ 2), *erthe* † (§ 3; cf. *ertheles, § 49, n. 5), *hege* † (§ 6, only case of the word in the poem), *dore* † (§ 8), *kynge* (§ 9), *nede* (§ 9), *strete* * (§ 9), *trouthe* (§ 9), *tid* * (§ 9), *while* (§ 9), *heue* (§ 14), *teer* * (§ 14), *yte* (§ 14), *bole* † (§ 15), *hede* (heed) (§ 15); (b) Romance, — *grace* (? (§ 21), *nece* (§ 21; no case in rhyme), *fayre* * (§ 21), *science* * (§ 24), cf. *prèscience* * (§ 24). (c) Proper names, — *Criseyde* (1774, 4969), *Dionide* * (6455), *Eleyn* (2788), *Pandare* (§ 139) *Poliphete* * (2704).

Note 1.—In several of the nouns just cited the disappearance of *-e* may be regarded as merely a return to a form etymologically more correct. For *col, losse*, etc., see § 18 and cf. p. 38, note 1. The form and etymology of *ferde* (?) are too uncertain to rely on *ferde* as a genuine case of apocope (see § 15, § 121, p. 305).

Note 2.—There is no instance of the apocope in *tyme* except in the phrases *sömyme* and *ofte tymé*, which, as compounds, come under the head of § 133. There is no certain instance of *herte* (§ 3); the two lines 889 and 4529 admit of a satisfactory scansion with *herté* (see p. 6). In one verse, 3197, *weye* (§ 3) is required if the reading of AB be followed; CD have *-e*; there is no note in Mr. Austin's collation.

Note 3.—The case of the noun *helpe* is curious. This word occurs several times in the *Troilus*, but never in rhyme and never with *-e* in the interior of the verse (it is always *helpe, help, or helpe, § 9). In the Canterbury


2 An asterisk indicates that the word in question is found in the *Troilus* in rhyme with some word in *-e*, but that it is not found with *-e* in the interior of the verse; a double-dagger indicates that the word occurs neither in rhyme nor with *-e* in the interior of the verse; a word left unmarked is found both in rhyme with a word in *-e*, and with *-e* in the interior of the verse.
§ 135] of Chaucer's Troilus.

Tales (see Child, § 16) it occurs but once in rhyme (260), and in that case its rhyme-word whelpe (A.S. hwelpe, m.) has no right to final -e; in the interior of the verse helpe is never found (in 9202 T. read helpe vnto). So far as the forms of the rest of Chaucer's poetry have been recorded, the word occurs nowhere in rhyme and only once with -e in the interior of the verse. This highly exceptional instance is Leg. G. W., 1616: Withouten deeth but I his helpe be, where one is tempted to think of helpe; weak substantive, formed on the analogy of hunte (A. S. hunte).

(2) In adjectives a few examples of apocope besides those already discussed occur in the endings of adjectives. At the laste || the, 2009; at the laste || this, 5034; the firste || that, 7430; love the verse || though, 1950; hym is wors || that, 5144; now is wors || than, 7056; good goodly, voc., 458 (p. 128); swych thornes, 2359; swych faytes, 7792.

Note.—In 5144, 7056, cited above, wors may be regarded as adverbial in construction.

(3) In adverbs and prepositions (§§ 88-89): aboute, aboute, bothe, theryn, withinne, withoute, ofte (in ofte-tyme), saue.

(4) In verbs.—Besides the cases already mentioned, apocope of -e occasionally takes place in the inflection of verbs. See pres. ind. sg. (§ 92), pres. subj. sg. (§ 110), pret. ind. sg. (see § 99, under broughte, felte, lefte, lyste, mette, thoughte, tolde; § 102 under seyde, cf. subj. pl. seyde, § 113; § 103, under highte), inv. sg. (see make, § 115, III.; byd, set, § 115, V.), inf. (§ 119, X., a considerable number of examples; see especially come, which is fond of -e; wete, dorre, § 123), p.p. (§ 122, X., rare).

Note 1.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 261) that the -e is silent rather less often in the present subjunctive than in the present indicative does not hold good of the Troilus. In the ind. pret. sg. thoughte and seyde seem to show a tendency to apocope, but there are not instances enough to generalize from, even if any principle other than the abrasion of frequent use suggested itself.

Note 2.—Gan (3967) and quod (4856) are merely examples of the singular form used in the plural (see § 109, X.).

Note 3.—In the case of wepte, wepete, pret. sg. (§ 103), one cannot be certain that wepete is not an error for the strong form wep, which also occurs.

IV. Apocope of -e is apparently not influenced by the quality of the consonant that begins the following word, for there is hardly a consonant before which -e is not sometimes apocopated. There are perhaps more examples before th than before any other letter, but this may doubtless be explained by the fact that a number of monosyllables, either ill adapted in general to bear an iuctus or apt to lose their stress altogether when not actually emphatic, begin with th. Such are,—the definite article the; the pronouns thou, the, thin, this, that, tho; the particles that, thare (relative), than, though, thurgh: see, e.g., 1 267.

1 Several of these places are cited merely for comparison: viz., —376 (than perhaps has an iuctus), 3162 (than has an iuctus); 1950, 5144, 7056, in which the word in th, coming immediately after the cæsura, may have an iuctus (cf. also III., 2, above).

305, 376, 413, 495, 532, 863, 1048, 1425, 1452, 1799, 1950, 2009, 2788, 3162, 3310, 4133, 4592, 4904, 4930, 5034, 5144, 5758, 6395, 6455, 6803, 7056, 7096, 7537, 7541, 7544, 7662, 7824, 8178. Apocope before who, which, where, whan (see, e.g., 1656, 1736, 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521) can hardly be ascribed to any other cause (though who is sometimes spelled ho, § 77). So always perhaps in cases like truce ye (6231), yeue ye (6598), sende yow (1489), for apocope before y is not common enough to allow us to ascribe it to the "semi-vocalic" character of that sound.

Since a good many cases of apocope fall before the caesura, the recognition of the doctrine of the "extra syllable" in that situation may reduce materially the number of silent -e's in the Troilus (see § 144 for the evidence). But it is important to remember that, even if it can be established that Chaucer occasionally allowed the extra syllable before the caesura, we are not therefore justified in assuming that we have an instance of this license when its sole utility would be the preservation of a final -e. There are too many examples of undoubted apocope elsewhere in the verse to make such an inference anything but a begging of the question.

The upshot of all this appears to be that apocope, except in the case of a few words like loue, etc., must be regarded as a license for the nonce and cannot be brought under any rules but those of metrical exigency (see Child, § 92).

§ 136. Syncope or slurring of -e in final syllables when the noun accent falls on the syllable immediately preceding (cf. ten Brink, § 259).

Undoubted instances of full syncope are perhaps rare, but, since it is seldom possible to distinguish between full syncope and slurring (ten Brink's "Verschleifung") with certainty, it seems best to discuss the phenomena under a single head. The sign of syncopation (-e-) has been used for convenience, but without any intention of implying full syncope in all cases.

(a) -es: in the plural, loueres (§ 39, IV.); in the possessive pronoun heres (but also herës, yourës, § 74). For -es, -s, in adverbs, see § 91.

(b) -est in pres. ind. 2 sg.: lyst (jaces), seist, seyst, spekest, and

1. In 2272, 3418, 4243, 4521, however, the word in wh, coming immediately after the caesura, may have an ictus.
probably rennest, are genuine (§ 93, II.); lest and sleest are not to the point; in 8154 the question is between steppes and seest or steppés and seest (§ 93, II., note), but the former gives much the smoother verse.—-est in pret. 2 sg. is almost always fully sounded: in 4944 perhaps woldest is to be read (see the variants, § 124, II., note); in louedest, 3562 (-ist CD, § 106), read louedest (rather “verschleifung” than full syncope).

Note.—Possible cases of syncopeation in the superlative ending -est are: myn alderleuest lord, 3051 (-e C), and myn alderleuest lady ([myn] aldyr louelyst ± C), 3939: in both of which either louest or louesté satisfies the metre. Compare the extraordinarily common syncopeation in this ending in the Elizabethan dramatists.

(c) -eth: for syncope in the ind. 3 sg., see § 94, II. (forms like abit, halt, lyst, in § 95); for syncope in the ind. 3 pl. in -eth, see § 97; for syncope in the inv. pl., see § 118, II. (cf., however, the curtailed inv. pl. in -e, -e, § 118, III., IV.).

(d) For syncopated weak preterites in -de, -te, and unsyncopated weak preterites in -ede, -ed, see §§ 99—105. Pairs are dwelte (§ 114), and dwelled (§ 99), kyste and cussed (§ 99), made and maked (§ 101), sighde and siked (sighed) (§ 105). A. S. andswaroðe appears before consonants as answêðe, answêðe, answêð, before vowels and h as answêðe, answêðe, answêðed, answêðed (§ 101), the last form before a syllable that has the ictus. In Romance verbs aspyde and crīde (§ 104) are assured by rhyme; crīde, crīed occur before vowels, and cryeðe is found in the plural (see §§ 109, VIII., IX., 114); paste (§ 104) is assured by rhyme and passed by the subj. sing. passed before a vowel (§ 113); preyeðe is assured by rhyme, but we have preyēde hem, and this suggests the correction of prayēdē here (see § 104).—In verbs that make their preterite in -ed (-ede) exclusively, syncope (or slur) of this ending is rare: louēde || that occurs, however, in 1071 (§ 101), but louēde, louēd is the usual form; cf. also louēde ek (4991), louēde hym (2928), lokēd into (2312; but lokēd he, 2833), louēde || yn (5155, if the verse is 9-syl.), lūṇede || vunto (subj., 6242); likēd wel (2129) is perhaps not quite secure (§ 101).—For weak perfect participles, see in general, § 121. Worth notice are afered and ferd (§ 121, I.), maked, maad and mad (§ 121, III.); abaysshed (4075), abayst || and (2936) (§ 121, VII.); purueyed alle (5670), purueyed || certaynly (5714), purueyed || but (5668) (cf. § 121 IX.); criëd || than (5249). I-loued the (594) occurs, and, before vowels or h

1 In 6211, where John’s reads Troye ay rennes (smoother, perhaps, but lacking in authority).
are found—beloued || (131), mysbeloued (3680), showed (7812). In
wervyed || on is doubtless the correct reading (see under
Synizesis). Note pleyed tyraunt (2325); untjd in (§ 121, IV.).
For wont, wonéd 'accustomed'; wonéd 'dwelt,' see § 121, III.

Note.—In the preterites flekered, opened, etc. (§ 101), we should read rather
-ered, -ened than -red, -ned (§ 132), and so in covered, etc.

(e) -en. Syncope is regular in the participles born, shorn, sworn,
torn (§ 122, V.), torn (§ 121, IV.), slayn (§ 122, XII.), seyn 'seen'
(§ 122, XIII.); instances of -en before vowels, as fullen, growen,
are of course suspicious, and may almost always be reduced to the
elided form (falle, etc.) by comparison of MSS. (§ 122, V.).
In the infinitive seyn (cf. the gerund to seyne) syncope is regular, but
seyen also occurs (§ 119, XIII.); as to hauen, han, hawe, hauè,
see § 124, VI.; for infinitives in -en before consonants (no sure
instance) and before vowels or h, see § 119, V. In the pres. pl.
of seyn, seyn is common (§ 96, V.), but seygen also occurs (§ 96,
I.), cf. liggen (§ 96, I., III.); for han, see § 124, VI.; for arn, see
§ 124, I.; for the plurals of shal and wil, see §§ 123, VII., 124,
II.; for plurals in -en before vowels, see §§ 96, V., 109, V. For
the treatment of adverbs in -en, see §§ 88, 89.

These final -en’s are all inflectional, but other final -en’s may suffer
syncope (or be slurred) under similar conditions, i.e. when they are
immediately preceded by the accented syllable, and when the following
word begins with a vowel (or weak h). Final -ene, under the same
conditions, loses -e by elision and, thus becoming indistinguishable
from final -en in sound, is treated like -en with regard to slurring. It
is accordingly difficult to ascertain what the full forms of the Modern
English heaven, wellkin, own (proprius), etc., were in Chaucer’s
language,—whether -en, -e, -n, or even -ë (see pp. 38, 42, 126). A
similar uncertainty prevails with respect to -er, -re, -el, -le, -em, -me
(see below).

The question between full syncope and slurring in the case of -en is
often very nice. When -n is written (as in born, sworn), there is of
course no doubt; but when -en (-ene) is written, no certain conclusion
can be arrived at. Of the different ways in which it is phonetically
and metrically possible to read -en before a vowel (or weak h), that
seems preferable which, allowing the -e to disappear, makes the -n
vocalic and retains it at the end of its word as a very light "extra
syllable." This method seems almost certain for lines in which the
caesura falls directly after the -en, particularly if the caesura coincides
with an insistent pause in the sense. Ten Brink (§ 272) takes the
ground that -en should be emended to elided -e when the latter is
possible: "Ueberall da, wo tonloses n apocopirt werden kann, wird
man besser solche Apocope und in Verbindung damit Elision als
Verschleifung annehmen, so beim Part. Perf. Pass. mancher Verba,
und durchweg beim Inf. und dem Plur. Präs. oder Prät. des verbi
finiti." This seems too sweeping. There is nothing against the -en
slur a priori, and Chaucer certainly had no objection to it, for, if our
texts be manipulated throughout in accordance with the rule suggested
by ten Brink, there will still remain cases enough in which the -en
slur, or something precisely the same in its effect on the ear, must be
left undisturbed (see heuene, heuen, or heune, § 14), to say nothing of
kindred phenomena with regard to el, -e, -er, -re, -me, -em (below).
There seems to be no good reason, then, why Chaucer should always
have preferred elided -e to slurred -en in forms in which, as in most
infinitives, for example, a choice was open to him. True, the evidence
of the best MSS. is that he usually preferred the elided -e; but there
is no antecedent probability of a rigid rule; indeed, it does not seem
unlikely that now and then his ear may have been better satisfied by
the fuller form, especially, one might conjecture, before the caesura.
Nothing short of an autograph MS., however, can ever settle such
questions as this.

(f) -er.—Final -er may be slurred when the following word begins
with a vowel (or weak h). Whether this slur amounts to full
syncope of -e must be left undecided. For convenience, the mark
of syncope (-e-) has been used, but with no intention of necessarily
implying anything more than ten Brink's "Verschleifung" (§
272). Examples of both slurred and unslurred -er have been
given in the Grammatical Chapter: see feuer (p. 55), brother
(p. 62), tender (p. 121), other (§ 79), tymbcr, wonder (§ 18, p. 61),
fader, moder, suster, daughter (§ 18, pp. 62, 63), coler, corner,
dauuer, dyner, leyser, quarter, soper, sqyere (§ 34, L, p. 90), other,
eyther, neyther (§ 79), ferner (§ 86). Here belong the comparative
adjectives leuere (§ 64, p. 135), hardere, hotter, leuere, wysere,
leugere (ibid.), and the comparative adverbs leuere, rathere, ferther,
leugere, rathere (§ 86); for the proper ending of these words in
Chaucer is -er not -ere. As to the comparative adjective and
adverb bettre (better), one may hesitate whether to put it here or in
the next paragraph, but the classification is of no consequence for
our present purpose (for forms and slurs, see §§ 64, 86, observing
the variants under bet, pp. 135, 136). Cf. also the variants under māner, the reduced form of manère (§ 28, p. 82). Euere and nevere may be placed here or in the next paragraph: for a full discussion of their behaviour before vowels and consonants, see § 90. Angre perhaps belongs here (§ 19: read anger ?): it is not slurred in the Troilus. For after, whider, yonder, other or, neither, whether, see note at end of § 86. Ouer before consonants (except h) regularly counts as two syllables (cf. 2598, 2634, 7508; ouer-thwart, 3527); but before a vowel or hye, hym, a slur is common, as: ouer vs, 4269; ouer his, 2756 (on D); cf. 386, 3970, 4638, 5062, 5734; see also 2170, where cæsura intervenes: And radde it ouer || and gan the lettre folde AB. But we have also ouër al (=überall), 921 f (ouer alle B, oueral C; D †) (: in general: I shal) (cf. 5689 † B), and, on the other hand: There is in loue som cloud is ouer that sonne, 1866 (ouere B, -er † the C, somé cloudis in † that sunne D), And that the mone hath lordship over the nyghtes, 4598 (-ere B; D †) (cf. 243 † f C). In 1259, 1488, we are hardly to read ynder before consonant: instead, we may read hym in 1209 and grove for growen in 1488. Note.—An interesting line is: For al so syker as thow lyst here by me (sekyr C), 2076. Here it would be impossible to tell whether one should read syker as or syker as, if it were not for the rhymes tym and pryne.

Under the circumstances defined at the beginning of the last paragraph, -re, -ere, are reduced to -re (by elision), -ere (by elision and syncope), and are thus slurred with the following word, producing the same effect as the slurring of -er (last paragraph). As before, the precise nature of the slur (or syncope) cannot be determined. The uncertainty in scribes’ spelling between -re and -er (-ere) renders impossible a rigid distinction between the words that belong here and those that belong in the preceding paragraph. Examples both of slurred and unslurred -re and -ere have been given in the Grammatical Chapter: see answere (§ 8); chaumbre,-er,iaspre, lettre, ordre, poudre (§ 29); louere (§ 7, p. 11); and, for unslurred forms before vowels, chaumbre, ordre (§ 29), endere,fyndere,[harpour];holdere, louere, lyere, makere (§ 7). Compare the proper name Cassandre (=Cassandra): Cassandre Eleyne or ony of the frape, 3252 (Cassaudir C); Cassandre hym gan right thus hye dreem expounde, 7819 (Cassandre bygan B, Cassaundere hym gan ryʒt thus expounde C)¹; That called was cassandre ek (om. BC) at aboute, 7814 (cassaundere C).² Of slurred

¹ A is no doubt right. No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.
² No note in Mr. Austin’s collation.
verb forms the following will serve as instances; *why suffre icht it*, 6403 (suffere C); *if that ye suffre hym*, 3705 (gif [that] ye suffere hym C); *and ye suffre hym*, 3723 (suffere C); *How may ye suffre allas it be repeled* (repeles † A), 4956 (sufferyn that it be C); *I shal vel suffre vnto the tenthe day*, 6260 (suffere C); *suffure vs*, 5865 B; *And if that you remembre I am Calkas*, 4735; *deliure* it subj. 3 sg., 7321; *ne iompre ek inv. sg.*, 2122 (iumpere C); *perseuere yn inv. sg.*, 951; *deliure herę (eam) inv. sg. or inf.*, 8106 (deluere hire B); *And gan to motre I not what treweley*, 1626 (motere C); *re cuer a blysse* inf., 3023; *re coyer another* inf., 5068 (rekuere a nother C); *mokre and inf.*, 4217 (mokere C, moke A).

(g) Final *-el, -le* are treated in the same way as final *-er, -re* (see f, above). Thus,—*yuel rapayed*, 649 AB (C †); *yuelle* (adv.) as, 6601 A (-ēl B); cf. *yuel* sbst. (§ 18, p. 62), where the cases of slurs before consonants are, as indicated, easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For *lytel, muchel*, see § 48. For words in *-le, see nelle* (§ 3) temple (§ 14), ensample, moeble peple, title, mcelle (§ 21), egle, table (§ 21). Romance adjectives in *le* (§ 51, n. 1, p. 121); *bridle* (inv. sg.) alwey, 4477 (-dele C, -del D); *iangle* (ind. 3 pl.) of, 1885 (-ele C, ianglyn of D); *rakle* (inf.) as, 4484 (-ele C; D †). Cf. *deuel haue* (p. 54), epistol hem (p. 55).

Note.—Apparent cases of slur or apocope like *-er, -re, -ere*, before consonants (not h) are almost always easily corrected by comparison of MSS. For examples, see the variants under *lettre* (§ 29), *bet* (§ 64, cf. 481 D), *yonder* (§ 86, note at end). Cf. And I ther (om. C) after gan rome (roman B) to and fro, 1601; *Nentendum considere* ne longe telle, 6358 (see readings of ten MSS. in § 144). In the latter case, at least, we must allow the "syllable to be corrected by the cæsura." For apparent slurs of *-el* before consonants, to be corrected by comparison of MSS., see variants under *yuel* (§ 18).

(h) *-en* (or *-me*). See *botme* it, § 14, p. 39.

§ 137. The treatment of interior weak *-e-* ("schwaches e zwischen dem Hauptton und dem Nebenton," ten Brink, § 262) varies, sometimes in the same word. Thus,—

(a) In compounds, whether Germanic or Romance: *lodéstere* (§ 2), *wodébynde* (§ 3), *feldéfare* (§ 5), *lechécraft* (§ 6), *stoundénele* (§ 9), *mylnéstones* (§ 12), *lettéjame* (§ 15), *sauégarde* (§ 21), *but forward* (§ 11), *stadefast* (§ 49, n. 3); (b) in nouns in *-nesse* (§ 9): *kyndénesse, ruënësesse, but fichelennesse* (read *f Jeblesse, see § 25, L*); (c) in adjectives and adverbs in *-les* (§§ 49, n. 5, 85): *botëles, dredëles, drynhëles, endëles,
heðles, hertëles, knottëles, makëles, nedëles, restëles, rotëles, routhëles, spechëles, sterëles, causëles, douteëles, gracëles, gillëles and gittëles (cf. lyghëles, vertëles); (d) in adjectives and adverbs in -ly, -lich, -liche (§ 72, 84): byhouëly, hastëly, hertëly and hertëly, mekëly, namëly, softëly and softly, sternëlyche, trewëly and trewëly (trewëly), vnkyndëly, dignëliche, fernëly, formëly, largëly, nicëly, richëly, secundelich, straungëly, but erthëly; nedëly, nedly (cf. helply, lowly, lovelly, febëly) 1; (e) adjectives in -ful: blysful (p. 147), dreadful (pp. 119, 130), 2 ferrorfulste (p. 132), sorweful, sorwful (pp. 119, 130, 147), but once, perhaps, sorwëful (5393); (f) nouns and “gerunds” in -ynge, -yngh (§ 10): festenyngge, rekennyngge, cheteryngge, slomeryngge, titeryngge, wonderyngge, but tokennyngge, whyspyrnyngge (p. 31); (g) Romance nouns in -ment (§ 34): accusément, auisement, élément (cf. the plural, p. 104), entendément, iuggément, parlément, sentément; (h) Romance nouns in -auunce (§ 23), -auunt (§ 34, IV.), -ence (§ 24): delgueraunce, desseueraunce, disauenaunce, ordenauence, perseueraunce, sustenaunce, difference, reverence, but remenauont (cf. remembraunce) (cf. mountenau[n]s, 2792 C ‡; rememb[e]raunce, 7807 ‡ C); (i) Romance nouns in -ie (§ 30): baudery[e], frenëysye, poësye, poëtric, prophesie (cf. the plural, p. 103), remëdye and remëdye, trecherye, but nouellerye; (k) miscellaneous English words: euërich, euëry(f), eury, everychon (§ 79), heuenyssh (§ 49, n. 3), cf. scryuenyssh (§ 84, n. at end), nuthëles (§ 86), fellowship (§ 7); (l) miscellaneous Romance and Latin words: collateral (p. 149), funeral, general (p. 122) but generally (§ 84, II.), cheual[e]rous (p. 122), frenëtyk (p. 148), appetit (§ 34, VII.), conquerour (§ 34, II.), sorceresse (§ 25, II.; cf. deuyneresse), dütë, nicëtë, but surëte, seurte (§ 33), souereynge (p. 122) and souereyn (pp. 131, 134) (cf. souëreynëtë, § 126). On the forms April, Aperil, Aprille, see § 32, n. 3, p. 88.

Note 1.—Interior -e- has given place to -in- in nyghtyngale (§ 3), A.S. nithyngale.

Note 2.—Lovely, sunnelich, heuenlîche (§ 72) are false readings.

Note.—Of interior e’s due merely to the scribe (and of course not pronounced) may be found among the variants registered in the Grammatical Chapter. Such are frendeschipe (§ 7), gladdenesse, goodenesse, sikënesse, wittenësse (§ 9).

§ 138. Synecope of other vowels than -e- and of consonants is rare (cf. ten Brink, § 263).

(1) The nicety of the question between bleue and bleue ‘manër’ may be seen in the following lines. In all of them bleue may be read without doing violence to the measure, but in 6019 alone is bleue

1 Hardely is for hardily.

2 Cf. dreadfully, notfully (§ 84).
compulsory, in 6841 here bileue is certainly more probable than herē bileue (see p. 204), and in 1820 nomorē . . . bileue is at least quite as satisfactory as namorē . . . bleue.

And whanne (when B) hem leste nomore || lat hem byleue, 1820 A (bileue B; CD have an entirely different line; Austin notes leue from E, but registers no variants from Cp. John’s).

And every wight han (haue CD) libertine (liberteis C) to bleue, 6019 (bleue CD; no note in Austin).

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) bleue, 6841 (bleue CD Harl. 2392; no note as to Cp. John’s).

Syn (sythe D) that (om. D) we (3e C) seyden (-e CD) that (om. C) we wold (wolde CD John’s) bleue, 6854 (bleue CD Harl. 2392).

Or al the nyght they most (moste Cp., mosten John’s, muste D, muste hem for they most C) b[l]euen there, 7543 (bleuen B, bleue C, belene D Harl. 2392).

Another doubtful case is 4207, in which we must choose between bilynne (A.S. blinnan) and hiatus:

Of swiche (swich B, wych C, wych D) sikes koude he (om. B) nought blynne (so ACD, bilynne B; no note in Austin).

(2) Of the A.S. bi līfe the usual form in the Troilus is blyue, which occurs frequently (§ 88); but in

Thow shalt gon ouer (to) nyght and that blyue, 2598 (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyue D Hi. 2392; Cp. John’s appear to agree with A),

blyue (bylyue) is doubtless correct.

(3) The noun errand (A.S. ērendē) occurs but once in the Troilus, in v. 1157, where the MSS. vary as to its form: erand was A, herand B, ernde D (Cp. John’s appear to agree with A; the leaf is cut out of C); cf. § 7.

(4) The treatment of rauysshen by the Troilus MSS. is interesting. In 5299, 5305, 7258, we have our choice between rauysshen (with syncope or slur) and rauysshe (with elision).

To (Go BC) rauysshe (raushe B, rauysch C, rauisshe D) here ne (om. C) kanstow (canst thou CD) not for shame, 5192 (stanza om. in Cp.; no variation noted from John’s).

To rauysshen (rausche C, rauissh D, rauysshe John’s) hire but yf hereself it (om. C) wolde, 5299.

To rauysshen (rausche C, rauissh D) here syn (sithe that D) thow hast not ben there, 5305 (no note in Austin).
Observations on the Language

That rauyschen (rauisshe D, he rauassch shal C) he shal yow with his speche, 6136 (no note in Austin).

From hen[ne]s (hennes B, henys C) forth the rauesshyng of a (to rauyschen any B Cp. John’s, to rauych ony C, to rauissh any D) queene, 7258.

Cf. the verbal noun rauesshyng (p. 29), rauysshyng (p. 30).

(5) Other more or less certain instances of syncope (or slur) of vowels are seen in:

And finally (fynali B, finially C, fynally G, final D) cause of wo that ye (the C, thow D) endure, 682 (no note in Austin).

Ne scryuenyssh (stryuenyssh B, coryously C, scryvenlich D, skry-uenyscher G) or (ne C) craftily (craftyliche C, craftyly D Cp., craftili G) thow it (om. CE) wryte, 2111.

Vp to (Vnto G) the (om. B) haloughnesse (holughnesse B, halownesse G) of the seuenth (seueneth G) spere, 8172 (cut out of C; stanza not in D; no note in Austin).

Lord trowe (trow B) ye a coueytous (coveytours D) or (om. CD) a (om. D) wrecche, 4215 (stanza not in G; no note in Austin).

Ye bothe for the seson || and for the feste, 168 (BC om. the second for; D reads and eke for; no note in Austin). (Cf. 7275 C).

And yn here bosom || the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom doun the lettre cast D; no note in Austin).

O olde vnholson || and mysbyleuued (myslyued B, mysbeleuyd C, mysleuyd D) man, 4992 (no note in Austin).

Note.—In Maugre Polydamas or Monesteo, 4713, we should doubtless read Moneste (trisyllable) rather than Polydamas: the movement of 4715, which rhymes with 4713, seems to be conclusive: Polyto or skj the Trojan dawn Rupheo (cf. also 4716). For Pandaris, Pandaris, when those forms occur, we should doubtless read Pandare, Pandare, with elision or apocope of -e (see § 139).

(6) Syncope th of is certain in wher=whether: wher, 2348 (wher[r] A, wher(e) C), 2736 (wher(e) C), 2908 (wher(e) C), 3888 (wher(e) B, whether † C, wher D †), 5493 A (ther † B, wheider D †; stanza not in C), 5824 (whether (†) C †, whethir † D †), 6356 (wher(e) B); wher(e), 270 (C †, whethir † D);¹ whether (monosyl.), 2551 B (wher C, whether? AD); cf. 7663 † D. In 7098 A wher should be whether (emended by Furnivall). In 2348, 2736, 5824, 6356, a vowel or weak h (he, hym) follows, so that whether would be possible (§ 136, f), but 270, 2908, 3888, 5493, in all which consonants follow, are decisive. So far as the Troilus is concerned, the syncopated form

¹ The scribe of C mistook where for the adverb of place.
wher seems to be confined to the unstressed part of the foot, but one cannot be certain of this, since it usually begins the verse (270, 2736, 2908, 3888, 5493, 5824, 6356).—For other, or, see note at the end of § 86.—Other words in -ther occasionally syncopate or slur -e- when the following word begins with a vowel or weak h, but there is no evidence that they lose th: see § 136, f. In 5309 C read whedyr thou art gon for whedyr thou art thus gon; in 372, the reading of C, neyther, which, if correct might suggest syncope of th, is pretty certain to be wrong.

(7) For the few instances in which euere or neuere before a consonant (not h) counts for but a single syllable, see § 90. We have no certain means of knowing whether there was syncope of -v- in these cases; if so, we should expect to find readings like ere, nere or er, ner (cf. where, wher, for clipped whether). A trisyllabic foot, however, seems more likely than ten Brink's eur, neur, in spite of paraunter for parauentre and mysauenter for mysauentre (see § 27).

(8) The exclamatory benedicite occurs three times in the Troilus, each time as a trisyllable: 780 f (: be inf.), 3599 f (: he), 3702. In 780 the spelling is bêndisteâ in B, bêndisteâ in Cp. John's, benediste in C. This seems to settle the pronunciation of the trisyllabic clipped form as bêndisteâ rather than bencite (Child, § 96; Skeat, Prioresses Tule, etc., p. 141; ten Brink, § 263) or bendite (ten Brink, ibid.). The disyllabic benste (Tooneley Myst., pp. 85, 99, quoted by Mätzner, Poesie, p. 109) might come through bendistee as well as through bencite. (Cf. also Kölbing on Ipomadon A 4480 (p. 421), A. Kaufmann, Trentalle Sancti Gregorii, p. 55, Erlanger Beitr., No. 3).

(9) In one instance, comprehende, inf., is perhaps shortened to comprende: As muche ioye (ioy D) as herte (hert D) may (myght D) comprende, 4529 (comprehende BCG, comprehend D, comprenede Cp. John's).

(10) Desespeir, despyr (§ 34, VII.), desesperaunce (1615 f), despered p.p. (36 f, 42, 779), occur in the Troilus. There is naturally some confusion in spelling: thus A reads desespered in 36, 42, and desespered in 779, though the metre shows that the shorter forms are right; and C reads desperaunce in 1615, where the metre requires desesperaunce, A desper in 1091, where the metre requires desespeir.

§ 139. Apocope of consonants (cf. ten Brink, § 264).

I. Apocope of -n in verb-forms has already been referred to in § 136, e. See the material in the Grammatical Chapter under Present

II. On the so-called apocope of -eth in the Imperative Plural, see § 118.

III. Many proper names have lost a final -s, sometimes with further change of form (cf. ten Brink, § 264). The following list is thrown together for convenience, with no attempt at classification.\(^1\)

Achille, 8169 f (-H D) (: wille n.); Achille thorough, 7922 (-es BCD).
Bēt, -Achilles, 3216; Àchillès, 1501 f (: douteles).
Adōn, 3563 (Adon BCD). [Adonis.]
Amētē, 664 f (: bete inf. A.S. bétan).
Arge, 7168 f (: large); Arge, 7297. [Argos.] But, -Argus [the guardian of Io], as Argus eyed, 6121.
Dēiphēbe, 8015, 8017 (Deyiphēbe C). But, -Dēiphēbus (before vowels, h, and consonants), 2487, 2493, 2507, 2510, 2528, 2571, 2581 (Delphēbus † D), 2634, 2686, 2778, 2787, 3068; Dēphēbus, Deyphēbus (before vowels, h, and consonants, and in rhyme) 2483, 2565 f, 2627, 2643, 2654, 2696 f, 2726 f, 2760, 3046 f (D †), 3063.
Dīmēde, Dīomēde, 6378 f (: blede inf.), cf. 6546 f, 7387 f, 7404 f, etc.; -e, 6409, 6469, etc.; -e he, 8120; -e here (gen. sg.), 7880; -e haue (ind. 2 pl.), 8040 (Diamede C); Dīmēde || that, 6455 (Dy- B).
Dite, 146 f (Dyte CD) (: write pres. ind. 3 pl.). [Dictys.]
Hōrāste, 3639 f (: his laste); -e, 3648 (-ast D, -este C). [Orestes, cf. § 125.]
Iūnē, 4859 (-H D).
Lukan and, 8155 (-can BD).
Mērcūreye (trisyllable), 3571 (Mercure B, -ie C, -y D), 8190 A (-ie B); Mercūreye || of, 6684 (-ie B, Mercūreye † trisyll. D).
Mīda, 4231. [Midas.]
Omer ||, 8155; Òmer or\(^2\), 146 (Omere C, Homere D).
Ouēde, 8155 (Ouide D).
Pandāre, 610 f (: care n.), 3445 f, 3947 f, etc.; Pandārē (before consonants), 2292 (-dāris C), 2360 (-dārus C), 2500 (-dārus C; D †), etc.; Pandārē (before vowels), 1063; Pandārē || herkene,

\(^1\) A consonant (not h) follows unless the contrary is noted. The list gives the forms of ABCD.
\(^2\) A of †.
658 (-dāris C); Pandāre, 4397 (-dārūs C, -[a]re D), 5244 (-dār awwerd[e] D), cf. 829, 1002, 1152, 2136, etc., etc.; Pandāre, 3471 (-dārus C, -dārē D), 5468 (-dārē BD); Pandāre, 736 (-dārys C †), 1038, cf. 1030, 2577, 2761, etc.; Pandāre || hered (adv.), 868 (-dārys C); Pandāre || herde, 876 (-dārys C); Pandāre, 582, (Pandāre † D; C †), 2646 (-dārus C), 2957 (-dārus C), cf. 5015, 5303, 6644; Pandāre || I, 1044; Pandāre || and, 5747 (Pandārus C, Pandāre in || BCp. John’s). But,—Pandārus, 618f (-is C), 1178f, 1205f, 1514f (-is C), etc.; Pandārus (before consonants), 1142 (-dārē D), 1170 (-dāris C, -dārē D), cf. 761, 2024, 2227, 2311, etc.; Pandārūs (before vowels), 1191 (-ē C), 2022 (-ē D), etc.; Pandārūs (before h), cf. 6917, 6920, etc.; Pandārūs (before consonants), 1575 (-dārēs C, -dāre D), cf. 2178, 8072; Pandārus hym, 2337 (-dāre D), cf. 2059 (he), 3050 (it)\(^1\); Pandārus || alwey, 2437 (-dāre B, -dārus || was C, -dāre || was D); Pandārūs || and, 932 (-dārys C, -dāre D); Pandārus || that, 3604 (Pandārus BC, Pandāre D).

Polyphète, Pôliphète, 2552f (Polyfete D) (: swete 1 sg.: plete inf.), 2701f (: spète inf.); Pôliphète || they, 2704 (-phète || gun[ne] they † D).


Polyté, 4715 (Polite B, Pôlyte D).

Pryam may, 5583 (Prlam BC; D †); Pryám (before consonants), 4804 (Priám B, Priám(us) D; C †)\(^3\); Pryám (before vowels), 3633 (Priám B, Priáme C), cf. 5868, 6647, 7589;\(^3\) Pryám his, 4801 (Priám BC, Priám(us) † herë (gen. pl.) D).\(^4\) But,—Pryámus was, 4719 (Priámus BD); Priámus || and, 6055.

Quyryne, 4687f (Qwyrine D) (: pyne n.: fyne inf.).

Santlippe, 4714 (Sartipe † D). [Xanthippus.]

Saturne, 3558f (: disturne inf.: turne inf.); -e, 3467 (D †) (first word in verse).

Stace, 8155f (: pace inf. A, space BD).

Virgile, 8155 (first word in verse).

A remarkable line is :

Virgile Ouyde (Ouide D) Omer Lukan (-can BD) and (or D) Stace, 8155 (cut out of C; no note in Austin).

\(^1\) Or, Pandārus it ţs.

\(^2\) Polymyte (Polymyt B, Polymites D) and many a (om. C) man to (al to C) skathe (no note in Austin).

\(^3\) First word in the verse.

\(^4\) Read sane-gard[c] in A.
§ 140. Synæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 266).

In proper names: Symojês (6210), Troýlus \(^1\) (568, 596, 834, 871, 1768, 2027, 2751, 3330, 3681 (l), 6035, 7404, 7483; but Trôylus is the usual form). Besides Criseydiē (passim), Criseyde (1774, 4969), and Crisseydh (169 f), there occur Crisèydâ (2509, 2729) and Crysèjdê (1734). Dei- in Deiphēbus (Delphēbus, Deiphēbus, Delphèbe) always makes one syllable in the Troilus (see references in § 139, s.v.). Phêton, 7027, was to be expected. There is no knowing how Chaucer pronounced the name of Pyrous, one of the sun's team: the word occurs in 4545: That Piros (Pirors B, Pirus C †, Pirous D, Pyrous G; no note in Austin) and tho swyfte stedes thre.—Obeysaunce (with syneresis of -ey-) is given by ten Brink as the only form of this word in Chaucer; but obeysaunce occurs in 3320.—In hêýnoûs (2702) there is no synæresis.

§ 141. Diæresis (cf. ten Brink, § 267).

In Greek proper names in -eus: Tideus, Tydeus, 6451, 7166 f (Thèdeoûs C), 7295 (Thèdeus C), 7843 f (thêdius C), 7856 (thêdeûs C), 7864, 8109 f; Têreux, 1154 (Tryeus † B, Thेêus D); Cappâneûs (7867) (Campâneûs D). Oênôê, 654 f (oonone B, senome † C, Tynome † D) is curious.

Note 1.—She told ek how Tydeus (Tideus BD, Cithideus † C) or she stente, 7848, and Tydeus (Tideus BD, Theodeus C) some that down descended is, 7877, suggest the pronunciation Tëdeus. The readings are not suspicious, and Mr. Austin's collation contains no note on either line.—In the Houz of Fame, Orpheus (1203) occurs, and in B. Duck, 569 Orpheus (dissyl.), but the Troilus has only the latter (5453).—Imenëûs (4100) is for Hymineneûs.

Note 2.—In 4036 A soûr is an error: the correct reading is suere.

§ 142. Synizesis (ten Brink, § 268).

The Romance disyllabic vowel combinations -ia-, -iav-, -ie-, -iou-, -iav-, -ue-, -iou-, regularly retain their disyllabic character in the Troilus. Thus, -ia- in celestial (972, 976 f, 6203 f); special (260 f, 894 f, 974 f, 1048 f); marcial (6331 f); -iav- in alliaunce (4588 f);

1 MS. iou with sign of contraction (expand ioues or iouis?).
1 Var. Troilus.
variance (5647 f, 7125 f, 8033 f); -ie- in audience (4732 f, 5207 f, 6598 f); conscience (551 f); experience (4125 f, 7620 f); pacience (7760); prescience (5649, 5660, 5683, 5726 f); supience (515 f); science (67, 7618 f); pacient (1083, 2984 f, 6249); Ariete (6254 f, 7553 f); quiète, quiète (p. 72); -iow- in abusión¹ (5652 f, 5722); affection, -ioun (296 f, 4026, 4432 f, 4815); attricioun (557 f); alysions (6737 f (-iouns C)); champioun (2512); compassioun (50 f, 467 f, 3245); complexities (6732 f); conclusion, -yon, -ioun (466 f, 480 f, 1344 f, 2385 f, 4868 f C, 5114 f, 5946 f, 7128 f, 7366 f, 7673 f); condicion, -ioun (3659, 7194 f, 7330 f); confessioun (1613 f); confusion, -ioun (4785 f, 4848); consolacioun (708 f); constellacion (5407 f); correctioun (4174 f); curacioun (791 f); deliberacion (3361 f); destructioun (141 f); devocioun (187 f, 555 f); diffusioun (3138); discrecioun, dyscression (3736, 4176 f, 4868 f); disgression (143 f); disposicion, -ioun (1611 f, 6365 f, 7906 f); dyminucioun (4177 f); entencion, -ioun, -ioun (52 f, 211 f, 345 f, 683 f, 1343 f, 1380 f, 7130 f); execution (3363 f, 6367 f); illusion (3883 f); illusions (6731 f); impressioun (298 f); impressions (6735 f (expressionnys C)); mencion (7966); moción (5953 f); oppressioun (2503 f); opynion, -yon, -ioun, -ioun (347 f, 710 f, 790 f, 2382 f, 5115 f, 5650 f, 5657, 5687, 5692, 6157, 7221 f); passion, -ioun (3882 f, 5367); permutation (7904 f); possessioun (2504 f); presumpcion (213 f); proporcion (7191 f); protestacion, -ioun (1569 f, 5951 f); redempcioun (4770 f); region (5405 f); rephrecencion (684 f); repressioun (3880 f); usuacioun (6729 f); saluacioun, sauacioun (464 f, 1466 f, 1571 f, 1648 f, 6044 f (-cyone C)); suspicion (1646 f, 8010 f); tribulacion (7351 f); delicious (6806); enyous, enyous (1751, 1942, 4296, 4542); gracious (885 f); melodious (6940 f); religious (1844 f); -uau- in continuaunce (2919); -ue- in casuel (5081); cruel, cruwel (9, 1422, 1427, 1520, 3224, 4292, 4537, 4687, 4756, 4958, 5492, 5506, 5846, 5851, 5854, 6962, 7085, 7259, 7831, 7897, 8048, 8114, 8124); cruwelle, cruwelle (586 f, 1076 f, 5434 f); cruwellyche (5966, cf. 8119); mewet (6557); grovel (3553 (grewel B, grewel D)); -wou- in vertuuous (254, 891 (-tyuous C)); voluptuous (6235 (-teuous C)).

But there are a few cases of synizesis. Thus,—opynyon, -yon (5635, 5700, 5702); entencion (6995 f D; cf. 681 f C); furious² (1521 D; read furyes); voluptuous² (6235 C); signification (6725 f,

¹ The rhymes adown, down, toun, show that the proper spelling of these words is in -ioun. Other rhymes are Lyon, preson, etchesoun, sermon, comparison, Lame-adown.
² Easily corrected by comparison of MSS. so that the synizesis disappears.
7810); prescience (5673, 5724); perpetually (4596); preciously 1 (5252 C). In 1090, D reads tempestuōs (for -luous) but the true reading is tempestuōs. In corrogēs (7163 f) and vengeaunce (8071) the e after g is not pronounced.

Of classical proper names Cynthia, -ea (6270, 7381), Lollius, Lollus (394 f, 8016 f), licetōn (6575), Pallation (153 f; cf. Pallātiōn[e]s feste, 161) occur without, Layus (1186), Pallation (164) with synizesis; cf. Mercūrēs, below. Mōnestēo, Rūphēo, Phėbuseō, rhyme with each other (4713, 4715, 4716).

The superlatives of adjectives of -y show no synizesis: freundlyeste, goodlyest[e], thriſtiest, worthiest, e (§§ 57, a, 59, a, 70, c). Synizesis occurs in the comparative adverb gladlyer (8140), but not in the comparative adjectives frendlyour (885), worthier (251).

In words in which the accented syllable is followed by -ie, -ien, -ied, -ynge, the i may become consonantal: in the case of -ie this synizesis is necessary in the interior of the verse. Thus augērye, contrārye (noun) (cf. § 51), consistōrie, fūrye, letuārye, memōrie, Mercūrēs, mysērie, stōrie, victōrie, comēdye, parōdye, tregēdie (§ 31); the plurals aduersāries, contrariēs, fūryes, lădyes (so the genitive, § 36), stōryes, victōries (p. 103); mērye (p. 113); contrārye adj. (§ 51), transitōrie (3669 f). So also in the verb forms: pres. ind. 1 sg. herye (3793 f: merye pl.), warye (7741 f: contrarye); pres. ind. 3 pl. carye (7105 f: letuarye); inf. taryen (2104, 2707 f), varyen (2706 f), waryen (2704 f), vnbodye (7913 f: parodye); perf. part. yburyed (2396), heryped (4599, 4655), heriēd, yheryped (2849, 4646),2 tariēd (2834, 7499, 7712). Astonyed and astoned (p.p.) both occur2 (see 1512, 1688, 3931, 8091). In one instance the p.p. heriēd has three syllables: hēriēd (4098). Forms in -ynge occur both with and without synizesis: hūrynge (i.e. bāryinge), tāryinge; hēriýnge, tāryīnqe (see § 10). In 7225 we have tāriēth. In How thow me hast waryed on every side, 6947 (weryped BC, werythe D, werreide G; no note in Mr. Austin's collation),3 werreijd is no doubt the correct reading).4

Note 1.—In ladyes ten Brink (§ 257) prefers syncope ladyes; see the variants in § 38, VII., above. Cf. also enimēs and prōphēses († ibid.).

Note 2.—Ten Brink's remark (§ 268) that seur (O. Fr. seur) is always monosyllabic in Chaucer, seems to be true; but asēurraunce occurs (7622 f).

1 For loueyst, 6939 C, read louest.
2 Cf. yheriēd, 2058 A (yheried BD, iheriēd C).
3 BG omit on, which should be supplied.
4 Compare the context, especially victorie and spille.
§ 143. Miscellaneous slurs and contractions.

This is is occasionally reduced to one syllable and written this. Thus,—1448 (this is D), 3778 (this seyd (is) D), 5552 (this is C, thus † D), 5855 (in A read haue ye for haue), 5936 (C †), 6514 (be † this C); this is, 419 † D, 5965 † C, 7357 † C. (Cf. Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 271; Skeat, Minor Poems, p. 304.)

For nas, nere, nil, nodle, see § 124; for noot, nyste, see § 123.

Is it and is are both found in the Troilus: there seems to be one trustworthy example of each:

What wonder is it though he of me haue ioye, 1834. In this line ABD have is it (i.e. is it), C indicates the pronunciation by by reading ist. (There is no note in Austin.) Cf. also what wonder ist, 6425 C, where ABD read is. In 6949, C has ist for is it, but the line is incorrect in this MS. Similarly vast for was it occurs in 3209 C, where, however, was it should be restored. These last two examples, though worthless as readings, have their value in determining the nature of the slur in 1834.

Ek (Eke G) som tyme it is a craft to seme fle (flee G), 747 ABG (Ek it is a craft for summe sumtyme to fle C, Eke it is craft some tyme to seme D; no note in Austin).

Note 1.—In What node were it this preyere for to werne, 4773 AB (cut out of C; D †; no note in Austin), we may choose between node were it and node were it.

Note 2.—A considerable number of slurred it's and is's disappear on a comparison of MSS. Thus,—telle it the, 599 C; be iy, 2060 C (cf. 7293 C); is iy (†), 1435 A; as it was, 3295 A; do it redresse, 6403 A; may it not, 7926 (cf. 2242 C †); help it, 1405 D; no thing it türnith, 1883 D; I wil it sow (†), 2289 C; can it, 5553 D; if it so be, 7059 C; when that it is ago, 1880 B (or that it is); seth it is (or it is) told, 3638 C; soth it is (or it is) seyd, 4054 C (cf. 6117 D); that it is (or it is) a folye, 6688 D; certis it is (or it is) non, 6771 C; it is of, 7038 A; now it is wors, 7056 A; that is, 1431 D; ther is, 3707 D, 4570 D, cf. 3872 C; now is, 3389 A; weye is, 1702 A; what is, 681 C; wo iy, 694 C; lowe is, 6307 D; counsell is this, 7655 D.

Thow art is slurred once:

Thow art (Thart B Cp. John's, Thu art C, Thou art D) wys (wys(e) B, wis(e) D) ynowh forthi do nought amys, 4471. Here the reading Thart found in B Cp. John's is particularly noteworthy.

Not so certain is the slur of at in

The grete sweigh (swough B, swey C, sweyf D, swigh G) doth (makith C) it to (om. G, than D) come (falle C, fal D) ul (om.
D) at onys (ones BDG), 2468 (no note in Austin). Here it is possible that either to (with G) or or (with D) should be omitted, in spite of the weight of MS. authority.

Of the running together of I (he, she) ne into In' (etc.), the Troilus affords no good example: see y ne dar(e), 2946 D (I dar ABC); I ne wolde, 5899 C (nolde AD, nold B) (cf. 1023 f C'); he ne kyst, 812 C (AB om. ne); he ne may, 2212 C (he may ABD); sche ne wil, 6719 C (nyl AB, niH D). See Child, § 96; ten Brink, § 272, and Compl. to Pite, n. to v. 105, p. 177.

For at the B occasionally writes atte. Thus,—atte laste, 1230 B, 5097 B; att[e] laste, 916 B; atte leste, 7313 B; atte meeste, 7310 B; atte fulle, 209 B; see § 53. Cf. attoother, 5096 B (at the other AC, at other D t); the tother side, 7050 A (that other BCD). Atton(e), 3407 f B (at oon A, at on C, at on(e) D), is different. In 7732 C, for at the writyng read at writyng. In the phrase at erste (§ 54, n. 2) the readings are interesting,—at erst[e] AC, at erste BCP, att erst D t, atte erst[e] G: the reading of G suggests the conjecture that in firste vertu (§ 54, n. 2) the demonstrative the has been swallowed up by the preceding that (conjunction),—that the, that, that.

Note 3.—A considerable number of miscellaneous slurs disappear on comparison of MSS. Thus,—I ame, 720 A, 967 C, 1516 C, 2198 A, 4490 D; I hawe, 6460 B, cf. 1384 A, 7549 B; thow hast (?), 5153 D; he hath, 3917 C; ye hau, 5958 A, cf. 5469 B, 5538 C; ye wiff, 6188 D; prey hym, 2536 C; therfore as a, 680 A (cf. 1321 C, 2266 D, 2341 A, 5031 C (I), 5562 D); lete vs goo, 6888 D; in his armes, 4029 D (?), 5881 D; 1 now in a, 1550 B (cf. 363 D, 850 C, 1290 D (?), 1320 t D, 7653 D); the in thyn, 5306 C (D ?); here an ensaumple, 4863 A; down of here, 6876 A (cf. 474 C, 1004 D, 1945 D, 2052 A, 3263 D, 3855 D, 5346 C, 6513 C, 6728 D, 6790 C, 7275 C, 7825 A); and yt she, 7665 A (cf. 7629 D); planente or a, 5429 D; sorowe or in, 641 C; wel for I, 613 C (cf. 1692 D, 3151 D, 3669 B, 5320 D, 6124 D, 7128 A); 2 natt at a bene, 6726 D; and at after none, 7493 D; can not thanks, 3840 C; you with, 3474 D. So in apparent examples of slurred that; 3 whil that (quasi vil't), 468 CD; so that (quasi sot), 2247 D; thynk that at (quasi think't) 2824 A; wel that this (quasi well't), 2994 A; er that he (quasi er't), 4135 A; whan that he (quasi whan't), 7516 A; cf. 1437 B, 2605 C, 3073 C, 3208 A, 5138 D, 5279 C (?), 5350 A, 5936 C, 6035 AB, 6170 C, 6180 D, 6483 D, 7073 B, 7541 D, 7662 C, 8061 D. In 953 the right reading is doubtless he that parted is (John's; -yf CD) rather than he that departed (AB) with slur of that. So also in apparent examples of slurred and: At day for love and in which a manner cas, 1542 C; cf. 1239 C, 1941 C, 2184 D, 2604 C, 3651 D, 4212 C, 4232 C, 4556 D, 5770 C, 6615 D (I), 7151 D; see also the apparent slur of them in lover(c) then ben, 7287 B. In 6139 C I

1 In 1087 A, 4047 C, the slur on his, in his may be avoided, if Troilus be read as a dissyllable (§ 140); but in both lines his is an interpolated word.
2 In 2532 no one will hesitate between What wolt thou seyn yf I for Éleyn gesente, and for Éleyné.
3 In most cases the corruption consists in the insertion of a superfluous that.
schal ben has the time of two syllables (cf. Scotch I'se), but the line is manufactured by the corrector of C.

Note 4.—It is just possible that in 4166, 4984, the scribe of B intended thought for a shortened though that.

Note 5.—Through (A.S.thurh) is variously spelled (thurgh, thorugh, thour, etc.), but is always monosyllabic, except perhaps in 7846 : Thurgh (Thorwgh B, Of C, Thurgy D) his (hire C, om. D) wol I yow (om. Cp.) telle. Now and then one or another MS. seems to make the word dissyllabic elsewhere, but comparison affords an easy correction (see the MSS. in 1444, 4130, 4738, 7132).

§ 144. The extra syllable before the caesura.

In many verses of the Troilus the retention of an unaccented syllable (-e, -eth, etc.) before the caesura would convert a masculine caesura into a feminine, and produce the phenomenon known as the extra syllable before a caesural pause (cf. Skeat, Prioresses Tale, pp. lxi ff.; ten Brink, § 307, 3). In these cases (with the rarest exception) it is possible to reduce the verse to the normal movement by apocopating -e or by syncopating the vowel of the syllable in question (-eth, etc.). In the Grammatical Chapter apocope has accordingly been assumed for such cases (in accordance with my own conviction); but, since the question cannot be regarded as settled, it is perhaps worth while to give a special section to the matter. In the following list the aim has been to enumerate all verses which the advocates of the extra syllable theory could reasonably adduce in support of their contention. Examples in which the verse may be made regular by eliding -e (i. e. in which the word after the caesura begins with a vowel or weak h) have of course been left out of account.1 The readings of D have been disregarded throughout the section, and the same is true of trivial variations, except when they concern the point under consideration.

I. Cases of -e.

1. Weak nouns (§§ 2, 3) :

This litel spot of erthe || that with the se, 8178 (erth B).
But now of hope || the kalendes bygynne, 1092.
For neuere sith the tyme || that she was born, 1228 (tyde C ; B om. the).
Right in that selber wyse || soth for to seye, 3197 (C om. for).
So bole (§ 15, p. 47) :
Right yn the white bole || so it bytydde, 1140 (bool B) ; similarly 4901.

1 Such are 14, 44, 88, 107, 116, 118, 160, 176, 180, 189, 224, etc., etc.
Observations on the Language

III. Masculine nouns having -e or -u in A.S. (§ 6):
He loketh forth by hegge || by tree || by greue, 7507 (hegge B, hegis C, hegges D, hege G). Better,—forth || by. As to the form hegge, see p. 10.

From haselwode || there Ioly Robyn pleyde, 7537.
Tydeus some || that doun descended is, 7877. See p. 10, where ten Brink’s remark (§§ 260, 261) on some is corrected.

III. Feminines in A.S. -u (§ 8):
And seyde || here in this closet dore || withoute, 3526.1
Here at this secre trappe dore || quod he, 3601.
To scornen love || which that so soone kan, 234.
Blyssyd be love || than kan thus folk conuerte, 308. Other instances of love || with the cesura after the second foot may be seen in 16, 46, 436, 677, 744, 1129, 1759, 1789, 1823, 1866, 1912, 3014, 3359, 3622, 4103, 4158, 4433, 4830, 5084, 5243, 5761, 6296, 6314, 6844, 7443, 8039. So perhaps, 518: Of hem that love lyst febely for to aunauce. Cf. also 3851 Þ A.

At which the god of love || gan (to) loken rowe, 206 (BCCp. John’s om. to).
Kan he wel speke of love || quod she I preye, 1588 (of louë || I sow preie C Þ).

Ayens the god of love / || but hym obeye, 6530. So perhaps, But al so cold yn love || towards the, 523 (or,—cold || yn); Thow kondest neuere yn love || thyn seluen wysse, 622 (or,—neuere || yn); I that hauæ yn love || so ofte assayed, 646; My name of trouthe yn love || for euere mo, 7418 (αλλως C) (or,—trouthe || yn).
In love || for which yn wo || to bedde he wente, 1147.
Of love || that made hire herte fressh and gay, 2007 (Of loue wich that made his herte gay C).
For love || that euery other day || I faste, 2251.
In love || but as his suster hym to plese, 2309 (second cesura after suster Þ).
To feffe with || youre newe love || quod he, 8052.

Note.—In For goddes love what seith it tellæ it vs, 1181, scan it || rather than love ||. In Refuseth not to love for to be bonde, 255, scan not ||. In Aquyte

1 Cf. And they that layen at the dore withoute, 3587 (lay A, leye C).
of Chaucer's Troilus.

IV. Monosyllabic feminine nouns with long stem-syllable (§§ 9, 11):
On his byhalke || which that vs alle sowle sende, 2819. But perhaps we should read (with GCp.): On his half which that soule vs alle sende (see variants, p. 17, under halke).

But to thyn help || yet somewhat kan I seye, 672 (helpë || sumwhat C).

Ne to thyn owen help || do bysynesse, 795 (hele C).

To fynde vnto oure helpe || the beste weye, 5954 (help B).

God for thi might || so leue it wet to fare, 7322. Cf. 8151.

Withouten neede || there I may stonde in grace, 1799.

And hast [the] lesse neede || to countrefete, 2617 (ABC om. the, but GCp. John's have it; B om. to; C inserts to before countyrfete).

For now is neede || sestow not my destresse, 2888.

I shal to morwe at nyght || by est or west, 7114. Cf. 7544.

But so nyl not an ok || whau it is cast, 2474. Cf. 2420.

In thus good plit || lat now non heuy thought, 3981. Similarly 4396.

And of my sped || be thyn al that sweetnesse, 1036 (speede / B).

Thow be my sped || fro this forth and my muse, 1094 (spede / B).

And men cryede in the strete || se Troylus, 1697.

Thenk (that) al swych taried tid || but lost it nys, 2824 (BC om. that; C has on for al).

And haue my truthe || but thow it fynde so, 831 (truething || but thou fynde it so C).

And be my truthe || the kyngh hath sones tweye, 1255.

And al the while || which(e) that I yow deuyse, 3277 (C om. yow).

A woful wight || to han a drey feere, 13 (see p. 33).

That in this world || ther nys so hard an herte, 5802. Cf. 6308, 7085, 8060. So also:

And by my thryft || my wendyng out of Troye, 6292 (thrithe B). Cf.

Now by my thryft (thrithe B) quod he that shal be sene, 3713, where the cæsura comes after he.

Note 1.—Several of the examples just cited have little or no significance: see § 11. The same may be said of lines in which a verbal noun in -nyge, -nyng (§ 10) is followed by the cæsura or a strong pause: see 1089, 4803.

Note 2.—In 4061, And now sweetnes || someth the more swet[e], the is
clearly to be omitted (with BCCp. John's): otherwise, we should probably read sweetness || someth.

V. Masculine and neuter nouns that sometimes take an irrational -e or a dative -e (§ 14).

In several instances in which a dative -e might perhaps be expected to occur, but in which the caesura directly follows, no -e is pronounced (and sometimes none is written). That most of these instances have no significance, however, will be seen by comparing them with the idioms discussed on pp. 36-37.

Vp on his bed || but man so sore grone, 1642 (bedde / B).
He softe into his bedde || gan for to slynke, 4377. Cf. 5017, 5395, 6644, 6657, 6772. In 1152 a-bedde || loses its -e by elision or apocope before half.
Hath right now put to flyght || the Grekes route, 1698.
For ay the ner the fyr || the hotter is, 449.
Wel neigh doun of (on † A) here hors || she gan to sye, 6545.
But by thi lyf || be war and fast eschewe, 2103 (or, —war || ?).1
Lest yn this town || that folkes me dispise, 6002 (folk[es] C). Cf. 7486, 7517.
Out of the woye / || so priketh hym his corn, 219 (woye C). Cf. 2388, 6864, 7025.

Monosyllabic neuters with short stem-syllable stand on a somewhat different footing (see p. 38, n. 1):—
But at the yate || there she sholde oute ryde, 6395 (see p. 46).
Thorough more wode and col || the more fyr, 2417 (cole C, colé || more B, or col || the Cp. John's). (See p. 54.)
But al that losse || me doth me no dishese, 4751 (los B; cut out of C; no note in Mr. Austin's collation). (See p. 58.)
The same may be said of hewe (p. 42) and tere (p. 45):
It shewed in his hewe || bothe euen and morwe, 487 (hewe || on C).
For every teër || which that Criseyde asterte, 3912 (tere B).

Compare also weye, woye (but see p. 46):
For which that woye || for ought I kan espye, 6131 (wey B; om. † C).

Note.—It is perhaps worth mentioning that the two instances in which bour, bourgh occurs as a monosyllable, are before the caesura (the other cases are in the phrase to borse) ; see p. 39.

VI. Ferde, hede (§ 15); smert (p. 64):
Whi sholde thanne of fered || thyn herte quake, 5269 (for ferd C).
(Or,—thanne || ?).2

1 In 7637, scan rather day || than with lyf ||.
2 Cf. 6073, where the right reading is perhaps for-fered (pp.) || out (for fered ACp., for ferdé || out B, for fer C †).
Now taketh heed || for it is for to done, 7266 (hede / B).
The proper form of the noun smert seems to have no -e (see p. 64):
Ney ded for smert || gan bresten out to rere, 5035 (smerte B).
In 6780 smert is perhaps a verb (=smертeth) : if so, the caesura follows
harm.

VII. Romance nouns which have a right to -e (§§ 21, 22):
As man / bryd / beste / || fissh / herbe and grene tre, 2852 (best B).
A broche || that he Crisyde yaf || that morwe, 8024 (broche B; C †).
Was there noon other broche || yow lyste lete, 8051 (broch B). In
8053 scan rather : But thilke broche that I || with terys wete, than
broche ||. The caesura of 4212 : But wel I wot a broche gold of
asure, is not quite certain (broche || ?).
To morwe. || alas. that were a fawre || quod he, 3692 (fair B, fayr C).
Yf that I hadde grace || for to do so, 3770 (grace had || B; C om.
grace †).
And sayde Nece || who hath arayed thus, 2272 (nece || ho C).
And sayde Nece || se how this lord can knele, 3804 (B †; nece || how
C).
But alwey good[e] nece || to stynte his wo, 1468 (goode nece || alwoy
to C).
In 1340 read nece || alwey (with BCCp. John’s) instead of nece || to A.
That in science || so expert was that he, 67.

That prescience || put fallyng necessarie (l. necessaire), 5683.
God wot the text || ful hard is soth to fynde, 4199 (tixt † is C).

Note 1.—Ioye ||, 4473, suffers elision before hal. In 4535 : This ioye ||
may not yvrete ben || with tixt, we should perhaps cut out the prefix y-
(with BC John’s), but Cp. has i-writen. In 6093, read ioye || and the
anomalous davns.

Note 2.—The reading is doubtful in 5504 : Pernes tournent (turnement † C)
pleynet (pleynte B, om. C) wo and (om. BCp. John’s ; and ek C) distresse.

Note 3.—In 4592 : Bynd this acord || that I have told and telle (acorde B),
acord may be referred to the corresponding O. Fr. form (see p. 74). Pres
in the sense of crowd never has an -e in the Troilus (see p. 74).

Note 4.—In Touschong thi lettre || that thow art wys nouch, 2108, we may
omit that with BC (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation). In Foryaf and
with here vnke || gan for to pleye, 4420, we may omit for before to with
BC (no note in Mr. Austin’s collation).

Note 5.—In 2917 sire (first word in the line and followed by the usual
vocative pause) apocopates its -e (syr B).

VIII. Proper names :
Vnto Crisyde || that heng here hed ful lowe, 1774.
And folwe alwey Crisyde || thi lady dere, 4969 (or,—alwey ||).
This Diomed || that thi lady dere, 6455.
And Poliphete || they gonnen thus to waryen, 2704.
Cf. Pandare || which that sente was || from Troylus, 5468 A.
Particularly noteworthy is:

Fro Meleagree || that made the bor to blede, 7878 (Meleagre B, meliagre C; no note in Mr. Austin's collation).

IX. More (abst. and adv., §§ 64, 86), worse (adj., § 64):
Nor axen more || that may do yow diseese, 1232.
By god I shal nomore || com here this wyke, 1515.
For euere more || myn herte lust to reste, 1915 (mo BC). Similarly 4243, 4946.

Withoute more || to (is † B) Troylus yn thei went, 2751.
I kan no more || but that I the wole serne, 3232. Similarly 4035, 4115, 4156, 4654, 7731.
There was no more || to speken (l. skippen with BECp. John's; schepe C) nor to traunce, 3532. (Or, — skippen || t.)
He dar nomore || come here ayen for shame, 6130 (nomor B).

Note 1.—In And yf I more dorste prey now as now, 2521 (dorst preye B, durste preye as now C), read probably dorste prey[é] rather than dorste prey. In For ay thurst I (I prest + C) the more that I it drynke, 406, the position of the casura is probably more ||.

Or loue the uers || though wrecches on it crien, 1950.
That hym is wors || that is fro wele ythrowe, 5144.
For now (it) is wors || than euere yet I wende, 7056 (BC om. it).

Note 2.—The construction in 5144 and 7056 may be perhaps be regarded as adverbiał (§ 86).

X. Monosyllabic adjectives in the "definite" use (§ 53):
That at the laste || the dede slep hire hente, 2009.
But at the laste || this woful Troylus, 5034.
Til at the last || this sorwful wyght Criseyde, 5914 (laste BC).
Al be I not the firste || that dide amys, 7430.

Note.—In 3407 the laste || suffers elision before herof.

XI. The plural of monosyllabic adjectives and perfect participles (§§ 67-70):
Hath lordes olde / || thorugh which withinne a throwe, 7824 (old C).

In the following instances the adjective is in the predicate and the subject refers to a single person (cf. § 69, b):
Now be not wroth || my blod my nece dere, 1679.
And ben so loth || to suffren hym yow serue, 2996.
Now Beth al hol || no lengere ye ne pleyne, 3010.
Ye ben to wys || to do so gret folye, 3709 (C has swich for so gret).
And Beth wel war || ye do no more amys, 4022.
And ye so feyr || that euerich of hem alle, 6533.

Note.—In If ye be swych || youre beaute may not streche, 1426, ye refers to Criseyde, and swiché would be surprising (swiche || B).
In the two examples of *al* that follow, we cannot be quite certain that we are dealing with a plural (see § 80):

This is o word for *al* || this Troylus, 4502.

And of the furies *al* || she gan hym telle, 7861 (furics also ? C).

Perhaps we should read *als*.

Note 2.—In Crisyclde which that *all these thynges say*, 2350 (al B ; C t), and Crisyclde which that *alle these thynges herde*, 3641 A, perhaps the only caesura is after Crisyclde. 3225 perhaps runes: *And this || yn alle the temples || of this town. 7857 may be scanned She told ek || al the prophesies by herte (al B, al the profecy \(\pm\) C).

Monosyllabic perfect participles (§ 68):

Of wommen (whom \(\dagger\) men C) *lost. || thorugh fals and foles bost*, 3140.

O nece pes || or we be *lost || quod he*, 3937. (Or,—nece ||.)

Now be ye (*sing. in sense*) *kaught. || now is there but we tweyne*, 4049.

This wordes (*om. C*) *seyd (seyde BC) || she on here armes two*, 5573.

Of thinges that *ben wyst || byfore that* tyde, 5739 (*wiste B; cut out in C*).

XII. The pronoun *hire, here*, dat. acc. sg. (pp. 152-3).

Since *hire* is seldom or never disyllabic in the interior of the verse, cases of apocope before caesura present no interest. Such may be seen in 315, 370, 443, 454, 2307, 3497, 4820, 4827 (*herë || do A*), 5089, 5100, 5149, 5192, 5299, 5305, 6480, 7599; cf. also 7948 (see p. 153).

XIII. Adverbs.

For the reason just mentioned, no interest attaches to *here, there* before caesura (cf. § 89): examples may be seen in 187, 2904, 4844, 6111, 6542, and perhaps in 4658. *Whanne in:* But ryght as *whanne || the sonne shynth bright*, 1849 (when B, whan C) (see § 88) is also of no account. More interesting are: *And nameliche || my dre herte ye*, 5996 (nameliche B, namely C); *Secundelich || ther yet deyneth noon*, 2826 (*secondel[el]y B, secundel C*) (§ 84). In the following the constructions are not certainly adverbial:

For *hygh and low || withouten ony drede*, 3260 (see § 82, n. to *lowe*).

This short and *pleyne || thoeff* of my message, 5552 (*pleyn C*).

XIV. Present Indicative of Verbs (§ 92, V.):

But wel I *rede || that by no maner weye*, 495.

As thus I *mene || that ye wolde be my strete*, 4133 (*mene || 3e wol 3e BCp., menë || wil 3e C*).

Wherfor I *seye || that from eterne yf he*, 5640.

I *seye || that yf the opynion || of the*, 5692 (*or,—yf || ?*).

So how I *deye || ye nyl me not rescowe*, 6594 (*dye B; \(\alpha\)\(\lambda\)\(\omega\) C*).

Compare the plural:
For which men say || may nought disturbed be, 1707 (scyne B, seyn C).

XV. Present Subjunctive of Verbs (§ 111):
But if that I consente || that it so be, 413 (BC om. so).
And yf the lyke || than maystow vs saluwe, 2101.
Wher so yow lyste || by ordal or by oth, 3888 (list B, Whether ye wolde C).
And yf she write / || thou shalt ful soone (soon B) see, 7662 (And yf that sche write thou schat some se C).
Or yf you lyst || no manere upon me se, 7751 (ye lust no more C).

Note.—In the case of the impersonal list it is not always possible to distinguish the apocopated subj. 3 sg. from the synocopated ind. 3 sg.
See the following verses, in which the verb in question is followed by the cesura: 1407, 2245, 2865, 3215, 5245, 6295, 7360, 7780, and cf. § 95.

XVI. Weak Preterites (§§ 99, 102):
Or he me tolde || who myght ben his leche, 1656 (told / who myghte B, told ho myȝte C). (Or, perhaps,—tolde || who myȝhte).
That to hire seluen she seyde || who (ho C) yaf me drynke, 1736.
And gan to iape and seyde || lord so ye swete, 2028 (seydë || lord ye smete † C).
For which she thoughte || that lone al come it late, 3310 (tought B).
(Or perhaps better,—loue ||)
What that she thought || when that he seyde so, 3418 (thought[e] ||
when B, thouȝte || when C; BC om. the second that).
For wel he thoughte || ther was noon other grace, 5614.
Abedde brought || when that hem bothe lesthe, 4521 (C om. hem).

Note 1.—In 4367: He seyde farewell myn herte and dere swete,† the cesura is of course after farewell, but there is a pause in the sense after seyde.

Note 2.—In 5486: As he that felte pyte (pitie Cp.) on every syde, felte pyte || on (with a slur of the final -e in pyte) is more probable than felte || pyte om.† In 7088: So tendrely she wepte || bothe euc and morwe, we cannot be sure that seep (strong pret.) is not what Chaucer wrote (§ 103). In 4998: That I the hadde (subj.) || where as I wolde in Troye, BCp. John's omit as.

Note 3.—For answerede, etc., see II., v., n. 2, below.

Note 4.—The reading made ||, in 312, is not supported by any MS. (see variants, p. 245).

Compare also:
As she best howde || she gan hym to disporte, 2758 BCp. (§ 123, IV.).

As Crassus dide || for his affectis wronge, 4233 (§ 124, IV.).

XVII. Imperatives:

1 Instead of herte and dere swete read dere herte swete with BCp. John's. C has dere h. s. without my.
2 As he that pite hadde B; cut out of C.
Go 

of Chaucer'sTroilus.

§ 144.] 1481. (§ 115, III.)

And sey || thou mayst no lengere || vp endure, 2603 (seye B, sei C).

§ 115, V.)

Now spek / now prey / || now pitously compleyne, 2584 (sing.) (preye B, preye || and ‡ C). (§ 116, IV.)

Now understonde || for I yow nought require, 1443 (B ‡ om. nought; vndyr-stond C). (§ 118, IV.)

And seyde awake || ye slepen al to longe, 1630. (§ 118, IV.)

Now stynte || that ye no longere || on it honge, 2327 (§ 118, IV.)

XVIII. Infinitive (§ 119, X.):

A man to love || til that hym lyst to lene, 686 (C ‡ om. that).

Nomore to speke || for trusteth wel that I, 2511 (C has of this for to speke).

Now doth hym sitte || now gode nece dere, 3817 (hardly,—now ||).

But BCGCp. John's omit the second now ; D has it.

I may here have || right sone douteles, 4764. (§ 124, VI.)

That it shal come / || but they seyn that therfore, 5661. Similarly 5662.

That thing to come || be purueyed trewely, 5717. Similarly 5726.

I moste come || for wheder sholde I gon, 6023 (com C).

Than shal [s]he come || that may me blisse brynge, 7021.

She wolde come || ye but she nyst[e] whanne, 7791.

So myght I wene || that thynges alle and some, 5730.

The folk wol wene || that thou for cowardyse, 6775 (seyn ‡ C).

The existence of the monosyllabic infinitive form seyn (§ 119, XIII.) makes the following examples inconclusive:

That is to seye || for the am I become, 3095 (seyn C). Similarly 3126 (seyn B, seine C).

This dar I seye || that trouthe and diligence, 4139 (seyn C). Similarly 4779 (seyn C).

The gerundial forms to sen, to seyn, and to don are too common elsewhere in the verse to make the following examples before the caesura of any significance (§ 119, XIII.) :

He was to sen || fullfild of heigh prowesse, 1717. Cf. 3384, 3910, 4972.

That is to seyn || that I foryeue al this, 4020 (say C). Similarly 6037 (seyn C), 7261 (seyn C).

And soth to seyn || she nas nat al a fo, 1769 (say C).

That what to done || for ioye vnethe he wyse, 4095 (don B).
II. CASES OF UNACCENTED TERMINATIONS ENDING IN A CONSONANT.

I. -eth in the pres. ind. 3 sg. (cf. §94, II.): 1

Fro whennes cometh || my walyng (wele † C) and my pleynte, 408.
Whan that it cometh || but wyfully it weylen (weyuen BC, which is right), 1369.
That ofte ycleped cometh || and endeth peyne, 5166. Much more energetic than ycleped || cometh.
For al that cometh || comth by necessite, 5620 (not in C).
Nough[t] that it comth (comes B) || for it purueyed is, 5715 (not in C).
Whan (Til C) that she cometh (come C) || the which (and that C) shal (may C) be right[t] sone, 6754. Cf. also 7516.
Wher it bycometh || lo no wyght on it sporneth, 1882.
Men seyn || the suffraunt overcometh || parde, 6246 (C †). (Or perhaps,—suffraunt ||.)
Ek wostow how it fareth || on (of BC) som seruice, 956.
And yet me of-thynketh (mathynketh B) || that this auaunt me (may B) asterte (sterbe B), 1043 (cut out of C).
Whan that hym (om. B) thenketh (om. B) || a womman bereth (berth B) here heighe, 1486.
That wher he cometh (comth B) || he prys and thank hym geteth, 1461.
Which that myn vncre swereth (swerth B) || he mot be ded, 1739.
Al that now loueth || asonder sholde lepe, 4605.
Crisseyde loueth || the sone of Tydeus, 8109 (cut out of C).

Note 1.—So perhaps in 1292: To suche as hym thenketh || able for to thryve, but the caesura may as well come after able.

Note 2.—There are no certain examples in the inv. pl. owing to the instability of the ending in that form (§ 118), but note: But yet (om. C) l seye aryseth || and lat vs daunce, 1306 (perhaps,—seye || aryseth). The same may be said of the pres. ind. 3 pl. in -eth (§ 97): see As ony men that lyueth (-en B, leyn C) || under the sonne, 1259, and Which that men clepeth (-yn C) || the (om. BC) wode taliyse, 7576. Lyth 3 sg. (§ 94, II.) and seyth 3 sg. (§ 94, II.) and 3 pl. (§ 97) have, for obvious reasons, not been taken into account.

1 Seyth ind. sg. (§ 94, II.) and pl. (§ 97) has been left out of account.
II. -est:
Thorough Troye rennest || ay (om. C) downward to the see, 6211.
Note.—Lyst, seyst have been left out of account (see § 93).

III. -en:
Thenne wolde I hopen || the rathere for to spede, 865 (hope rathere C).
That men hem wrien (wren B) || with ashe[n] (asshen B, asschin C)
pale and dede, 1624.
I kan not trowen || that she (om. B) wol write ayen, 7661 (trowē ||
sche C).
Ne yf she kan here-seluen (self BC) || disturben it, 5765.
For examples before a vowel or h, see § 136, e.
Note.—In the examples before a consonant, it is of course possible to read
-e for -en (heren Self for here-seluen; in the examples before vowels, -e
(elided).

IV. -es:
(i.) In the plural:
Both of his ioyes (ioie B Cp., ioy D) || and of his cares colde, 264.
The sg. ioie is probably right.
By alle the othes || that I haue to yow sworn(e), 1384 (BCD om. to).
The omission of to (BCD) gives othēs || that. Cp. John’s appear to have
to.
To make amendes (amend B, an f ende C, amendis D) || of so cruel a
dede, 1427. No note in Austin: amendes is probably right.
It is oon of the thynges (-is CD) || that (om. BCp.) furthereth most,
2453 (D has that).
In gentil hertes || ay redy to repaire, 2847 (C cut out). D om. ay,
but Cp. John’s agree with A.
Swych argumentz (-tȝ B, -tis CD) || ne (om. CD) ben not worth a bene,
4009. (No note in Austin). Cf. 466.
That elementes (-tȝ B, -tis C) that ben so discordable, 4595.
The ambassiatours (Thembassadours B, Theem-bassatourys C) || to
Troye streyght thei (om. B) wente, 4802.
Thembassadours (The embassadours C) || ben answered for fynal, 4807.
Theschaunge (The chaunge C) of prisoners (presoneris C) || and al this
nede, 4808.
O ye loueres (-ers B, -cris C) || that heyhe vpon the whiel, 4985.
So gan the pynes || here hertes for to twyste, 5791 (pyn B, peine D;
 állwec C t̂). (No note in Austin.)
Of al the (that B) londes (lond BC, londe D) || the sonne on shyneth
shene, 5901. (No note in Austin.)
His enemys (enemyis C) || and in here hondes falle, 6615.
Observations on the Language [§ 144.

Note.—In some of the lines just quoted it will be observed that the reading is doubtful.—In 7397, read sykes sore || adown rather than soré sykes || adown. In 8154, the question is between stoppes || and selat or stoppes and sést : the latter scansion gives a more satisfactory line. Knee is of course a monosyllable in 3925 (knes || and) and 3922 (knes || and).

(ii.) -es gen. and adverbial:
Shal han me holly here || til that I dyee, 5106 (C †). See § 74. Ther ayenys (ažyyn B, ažen C) || answeré I thus anoone, 1454.
Think here ayens (aženis B) || than that the sturdy ok, 2465. Or she vs bothe at ones || er that ye wende (at onys || or), 2961.
So as we shulle togederes || euere dwelle, 5984 (shal togideres B, That we schal eueremore togedere d[w]elle C).
He hadde in herte alwayes (alwayes B, alwoy C) || a manere drede, 6415.

Note.—The variability of form in adverbs in -es (§ 91) renders most of the examples given above of little significance in the question of the extra syllable.

V. -ed in the perfect participle; -ede in the preterite:
Ful wel beloued || and wel men of here tolde, 131.
As he was woned (wont BC) || and of hym self (seluyn C) to (om. C) iape, 3397. Cf. woned || to, 4697. See § 121, III.
Thow mysbeluued || and (om. C) enyous folye, 3680.
For when men han wel cried || than wol they rowne (let hem roune C), 5249.
That ben pursayed || but nedely as they seyn, 5668 (not in C).
That ech(e) hym louede (loued B) || that lokèd on his face, 1071.
And ay the peple cryede (crysed C) || here comoth oure ioye, 1728.
I that leuede (haude C) || yn Inst and in plesaunce, 5155.
Ne (And B) though I lyuede (-ed B) || vnto the worldes ende, 6242.

Note 1.—In 6947 worsayed should doubtless be read (worayed A, woreyd BC, hast me woreyd D, haaste me worreide G) : How thow me hast worreied || on (om. DG) every syde, (Austin makes no note.)
Note 2.—Wherever the pret. sg. of answeren occurs in the form answerèd before causura and the word after the causura begins with a vowel or weak h, we may read rather answe®èd than answerèd : there is then no question of the extra syllable (see, e.g., 3767, 3974, 4019, 5351, 6777, 7491, 7533).
For answerèd ||, cf. 4498, 5042, 5783, 7638 ; for answèrèd ||, cf. 1964 (?). 6686.

In one line, however, the retention of a light extra syllable before the causura seems to be unavoidable, if the reading of the best MSS. is to be followed:
Nentendement ¹ considère ² || ne ³ tongue ⁴ telle, 6358.⁵

¹ So AECp. John's Selden B 24 ; Nintendement Durh.; Ne entendement D Phillipps 8252; Ne † mendument B.
² So ABCp. John's; considère D, consider Durh. Seld.; consider Ph.; considered † E.
⁴ tongue Durh.; tong Seld.
⁵ Non † tendement nor tongue considere or tell Harl. 2392. Leaf cut out of C.
§ 144, 145.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 401

Cf. And I ther (om. C) after || gan rorne (roman B) to and fro, 1601 (rome ?).
Less certain than 6358 (for slurs are easy) are:
What wonder is it (ist C) || though he of me haue ioye, 1834. For ist see § 143.
And yn here bosom || the lettre doun he thraste, 2240 (And in her bosom doun the lettre cast D; no note in Austin).
Ye bothe for the seson || and for the feste, 168 (BC omit the second for; D reads and eke for; no note in Austin).
O olde vnholson || and mysbyleued (myslyued B, mysbleuyd C, mysleuyd D; no note in Austin) man, 4992.
Compare:
And to Pandarus (-ris C, Pandare DCp. John's) || he (om. B) held vp bothe his hondes, 2059.
But to Pandarus (-dare BD) || alwey was (was alwey C) his recours (cours † D), 2437 (no note in Austin.)
And thow Symoys || that as an arwe clere, 6210.

Note.—In 2059, 2437, we are of course to read Pandare (with elision): on the forms of this name, see § 139.—Chaucer apparently pronounced Symoys as a dissyllable with the accent on the ultima, making oy a diphthong (§ 140).

§ 145. Some interest attaches to the treatment of the following unaccented final syllables before the cæsura:
(1) Consonant + -le, -me, -ne, -re; (2) -ne, -re, preceded by weak -e-;
(3) -el, -en, -er; (4) -we (-ewe, -owe, -ow); (5) -y, -ye.

When one of these syllables stands before a cæsura which is followed by an unstressed syllable beginning with a vowel or weak h, it is of course easy to scan the line as a normal verse by depriving of syllabic value (by elision, syncope, or slurring) the syllable (or syllables) immediately preceding the cæsura. Thus in He seyde he hadde a feuer || and ferde amys, feuer may syncopate the vowel of the final syllable; in He seyde o lettre || a blysful destine, lettre may elide its final -e; in But like a dreadful louere || he seyde this, louere may syncopate one e and elide the other, and so on. On the other hand, it may be maintained that the preferable way to scan such verses is to admit the extra syllable before the cæsura.

Note.—I have used the terms syncope and elision above merely because they are short and convenient. In strictness, we cannot speak of lettre as eliding its -e or of feuer as syncopating its -e, unless we are ready to maintain that Chaucer's ordinary pronunciation of lettre was really lettre and not letter or letre and that his ordinary pronunciation of feuer was really fever and not fevre or fevr; and these are theses which few would
undertake to demonstrate. Exactly what the quality of the "extra syllable" would be in each case, if the verse is to be scanned so as to admit an extra syllable, is of course also a question that depends on the normal Chaucerian pronunciation of the words in hand. See the remark of Skeat, *Prioresses Tale*, 4th ed., p. lxxii, and cf. § 136.

I. Consonant + -le, -me, -ne, -re. (For *heuene*, see II., below.) Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

For al be that his *moebel* || *is* hym by-raft, 6122.
Among the *peple* || *as* who seyth alwed is, 3110. Cf. 1731, 4845.

In thilke large *temple* || *on* every syde, 185. Cf. 3382.
Out of the *temple* || *al* esilyche he wente, 317. Cf. 162.
Withinne the *temple* || he went hym forth pley[i]nge, 267. Cf. 5609 (in which insert, with Cp. John's, *al* before *allone*).
The[r]for a *title* || *he* gan hym for to borwe, 488.
Vs from *visible* || and *invisyble* soon, 8229.
Ne I nyl not *raided* || *as* for to greuen here, 4484.

Note 1.—A remarkable line is 7186: *Charitable / estailyche / lusty and fre* (see the variants given in § 146, I).
Note 2.—In 3031 C, for *merâkle* || I, read *meruaide* || I.

That to myn hertiis *botme* (om. † A) || *it* is i-sounded, 1620 B (boteme it is foudit † C).
And nere it that I *wilne* || *as* now tabregge, 3137.
Into a *chambre* || and fond how that he lay, 1641. Cf. 5394 (†).
Into the grete *chambre* || *and* that yn hye, 2797. Cf. 5016.
And to the *chambre* || *here* (the C) wey than (om. C) han thei nomen,
6877.

Right as oure first[e] *lettre* || *is* now an a, 171.
And seyde *lettre* || *a* blysful destene, 2176. Cf. 2232, 7761 (†).
At writynge of this *lettre* || *I* was on lyue, 7732. Cf. 2146, 2178.

Note 3.—In 2091 the sense seems to make *A lettre* || *in which* I *wolde here tellen* [n] how imperative in preference to *A lettre* in which || I. So in 7963 :
*Yours lettre* || and *how* that ye requeren me. Cf.
The *poudre* in which myn herte ybrend shal lorne, 6672.

In feith youre *ordre* || *is* ruled in good wyse, 336.
For pity of myn *aspre* || *and* cruel peyne, 5509.

Note 4.—In That called was *Cassandre ek al aboute*, 7814, *ek* is by no means a secure reading. In 2314 the position of the caesura is dubious:
*Of aspre upon a quysshon gold ybete.*

Ye may the *lettre* || at ese of herte abyde, 6013.
And gan to *motre* || *I* not what trewe[n]ly (-ely BC), 1626.
And if that yow *remembre* || *I* am Calkas, 4735.
I shal wel *suffre* || *unto* the tenthe day, 6260.
For *euere, neuer, leuere, delyuere*, see under II., below.
II. -ene, -ere. (Some of the words under this heading are here considered rather because they are spelled -ere in good MSS. than because they have any right to both e's.) Variations in spelling are seldom recorded.

It was an heuene || upon hym for to se, 1722. Cf. 4093 (A †).
Thou hast in heuene || ybrought (brought C) my soule at reste, 4441.
It was an heuene || his wordes for to here, 4584.
And seyde he hadde a feuer || and ferd (ferde al C) amys, 491.
Sey that thi (om. C) feuer || is wont the for (om. C) to take, 2605.
As of a feuere || or othere gret(e) syknesse, 4055. For the spelling of the word (which rhymes with keuere inf.), see § 18.

Forwhi to eueri louere || I me excuse, 1097.
But as a dredful louere || he seyde this, 2130 (louere || seyde he C).
That hadde I leuere || vnwyst for sorwe dye, 2594. (Or, vnwyst ||.)
Me were leuere || a thousand fold to dye, 3416. See § 64.

Amonges alle these othere || in general, 893.
Here to delkyuere || I holden haue my pes, 4762.
He spak and called euere || yn his compleynte, 541 (euere he callyd / C).
(Or,—called ||?)

I who seygh euere || a wysman faren so, 5749. (Or,—wysman ||.)
Ne herd I neuere || and what that was his mone, 1643. Cf. 1522, 2954 (neuere || how), 4375, 4763 (?).

I may not slepe neuere || a Mayes morwe, 2183. Cf. 2623, 6243, 6317 (?), 7198.

They spaken || but they bente neuere || his bowe, 1946.

III. -el, -en, -er. (For bettre, see L ; for feuer, feuere, see II.)
But tho bygan a lytel || his herte vnswelle, 6577 (his herte a lite B).
For goddes speken || in amphibologies, 6068.

For thei proceden (-e B, -yn C) || of thi malencolye, 6723.
And thus thei (om. C) wolden (-e BC) || han brought hem self a lofte, 915.

For what to speken (-e B, spek C) || and what to holden inne, 387.
Or nyl not heren || or trowen how it ys(se), 1013 (here / B, heryn C).
And gan to casten (caste B) || and rollen vp and down, 1744.
Slal I not lowen (-e B) || in cas yf that me lyst (l. leste), 1843.
Lat no wight ryse (rise B) || and heren of oure speche, 3598 (Let hem not ryasyn and heryn oure speche C).

As for to lokken (looke B, loke C) || upon an old romaunce, 3822.
And thus shall Troye turnen (torne B, turne C) || in (to B, tyl C) asshen dede, 4781.
Ne koude he sen her laughen (-e B) || or make (-en B) ioye, 7144
(hyre se lauȝhe ne make C).
For which she may yet (sit may C) holden (-e BC) || al here byheste,
7554.
Who shal now trowen (-e BC) || on any other (I. othes with BC) mo,
7626.
And art now fallen (-e BC) || yn som deucoioun, 555.
Til crowes feet ben growen (grow B) || vnder youre eye, 1488 (hem
waxen for ben growen C).
Thanne yf I ne hadde spoken (speke C) || as grace was, 5895.
Criseyde comen \ and therwith ban he synge, 6867.
To bere the wel to morwe (-w C) || and al is wonne, 2583. Cf. 3690 (?).
He straught a morwe || vnlo his nece wente, 3394. Cf. 7555.
Graulted on the morwe || at his requeste, 7312.
That neuere was yn sorwe || or (or in C) som distresse, 641. Cf. 530 B
(right reading), 3932, 4527, 5171, 5541, 6540, 7405.
So lef this sorwe || or platly he wol deye, 5586. Cf. 1, 5743, 6821,
6895, 6921, 7012, 8107.
He was no narwe (harde C) || ymaked (ymasked B, imaskid C) and
yknet, 4576.
Gan hym salwe (salue B, seluyn † C) || and womanly to pleye, 2753.
Saue a pilwe (-wo B, pilowe D, pilowe G) || I (om. C) fynde nought
(nouȝte elles G) tenbrace (to embrase C, to enbrace D, to embrace
G), 6587. Read probably pillow || rather than pilwe || (which
makes the verse 9-syl.).
V. -y, -ye:
Wher is my lady || vnto (to B) hire folk seyde he, 1164 (C cut out).
This knoweth many || a wys and worthi wyght, 1265.
That Ector with [ful] (ful B) many || a bold baroun, 4695 (C cut out.)
Thourgh girt with many || a (om. BC) wyd and blody wounde, 5289.
Ye god wot and fro many || a worthi knyght, 6696 (C has so hath for fro).
I shal therof as fully (ful BC) || excuse (-en Cp.) me, 3652. Fully is probably right.

Note.—Casura has been assumed between many and a in 1265, 4695, 5289, 6696, with some hesitation.

By sort and by augurye || ek trewely (trewly B), 4778.
In consistorie || among the Grekes soone, 4727 (C cut out).
For which the grete furye || of his penaunce, 6091. Cf. 4915 BC.
In furye || as doth he Ixion || in helle, 6575 (Δλλω C).
And god Mercurye || of me now woful wrecche, 6684.
Be necessarie || al seme it not therby, 5682 (C cut out). Necessaire is also possible (see § 51).

For that I tarye || is al for wykked speche, 7973.

Here may be put the interesting verse:
In to the gardyn go we || and ye shal here, 2199.

VERSES LACKING THE UNACCENTED PART OF THE FIRST FOOT
(‘‘9-SYLLABLE VERSES’’).

§ 146. The occurrence in Chaucer of heroic verses lacking the unaccented part (the senkung) of the first foot can no longer be doubted.

Such verses may be conventionally called ‘‘nine-syllable verses’’ even when, from ending in a feminine rhyme, they actually contain ten syllables. The material here collected is arranged in four lists.

List I. (meant to be exhaustive) contains those verses of the Troilus which are either certainly nine-syllable verses or which must at least be seriously reckoned with before being otherwise scanned. Some of the verses in I. may easily be emended so as to run regularly, and in some of these a variant reading actually anticipates the emendation; but it seemed better to include in I. a few verses that might have been put in II. than to run the risk of excluding any which might with an appearance of reason claim a place in the list. Under the heading 16 are collected a number of verses which (in MS. A) might be scanned as of nine syllables, but may better be scanned as of ten.

List II. contains verses which in A must be read as nine-syllable verses, but which are easily corrected by a comparison of MSS.
List III. contains a number of verses in which A is restored to order by the insertion of a single letter (or syllable) required or justifiable by grammar or usage. Some other MS. or MSS. will usually be found to furnish the required form. At the end of this list are given references for a number of similar lines from other MSS.

List IV. contains specimens of lines absolutely unmetrical in A, but curable in the same manner as the lines in III.

For the lines quoted at length in these four lists, ABCDG have been used throughout, and all the significant Cp. and John’s variants recorded in Mr. Austin’s collation have been registered. When no note is made of the reading of Cp. or John’s, it is to be inferred that Mr. Austin records no such variants.

I.

For (ffor why D) it were (were here C) a long (-e B) disgression (discrecioun BG, disgrexioun C, digressioun D), 143 A. Mr. Austin notes the reading of Harl. 2392 (For whi it were of to long discuscioun), but gives no other variants. The reading of either C or D makes a normal verse: here may have been accidentally dropped on account of its similarity to the preceding word were. For it vèrè || a lòng, with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic were (§ 135, ε) is very unlikely.

Of this kynges some of which I tolde, 261 ABCG. D reads As of, etc. Shewed (Schewed C) wel that men myght (myʒtyn C) yn here gesse, 286 ABG (She † shewyd D).

First to hide (-en BCp., -yn C) his desir in (al in D) muwe, 381 (First he hid his desire in mewe G; in the margin of G, in another hand, are the words “al for to hide,” a reading which, with the change of hide to hiden, would make the verse regular).

That the (al the D) Grekes as the (om. G) deth hym dredde, 483 (That the grekys hym as of the deth dredde C; Harl. 2392 seems to read aH for the before Grekes: no other note in Austin).

That the hote fyr of loue hym brende (for brende G), 490 (stanza om. in D).

I wolę partyn with the al thyn peyne, 589 ABCDG.
Loue ayens the (om. C) which (weche G) who-so defendeth, 603. Louë would cause hiatus: besides, this word is usually monosyllabic (§ 8).

I that haue yn loue so ofte assayed (asaied G, asayde B), 646.
Dorstestow (Dorestow G, Trist thow D) that I telle (tolde BCp.
John's, told hyre C, told it D, tolde it G) in hire eere, 767.
Probably read tolde it (or hire).
Twenty wynter that (or that G) his lady wyste (wist D, not† wyst C), 811.
Of (And of CDE) that word toke (took Cp. John's) hede (hed CDG)
Pandarus, 820. And of is perhaps best.
Were it for my suster al thi sorwe, 860 ABCDG.
Next (-e B) the foule (foul D) netle rough and thikke, 941.
Alderfirst (Aldirfirst Cp. John's) his purpos for to wynne, 1062 ABDG
(C cut out).
Of the sege (segee B) of thebes while (whil BD) hem lest, 1169 AG
(C cut out).
How (How that G) the bishop (bysshope G) as the bok kan (gan
dG) telle (telleth for can telle C), 1189. G makes the measure normal.
Now (And Cp.) good (goode BG, myn C, my good D John's Harl.
2392) em for goddes loue I prey, 1394. Read goodē em (with
hiatus) or my goode em.
Ther ayenis (aȝeyn B, aȝen C, ayens D, aȝens G, aȝeins Cp.) answere
I thus anoon, 1454.
For his loue which (-e B, wheche G, om. D) that vs bothe made (mode
B), 1585 (CD have loue of god instead of his loue). If ten Brink's
"lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the same may be read Fôr his lôüé ||
which thât, etc.; but loue is seldom a dissyllable (§ 8).
Who sey euere (-er D) or this so (or this euere so C) dul a man, 1633
ABG. If ten Brink's "lyrical cæsura" be allowed, the verse may be read Whô sey ēuer || or thîs, etc. (for ēuer before a vowel,
see § 90).
And (ȝe CD, A E) lord (-E) he (she D, how he C, as he G, so be E)
was glad and wel bygon, 1682. No doubt a word has dropped out in the best MSS. between lord and he. Cp. John's appear
to agree with A.
Made loue withinne (within D) hire (her hert D) for to myne, 1762
ABCG. With lyrical cæsura and dissyllabic lôüé (see last example
but one), the verse might run Mûlé (or Mâked) lôüé || withinne
hîre, etc. The reading of D (which would make the verse normal
if herte be substituted for hert) lacks authority.
I am one (oon BCP., on CG) the (of the C) fairest (fayreste BC) out of
(ought of G, with-outyn D) drede, 1831. The reading of C looks
like a corruption in the interest either of modesty or the more usual
Observations on the Language

Observations on the Language [§ 146.

Idiom, but may be right: at any rate, it decidedly helps the metre. Fayresté does not help much.

Fro the skarmuch (scarmich B, charmys C, scarmysshe D, scarmuch G) of the whiche I tolde, 2019. Fro the skarmuch [e] || of the, etc., would be highly improbable and no great improvement.

Sire (Sir B) my nece wole (wol B, wele C, wel G) do wel by the, 2012. In spite of the fact that the vocative sire is usually monosyllabic in Chaucer, we should doubtless read siré here and save the verse.

Of (Ry3t of C, Right of D) myn owene (own B, owne D) hond (-e BD) write here (hire C, her D) right (om. D) now (how D), 2090 AG. Perhaps Right should be restored (cf. 2140).

Were his (his BDG) nayles poiyned (-ede C, -es B) neuero so sharpe, 2119.

Of (Ryjt of C, Right of D) here (hire BC Cp., her D, hir G) hond (-e B) and yf that (om. D) thow nylt non, 2140. If right be rejected, here may perhaps be regarded as a dissyllable (see § 135, I.). As to right, cf. 2090.

He song as who seyth (seith BDG, seth C) sumwhat (se what G) I brynge, 2394. Seyeth will hardly do. One is tempted to combine G with the other MSS. and read: He song as who seyth se sumwhat I brynge.

If (if it C, If it D) youre (jour D) wille (wil D) be (were D) as I yow preyde, 2687 ABG. Youré is unlikely (§ 74). The insertion of it (with CD) seems best.

Pleynly (-lich B, -liche GCp.) al (om. D) at ones they (al thei D) here (her D) hyghten (behighten E), 2708. Hardly Pleynliché àl, etc., with hiatus?

Dred[es]les (Dredeles BCCp., And dredles E) it clere was (eler was C, was clere D) in the wynd, 3368 AG. And dred[es]les, which would make the verse normal, has only the indifferent authority of E.

With a (om. G) certayn of here (her D, hir G, hire Cp.) owene (own B, owne D) men, 3438. Heré oweñé seems highly improbable (see § 74).

Heren noyse of reynes (rayn D, reyn G, reyne Cp.) nor of thondre, 3504 ABC. Hèren noyśe || of reynes, with lyric cæsura and hiatus, does not commend itself as likely.

Shul (Shal B, Schal C, Shul DG) youre wommen slepen wel and softe, 3509. Youré is improbable (§ 74). Perhaps we should read shullen (§ 123, VII.)
Reson wil (wol B, wle C, wyl D, wole G) not that I speke of (on C) shep (slep BG, slepe CD), 4250. No note in Mr. Austin’s collation, though it seems incredible that Cp. John’s have the absurd shep of A. One might conceivably scan: Reson wil not that I || spēken of slep.

Thonkynge (Touchinge D, Thankyng G) loue he (she BCp.) so wel here (hir D) bysette, 4394. Thonkynge lovē || he sō wel, etc., with lyric cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic loue, is not probable. Thonkynge lovē is perhaps possible, but -ynge in the interior of the verse is highly suspicious, whether in noun or participle (§§ 10, 120, III).

With the shete and wax for shame al (om. D) red, 4412 ABCG. Lyrical cæsura would give With the shētē || and wāx, etc.

At whiche (At which B, Atte which D, Atte whiche G) day was taken Antenor, 4712 (C cut out). An unbearable verse if scanned with nine syllables. Taking a hint from DG may we perhaps read Atte for (At the) whiche day?

Which that drawnen (drawn B) forth the sonnes char (-e BDG), 4546. Loue hym made (made hym G) al (alle G) prest to don hyre byde, 4824 ABCD. Louē hym is very doubtful.

Ector (H[ec]tor D) which (-e G, with C) that wel (-e BDG) the Grekis herde, 4838.

Of (O C) this (thilke D, ye ilke C) woful soule that thus crieth, 4979 ABG. Perhaps we should read Of thilke; ye ilke (C) is no doubt due to confusion between y and ĭ.

I that leuede (hauede C, leued D, loued G) yn lust (loue C) and in plesaunce, 5155 (stanza not in Cp.). With lyrical cæsura this would run I that leuede || yn lūst, etc.

Helpeth hardy man (men C) to (vnto B) his emprise, 5263 ADG.

Wende (-en BG) that she wepte and syked (sy3ede C) sore, 5378.

By which (whiche D, swiche G) reson (resoun Cp.) men may wel y-se (I se John’s), 5710 AB (not in C).

Of here (hire B, hir G, om. D) teris and the herte vnswelie (vnsweyll D, gan vnswelle G), 5808. Shall we read herē (here possessive plural, see § 74)† Emendation (with the help of G) is easy: Of teris and the (or here) herte gan vnswelie.

And ther (there CG) lat (lete D) vs spoken of oure wo, 5906 AB. Therē seems to be inevitable: the word is emphatic (§§ 89, 135, ɳ).

May ye not (nouȝte G, not than C) ten (x D) dayes thanne (then G, om CD) abyde, 5990 AB. Read mowen for may (§ 123, VIII.)†
Of vs sely Troians (Troian D, Troilus † C) but yf routhe (3e roughte † G), 6152 AB.

Thries (Thrieȝ Cp.) hadde (had DG) al (alle BD, aH G) with his (hise Cp., hir John’s) bemes clere (so ABG Cp. Durham, shene D Selden, cleene John’s, clene Phillipps), 6372 (C cut out). Thriës h̄ādde gap with, with lyrical caesura and hiatus, is unlikely. It is barely possible that alle (plural, referring to snowes in the next line) is right, and that we may read Thriës hade alȳle gap with his, etc.

Passyng (Passing D) al (alle G) the valey (valaye B) fer (ferre G) withoute, 6430 AC.

Thaqueyntaunce (The aqueyntau[n]se C, The acquentauns D, The acquentaunce G) of these (this BC, thes D) Troians (Troyans B, Troylus † C, Troiaunes D) to (for to C) chaunge, 6485. Though C alone has for to chaunge, yet that seems to be the correct reading.

Hath his lady gon (gone D, forgon C, gone 3ee G) a fourtenyght, 6697 AB.

Go (So D) we pleye (pley CD) vs in som (somme DG) lusty rowte, 6765 AB. With lyrical caesura we might scan Gò ve pleyēn gap vs in, but it will not do to separate the reflexive us from its verb.

Charitable (Scharite † able C) estatlyche (statlyche C, estalich † D, estateliche G) lusty (lyȝt lusti C) and (om. DCp. John’s) fre, 7186 AB. With lyrical caesura the line might run: Ĥaritâblē gap estâlîc(e) lusty and (or om. and) fre: charitâblē estalîc(ye) would not be a real hiatus. It satisfies the ear quite as well, however, to elide -e in charitable and make the caesura after estatlyche: we have then a pretty sonorous 9-syl. verse.

Tendre (-dry C) herted (herte C) slydyng (-yng CD) of corage, 7188 ABG.

Trew (Trew B) as stel in ech condicion, 7194 ACDG. Hiatus ?

Sholde (-en BGCp. John’s) spille a quarter of a (1 D) tere, 7243 AC. With lyrical caesura the verse might run shōlden spīlēn gap a quârter, etc.

Trustethwel (-e G) and vnderstonedeth me, 7250 ABCD. An easy emendation would be to insert me before wel.

Polymyte (Polymyȝt C, Polymites D) and many a (om. C) man to (al to C) skathe, 7301 ABG. Shall we read Polymytēs gap and ?

Cf. Polymytēs, 7851 f, rhyming with Ethyocēs and Thēvēs (§ 139).

Graunted on the morwe (morowe G) at his requeste, 7312 ABCD.

For to speke (-en BCp., -yn John’s) with hym at the lest (atte leste BG), 7313 ACD.
For to sen (se CD, sene G) yow in aduersite, 7446 AB.
Forthere (Forther B, Further D, Ferther G) than (thanne B) this (the BCDG) story (storie B) wol (wele C) deuyse, 7457.
I comende hire wydsom (witte D) by myn hooD, 7514 ABCG.
And that (that that C) Ioues (-ys C, Ioue D) of (hadde of C) his purueyaunce, 7809 ABG.
Is it possible that that that is right?
With that Iouys cf. the well-known that god. Hadde (C) is wrong.
Of the (a G) stronge (strong Cp.) bor with (with his C) tuskes (tuschhis C) stoute, 7817 ABD.
Wrak (Venged D, Wroughte G) here in a wonder cruwel wyse, 7831 ABC.
Thorugh (Thorwgh B, Thurgh D, Thoroughe G, Of C) his (om. D, hire † C) moder wol I yow (om. GCp.) not (naught Cp.) telle, 7846.
Of his loue I haue seyd (scide G) as (that D) I kan, 8132 AB. Of his lôuë || hauë, etc., with lyrical cæsura, hiatus, and dissyllabic here, is very improbable.

I b.

Some lines in A that might perhaps be scanned as of nine syllables may better be scanned as of ten.

But the Trojan (troyan BCG, troyanys D) gestes as they felle, 145. For Trojan, see §§ 59, b, 70.

Al this Pandarë || yn his herte (-t D) thoughte, 1063. Pandare is the reading of ABDEGCp. John's Phillipps; Durh. has Pandar; Harl. 2392 has Al this tho Pandare in herte thoht; cut out in C. Hiatus may be avoided by reading Pandarus (cf. §§ 126, 139). Cf. Pândarë || I, 1044, where we may read Pândarûs || I.

Cryseyde (Criseyda B, Cresseide C, Cresseide G, Cryseyd anon D) gan al his (the D) chere aspien, 1734. Read Crisèyde, or rather Crisèyde (§ 140); cf. 2509, 2729, below.

Al (As D) wolde (wold BD) I that noon (no man CD) wyster (weste C, wist DG) of this thought, 1830. Unless no man be preferred to noon, read, with hiatus, Al wolde I that noon wyste of, etc. (rather than woldë I and wyste of) (cf. § 126).

Criseyda (Criseyde B, Crisseyde C, Cresseide G, Of Cryseyd D) my
Observations on the Language

frend he seyde (seyd D) yis, 2509. Mr. Austin's notes the reading of E: Criseide my frende pandare he seid sir yis, but gives no other note on the line. Read Criseyda and cf. 1734 above, 2729 below.

So heynous (haynous DG) that men myghte (might D, myght G) on it spete, 2702 ABC. Read, of course, heynous (§ 140).

Criseyda (Crisseide C, Criseide D, Creseide G) my lady that is here, 2729 AB. Read Criseyda, and cf. 1734, 2509 above.

Now thannë (than B, om. DG) thus (this D) quod she I wolde (wold D) hym preye, 2966.

So secret (secrete BD, discreet G) and of (in D) swych (such DG) obeysaunce (obseruaunce D), 3320. Read secret and obeysaunce (§ 140).

For myne (my E) wordes here and every part, 4173 (stanza om. in DG). Read perhaps mynë (§ 74).

Love that with an (a E) holsom (holesome E) alliaunce, 4588 ABCG (not in D).

Loue that knetteth (endytyth C, kennyth E) lawe (law E) of (om. E, and BCp.) companye, 4590.

Nought (Nouȝte G) rought (rouȝte CG) I wheder (whidere B, whider G, whedirwardes D, whedyr that C) thow woldest (wilt D) me (om. D) stere, 4944. The readings of C and D lack authority. And perhaps be read: Nought rought I wheder thow || woldest me stere, (cf. ten Brink's remark on the separation of subject from verb by caesura, § 313), or, with hiatus and with syncope of -est in woldest:

Nought rought[ë] I || wheder thow woldest me stere.

Euery thing (thynge B, thinge G) that souned into badde (harde † G), 6338 AD (C cut out).

In a vessel that men clepeth (clepe D, callyn C) an (om. C) vrne, 6674. One has little temptation to read vèssel and clepeth.

Here nedede (neded BDG, nedit C) no (none CG Cp., non John's) teris for to borwe, 7089. As a 9-syl. line, the verse would be unendurable, and nonë is surely not Chaucerian; it is probably best to read nèdèden (plural influenced by teris, which, indeed, may even be regarded as the subject, for to borwe serving as a sort of complement). Cf. § 132.

Yong fresche (fresshe BG, frosch C, freisshe D) strong and (om. C) hardy (om. C) as (as a D) lyon, 7193. Read fresshë, by-form of fressh (§ 49), though this is the only case in which the form occurs in the Troilus.

I fynde ek (-e G) in storyes (storyies C, the stories B) ellys (eH C)
where, 7407. An impossible 9-syl. verse: read fyndĕ ek (with hiatus) or the storyes (with B).

How myght (myȝte CG) I (om. B) than (thanne C, then G) do (don BC Cp. John’s, done G) quod Troylus, 7652 AD. Read thanne don || quod (§ 88).

Euerych (-y CD, -ich G) ioye or (om. D) ese (crese D) in (is in C, in to D) his contrarye, 7742 A.

Tydeus sone that doun (-e DG) descended is, 7877. Read Tylĕūs (§ 141).

Come (Com B) I wole (wolde C, wil D) but yet in swich disioynt, 7981.

In this list are included a number of verses in which A has nine syllables, but which are easily corrected by comparison of MSS.

For loue of the whan thou torneست ofte, 196 ADG. BCCp. have ful before ofte.

Or hastow remors of conscience, 554 A. BCDG have som before remors. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 has som, but registers no other variants in this line.

If thei (men D John’s) ferd (-e BGCp., seide John's) yn (with D) loue as men don here, 1124 (C cut out). BDGCp. John’s have that after ſ, which restores the metre.

Ywys vnclē quod she grant mercy, 1324 ABG. CD have myn before vnclē. Mr. Austin notes that Harl. 2392 and Harl. 4912 have myn, but registers no other variants in this verse.

In which ye may se youre face a morwe, 1490 ABCD. GCp. John’s read which (wheche G) that for which.

Eke I knowe of long (-e BDG) tyme agon, 1807. Read And ek: BCD Cp. John’s have the And.

Chese (And chee BECp., And sches C, And ches John’s, And these † G) if thow wolt synge or (om. C) daunce (daunce synge G) or lepe, 2040. And ches is of course right.

Worth (-e C, Lepe E, worth thow BCp., worthe thou D, wurthe thou G) yp on a courser right a non, 2096. Worth thow is of course right.

But wel wot I (I wot C) yow (thow BG, thou D, that thow C) art now (om. D) yn (in a D) drede, 2589.

And hast lasse (the lesse D, the lasse GCp. John’s) nede to (om. BD,
the to C) countrefete, 2617. Read the lasse ned e to (or, possibly omit to).
He rong hem a (hem oute a ECp., hem out a G John's, hym oute a B) proces lyk a belle, 2700 AC (He rong out the processe as a belle D).
And lord so (so that BG Cp. John's, how that C, so as D) his herte gan to quappe, 2899.
And to (And I to CEG, And y to D) han (have DG) right as yow lyst comfort, 2978 AB. Mr. Austin notes the reading of E, but registers no other variants in this line.
And what mischaunce (myschauns C, mischef yet D) in this world (-e B) yet (ther D, yet ther BCp., yet ther John's, yet † er G) is (this † G), 3132. Read yet ther is.
How this (the Cp., is this CDE John's) candele in the (this G) straw (-e E) is (om. CDE Jn's.) falle (yfaH D, I-falle John's, fall E), 3701.
The right reading is: How is this candel in the straw yfalle.
That he cam (come C) there (ther BG) and that (that that Cp.) he was born, 3915. ABCDG all omit one of the that's and Cp. seems to be the only MS. that has both of them; yet both are needed by the construction as well as by the metre.
So thenk (thynkith C, thinketh DE, thyng G, thenk that B, thenk that Cp.) thowgh (om. C) that I vnworthi be, 4128. Thenk that though that is probably right.
Were (3t were C, 3it were D) it so that I wist (wiste BG, woste C) outrely (outerly B, outerely C, vttrly D, entirely G), 4328. Either 3et were or wistë (with hiatus).
Who-so seth yow knoweth (knowe C) yow ful lite, 4410. BDGCp.
John's have O before who-so (D reads: O ho seeth you knoweth you but a lite).
For wistow (wistist thou C, wysterstow Cp. John's, wist thou D) myn herte (hert D) wel Pandare, 4486 ABG. Wististow is of course right.
Of here (his D) comynge (-yng DG) and (and ek CD, and eke G) of his (here D) also, 4517 AB.
That (They Jn's.) maden (makked eN B, makeden Cp. John's, madyn CD) the (alle the C, al the D) walles (waH C) of the toun, 4783 AG. Makkeden is doubtless right; al seems to be a scribe's insertion to make metre.
In o (oone D) thyng (-e B) were and (and in BCDGCp. John's) noon (none G) other wyght, 5070.
Nay (Nay nay D Harl. 2392) god wot (woote B, wote DG) in CE
John's Harl. 4912 the line begins Nay Pandarus instead of Nay god wot) nought (not C, south D, noûte G) worth (worthi B) is al thi (this CD Harl. 2392) red, 5160. Nay nay god wot seems to be right. Cp. omits the stanza.

Quod (Quod tho BG) the thridde (thrid G) I hope ywys (iwisse I hope D) that she, 5353 (C reads The threde answerede I, etc.).

Right a[s] (That right as BDCp. John's, That riûte as G) when I wot ther is a thing, 5735 A (C cut.out).

Com Pandare (Pandarus C, Pandar G) and (in and BGCp. John's) seyde as ye may here, 5747.

For myn honour yn swych (suche D, swiche G) auentaure, 5991 AC. BGCp. John's Harl. 2392 have an after swych.

For (For when B, For whan DG, ffor whan Cp. ffor when John's) he saugh (saught John's) that she ne myghte (-t BD John's) dwelle, 6361 (C cut out).

Sane a pilwe (pilwo B, pillowe D, pilowe G) I (om. C) fyûde nought (not C, nauût elles G) tenbrace (to embrace C, to embrace D, to embrace G), 6587. Read pillow rather than pilwe (cf. § 145, IV.).

For tendresse (tendrenesse B John's, tendirnesse C, tendarneesse Cp., tenderesse G, the tendirnesse D) how (-e G) shal she this (ek C, eke D) sustene, 6605.

That vnnethe (wel vnneth B, wel onethe C, weft vnnethe D, wole vnnethe G) it (vs D) don shal (schal don C, done shal DG) vs (om. D) duresse, 6762.

As seyden bothe the (om. C) meste and (and ek BC, and eke DG) the (there C) leste, 6803.

Shal (Ne shal BD, Ne schalle G, He schal C) he (om. C) neuere thryue (-yn C, -en Cp. John's) out of drede, 7122.

How he may best with short (shortest RDG John's Harl. 2392, schort C) taryinge, 7137. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.

As konnyng (-e B) as (and as BCp. John's) parfit (-e BG, thorfit C, perfite D) and as kynde, 7333.

So wel (-e G) for hym self he (he for hym self BCp. John's, he for hym seluen G) spak (-e G) and seyde, 7396 ACD. He for hym seluen is no doubt right.

For she sory (so sory CDGCp. John's) was for (om. B) here vntrouthe, 7461.

But why (om. D) lest (lest that Cp. John's, liste that B, lest that D), this lettre founden were, 7965. Intolerable as a 9-syl. verse.
Observations on the Language

Other lines of a similar character, when the correction is certain on comparison of MSS., are the following (in some cases the verse begins with a word or syllable that we should expect to have no accent or ictus; these instances are marked by old-style verse numbers): 652, 690, 764, 1091, 1124, 1372, 1457, 1480, 1923, 1932, 2044, 2087, 2138, 2150, 2153, 2194, 2575, 2902, 3082, 3123, 3193, 3405, 3431, 3546, 3564, 3655, 3789, 3864, 4045, 4111, 4160, 4522, 4695, 4842, 5182, 5314, 5329, 5341, 5363, 5403, 5840, 6053, 6384, 6878, 7519, 7843, 7865, 7978, 8098; cf. 7368.

III.

In some lines the insertion of a single letter (usually weak -e or -e- justified or required by grammar or usage) restores a normal line.
That ought[e] (aughte C, oughte John's, owghte Cp.) wel ben (wel to ben CG, be wele D) oure opynyoun, 710.
Stond fast[e] (faste CCp.) for to good part (-e Cp.) hastow rowed, 962.
For dreed[ë]les (dredeles CCp. John's) me were leuere (lever to DG) dye (dethe † C), 1027. Cf. 1270, 3844, 4738, 5940, 6156, 7245, 8103, 8118.
Irought[e] (roughte BCp. John's, rou3te C, roght D) nought though that (om. C) she stode and herde, 1032.
To good[e] (goode BC) mot it turne of yow I mette, 1175 (see § 14).
In whom that (om. G) all[le] (alle Cp., every DE), vertu lyst abounde, 1244 (C †). Allë is surely right, see § 80, III. (cf. especially 1848, 1918, 1930, 6311).
Thus gilt[e]les (giltelies BCG) than haue ye fysshed faire, 1413. Cf. 7447.
O (B inserts thou above the line) cruell god o dispitou[s]e (dispitouse B, dispituse C, dispetous G) Marte, 1520.
Ye dout[e]les (douteles CG, douteles Cp., trewel B) quod she myn vnclle dere, 1579 AD.
She thought[e] (thou3te C) wel (ek C, erst D) that (this C) Troylus persone, 1786.
Be drynk[e]les (drynkeles CCp., drenkynles B) for alwey as I gesse, 1803.
Men moste[n] (miste C, must D, most G) axe (axen C, ask D) of (at BCGCp.) seyntes if it is, 1979.
Quod Pandarus loke (loke B, loke DG, loke that C), alwey ye (alwey C) fynde, 2194. And sene (sente Cp., sent to D) you this lettre here by me, 2208. Out of disdaym (desdayns B, disdeynous D, disdaynes GCp., desaignees John’s) prison but a lyte, 2302. Al softely (softely BCD) and thiderwardes (thiderward BCCp., thidirward D) gan (gan he D) bende, 2335. Yct of (for E) hym self (my selfe E) no thyng (-e B) nold I (ne wolde I BCp.) recche (jit of him self; it wolde I no thyng rech C, it of him self wolde I nothyng recche G, D = A with wold for nold), 2558. The line is restored by reading either hym seluen or ne wolde I. And shortly made (makes B, mad C, made D, maked GCp. John’s) eche (om. G) of (om. G) hem his fo, 2567. Read maked for made. Tel me (Telle G, Tel me CD) which (om. G) thow wylt qf euerychone, 3254. Read either tellé (which is not so common as tel, see § 115) or tel me. So helpeth BEGCp., helpyth C, helpeth D to this werk that is bygonne, 3577. With (which † B) pete (pictie BCP., pete C) so wel repressed is, 3875. As she that iust (inste BCD) cause hadde hym to tryste, 4069. Nought (Now C, Noo E) sych (suche B, such C, suche E) sorwful (sorful C, sorrowful E) sykes as men make, 4203 (wanting in DG). God myght (myghte B, myyte C, mygt D, myght G) not a (oo G, o G) poynyt my (of my D) ioyes eche, 4351. Why nylt (nylte G) thi (thyn C, the John’s, thou D) self (seluen BG John’s, selue C, om. D) helpen (helpe to D, help to John’s) don (doone D, to G) redresse, 5190. Read thi seluen (stanza om. in Cp.). Cf. 5253. And namely (namely BGD, namelich C) syn (sythe C, sithe D) ye two (ye bothe tuo D) ben al oon, 5254. Cf. 6220. Graunt (e BG) mercy (mercie G) good (goode BCp., god DG, iwis goode C) myyn (myne DG) ywis (om. C) quod she, 6322. Fro then forth (tennes forth B, thennes forth Cp. John’s, thennes riht forth G) he rideth vp and down, 6924. For similar cases cf. 3009, 6970, 7016, 7034, 7248, 7258, 8080; see also § 91, a. v. hennes, thennes, whennes. Lord whe (whether BCG, whethir D) yet thou thenke (thow thy[n]ke 3et B, thou thynke 3it C, thou thinkist yet D, thou 3itt
thenke G) vpon (on CG) Crisseyde, 7098. For whether wher, see § 138, 6.

Shal knot[le]es (knotteles C, knottles D) thorugh (thour C,oute D, thoroughge G) out (oute G, of D, om. C) here (hir DG) herte slyde (glyde C, glide D), 7132.

Hardy testyf (testis B, testy D) strong (-e DG) and (om. D) che-v[al]e]rous (chiualrus B, chyualrous DG), 7165.

He shal no terme fynd[en] (fyden BG, fynde C, finde D) out of drede, 7453.

Hym self (seluen B, selue C) lyk (-e BD) a pylgrym (pilgryme D) to degyse (disgise C, disguise D, desgise Cp.), 7940 (not in G). Read hym seluen.

The which[e] (whiche CDG) cote (cote armur D) as telleth Lollius, 8016. Cf. 8187.

And shuld[en] (sholden BCp. John’s, shulden E) al oure herte on heuene caste, 8188 (not in D).

For other examples (some harsh enough) see 1797, 2041, 3323, 4080, 4646, 5018, 5226, 5248, 6285, 6383, 6535, 6595, 6930, 7018, 7153, 7171, 7710, 7854, 8100.

Of instances in which this or that MS. (not A) has a verse that might, in its present condition, be scanned (though sometimes very harshly) as of nine syllables, but that is easily corrected by a comparison of MSS., the following will serve as examples. The necessary correction is often very slight, consisting sometimes merely in a single final -e. The list is not meant to be exhaustive. 78 C, 92 B, 93 C, 128 C, 145 BC, 147 CD, 157 B, 292 CD, 338 C, 411 BCD, 454 B, 498 B, 502 C, 623 C, 761 C, 968 BC, 1276 C, 1277 CD, 1453 B, 1473 BD, 1668 C, 1961 C, 2035 C, 2204 CD, 2206 C, 2215 C, 2401 CD, 2417 B, 2464 C, 2535 CD, 2580 B, 2595 C, 2791 CD, 2826 B, 3239 BD, 3311 CD, 3349 BD, 3836 CD, 4624 C, 5148 C, 5288 C, 5510 C, 5763 C, 6544 C, 6694 C, 6886 C, 6935 C, 6949 C, 7135 C, 7330 C, 7339 C, 7346 C, 7423 C, 7687 B, 7842 C, 7895 C, 7917 C.—Particularly interesting is: Wherfore (-for BD, Wherefore C) my (A John’s have my, BCDG omit it) lord (-e G) if my (om. Cp.) seruyse or I, 430, in which A and John’s alone show both my’s.

IV.

A large number of lines absolutely unmetrical as they stand in A, and quite incapable of being read as verses of nine syllables, admit
of the simple cure just mentioned: the addition or insertion of a single letter (or two letters), usually e (final or interior), required or allowed by grammar or usage. Samples are:

This is the right[e] (ryȝte C) lyf that I am inne, 1936.

For Pandarus (-re D) and sought[en] (soughten BGCp. John's, souȝte C, soghtyn D) hym ful faste, 2022.

And don (do on CG, do † down D) thyn hod (-e B) thi nedes sped[de] (spedde BCE) 'be, 2039. Cp. apparently has sped. On the plural participle spedde, see § 68.

Wolde on (vp on CD) the best[e] (beste BCCp.) sounded (sowned BGCp., sowned C, sownyd D) ioly (om. G) harpe (hare † B), 2116.

Read the beste sowned (§ 87); the best ysowned would also be possible.

For whi men seyth impression[e]s (impressyons B, impressiou[n]s C) lyghte, 2323.

Thow shalt gon ouer (to D) nyght and that (om. G) b[e]lyue (belyue C, bylyve E, as blyve D Harl. 2392), 2598. On belyue, blyue, see § 138, 1.

Of thing[es] (thynges BCp., thingis D, thinges G John's) which that folk (-es John's) on wondren (wondre on John's) so, 2874.

Herynge here come and short[e] (schorte C, shorte Cp., for John's) for to syke, 2900.

Nyl I nought swere although he lay[e] softe, 3284. No -e in laye in ABCDG; no note in Austin.

Was euere ylik[e] (yhold B, ilik C, ylyk D, alike G) prest and dyligent, 3327.

And they that lay[en] (layen BCP., lye C, lyen D, leyn G) at the dore withoute, 3587.


Haue ye no care hym lyst[e] (list BG, liste C, lest D) not to slepe, 3908.

Hadde of hym take here thought[e] (thouȝte C) tho no fere, 3986.

Whan she his trowthe and clene entent[e] (entente B, entent clene D) wyste, 4071.

And syn (sithe C, sythe D) thou list myn argument[e]3 (-ment CG, -mentes D) blame (to blame BCDG John's), 5189. Perhaps we should read argument3 and to blame; but argumentes is an unobjectionable form (§ 39, l).

But shortly lest this tales sotth[e] (sothe BCDG) were, 5333.
Observations on the Language

She herd hem ryght as though she then[ne]'s (tennes B, thenes D, thennes GCp. John's) were, 5357 (Sche herde riȝt nouȝt thow sche there were C). (Cf. 6766, 6852.)

Cryseyde ful of sorwful (sorweful C, sorwefuH D, sorowfuH G, sorowful John's) pite (piete Cp.), 5393. Read either sorweful or piete.

Or elles things that purvey[e]d (-ueied BJohn's, -ueid D, -ueide G, -ueyd Cp,) be, 5715 (C cut out).

And thanne (than BD, that G) at (att D, atte G) erst[e] (erste BDCp.) shal we ben (best D) so (om. D) fayn, 5983. (See §§ 54, n. 2, 143.)

Than (Thanne B, There C, Then G) shal (shalle G) no mete or (ne C) drynk[e] (drynke G) come (com B) in me, 5437.

For which Pandare (-dar DG) myght[e] (myȝte CG) not restreyne, 5534.

The gold [y]tressed Phebus heighe on lofte, 6371 (cut out in C). The correct reading must be the gold ytressed Phebus, but the MSS. do not have it: goldtressed is in ABCp. John's (separatim in B), gold tressid in Phillips 8252 Harl. 2392, gold tresses in Selden B 24; D has the diverting lection The Auricomus tressed Phebus, due, of course, to the intrusion of a gloss (Harl. 2392 has the gloss auricomus over the reading gold tressid, and sol over phebus); in the readings of E (goldetressed), Durham (golde tressed), and G (golde dressed), perhaps the lost y- may be discerned.

Whan Diomede on hors[e] (horse CD) gan hym dresse, 6400.

But syn (sithen G) of fyyn[e] (fyne BD, om. G) force I (it † G) mot aryse, 6784.

Whan he was there (ther BD) as (that C) no (om. BG) wight (man CD, nought B, noughte G) myght[e] (myght hym BJohn's, myȝte hym C, might him D, myȝte hym G) here, 6827. Probably (with Furnivall) we should supply hym in A.

The lettres ek that she of old[e] (olde BDG) tyme, 6833. C stops the line at sche, but the corrector has added oftoyne tyme.

Intendestow that we shul here (her D) b[z]leue (belleue CD Harl. 2392. bileue G), 6841.

With soft[e] (softe CG, lofte † D) voys he of his lady dere, 6999.

Conseyued hath myn hertes pet[e]de, 7961 (pete C, piete Cp.). (Not in G.)

To com ayen which (e C) yet (om. C) [ne] (ne BCP. John's) may not be, 7964. C stops the verse with not, and the corrector adds yet be.

Other examples may be seen in 1351, 1838, 2064, 2440, 2469, 2488, 2525, 2667, 2874, 3169, 3194, 3351, 3456, 4089, 4183, 4445, 4451,
§ 146.] of Chaucer's Troilus. 421

4476, 4505, 4709, 4737, 5064, 5188, 5298, 5489, 5560, 5813, 6194.
6543, 6715, 6854, 7011, 7080, 7172, 7175, 7231, 7272, 7308,
7539, 7543, 7566, 7578, 7619, 7726, 7791, 7849, 7884, 8087,
8093.

On the whole matter of "nine-syllable verses," see the excellent
monograph of M. Freudenberger, *Ueber das Fehlen des Auftakts in
Chaucers heroischem Verse*, Erlanger Beiträge, 1889.
ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

p. 2, s.v. hosbonde. On the shortening of o in A.S. -bónda (husbonda, -banda, Chron. 1048), see Manly, p. 2.

p. 2, s.v. stere. The causes of the M.E. confusion of form between A.S. stéora 'gubernator,' and stéor 'gubernaculum,' are doubtless more or less complex; but one of them is perhaps the tendency (which has gone so far in Modern English) to give to the names of implements, etc., the form of nomina agentis (cf. boiler, cultivator, governor, generator, pipe-cleaner, mover, etc., etc.; in America one even hears a dining-car occasionally spoken of as a dinner). Cf. also Manly, p. 3.

p. 3, s.v. tyme. On somtyme, ofte tyme, cf. 133.

p. 3, s.v. wele. The Laȝamon forms are accidentally omitted (L. ab wele, L. a wela, weolla, wella, wel, weole, wsel).

p. 4, s.v. wrecche. For L. wrecche read L*. wrcecche, etc.

p. 5, s.v. blase. For bld>se read bfcese.

p. 6, s.v. myte. On this word see Skeat, Trans. Philol. Soc. for 1888-90, p. 305. I see no evidence that the M.E. word ever replaced the A.S. mite in English. The most that can be said is that it influenced its meaning.

p. 8, wodebynde was put here with considerable hesitation. Both A.S. wudubind, wudebind, and wudebinde occur, apparently as nominatives, in glosses (see Wrt.-W., 137/5, 418/25, 556/39).

p. 9, I feel great doubt whether feldefare and feflofor have anything to do with each other.

p. 10, s.v. ache. Insert the A.S. form æce.

p. 10, s.v. sone. See this article in Studies and Notes in Philology and Literature, published under the Direction of the Modern Language Departments of Harvard University, II, I ff. (on sunu, see p. 7).

p. 14, s.v. lowe. As further instances of lowe, cf. 16, 46, 234, 677, 1762, 3004, 3359, 3622, 3851 Æ, 4158, 4830, 5084, 5761, 6530, 7443 (old-style figures indicate that the caesura follows low).

p. 15, s.v. shame. Insert L*. scome, scome, scame; L* same, scame.

p. 17, s.v. chyste. Kleber, Das Bild bei Chaucer, 1893, p. 392, has an ingenious but futile note in this passage.

p. 18, s.v. help, note But cf. "Sir, thine help now on hast!" Arthour and Merlin, ed. Köbling, 1736, "O now thyn help thy socour and relieft," Hoceleve, Male Regle, 55, Minor Poems, ed. Furnivall, p. 27; with which may be compared such phrases as thin ore!

p. 31, s.v. benche. Insert L. dat. benche.

p. 31, s.v. bok. Insert L. boc.

p. 31, s.v. forward. Insert L. forward, forwarde, etc.

p. 34, s.v. game. Insert L. before game.

p. 36, § 14, l. 6. Scrín is of course neuter, as is indicated below, s.v.

p. 38, § 14, n. 1. The explanation of this -e in neuters with short stem-syllable as derived from -u of the plural is Zupitza's (Anzeiger f. d. Alterthum, II, 11).

p. 41, s.v. fyre. On the form jere see Skeat, On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect (Chaucer Soc. Essays).

p. 47, § 15. For myte, see § 3, p. 6 (cf. Additions and Corrections).

p. 48, s.v. felawe. Add felawe (before casurna), 696 (fellow B, fellow D).

p. 48, ferde. The comparison with M.H.G. gevérde seems to have little value. The history of the English word is very obscure, and its form doubtful (cf. p. 392).

p. 51, § 16. For kne, see pl. knees, kneís (knowes), § 39, V., p. 105, and the phrase on knowe, § 14, p. 42.

p. 52, l. 1, first word. For bodig read body.

p. 52, § 18. In our uncertainty as to the etymology of A.S. craft, it would perhaps have been better to put this word among the o-stems.

p. 52, § 18. Among the neut. o-stems insert suot.

p. 60, § 18. Insert,—soot (A. S. sót, u)., 4036 f BCp. John's (sote CD, sot A) (; in hire foot, in his fote A, in his foote D). The correct reading is suere be or soot. A took soot for the adj. (see § 46, p. 113) and wrote sour for suere.

p. 63, § 19, s.v. cros. On this word, see now the New English Dictionary.


p. 79, s.v. heirdesse. I transcribe a passage from advance sheets of Professor Skeat's essay On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect, p. 662: "We . . . also find the rimeing words wirdes, hirdes, in Troil. iii. 617, which would rime in any dialect; and I draw special attention to this passage, because the latter word is wrongly explained in Morris, and omitted in Stratmann, though it was solved by Tyrwhitt in the last century. The passage is:—

' But O, Fortune, executrice of wirdes,
O influences of thise hevenes hye!
Soth is that, under god, ye ben our hirdes,
Though to us bestes been the causes wrye,'

The Campsall MS. writes wyerdes, hyerdes; but all that we are concerned with are the A.S. forms. Wirdes is the pl. of wyrd, fate; but hirdes is not a plural at all. It is the feminine of hirde, A.S. hyrde, a shepherd. The word ye is merely the polite substitute for thou:
and the person addressed is the goddess Fortune, who is here said to be our shepherdess. Morris’s explanation of ‘guardians’ is clearly to be rejected. It may seem strange that Chaucer should adopt -es as a feminine suffix instead of the more usual -esse; but the context clearly demands it; and we thus have a bright light thrown upon l. 15 of the Envoy to Scogean, where the form goddes is rimed with forbode is. The comparison of these two passages clears up both of them.” Professor Skeat’s explanation of this passage from the Troilus (3459 ff.) seems inadmissible; certainly it is not clearly demanded by the context. Hirdes = shepherds or herdsmen (bestes in the next verse carries out the figure); the influences of the stars are apostrophized as well as Fortune, whence the plural, which may refer either (a) to Fortune and influences, or (b) to influences alone. The latter interpretation is perhaps better. The influences of the stars are the shepherds or herdsmen, who, under God, control us mortals, who, like the beasts of the field, cannot perceive the causes of what the shepherds force us to do.—I have never been able to accept Professor Skeat’s interpretation of goddes as = goddesse (Minor Poems, p. 389) in Envoy to Scogean, 15. All the seven gods (“the brighte goddes sevene,” 3) may be regarded as feeling the blasphemy against one of their number, or, if this will not do, this goddes may perhaps refer to Cupid and Venus. It is unnecessary to remark, in connection with the former and preferable of these two explanations, that this (pl.) is often used in Chaucer with little difference of meaning from that of the definite article (cf. O. Fr. ces).1

p. 86, § 31, s.v. contrarey. Add : cf. also 418, 637, 645 (pl. see p. 103), and cf. the adj. (§ 51, p. 120); cf. also § 142.

p. 87, § 31, n. at end. Add : Cf. 6684 (§§ 131, 139, 145, V.).

p. 89, § 33, s.v. soveraynité. The correct form for this line (3013) seems to be : sôveraynity (see §§ 126, 137).

p. 89, § 33, n. 1. Add : For pârde (i.) (ii.) cf. 1040, 1451, 2493, 2608.

p. 89, § 33, n. 2. On benalicite cf. § 138, 8.

p. 90, l. 4. For nouns in -ion, -ioun, see § 142.

p. 92, s.v. crois. See now the New English Dictionary, s.v. cross.

p. 93, § 34, s.v. pes. For pes interjectionally used cf. 753 : pes and cry no more (pees BD, lyé ¥ style and cry; no more C).

p. 97, § 35, l. 3. For past, read part.

p. 98, § 35, L, note. Cf. “As thou art a man of life” (=a lives mnn), Little Musgrave and Lady Barnard, A, st. 10, Child, Ballads, II, 244.

p. 113, s.v. merye. On the forms of this word in Chaucer, see Skeat, On Chaucer’s Use of the Kentish Dialect, p. 661.


1 I take this opportunity to remark that Mr. Skeat’s suggestion that olde gresel, Scogean, 35 = old gray horse, is supported not only by Gower, Conf. Am., viii. ed. Pauli, III, 366 (“Olde gresel is no foile”), but by bonny grissel = bonny gray horse in the ballad of Johnie Armstrong, B, st. 20, Child, III, 369. Cf. “Mine hed is hore and al for-fare I-hevid as a grei mare,” Old Age, st. 6, Furnivall, Old Engl. Poems, Philol. Soc., 1862, p. 149.
Additions and Corrections.

p. 120, § 51, s.v. contraire. Cf. §§ 31 (p. 86), 38, VII. (p. 103), and 142.

p. 122, § 52, s.v. souereyne. Add: But,—thilkē sōucyren (dissyl.) purueyance, 5732 (sōucyren D); cf. §§ 63, 137.

p. 122, § 52, n. 3, l. penault. See Metrical Chapter, § 142.

p. 123, l. 13. Add (for 1766): seueneythe A.

p. 127, § 54, n. 2. As to atte, cf. § 143, where it is suggested that in firstē vertu the demonstrative the has been swallowed up by the preceding that (conjunction). The quotation from Rom. Rose, 13117-21, II, 48, should probably be replaced by "Virtutem primam esse puta compescere lingua," Disticha Catonis, i, 3; cf. Kittredge, Modern Language Notes, VIII, 465.

p. 138, § 67. Add, as a note: The adj. pl. ynowe (with elided e) occurs in 3141 (inow B, ynow D), 4769 (inowe B, ynow D), 5523 (inoughe B, inow C, ynow D); see the adj. sing. there is art ynon || for, 5928 (ynough B, inow CD), cf. 7357 C. As a subst. (i.) bef. consonants, ynough, 912 (inough B, inow C, ynow D), ynoch, 6177 (inough(e) B, inow C, inough D); (ii.) before vowels, ynowh, 881 (inow C, ynow D), ynow, 5904 (ynowgh B, inow CD).

p. 151. In Wherof arto (ertow B, art(e) thou D) quod Pandare (-dar D) than amayed, 5303 (Whereto quod pandarus art thou thus amayed C; no note in Austin), the ictus falls on -ow in arto. In

Thenk ek how Parys hath that is thy brother
A lone and whi shalowt not have a nother,

5270-1 (shaltow(e) B, schuldist † not han another C, shulde nat † I have a nother D; no note in Austin), -ow in shallow certainly has both the ictus and the sense-accent. Perhaps we should read thou in both these instances.

p. 168, § 79, s.v. oon. In: And for a soth they tellen .xx. lyes, 6069, a apparently = one.

p. 176, § 82, s.v. hote. Cf. haddē ich (I CD) it so hoote, 5245 f B Cp. D (for hote A, so hote C), where so hoote is surely the correct reading (no note as to John’s).

p. 189, § 85, at end, n. 5. The Northern use of til for to (of space or direction) is occasionally found: see 128 B, 506 C, 1273 C, 1999 AB, 2271 C, 2431 C (til(e) B), 2438 AB, 4423 AB, 4781 C; ou-tyl, 354 C (vn-tyl B, vn-to AD). [Var. BC tyl.] In all these cases til stands before a vowel or weak h. In 2215 f D, seyd hym till: stonde still is a very bad reading. For through, etc., see p. 389 (and Additions).

p. 221, l. 1. See also § 111, III., n. 1, p. 266.


p. 246, second line of § 102. For second, read third.

p. 248, § 103. It is unlikely that, in Til in a temple he fonde hym at alone, 5609 (fonde AC, fonde BD, fownde John’s; ABD and al, Cp. John’s have it), fowde is to be referred to W.S. weak preterite founde, though John’s has the spelling founde.
p. 303, l. 14. For V. read IV.
p. 389, § 143, at end, n. 5. For thourgh, thurgh, thorough, monosyllabic, cf. 998, 1853, 2402, 2417, 2421, 2425, 2858, 2926, 3089, 3140, 3443, 3629, 4060, 4130, 4455, 4566, 4656, 4680, 4829, 7922, 7923, etc.

[Advance-sheets of Professor Skeat's paper On Chaucer's Use of the Kentish Dialect reached me in time to be of assistance in preparing the Additions and Corrections. Professor Skeat's edition of the Troilus, however, did not appear in time for me to use it in any part of these Observations. This note is added at the last moment, in the proof, to prevent possible misapprehensions.

G. L. K.]